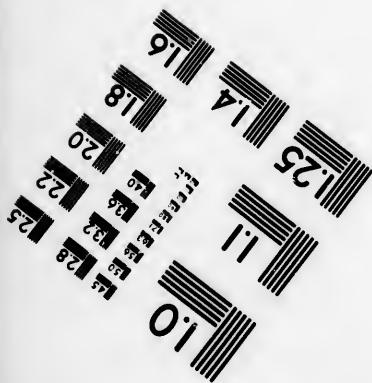
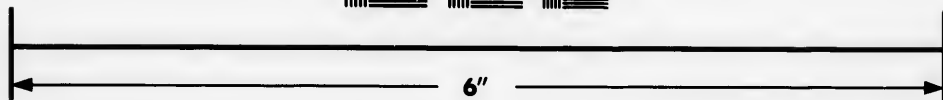
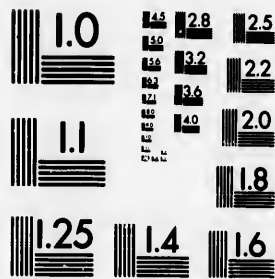


**IMAGE EVALUATION
TEST TARGET (MT-3)**



**Photographic
Sciences
Corporation**

23 WEST MAIN STREET
WEBSTER, N.Y. 14580
(716) 872-4503

**CIHM/ICMH
Microfiche
Series.**

**CIHM/ICMH
Collection de
microfiches.**



Canadian Institute for Historical Microreproductions / Institut canadien de microreproductions historiques

© 1987

Technical and Bibliographic Notes/Notes techniques et bibliographiques

The Institute has attempted to obtain the best original copy available for filming. Features of this copy which may be bibliographically unique, which may alter any of the images in the reproduction, or which may significantly change the usual method of filming, are checked below.

L'Institut a microfilmé le meilleur exemplaire qu'il lui a été possible de se procurer. Les détails de cet exemplaire qui sont peut-être uniques du point de vue bibliographique, qui peuvent modifier une image reproduite, ou qui peuvent exiger une modification dans la méthode normale de filmage sont indiqués ci-dessous.

Coloured covers/
Couverture de couleur

Coloured pages/
Pages de couleur

Covers damaged/
Couverture endommagée

Pages damaged/
Pages endommagées

Covers restored and/or laminated/
Couverture restaurée et/ou pelliculée

Pages restored and/or laminated/
Pages restaurées et/ou pelliculées

Cover title missing/
Le titre de couverture manque

Pages discoloured, stained or foxed/
Pages décolorées, tachetées ou piquées

Coloured maps/
Cartes géographiques en couleur

Pages detached/
Pages détachées

Coloured ink (i.e. other than blue or black)/
Encre de couleur (i.e. autre que bleue ou noire)

Showthrough/
Transparence

Coloured plates and/or illustrations/
Planches et/ou illustrations en couleur

Quality of print varies/
Qualité inégale de l'impression

Bound with other material/
Relié avec d'autres documents

Includes supplementary material/
Comprend du matériel supplémentaire

Tight binding may cause shadows or distortion along interior margin/
La reliure serrée peut causer de l'ombre ou de la distorsion le long de la marge intérieure

Only edition available/
Seule édition disponible

Blank leaves added during restoration may appear within the text. Whenever possible, these have been omitted from filming/
Il se peut que certaines pages blanches ajoutées lors d'une restauration apparaissent dans le texte, mais, lorsque cela était possible, ces pages n'ont pas été filmées.

Pages wholly or partially obscured by errata slips, tissues, etc., have been refilmed to ensure the best possible image/
Les pages totalement ou partiellement obscurcies par un feuillet d'errata, une pelure, etc., ont été filmées à nouveau de façon à obtenir la meilleure image possible.

Additional comments:
Commentaires supplémentaires:

Irregular pagination : [v] - vi, [i] - lii, [1] - 421 p.

This item is filmed at the reduction ratio checked below/
Ce document est filmé au taux de réduction indiqué ci-dessous.

10X	14X	18X	22X	26X	30X
<input type="checkbox"/>	<input type="checkbox"/>	<input type="checkbox"/>	<input checked="" type="checkbox"/>	<input type="checkbox"/>	<input type="checkbox"/>
12X	16X	20X	24X	28X	32X

The copy filmed here has been reproduced thanks to the generosity of:

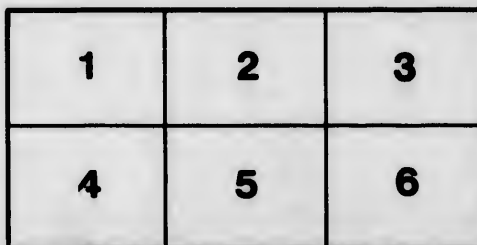
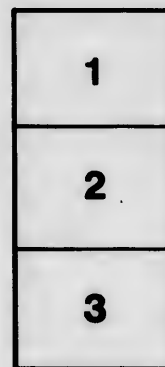
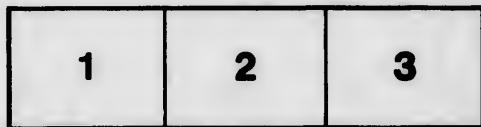
Douglas Library
Queen's University

The images appearing here are the best quality possible considering the condition and legibility of the original copy and in keeping with the filming contract specifications.

Original copies in printed paper covers are filmed beginning with the front cover and ending on the last page with a printed or illustrated impression, or the back cover when appropriate. All other original copies are filmed beginning on the first page with a printed or illustrated impression, and ending on the last page with a printed or illustrated impression.

The last recorded frame on each microfiche shall contain the symbol \rightarrow (meaning "CONTINUED"), or the symbol ∇ (meaning "END"), whichever applies.

Maps, plates, charts, etc., may be filmed at different reduction ratios. Those too large to be entirely included in one exposure are filmed beginning in the upper left hand corner, left to right and top to bottom, as many frames as required. The following diagrams illustrate the method:



L'exemplaire filmé fut reproduit grâce à la générosité de:

Douglas Library
Queen's University

Les images suivantes ont été reproduites avec le plus grand soin, compte tenu de la condition et de la netteté de l'exemplaire filmé, et en conformité avec les conditions du contrat de filmage.

Les exemplaires originaux dont la couverture en papier est imprimée sont filmés en commençant par le premier plat et en terminant soit par la dernière page qui comporte une empreinte d'impression ou d'illustration, soit par le second plat, selon le cas. Tous les autres exemplaires originaux sont filmés en commençant par la première page qui comporte une empreinte d'impression ou d'illustration et en terminant par la dernière page qui comporte une telle empreinte.

Un des symboles suivants apparaîtra sur la dernière image de chaque microfiche, selon le cas: le symbole \rightarrow signifie "A SUIVRE", le symbole ∇ signifie "FIN".

Les cartes, planches, tableaux, etc., peuvent être filmés à des taux de réduction différents. Lorsque le document est trop grand pour être reproduit en un seul cliché, il est filmé à partir de l'angle supérieur gauche, de gauche à droite, et de haut en bas, en prenant le nombre d'images nécessaire. Les diagrammes suivants illustrent la méthode.

THE CLOCKMAKER;

OR

THE SAYINGS AND DOINGS

OF

SAM. SLICK, OF SLICKVILLE.

TO WHICH IS ADDED,

THE BUBBLES OF CANADA,

BY THE SAME AUTHOR.

———Garrit aniles
ex re fabellas———HORACE.

The cheerful sage, when solemn dictates fail,
Conceals the moral counsel in a tale.



PARIS,

BAUDRY'S EUROPEAN LIBRARY.

RUE DU COQ, NEAR THE LOUVRE.

SOLD ALSO BY AMYOT, RUE DE LA PAIX; TRUCHY, BOULEVARD DES ITALIENS;
THEOPHILE BARROIS, JUN., RUE RICHELIEU; HEIDELOFF AND CAMPE,
RUE VIVIENNE; AND BY ALL THE PRINCIPAL BOOKSELLERS OF
THE CONTINENT.

1839.

LP

PS 8415

A44 AG

1839

V.1

7-15-1839

L
a
o
f
a
L
r
s
Y
o
h
w
is
-
s
e
to
fa
I
w
m
bo
I
Y
m
ho

SLICK'S LETTER.

[After these Sketches had gone through the press, and were ready for publication, we sent Mr. Slick a copy; and shortly afterwards received from him the following letter, which characteristic communication we give entire.—EDITOR.]

TO MR. HOWE.

SIR,—I received your letter, and note its contents. I aint over half pleased, I tell you; I think I have been used scandalous, that's a fact. It warn't the part of a gentleman for to go and pump me arter that fashion, and then go right off and blart it out in print. It was a nasty, dirty, mean action, and I don't thank you nor the squire a bit for it. It will be more nor a thousand dollars out of my pocket. There's an eend to the Clock trade now, and a pretty kettle of fish I've made on it, hav'n't I? I shall never hear the last on it, and what am I to say when I go back to the States? I'll take my oath I never said one-half the stuff he has set down there; and as for that long lochrom about Mr. Everett, and the Hon. Alden. Gobble, and Minister, there aint a word of truth in it from beginnin to eend. If ever I come near hand to him agin, I'll larn him——but never mind, I say nothin. Now there's one thing I don't cleverly understand. If this here book is my '*Sayins and Doins*,' how comes it yourn or the Squire's either? If my thoughts and notions are my own, how can they be any other folks's? According to my idee you have no more right to take them, than you have to take my clocks without payin for 'em. A man that would be guilty of such an action is no gentleman, that's flat, and if you don't like it you may lump it—for I don't valy him, nor you neither, nor are a blue-nose that ever step in shoe-leather, the matter of a pin's head. I don't know as ever I felt sougly afore since I was raised; why didn't he put his name to it, as well as mine? When an article han't the maker's name and factory on it, it shows it's a cheat, and he's ashamed to own it. If I'm to have the name, I'll have the game, or I'll know the cause why, that's a fact! Now folks say you are a considerable of a candid man, and right up and down in your dealins, and do things above board, handsom—at least so I've hearn tell. That's what I like; I love to deal with such folks. Now 'spose you make me an offer? You'll find me not very difficult to trade with, and I don't know but I might put off more than half of the books myself, tu. I'll tell you how I'd work it. I'd say, 'Here's a book they've namesaked arter

me, Sam Slick, the Clockmaker, but it tante mine, and can't altogether jist say rightly whoso it is. Some say it's the General's, and some say it's the Bishop's, and some say it's Howe himself; but I aint availed who it is. It's a wise child that knows its own father. It wipes up the blue-noses considerable hard, and don't let off the Yankees so very easy neither, but it's generally allowed to be about the prettiest book ever writ in this country; and although it aint altogether jist gospel what's in it, there's some pretty home truths in it, that's a fact. Whoever wrote it must be a funny feller, too, that's sartin; for there are some queer stories in it that no soul could help larfin at, that's a fact. It's about the wittiest book I ever see'd. Its nearly all sold off, but jist a few copies I've kept for my old customers. The price is just 5s. 6d., but I'll let you have it for 5s., because you'll not get another chance to have one.' Always ax a sixpence more than the price, and then bate it, and when blue-nose hears that, he thinks he's got a bargain, and bites directly. I never see one on 'em yet that didn't fall right into the trap.

Yes, make me an offer, and you and I will trade, I think. But fair play's a jewel, and I must say I feel ryled and kinder sore. I han't been used handsom atween you two, and it don't seem to me that I had ought to be made a fool on in that book, arter that fashion, for folks to laugh at, and then be sheered out of the spec. If I am, somebody had better look out for squalls, I tell you. I'm as easy as an old glove, but a glove aint an old shoe to be trod on, and I think a certain person will find that out afore he is six months older, or else I'm mistakened, that's all. Hopin to hear from you soon, I remain yours to command,

SAMUEL SLICK,

Pugnose's Inn, River Philip, Dec. 25, 1836.

P.S. I see in the last page it is writ, that the Squire is to take another journey round the Shore, and back to Halifax with me next Spring. Well, I did agree with him, to drive him round the coast, but don't you mind—we'll understand each other, I guess, afore we start. I concait he'll rise considerably airly in the mornin, afore he catches me asleep agin. I'll be wide awake for him next hitch, that's a fact, I'd a ginn a thousand dollars if he had only used Campbell's name instead of mine; for he was a most an almighty villain, and cheated a proper raft of folks and then shipped himself off to Botany Bay, for fear folks would transport him there; you couldn't rub out Slick, and put in Campbell, could you? that's a good feller; if you would I'd make it worth your while, you may depend.

CONTENTS.

	PAGE
SLICK'S LETTER	v
CHAPTER I.	
THE TROTTING HORSE	1
CHAPTER II.	
THE CLOCKMAKER	4
CHAPTER III.	
THE SILENT GIRLS	7
CHAPTER IV.	
CONVERSATIONS AT THE RIVER PHILIP	9
CHAPTER V.	
JUSTICE PETTIFOG	12
CHAPTER VI.	
ANECDOTES	14
CHAPTER VII.	
GO AHEAD	17
CHAPTER VIII.	
THE PREACHER THAT WANDERED FROM HIS TEXT	20
CHAPTER IX.	
YANKEE EATING AND HOUSE FEEDING	24
CHAPTER X.	
THE ROAD TO A WOMAN'S HEART—THE BROKEN HEART	27
CHAPTER XI.	
CUMBERLAND OYSTERS PRODUCE MELANCHOLY FOREBODINGS	31
CHAPTER XII.	
THE AMERICAN EAGLE	35
CHAPTER XIII.	
THE CLOCKMAKER'S OPINION OF HALIFAX	40
CHAPTER XIV.	
SAYINGS AND DOINGS IN CUMBERLAND	45
CHAPTER XV.	
THE DANCING MASTER ABROAD	48
CHAPTER XVI.	
MR. SLICK'S OPINION OF THE BRITISH	52

I can't al-
 eral's, and
 self; but I
 own father.
 let off the
 o be about
 it aint al-
 me truths
 eller, too,
 soul could
 ver see'd.
 or my old
 it for 5s.,
 ways ax a
 blue-noso
 I never

ink. But
 r sore. I
 em to me
 t fashion,
 If I am,
 as easy as
 d I think
 older, or
 on, I re-

SLICK,

s to take
 me next
 e coast,
 afore we
 afore he
 hitch,
 ly used
 mighty
 himself
 e; you
 a good
 epend.

	PAGE
CHAPTER XVII.	
A YANKEE HANDLE FOR A HALIFAX BLADE	57
CHAPTER XVIII.	
THE GRAHAMITE AND THE IRISH PILOT	61
CHAPTER XIX.	
THE CLOCKMAKER QUILTS A BLUE NOSE	66
CHAPTER XX.	
SISTER SALL'S COURTSHIP	70
CHAPTER XXI.	
SETTING UP FOR GOVERNOR	74
CHAPTER XXII.	
A CURE FOR CONCEIT	80
CHAPTER XXIII.	
THE BLOWIN TIME	84
CHAPTER XXIV.	
FATHER JOHN O'SHAUGHNESSY	89
CHAPTER XXV.	
TAMING A SHREW	94
CHAPTER XXVI.	
THE MINISTER'S HORN MUG.	98
CHAPTER XXVII.	
THE WHITE NIGGER	103
CHAPTER XXVIII.	
FIRE IN THE DAIRY	106
CHAPTER XXIX.	
A BODY WITHOUT A HEAD	111
CHAPTER XXX.	
A TALE OF BUNKER'S HILL	114
CHAPTER XXXI.	
GULLING A BLUE NOSE	118
CHAPTER XXXII.	
TWO MANY IRONS IN THE FIRE.	122
CHAPTER XXXIII.	
WINDSOR AND THE FAR WEST.	127
CHAPTER XXXIV.	
THE MEETING	131
CHAPTER XXXV.	
THE VOLUNTARY SYSTEM	133
CHAPTER XXXVI.	
TRAINING A CARRIBOO	143

PAGE	CONTENTS.	iii PAGE
57	NICK BRADSHAW	148
61	TRAVELLING IN AMERICA.	157
66	ELECTIVE COUNCILS	161
70	SLAVERY	170
74	TALKING LATIN	178
80	THE SNOW WREATH	187
84	THE TALISMAN	193
89	ITALIAN PAINTINGS	199
94	SHAMPOOING THE ENGLISH	205
98	PUTTING A FOOT IN IT.	212
103	ENGLISH ARISTOCRACY AND YANKEE MOBOCRACY	218
105	CONFESSIONS OF A DEPOSED MINISTER	226
111	CANADIAN POLITICS	232
114	A CURE FOR SMUGGLING.	239
118	TAKING OFF THE FACTORY LADIES	245
122	THE SCHOOLMASTER ABROAD	254
127	THE WRONG ROOM	261
131	FINDING A MARE'S NEST.	267
133	KEEPING UP THE STEAM.	273
143	THE CLOCKMAKER'S PARTING ADVICE	281

p
n
p
so
q
so
pe
w
fr
sp
ne

of
co
fo

Co
ric
and
of
ear
fro
tak
ask
so
sion
hin
inn
the
of e
bear
coat
' Te

THE CLOCKMAKER.

CHAPTER I.

THE TROTTING HORSE.

I WAS always well mounted; I am fond of a horse, and always piqued myself on having the fastest trotter in the Province. I have made no great progress in the world, I feel doubly, therefore, the pleasure of not being surpassed on the road. I never feel so well or so cheerful as on horseback, for there is something exhilarating in quick motion; and, old as I am, I feel a pleasure in making any person whom I meet on the way put his horse to the full gallop, to keep pace with my trotter. Poor Ethiop! you recollect him, how he was wont to lay back his ears on his arched neck, and push away from all competition. He is done, poor fellow! the spavin spoiled his speed, and he now roams at large upon 'my farm at Truro.' Mohawk never failed me till this summer.

I pride myself (you may laugh at such childish weakness in a man of my age), but still, I pride myself in taking the conceit out of coxcombs I meet on the road, and on the ease with which I can leave a fool behind, whose nonsense disturbs my solitary musings.

On my last journey to Fort Lawrence, as the beautiful view of Colchester had just opened upon me, and as I was contemplating its richness and exquisite scenery, a tall thin man, with hollow cheeks and bright twinkling black eyes, on a good bay horse, somewhat out of condition, overtook me; and drawing up, said, I guess you started early this morning, sir? I did, sir, I replied. You did not come from Halifax, I presume, sir, did you? in a dialect too rich to be mistaken as genuine Yankee. And which way may you be travelling? asked my inquisitive companion. To Fort Lawrence. Ah! said he so am I, it is *in my circuit*. The word *circuit* sounded so professional, I looked again at him, to ascertain whether I had ever seen him before, or whether I had met with one of those nameless, but innumerable limbs of the law, who now flourish in every district of the Province. There was a keenness about his eye, and an acuteness of expression, much in favour of the law; but the dress, and general bearing of the man, made against the supposition. His was not the coat of a man who can afford to wear an old coat, nor was it one of 'Tempest and More's,' that distinguish country lawyers from coun-

try boobies. His clothes were well made, and of good materials, but looked as if their owner had shrunk a little since they were made for him; they hung somewhat loose on him. A large brooch, and some superfluous seals and gold keys, which ornamented his outward man, looked 'New England' like. A visit to the States had, perhaps, I thought, turned this Colchester beau into a Yankee fop. Of what consequence was it to me who he was—in either case I had nothing to do with him, and I desired neither his acquaintance nor his company—still I could not but ask myself who can this man be? I am not aware, said I, that there is a court sitting at this time at Cumberland? Nor am I, said my friend. What then could he have to do with the circuit? It occurred to me he must be a Methodist preacher. I looked again, but his appearance again puzzled me. His attire might do—the colour might be suitable—the broad brim not out of place; but there was a want of that staidness of look, that seriousness of countenance, that expression, in short, so characteristic of the clergy.

I could not account for my idle curiosity—a curiosity which, in him, I had the moment before viewed both with suspicion and disgust; but so it was—I felt a desire to know who he could be who was neither lawyer nor preacher, and yet talked of his *circuit* with the gravity of both. How ridiculous, I thought to myself, is this; I will leave him. Turning towards him, I said, I feared I should be late for breakfast, and must therefore bid him good morning. Mohawk felt the pressure of my knees, and away we went at a slapping pace. I congratulated myself on conquering my own curiosity, and on avoiding that of my travelling companion. This, I said to myself, this is the value of a good horse; I patted his neck—I felt proud of him. Presently I heard the steps of the unknown's horse—the clatter increased. Ah, my friend, thought I, it won't do; you should be well mounted if you desire my company; I pushed Mohawk faster, faster, faster—to his best. He outdid himself; he had never trotted so handsomely—so easily—so well.

I guess that is a pretty considerable smart horse, said the stranger, as he came beside me, and apparently reined in, to prevent his horse passing me; there is not, I reckon, so spry a one on *my circuit*.

Circuit, or no circuit, one thing was settled in my mind; he was a Yankee, and a very impertinent Yankee, too. I felt humbled, my pride was hurt, and Mohawk was beaten. To continue this trotting contest was humiliating; I yielded, therefore, before the victory was palpable, and pulled up.

Yes, continued he, a horse of pretty considerable good action, and a pretty fair trotter, too, I guess. Pride must have a fall—I confess mine was prostrate in the dust. These words cut me to the heart. What! is it come to this, poor Mohawk, that you, the admiration of

all but the envious, the great Mohawk, the standard by which all other horses are measured—trots next to Mohawk, only yields to Mohawk, looks like Mohawk—that you are, after all, only a counterfeiter, and pronounced by a straggling Yankee to be merely 'a pretty fair trotter!'

If he was trained, I guess that he might be made to do a little more. Excuse me, but if you divide your weight between the knee and the stirrup, rather most on the knee, and rise forward on the saddle, so as to leave a little daylight between you and it, I hope I may never ride *this circuit again*, if you don't get a mile more an hour out of him.

What! not enough, I mentally groaned, to have my horse beaten, but I must be told that I don't know how to ride him; and that, too, by a Yankee—Aye, there's the rub—a Yankee what? Perhaps a half-bred puppy, half Yankee, half blue-nose. As there is no escape, I'll try to make out my riding master. *Your circuit*, said I, my looks expressing all the surprise they were capable of—your circuit, pray what may that be? Oh, said he, the eastern circuit—I am on the eastern circuit, sir. I have heard, said I, feeling that I now had a lawyer to deal with, that there is a great deal of business on this circuit—pray, are there many cases of importance? There is a pretty fair business to be done, at least there has been, but the cases are of no great value—we do not make much out of them, we get them up very easy, but they don't bring much profit. What a beast, thought I, is this; and what a curse to a country, to have such an unfeeling pettifogging rascal practising in it—a horse jockey, too, what a finished character! I'll try him on that branch of his business.

That is a superior animal you are mounted on, said I—I seldom meet one that can travel with mine. Yes, said he coolly, a considerable fair traveller, and most particular good bottom. I hesitated: this man who talks with such unblushing effrontery of getting up cases, and making profit out of them, cannot be offended at the question—yes, I will put it to him. Do you feel an inclination to part with him? I never part with a horse—I don't like to ride in the dust after every one I meet, and I allow no man to pass me but when I choose. Is it possible, I thought, that he can know me? that he has heard of my foible, and is quizzing me, or have I this feeling in common with him. But, continued I, you might supply yourself again. Not on *this circuit*, I guess, said he, nor yet in Campbell's circuit. Campbell's circuit—pray, sir, what is that? That, said he, is the western—and Lampton rides the shore circuit; and as for the people on the shore, they know so little of horses, that Lampton tells me, a man from Aylesford once sold a hornless ox there, whose tail he had cut and nicked, for a horse of the Goliath breed. I should think, said I, that Mr. Lampton must have no lack of cases among

such enlightened clients. Clients, sir! said my friend, Mr. Lampton is not a lawyer. I beg pardon, I thought you said he rode the *circuit*. We call it a circuit, said the stranger, who seemed by no means flattered by the mistake—we divide the Province, as in the Almanack, into circuits, in each of which we separately carry on our business of manufacturing and selling clocks. There are few, I guess, said the Clockmaker, who go upon *tick* as much as we do, who have so little use for lawyers; if attorneys could wind a *man up again*, after he has been fairly *run down*, I guess they'd be a pretty harmless sort of folks.

This explanation restored my good humour, and as I could not quit my companion, and he did not feel disposed to leave me, I made up my mind to travel with him to Fort Lawrence, the limit of his *circuit*.

CHAPTER II.

THE CLOCKMAKER.

I HAD heard of Yankee clock pedlars, tin pedlars, and bible pedlars, especially of him who sold Polyglot Bibles (*all in English*) to the amount of sixteen thousand pounds. The house of every substantial farmer had three substantial ornaments, a wooden clock, a tin reflector, and a Polyglot Bible. How is it that an American can sell his wares, at whatever price he pleases, where a blue-nose would fail to make a sale at all? I will enquire of the Clockmaker the secret of his success.

What a pity it is, Mr. *Slick* (for such was his name), what a pity it is, said I, that you, who are so successful in teaching these people the value of *clocks*, could not also teach them the value of *time*. I guess, said he, they have got that ring to grow on their horns yet, which every four year old has in our country. We reckon hours and minutes to be dollars and cents. They do nothing in these parts, but eat, drink, smoke, sleep, ride about, lounge at taverns, make speeches at temperance meetings, and talk about "*House of Assembly*." If a man don't hoe his corn, and he don't get a crop, he says it is all owing to the Bank; and if he runs into debt and is sued, why he says the lawyers are a curse to the country. They are a most idle set of folks, I tell you.

But how is it, said I, that you manage to sell such an immense number of clocks (which certainly cannot be called necessary articles) among a people with whom there seems to be so great a scarcity of money?

Mr. Slick paused, as if considering the propriety of answering the question, and looking me in the face, said, in a confidential tone, Why, I don't care if I do tell you, for the market is glutted, and I shall quit this circuit. It is done by a knowledge of *soft sawder* and *human natur*. But here is Deacon Flint's, said he, I have but one clock left, and I guess I will sell it to him.

At the gate of a most comfortable looking farm-house stood Deacon Flint, a respectable old man, who had understood the value of time better than most of his neighbours, if one might judge from the appearance of every thing about him. After the usual salutation, an invitation to "alight" was accepted by Mr. Slick, who said, he wished to take leave of Mrs. Flint before he left Colchester.

We had hardly entered the house, before the Clockmaker pointed to the view from the window, and addressing himself to me, said, if I was to tell them in Connecticut, there was such a farm as this away down east here in Nova Scotia, they wouldn't believe me—why there aint such a location in all New England. The Deacon has a hundred acres of dyke—Seventy, said the Deacon, only seventy. Well, seventy; but then there is your fine deep bottom, why I could run a ramrod into it—Interval, we call it, said the Deacon, who though evidently pleased at this eulogium, seemed to wish the experiment of the ramrod to be tried in the right place—Well, interval if you please (though Professor Eleazer Cumstick, in his work on Ohio, calls them bottoms), is just as good as dyke. Then there is that water privilege, worth 3,000 or 4,000 dollars, twice as good as what Governor Cass paid 15,000 dollars for. I wonder, Deacon, you don't put up a carding mill on it: the same works would carry a turning lathe, a shingle machine, a circular saw, grind bark, and—Too old, said the Deacon, too old for all those speculations—Old, repeated the Clockmaker, not you; why you are worth half a dozen of the young men we see, now a-days, you are young enough to have—here he said something in a lower tone of voice, which I did not distinctly hear; but whatever it was, the Deacon was pleased, he smiled and said he did not think of such things now.

But your beasts, dear me, your beasts must be put in and have a feed; saying which, he went out to order them to be taken to the stable.

As the old gentleman closed the door after him, Mr. Slick drew near to me, and said in an under tone, that is what I call "*soft sawder*." An Englishman would pass that man as a sheep passes a hog in a pasture, without looking at him; or, said he, looking rather archly, if he was mounted on a pretty smart horse, I guess he'd trot away, *if he could*. Now I find—Here his lecture on "*soft sawder*" was cut short by the entrance of Mrs. Flint. Jist come to say good bye, Mrs. Flint. What, have you sold all your clocks? yes, and very low, too, for money is scarce, and I wished to close

the concern; no, I am wrong in saying all, for I have just one left. Neighbour Steel's wife asked to have the refusal of it, but I guess I won't sell it; I had but two of them, this one and the feller of it that I sold Governor Lincoln. General Green, the Secretary of State for Maine, said he'd give me 50 dollars for this here one—it has composition wheels and patent axles, if is a beautiful article—a real first chop—no mistake, genuine superfine, but I guess I'll take it back; and beside, Squire Hawk might think kinder harder that I did not give him the offer. Dear me, said Mrs. Flint, I should like to see it; where is it? It is in a chest of mine over the way, at Tom Tape's store. I guess he can ship it on to Eastport. That's a good man, said Mrs. Flint, jist let's look at it.

Mr. Slick, willing to oblige, yielded to these entreaties, and soon produced the clock—a gawdy, highly varnished, trumpery looking affair. He placed it on the chimney-piece where its beauties were pointed out and duly appreciated by Mrs. Flint, whose admiration was about ending in a proposal, when Mr. Flint returned from giving his directions about the care of the horses. The Deacon praised the clock, he too thought it a handsome one; but the Deacon was a prudent man, he had a watch—he was sorry, but he had no occasion for a clock. I guess you're in the wrong furrow this time, Deacon, it an't for sale, said Mr. Slick; and if it was, I reckon neighbour Steel's wife would have it, for she gives me no peace about it. Mrs. Flint said, that Mr. Steel had enough to do, poor man, to pay his interest, without buying clocks for his wife. It's no concern of mine, said Mr. Slick, so long as he pays me, what he has to do, but I guess I don't want to sell it, and besides it comes too high; that clock can't be made at Rhode Island under 40 dollars. Why it an't possible, said the Clockmaker, in 'apparent surprise, looking at his watch, why as I'm alive it is 4 o'clock, and if I hav'nt been two hours here—how on airth shall I reach River Philip to-night? I'll tell you what, Mrs. Flint, I'll leave the clock in your care till I return on my way to the States—I'll set it a-going and put it to the right time.

As soon as this operation was performed, he delivered the key to the Deacon with a sort of serio-comic injunction to wind up the clock every Saturday night, which Mrs. Flint said she would take care should be done, and promised to remind her husband of it, in case he should chance to forget it.

That, said the Clockmaker, as soon as we were mounted, that I call '*human natur*!' Now that clock is sold for 40 dollars—it cost me just 6 dollars and 50 cents. Mrs. Flint will never let Mrs. Steel have the refusal—nor will the Deacon learn until I call for the clock that having once indulged in the use of a superfluity, how difficult it is to give it up. We can do without any article of luxury

we have never had, but when once obtained, it is not '*in human natur*' to surrender it voluntarily. Of fifteen thousand sold by myself and partners in this Province, twelve thousand were left in this manner, and only ten clocks were ever returned—when we called for them they invariably bought them. We trust to '*soft sander*' to get them into the house, and to '*human natur*' that they never come out of it.

CHAPTER III.

THE SILENT GIRLS.

Do you see them are swallows, said the Clockmaker, how low they fly? Well, I presume, we shall have rain right away, and them noisy critturs, them gulls, how close they keep to the water down there in the Shubenacadie; well, that's a sure sign. If we study natur, we don't want no thermometer. But I guess we shall be in time to get under cover in a shingle-maker's shed, about three miles ahead on us.

We had just reached the deserted hovel when the rain fell in torrents.

I reckon, said the Clockmaker, as he sat himself down on a bundle of shingles, I reckon they are bad off for inns in this country. When a feller is too lazy to work here, he paints his name over his door, and calls it a tavern, and as like as not he makes the whole neighbourhood as lazy as himself—it is about as easy to find a good inn in Halifax, as it is to find wool on a goat's back. An inn, to be a good concern, must be built a purpose, you can no more make a good tavern out of a common dwelling-house, I expect, than a good coat out of an old pair of trowsers. They are eternal lazy, you may depend—now there might be a grand spec made there, in building a good Inn and a good Church. What a sacrilegious and unnatural union, said I, with most unaffected surprise. Not at all, said Mr. Slick, we build both on speculation in the States, and make a good deal of profit out of 'em too, I tell you. We look out a good sightly place, in a town like Halifax, that is pretty considerably well peopled with folks that are good marks; and if there is no real right down good preacher among them, we build a handsome Church, touched off like a New-York liner, a real taking, looking thing—and then we look out for a preacher, a crack man, a regular ten-horse-power chap—well, we hire him, and we have to give pretty high wages too, say twelve hundred or sixteen hundred dollars a year. We take him at first on trial for a Sabbath or two, to try his paces, and if he takes with the

folks, if he goes down well we clinch the bargain, and let and sell the pews; and I tell you it pays well and makes a real good investment. There were few better specs among us than Inns and Churches, until the Railroads came on the carpet—as soon as the novelty of the new preacher wears off, we hire another, and that keeps up the steam. I trust it will be long, very long, my friend, said I, ere the rage for speculation introduces “the money-changers into the temple,” with us.

Mr. Slick looked at me with a most ineffable expression of pity and surprise. Depend on it, sir, said he, with a most philosophical air, this Province is much behind the intelligence of the age. But if it is behind us in that respect, it is a long chalk ahead on us in others. I never seed or heard tell of a country that had so many natural privileges as this. Why there are twice as many harbours and water powers here, as we have all the way from Eastport to New Orleans. They have all they can ax, and more than they deserve. They have iron, coal, slate, grindstone, lime, firestone, gypsum, freestone, and a list as long as an auctioneer’s catalogue. But they are either asleep, or stone blind to them. Their shores are crowded with fish, and their lands covered with wood. A government that lays as light on ’em as a down counterpin, and no taxes. Then look at their dykes. The Lord seems to have made ’em on purpose for such lazy folks. If you were to tell the citizens of our country that these dykes had been cropped for a hundred years without manure, they’d say, they guessed you had seen Col. Crockett, the greatest hand at a flam in our nation. You have heerd tell of a man who could’nt see London for the houses, I tell you, if we had this country, you couldn’t see the harbours for the shipping. There’d be a rush of folks to it, as there is in one of our inns, to the dinner table, when they sometimes get jammed together in the door-way, and a man has to take a running leap over their heads, afore he can get in. A little nigger boy in New York found a diamond worth 2,000 dollars; well, he sold it to a watchmaker for 50 cents—the little critter didn’t know no better. *Your people are just like the nigger boy, they don’t know the value of their diamond.*

Do you know the reason monkeys are no good? because they chatter all day long—so do the niggers—and so do the blue-noses of Nova Scotia—its all talk and no work; now, with us its all work and no talk—in our shipyards, our factories, our mills, and even in our vessels, there’s no talk—a man can’t work and talk too. I guess if you were at the factories at Lowell we’d show you a wonder—*five hundred galls at work together all in silence.* I don’t think our great country has such a real natural curiosity as that—I expect the world don’t contain the beat of that; for a woman’s tongue goes so

slick of itself, without water power or steam, and moves so easy on its hinges, that its no easy matter to put a spring stop on it, I tell you—it comes as natural as drinkin mint julip.

I don't pretend to say the galls don't nullify the rule, sometimes at intermission and arter hours, but when they do, if they don't let go, then its a pity. You have heerd a school come out of little boys. Lord, its no touch to it; or a flock of geese at it, they are no more a match for 'em than a pony is for a coach-horse. But when they are at work, all's as still as sleep and no snoring. I guess we have a right to brag o' that invention—we trained the dear critters, so they don't think of striking the minutes and seconds no longer.

Now the folks of Halifax take it all out in talking—they talk of steam-boats, whalers, and rail-roads—but they all end where they begin—in talk. I don't think I'd be out in my latitude, if I was to say they beat the women kind at that. One fellow says, I talk of going to England—another says, I talk of going to the Country—while a third says, I talk of going to sleep. If we happen to speak of such things, we say, 'I'm right off down East; or I'm away off South,' and away we go jist like a streak of lightning.

When we want folks to talk, we pay 'em for it, such as ministers, lawyers, and members of congress; but then we expect the use of their tongues, and not their hands; and when we pay folks to work, we expect the use of their hands, and not their tongues. I guess work don't come kind o' natural to the people of this province, no more than it does to a full-bred horse. I expect they think they have a little *too much blood* in 'em for work, for they are near about as proud as they are lazy.

Now the bees know how to sarve out such chaps, for they have their drones too. Well, they reckon its no fun, a making honey all summer, for these idle critters to eat all winter—so they give 'em Lynch Law. They have a regular built mob of citizens, and string up the drones like the Vixburg gamblers. Their maxim is, and not a bad one neither, I guess, 'no work no honey.'

CHAPTER IV.

CONVERSATIONS AT THE RIVER PHILIP.

It was late before we arrived at Pugnose's Inn—the evening, was cool, and a fire was cheering and comfortable. Mr. Slick declined any share in the bottle of wine, he said he was dyspeptic; and a glass or two soon convinced me, that it was likely to produce in me some-

thing worse than dyspepsy. It was speedily removed, and we drew up to the fire.

Taking a small penknife from his pocket, he began to whittle a thin piece of dry wood, which lay on the hearth, and, after musing some time, said, I guess you've never been in the States. I replied that I had not, but that before I returned to England I proposed visiting that country. There, said he, you'll see the great Daniel Webster—he's a great man, I tell you; King William, number 4, I guess, would be no match for him as an orator—he'd talk him out of sight in half an hour. If he was in your House of Commons, I reckon he'd make some of your great folks look pretty streaked—he's a true patriot and statesman, the first in our country, and a most particular cute Lawyer. There was a Quaker chap too cute for him once tho'. This Quaker, a pretty knowin' old shaver, had a cause down to Rhode Island; so he went to Daniel to hire him to go down and plead his case for him; so says he, Lawyer Webster, what's your fee? Why, says Daniel, let me see, I have to go down south to Washington, to plead the great insurance case of the Hartford Company—and I've got to be at Cincinnati to attend the Convention, and I don't see how I can go to Rhode Island without great loss and great fatigue; it would cost you, may be, more than you'd be willing to give.

Well, the Quaker looked pretty white about the gills, I tell you, when he heard this, for he could not do without him no how, and he did not like this preliminary talk of his at all—at last he made bold to ask him the worst of it, what he would take? Why, says Daniel, I always liked the Quakers, they are a quiet peaceable people who never go to law if they can help it, and it would be better for our great country if there were more such people in it. I never seed or heard tell of any harm in 'em, except going the whole figure for General Jackson, and that everlastin' almighty villain, Van Buren; yes, I love the Quakers, I hope they'll go the Webster ticket yet—and I'll go for you as low as I can any way afford, say 1,000 dollars.

The Quaker well nigh fainted when he heard this; but he was pretty deep too; so says he, Lawyer, that's a great deal of money, but I have more causes there; if I give you the 1,000 dollars will you plead the other cases I shall have to give you? Yes, says Daniel, I will to the best of my humble abilities. So down they went to Rhode Island, and Daniel tried the case and carried it for the Quaker. Well, the Quaker he goes round to all the folks that had suits in court, and says he, what will you give me if I get the great Daniel to plead for you? It cost me 1,000 dollars for a fee, but now he and I are pretty thick, and as he is on the spot, I'd get him to plead cheap for you—so he got three hundred dollars from one, and two from another, and so on, until he got eleven hundred dollars, jist one hun-

dred dollars more than he gave. Daniel was in a great rage when he heard this; what, said he, do you think I would agree to your letting me out like a horse to hire? Friend Daniel, said the Quaker, didst thou not undertake to plead all such cases as I should have to give thee? If thou wilt not stand to thy agreement, neither will I stand to mine. Daniel laughed out ready to split his sides at this. Well, says he, I guess I might as well stand still for you to put the bridle on this time, for you have fairly pinned me up in a corner of the fence any how—so he went good humouredly to work and pleaded them all.

This lazy fellow, Pugnose, continued the Clockmaker, that keeps this inn, is going to sell off and go to the States; he says he has to work too hard here; that the markets are dull, and the winters too long; and he guesses he can live easier there; I guess he'll find his mistake afore he has been there long. Why our country aint to be compared to this, on no account whatever; our country never made us to be the great nation we are, but we made the country. How on airth could we, if we were all like old Pugnose, as lazy, as ugly, make that cold thin soil of New-England produce what it does? Why, sir, the land between Boston and Salem would starve a flock of geese; and yet look at Salem, it has more cash than would buy Nova Scotia from the King. We rise early, live frugally, and work late: what we get we take care of. To all this we add enterprise and intelligence—a feller who finds work too hard here, had better not go to the States. I met an Irishman, one Pat Lannigan, last week, who had just returned from the States; why, says I, Pat, what on airth brought you back? Bad luck to them, says Pat, if I warn't properly bit. What do you get a day in Nova Scotia? says Judge Beler to me. Four shillings, your Lordship, says I. There are no Lords here, says he, we are all free. Well, says he, I'll give you as much in one day as you can earn there in two; I'll give you eight shillings. Long life to your Lordship, says I. So next day to it I went with a party of men a-digging a piece of canal, and if it wasn't a hot day my name is not Pat Lannigan. Presently I looked up and straightened my back, says I to a comrade of mine, Mick, says I, I'm very dry; with that, says the overseer, we don't allow gentlemen to talk at their work in this country. Faith, I soon found out for my two days' pay in one, I had to do two days' work in one, and pay two weeks' board in one, and at the end of a month I found myself no better off in pocket than in Nova Scotia; while the devil a bone in my body that didn't ache with pain, and as for my nose it took to bleeding, and bled day and night entirely. Upon my soul, Mr. Slick, said he, the poor labourer does not last long in your country; what with new rum, hard labour, and hot weather, you'll see the graves

of the Irish each side of the canals, for all the world like two rows of potatoes in a field that have forgot to come up.

It is a land, sir, continued the Clockmaker, of hard work. We have two kind of slaves, the niggers and the white slaves. All European labourers and blacks who come out to us, do our hard bodily work, while we direct it to a profitable end; neither rich nor poor, high nor low, with us, eat the bread of idleness. Our whole capital is in active operation, and our whole population is in active employment. An idle fellow, like Pugnose, who runs away to us, is clapt into harness afore he knows where he is, and is made to work; like a horse that refuses to draw, he is put into the Team-boat; he finds some before him, and others behind him, *he must either draw, or be dragged to death.*

CHAPTER V.

JUSTICE PETTIFOG.

In the morning the Clockmaker informed me that a Justice's Court was to be held that day at Pugnose's Inn, and he guessed he could do a little business among the country folks that would be assembled there. Some of them, he said, owed him for clocks, and it would save him the world of travelling, to have the Justice and Constable to drive them up together. If you want a fat wether, there's nothing like penning up the whole flock in a corner. I guess, said he, if General Campbell knew what sort of a man that are magistrate was, he'd disband him pretty quick, he's a regular suck-egg—a disgrace to the country. I guess if he acted that way in Kentucky, he'd get a breakfast of cold lead some morning, out of the small end of a rifle, he'd find pretty difficult to digest. They tell me he issues three hundred writs a year, the cost of which, including that tarnation Constable's fees, can't amount to nothing less than 3,000 dollars per annum. If the Hon. Daniel Webster had him afore a jury, I reckon he'd turn him inside out, and slip him back again, as quick as an old stocking. He'd paint him to the life, as plain to be known as the head of General Jackson. He's jist a fit feller for Lynch law, to be tried, hanged, and damned, all at once—there's more nor him in the country—there's some of the breed in every country in the Province, jist one or two to do the dirty work, as we keep niggers for jobs that would give a white man the cholera. They ought to pay his passage, as we do with such critters, tell him his place is taken in the Mail Coach, and if he is found here after twenty-four hours, they'd make a carpenter's plumb-bob of him, and

hang him outside the church steeple, to try if it was perpendicular. He almost always gives judgment for plaintiff, and if the poor defendant has an offset, he makes him sue it, so that it grinds a grist both ways for him, like the upper and lower millstone.

People soon began to assemble, some on foot, and others on horseback and in waggons—Pugnose's tavern was all bustle and confusion—Plaintiffs, Defendants, and witnesses, all talking, quarrelling, explaining, and drinking. Here come's the Squire, said one; I'm thinking his horse carries more roguery than law, said another; they must have been in proper want of timber to make a justice of, said a third, when they took such a crooked stick as that; sap-headed enough too for refuse, said a stout looking farmer; may be so, said another, but as hard at the heart as a log of elm; howsomever, said a third, I hope it wont be long afore he has the wainy edge scored off of him, any how. Many more such remarks were made, all drawn from familiar objects, but all expressive of bitterness and contempt.

He carried one or two large books with him in his gig, and a considerable roll of papers. As soon as the obsequious Mr. Pugnose saw him at the-door, he assisted him to alight, ushered him into the "best room," and desired the constable to attend "the Squire." The crowd immediately entered, and the constable opened the court in due form, and commanded silence.

Taking out a long list of causes, Mr. Pettifog commenced reading the names—James Sharp versus John Slug—call John Slug; John Slug being duly called, and not answering, was defaulted. In this manner he proceeded to default some 20 or 30 persons; at last he came to a cause, William Hare versus Dennis O'Brien—call Dennis O'Brien; here I am, said a voice from the other room—here I am, who has anything to say to Dennis O'Brien? Make less noise, sir, said the Justice, or I'll commit you. Commit me, is it, said Dennis, take care then, Squire, you don't commit yourself. You are sued by William Hare for three pounds for a month's board and lodging, what have you to say to it? Say to it, said Dennis, did you ever hear what Tim Doyle said when he was going to be hanged for stealing a pig? says he, if the pig hadn't squealed in the bag, I'd never have been found out, so I wouldn't—so I'll take warning by Tim Doyle's fate; I say nothing, let him prove it. Here Mr. Hare was called upon for his proof, but taking it for granted that the board would be admitted, and the defence opened, he was not prepared with proof. I demand, said Dennis, I demand an unsuit. Here there was a consultation between the Justice and the Plaintiff, when the Justice said, I shall not nonsuit him, I shall continue the cause. What, hang it up till next Court—you had better hang me up then at once—how can a poor man come here so often—this may be the entertainment Pug-

nose advertises for horses, but by Jacquers, it is no entertainment for me—I admit, then, sooner than come again, I admit it. You admit you owe him three pounds then for a month's board? I admit no such thing, I say I boarded with him a month, and was like Pat Moran's cow at the end of it, at the lifting, bad luck to him. A neighbour was here called, who proved that the three pounds might be the usual price. And do you know I taught his children to write at the school, said Dennis—You might, answered the witness—And what is that worth? I don't know—You don't know, faith I believe you're right, said Dennis, for if the children are half as big rogues as the father, they might leave writing alone, or they'd be like to be hanged for forgery. Here Dennis produced his account for teaching five children, two quarters, at 9 shillings a quarter each, 4*l.* 10*s.* I am sorry, Mr. O'Brien, said the Justice, very sorry, but your defence will not avail you, your account is too large for one Justice, any sum over three pounds must be sued before two magistrates—But I only want to offset as much as will pay the board—It can't be done in this shape, said the magistrate; I will consult Justice Doolittle, my neighbour, and if Mr. Hare won't settle with you, I will sue it for you. Well, said Dennis, all I have to say is, that there is not so big a rogue as Hare on the whole river, save and except one scoundrel who shall be nameless, making a significant and humble bow to the Justice. Here there was a general laugh throughout the Court—Dennis retired to the next room to indemnify himself by another glass of grog, and venting his abuse against Hare and the Magistrate. Disgusted at the gross partiality of the Justice, I also quitted the Court, fully concurring in the opinion, though not in the language, that Dennis was giving utterance to in the bar-room.

Pettifog owed his elevation to his interest at an election. It is to be hoped that his subsequent merits will be as promptly rewarded, by his dismissal from a bench which he disgraces and defiles by his presence.

CHAPTER VI.

ANECDOTES.

As we mounted our horses to proceed to Amherst, groups of country people were to be seen standing about Pugnose's inn, talking over the events of the morning, while others were dispersing to their several homes.

A pretty prime superfine scoundrel, that Pettifog, said the Clockmaker; he and his constable are well mated, and they've travelled in

the same gear so long together, that they make about as nice a yoke of rascals, as you'll meet in a day's ride. They pull together like one rope reeved through two blocks. That constable was een almost strangled t'other day; and if he hadn't had a little grain more wit than his master, I guess he'd had his wind-pipe stopped as tight as a bladder. There is an outlaw of a feller here, for all the world like one of our Kentucky Squatters, one Bill Smith—a critter that neither fears man nor devil. Sheriff and constable can make no hand of him—they can't catch him no how; and if they do come up with him, he slips through their fingers like an eel: and then, he goes armed, and he can knock the eye out of a squirrel with a ball, at fifty yards hand running—a regular ugly customer.

Well, Nabb, the constable, had a writ agin him, and he was cyphering a good while how he should catch him; at last he hit on a plan that he thought was pretty clever, and he schemed for a chance to try it. So one day he heard that Bill was up at Pugnose's Inn, a settling some business, and was likely to be there all night. Nabb waits till it was considerable late in the evening, and then he takes his horse and rides down to the Inn, and hitches his beast behind the hay-stack. Then he crawls up to the window and peeps in, and watches there till Bill should go to bed, thinking the best way to catch them are sort of animals is to catch them asleep. Well, he kept Nabb a waiting outside so long, with his talking and singing, that he well nigh fell asleep first himself; at last Bill began to strip for bed. First he takes out a long pocket pistol, examines the priming, and lays it down on the table, near the head of the bed.

When Nabb sees this, he begins to creep like all over, and feel kinder ugly, and rather sick of his job; but when he seed him jump into bed, and heerd him snore out a noise like a man driving pigs to market, he plucked up courage, and thought he might do it easy arter all if he was to open the door softly and make one spring on him afore he could wake. So round he goes, lifts up the latch of his door as soft as soap, and makes a jump right atop of him, as he lay on the bed. I guess I got you this time, said Nabb. I guess so too, said Bill, but I wish you wouldn't lay so plaguy heavy on me—jist turn over, that's a good fellow, will you? With that, Bill lays his arm on him to raise him up, for he said he was squeezed as flat as a pancake, and afore Nabb knew where he was, Bill rolled him right over, and was atop of him. Then he seized him by the throat, and twisted his pipe, till his eyes were as big as saucers, his tongue grew six inches longer, while he kept making faces, for all the world like the pirate that was hanged on Monument Hill, at Boston. It was pretty near over with him, when Nabb thought of his spurs; so he just curled up both heels, and drove the spurs right into him; he let him have it jist below his crupper; as Bill was naked, he

had a fair chance, and he ragged him like the leaf of a book cut open with your finger. At last, Bill could stand it no longer; he let go his hold, and roared like a bull, and clapping both hands ahind him, he out of the door like a shot. If it hadn't been for them are spurs, I guess Bill would have saved the hangman a job of Nabb that time.

The Clockmaker was an observing man, and equally communicative. Nothing escaped his notice; he knew every body's genealogy, history and means, and like a driver of an English Stage Coach, was not unwilling to impart what he knew. Do you see that snug looking house there, said he, with a short sarce garden afore it, that belongs to Elder Thomson. The elder is pretty close-fisted, and holds special fast to all he gets. He is a just man and very pious, but I have observed when a man becomes near about too good, he is apt, sometimes, to slip ahead into avarice, unless he looks sharper arter his girths. A friend of mine in Connecticut, an old sea captain, who was once let in for it pretty deep by a man with a broader brim than common, said to me, "friend Sam," says he, "I don't like those folks who are too d—n good." There is, I expect, some truth in it, tho' he needn't have swore at all, but he was an awful hand to swear. Howsomever that may be, there is a story about the Elder that's not so coarse neither.

It appears an old Minister came there once to hold a meetin' at his house—well,—after meetin' was over, the Elder took the minister all over his farm, which is pretty tidy, I tell you: and he showed him a great Ox he had, and a swingeing big Pig, that weighed some six or seven hundred weight, that he was plaguy proud of, but he never offered the old minister any thing to eat or drink. The preacher was pretty tired of all this, and seeing no prospect of being asked to partake with the family, and tolerably sharp set, he asked one of the boys to fetch him his horse out of the barn. When he was taking leave of the Elder (there were several folks by at the time) says he, Elder Thomson, you have a fine farm here, a very fine farm, indeed; you have a large Ox too, a very large Ox; and I think, said he, I've seen to-day (turning and looking him full in the face, for he intended to hit him pretty hard), *I think I have seen to-day the greatest Hog I ever saw in my life.* The neighbours snickered a good deal, and the Elder felt pretty streaked. I guess he'd give his great Pig or his great Ox either, if that story hadn't got wind.

CHAPTER VII.

GO AHEAD.

WHEN we resumed our conversation, the Clockmaker said, "I guess we are the greatest nation on the face of the airth, and the most enlightened too."

This was rather too arrogant to pass unnoticed, and I was about replying, that whatever doubts there might be on that subject, there could be none whatever that they were the most *modest*; when he continued, "we go ahead, the Nova Scotians go astarn." Our ships go ahead of the ships of other folks, our steam-boats beat the British in speed, and so do our stage-coaches; and I reckon a real right down New York trotter might stump the univarse for going "ahead." But since we introduced the Railroads, if we don't go "ahead" its a pity. We never fairly knew what going the whole hog was till then; we actilly went ahead of ourselves, and that's no easy matter I tell you. If they only had edication here, they might learn to do so too, but they don't know nothin'. You undervalue them, said I, they have their College and Academies, their grammar schools and primary institutions, and I believe there are few among them who cannot read and write.

I guess all that's nothin', said he. As for Latin and Greek, we don't valy it a cent; we teach it, and so we do painting and music, because the English do, and we like to go ahead on'em, even in them are things. As for reading, its well enough for them that has nothing to do, and writing is plaguy apt to bring a man to States-prison, particularly if he writes his name so like another man as to have it mistaken for his'n. Cyphering is the thing—if a man knows how to cypher, he is sure to grow rich. We are a "calculating" people, we all cypher.

A horse that wont go ahead, is apt to run back, and the more you whip him the faster he goes astarn. That's jist the way with the Nova Scotians; they have been running back so fast lately, that they have tumbled over a *Bank* or two, and nearly broke their necks; and now they've got up and shook themselves, they swear their dirty clothes and bloody noses are all owing to the *Banks*. I guess if they won't look ahead for the future, they'll larn to look behind, and see if there's a bank near hand 'em.

A bear always goes down a tree *starn foremost*. He is a cunning critter, he knows tante safe to carry a heavy load over his head, and his rump is so heavy, he don't like to trust it over hisn, for fear it might take a lurch, and carry him heels over head to the ground; so

he lets his starn down first, and his head arter. I wish the blue-noses would find as good an excuse in their rumps for running backwards as he has. But the bear "*cyphers*," he knows how many pounds his hams weigh, and he "*calculates*" if he carried them up in the air, they might be top heavy for him.

If we had this Province we'd go to work and "*cypher*" right off. Halifax is nothing without a river or back country; add nothing to nothing, and I guess you have nothing still—add a Railroad to the Bay of Fundy, and how much do you git? That requires cyphering—it will cost 300,000 dollars, or 75,000 pounds your money—add for notions omitted in the addition column, one third, and it makes even money—100,000 pounds. Interest at 5 per cent. 5,000 pounds a year, now turn over the slate and count up freight—I make it upwards of 25,000 pounds a year. If I had you at the desk, I'd shew you a bill of items. Now comes "*subtraction*:" deduct cost of engines, wear and tear, and expenses, and what not, and reduce it for shortness down to 5,000 pounds a year, the amount of interest. What figures have you got now? you have an investment that pays interest, I guess, and if it don't pay more then I don't know chalk from cheese. But suppose it don't, and that it only yields $2\frac{1}{2}$ per cent. (and it requires good cyphering, I tell you, to say how it would act with folks that like going astarn better than going ahead), what would them are wise ones say then? Why the critters would say it won't pay; but I say the sum ant half stated.

Can you count in your head? Not to any extent, said I. Well, that's an eternal pity, said the Clockmaker, for I should like to show you *Yankee Cyphering*. What is the entire real estate of Halifax worth, at a valeation? I really cannot say. Ah, said he, I see you don't cypher, and Latin and Greek won't do; them are people had no railroads. Well, find out, and then only add ten per cent. to it, for increased value, and if it don't give the cost of a railroad, then my name is not Sam Slick. Well, the land between Halifax and Ardoise is worth——nothing, add 5 per cent. to that, and send the sum to the College, and ax the students how much it comes to. But when you get into Hants County, I guess you have land worth coming all the way from Boston to see. His Royal Highness the King, I guess, hasn't got the like in his dominions. Well, add 15 per cent. to all them are lands that border on Windsor Basin, and 5 per cent. to what butts on basin of Mines, and then what do you get? A pretty considerable sum I tell you—but its no use to give you the *chalks*, if you can't keep the *tallies*. *gather 2 new books*

Now we will lay down the schoolmaster's assistant and take up another book every bit and grain as good as that, although these folks affect to sneer at it—I mean human natur. Ah! said I, a knowledge of that was of great service to you, certainly, in the sale of your clock

to the old Deacon; let us see how it will assist you now. What does a clock want that's run down? said he. Undoubtedly to be wound up, I replied. I guess you've hit it this time. The folks of Halifax have run down, and they'll never go to all eternity, till they are wound up into motion; the works are all good, and it is plaguy well cased and set—it only wants a *key*. Put this railroad into operation, and the activity it will inspire into business, the new life it will give the place, will surprise you. It's like lifting a child off its crawling, and putting him on his legs to run—see how the little critter goes ahead arter that. A kurnel (I don't mean a Kurnel of militia, for we don't valy that breed o'cattle nothing—they do nothing but strut about and screech all day, like peacocks), but a kurnel of grain, when sowed, will stool into several shoots, and each shoot bear many kurnels, and will multiply itself thus—4 times 1 is 4, and 4 times 25 is 100 (you see all natur cyphers, except the blue-noses). Jist so, this here railroad will not perhaps beget other railroads, but it will beget a spirit of enterprise, that will beget other useful improvements. It will enlarge the sphere and the means of trade, open new sources of traffic and supply—develop resources—and what is of more value perhaps than all—beget motion. It will teach the folks that go astarn or stand stock still like the state-house in Boston (though they do say the foundation of that has moved a little this summer), not only to go "*ahead*" but to *nullify time and space*.

Here his horse (who, feeling the animation of his master, had been restive of late) set off at a most prodigious rate of trotting. It was some time before he was reined up. When I overtook him, the Clockmaker said, this old Yankee horse, you see, understands our word "go ahead" better nor these blue noses.

What is it, he continued, what is it, that 'feters' the heels of a young country, and hangs like a 'poke' around its neck? what retards the cultivation of its soil, and the improvement of its fisheries?—the high price of labour, I guess. Well, what's a railroad? The substitution of mechanical for human and animal labour, on a scale as grand as our great country. Labour is dear in America, and cheap in Europe. A railroad, therefore, is comparatively no manner of use to them, to what it is to us—it does wonders there, but it works miracles here. There it makes the old man younger, but here it makes a child a giant. To us it is river, bridge, road, and canal, all one. It saves what we han't got to spare, men, horses, carts, vessels, barges, and what's all in all—time.

Since the creation of the Universe, I guess it's the greatest invention, arter man. Now this is what I call "cyphering" arter human natur, while figures are cyphering arter the "assistant." These two sorts of cyphering make idecation—and you may depend on't, Squire, there is nothing like folks cyphering, if they want to go "ahead."

CHAPTER VIII.

THE PREACHER THAT WANDERED FROM HIS TEXT.

I GUESS, said the Clockmaker, we know more of Nova Scotia than the blue-noses themselves do. The Yankees see further ahead than most folks; they can een a most see round t'other side of a thing; indeed some on them have hurt their eyes by it, and sometimes I think that's the reason such a sight of them wear spectacles. The first I ever heerd tell of Cumberland was from Mr. Everett of Congress; he know'd as much about it as if he had lived here all his days, and may be a little grain more. He is a splendid man that—we class him No. 1, letter A. One night I chanced to go into General Peep's tavern at Boston, and who should I see there but the great Mr. Everett, a studying over a map of the Province of Nova Scotia. Why it aint possible! said I—if that aint Professor Everett, as I am alive! why how do you do, Professor? Pretty well, I give you thanks, said he; how be you? but I aint no longer Professor; I gin that up, and also the trade of Preaching, and took to Politics. You don't say so, said I; why what on airth is the cause o' that? Why, says he, look here, Mr. Slick. What *is* the use of reading the Proverbs of Solomon to our free and enlightened citizens, that are every mite and mortal as wise as he was? That are man undertook to say there was nothing new under the sun. I guess he'd think he spoke a little too fast, if he was to see our steam-boats, rail-roads, and India rubber shoes—three inventions worth more nor all he knew put in a heap together. Well, I don't know; said I, but somehow or another I guess you'd have found preaching the best speculation in the long run; them are Unitarians pay better than Uncle Sam (we call, said the Clockmaker, the American public Uncle Sam, as you call the British John Bull).

That remark seemed to grig him a little; he felt oneasy like, and walked twice across the room, fifty fathoms deep in thought; at last he said, which way are you from, Mr. Slick, this hitch? Why, says I, I've been away up south, a speculating in nutmegs. I hope, says the Professor, they were a good article, the real right down genuine thing. No mistake, says I,—no mistake, Professor: they were all prime, first chop, but why did you ax that are question? Why, says he, that eternal scoundrel, that Captain John Allspice of Nahant, he used to trade to Charleston, and he carried a cargo once there of fifty barrels of nutmegs: well, he put a half a bushel of good ones into each end of the barrel, and the rest he filled up with wooden ones, so like the real thing, no soul could tell the difference until *he bit*

one with his teeth: and that he never thought of doing, until he was first *bit himself*. Well, its been a standing joke with them southerners agin us ever since.

It was only t'other day at Washington, that everlasting Virginy duellist General Cuffy, afore a number of senators, at the President's house, said to me, Well Everett, says he—you know I was always dead agin your Tariff bill, but I have changed my mind since your able speech on it; I shall vote for it now. Give me your hand, says I, General Cuffy; the Boston folks will be dreadful glad when they hear your splendid talents are on our side—I think it will go now—we'll carry it. Yes, says he, your factories down east beat all natur; they g. ahead on the English a long chalk. You may depend I was glad to hear the New Englanders spoken of that way—I felt proud, I tell you—and, says he, there's one manufacture that might stump all Europe to produce the like. What's that? says I, looking as pleased all the time as a gall that's tickled. Why, says he, the facture of wooden nutmegs; that's a cap sheef that bangs the bush—its a real Yankee patent invention. With that all the gentlemen set up a laugh, you might have heerd away down to Sandy Hook—and the General gig gobbled like a great turkey cock, the half nigger half alligator like looking villain as he is. I tell you what, Mr. Slick, said the Professor, I wish with all my heart them are damned nutmegs were in the bottom of the sea. That was the first oath I ever heerd him let slip: but he was dreadful ryled, and it made me feel ugly too, for its awful to hear a minister swear; and the only match I know for it, is to hear a regular sneezer of a sinner quote scripture. Says I, Mr. Everett, that's the fruit that politics bear; for my part I never seed a good graft on it yet, that bore any thing good to eat, or easy to digest.

Well, he stood awhile looking down on the carpet, with his hands behind him, quite taken up a cyphering in his head, and then he straightened himself up, and he put his hand upon his heart, just as he used to do in the pulpit (he looked pretty I tell you), and slowly lifting his hand off his breast, he said, Mr. Slick, our tree of liberty was a beautiful tree—a splendid tree—it was a sight to look at; it was well fenced and well protected, and it grew so stately and so handsome, that strangers came from all parts of the globe to see it. They all allowed it was the most splendid thing in the world. Well, the mobs have broken in and tore down the fences, and snapped off the branches, and scattered all the leaves about, and it looks no better than a gallows tree. I am afeared, said he, I tremble to think on it, but I am afeared our ways will no longer be ways of pleasantness, nor our paths, paths of peace; I am, indeed, I vow, Mr. Slick. He looked so streaked and so chop-fallen, that I felt kinder sorry for him; I actilly thought he'd a boo-hoo right out.

So, to turn the conversation, says I, Professor, what are great map is that I seed you a studyin' over when I came in? Says he, it's a map of Nova Scotia. That, says he, is a valuable province, a real clever province; we hant got the like on it, but its most plagily in our way. Well, says I, send for Sam Patch (that are man was a great diver, says the Clockmaker, and the last dive he took was off the falls of Niagara, and he was never heerd of agin till t'other day, when Captain Enoch Wentworth, of the Susy Ann Whaler, saw him in the South Sea. Why, says Captain Enoch to him, why Sam, says he, how on airth did you get here? I thought you was drowned at the Canadian lines. Why, says he, I didn't get on airth here at all, but I came right slap *through* it. In that are Niagara dive, I went so everlasting deep, I thought it was just as short to come up t'other side, so out I came in those parts. If I don't take the shine off the Sea Serpent, when I get back to Boston, then my name's not Sam Patch). Well, says I, Professor, send for Sam Patch, the diver, and let him dive down and stick a torpedo in the bottom of the Province and blow it up; or if that won't do, send for some of our steam tow-boats from our great Eastern cities, and tow it out to sea; you know there's nothing our folks can't do, when they once fairly take hold on a thing in airnest.

Well, that made him laugh; he seemed to forget about the nutmegs, and says he, that's a bright scheme, but it won't do; we shall want the Province some day, and I guess we'll buy it of King William; they say he is over head and ears in debt, and owes nine hundred millions of pounds starling—we'll buy it, as we did Florida. In the meantime we must have a canal from Bay Fundy to Bay Varte, right through Cumberland neck, by Shittyack, for our fishing vessels to go to Labradore. I guess you must ax leave first, said I. That's jist what I was cyphering at, says he, when you came in. I believe we won't ax them at all, but jist fall to and do it; *its a road of needcessity*. I once heard Chief Justice Marshall of Baltimore say; If the people's highway is dangerous—a man may take down a fence—and pass through the fields as a way of *needcessity*; and we shall do it on that principle, as the way round by Isle Sable is dangerous. I wonder the Nova Scotians don't do it for their own convenience. Said I, it wouldn't make a bad speculation that. The critters don't know no better, said he. Well, says I, the St. John's folks, why don't they? for they are pretty cute chaps them.

They remind me, say the Professor, of Jim Billings. You knew Jim Billings, didn't you, Mr. Slick? O yes, said I, I knew him. It was he that made such a talk by shipping blankets to the West Indies. The same, says he. Well, I went to see him the other day at Mrs. Lecain's Boarding House, and says I, Billings, you have a nice location here. A plaguy sight too nice, said he. Marm Lecain

^{course}
 makes such an eternal touss about her carpets, that I have to go along that everlasting long entry, and down both staircases, to the street door to spit; and it keeps all the gentlemen a running with their mouths full all day. I had a real bout with a New Yorker this morning, I run down to the street door, and afore I seed any body a coming, I let go, and I vow if I didn't let a chap have it all over his white waistcoat. Well, he makes a grab at me, and I shuts the door right to on his wrist, and hooks the door chain taught, and leaves him there, and into Marm Lecain's bed-room like a shot, and hides behind the curtain. Well, he roared like a bull, till black Lucretia, one of the house helps, let him go, and they looked into all the gentlemen's rooms and found nobody—so I got out of that are scrape. So, what with Marm Lecain's carpets in the house, and other folk's waistcoats in the street, its too nice a location for me, I guess, so I shall up killoch and off to-morrow to the *Tree* mont.

Now, says the Professor, the St. John's folks are jist like Billings, fifty cents would have bought him a spit box, and saved him all them are journeys to the street door—and a canal at Bay Varte would save the St. John's folks a voyage all round Nova Scotia. Why, they can't get at their own backside settlements, without a voyage most as long as one to Europe. *If we had that are neck of land in Cumberland, we'd have a ship canal there, and a town at each end of it as big as Portland.* You may talk of Solomon, said the Professor, but if Solomon in all his glory was not arrayed like a lily of the field, neither was he in all his wisdom equal in knowledge to a real free American citizen. Well, said I, Professor, we are a most enlightened people, that's sartain, but somehow I don't like to hear you run down King Solomon neither; perhaps he warnt quite so wise as Uncle Sam, but then, said I (drawing close to the Professor, and whispering in his ear, for fear any folks in the bar room might hear me), but then, said I, may be he was every bit and grain as honest. Says he, Mr. Slick, there are some folks who think a good deal and say but little, and they are wise folks; and there are others agin, who blart right out whatever comes uppermost, and I guess they are pretty considerable superfined darned fools.

And with that he turned right round, and sat down to his map, and never said another word, lookin' as mad as a hatter the whole blessed time.

You knew
 knew him.
 o the West
 e other day
 you have a
 rm Lecain

CHAPTER IX.

YANKEE EATING AND HORSE FEEDING.

Did you ever heer tell of Abernethy, a British doctor? said the Clockmaker. Frequently, said I, he was an eminent man, and had a most extensive practice. Well, I reckon, he was a vulgar critter that, he replied, he treated the honble. Alden Gobble, secretary to our legation at London, dreadful bad once; and I guess if it had been me he had used that way, I'd a fixed his flint for him, so that he'd think twice afore he'd fire such another shot as that are again. I'd a made him make tracks, I guess, as quick as a dog does a hog from a potato field. He'd a found his way out of the hole in the fence a plagy sight quicker than he came in, I reckon.

His manner, said I, was certainly rather unceremonious at times, but he was so honest and so straightforward, that no person was, I believe, ever seriously offended at him. *It was his way.* Then his way was so plagy rough, continued the Clockmaker, that he'd been the better, if it had been hammered and mauled down smoother. I'd a levelled him as flat as a flounder. Pray what was his offence? said I. Bad enough you may depend.

The honble. Alden Gobble was dyspeptic, and he suffered great oncasiness arter eatin, so he goes to Abernethy for advice. What's the matter with you? said the Doctor, jist that way, without even passing the time o' day with him—What's the matter with you? said he. Why, says Alden, I presume I have the dyspepsy. Ah! said he, I see: a Yankee swallowed more dollars and cents than he can digest. I am an American citizen, says Alden, with great dignity; I am Secretary to our Legation at the Court of St. James. The devil you are, said Abernethy; then you'll soon get rid of your dyspepsy. I don't see that are inference, said Alden; it don't follow from what you predicate at all—it an't a natural consequence, I guess, that a man should cease to be ill, because he is called by the voice of a free and enlightened people to fill an important office. (The truth is, you could no more trap Alden than you could an Indian. He could see other folks' trail, and made none himself; he was a real diplomatist, and I believe our diplomatists are allowed to be the best in the world.) But I tell you it does follow, said the Doctor; for in the company you'll have to keep, you'll have to eat like a Christian.

It was an everlasting pity Alden contradicted him, for he broke out like one ravin distracted mad. I'll be d——d, said he, if ever I saw a Yankee that didn't bolt his food whole like a Boa Constrictor.

How the devil can you expect to digest food, that you neither take the trouble to dissect, nor time to masticate? It's no wonder you lose your teeth, for you never use them; nor your digestion, for you overload it; nor your saliva, for you expend it on the carpets, instead of your food. Its disgusting, its beastly. You Yankees load your stomachs as a Devonshire man does his cart, as full as it can hold, and as fast as he can pitch it with a dung fork, and drive off; and then you complain that such a load of compost is too heavy for you. Dyspepsy, eh! infernal guzzling you mean. I'll tell you what, Mr. Secretary of Legation, take half the time to eat, that you do to draw out your words, chew your food half as much as you do your filthy tobacco, and you'll be well in a month.

I don't understand such language, said Alden (for he was fairly ryled, and got his dander up, and when he shows clear grit, he looks wicked ugly, I tell you), I don't understand such language, Sir; I came here to consult you professionally, and not to be—Don't understand! said the Doctor, why its plain English; but here, read my book—and he shoved a book into his hands and left him in an instant, standing alone in the middle of the room.

If the honble. Alden Gobble had gone right away and demanded his passports, and returned home with the Legation, in one of our first class frigates (I guess the English would as soon see pyson as one o' them are Serpents), to Washington, the President and the people would have sustained him in it, I guess, until an apology was offered for the insult to the nation. I guess if it had been me, said Mr. Slick, I'd a headed him afore he slipt out o' the door and pinned him up agin the wall, and made him bolt his words agin, as quick as he throw'd 'em up, for I never see'd an Englishman that didn't cut his words as short as he does his horse's tail, close up to the stump.

It certainly was very coarse and vulgar language, and I think, said I, that your Secretary had just cause to be offended at such an ungentleman-like attack, although he showed his good sense in treating it with the contempt it deserved. It was plagy lucky for the doctor, I tell you, that he cut his stick as he did, and made himself scarce, for Alden was an ugly customer; he'd a gin him a proper scalding—he'd a taken the bristles off his hide as clean as the skin of a spring shote of a pig killed at Christmas.

The Clockmaker was evidently excited by his own story, and to indemnify himself for these remarks on his countrymen he indulged for some time in ridiculing the Nova Scotians.

Do you see that are flock of colts, said he (as we passed one of those beautiful prairies that render the vallies of Nova Scotia so verdant and so fertile), well, I guess they keep too much of that are stock. I heerd an Indian one day ax a tavern keeper for some rum; why, Joe Spawdceck, said he, I reckon you have got too much already.

Too much of any thing, said Joe, is not good, but too much rum is jist enough. I guess these blue-noses think so bout their horses, they are fairly eat up by them, out of house and home, and they are no good neither. They beant good saddle horses, and they beant good draft beasts—they are jist neither one thing nor t'other. They are like the drink of our Connecticut folks. At mowing time they use molasses and water, nasty stuff only fit to catch flies—it spiles good water and makes bad beer. No wonder the folks are poor. Look at them are great dykes; well, they all go to feed horses; and look at their grain fields on the upland; well, they are all sowed with oats to feed horses, and they buy their bread from us; so we feed the asses, and they feed the horses. If I had them critters on that are marsh, on a location of mine, I'd jist take my rifle and shoot every one on them; the nasty yo necked, cat hammed, heavy headed, flat eared, crooked shanked, long legged, narrow chested, good for nothin brutes; they aint worth their keep one winter. I vow, I wish one of these blue noses, with his go-to-meetin clothes on, coat tails pinned up behind like a leather blind of a Shay, an old spur on one heel, and a pipe stuck through his hat band, mounted on one of these limber timbered critters, that moves its hind legs like a hen scratching gravel, was sot down in Broadway, in New York for a sight. Lord! I think I hear the West Point cadets a larfin at him. Who brought that are scarecrow out of standing corn and stuck him here? I guess that are citizen came from away down east of the Notch of the White Mountains. Here comes the Cholera doctor, from Canada—not from Canada, I guess, neither, for he don't look as if he had ever been among the rapids. If they wouldn't poke fun at him it's a pity.

If they'd keep less horses, and more sheep, they'd have food and clothing, too, instead of buying both. I vow I've larfed afore now till I have fairly wet myself a cryin', to see one of these folks catch a horse: may be he has to go two or three miles of an arrand. Well, down he goes on the dyke, with a bridle in one hand and an old tin pan in another, full of oats, to catch his beast. First he goes to one flock of horses, and then to another, to see if he can find his own critter. At last he gets sight on him, and goes softly up to him, shakin' of his oats, and a coaxin' him, and jist as he goes to put his hand upon him, away he starts all head and tail, and the rest with him; that starts another flock, and they set a third off and at last every troop on 'em goes, as if Old Nick was arter them, till they amount to two or three hundred in a drove. Well, he chases them clear across the Tantramer marsh, seven miles good, over ditches, creeks, mire holes, and flag ponds, and then they turn and take a fair chase for it back again seven miles more. By this time, I presume they are all pretty considerably well tired, and Blue Nose, he goes and gets up all the men folks in the neighbourhood, and catches his

beast, as they do a moose arter he is fairly run down; so he runs fourteen miles, to ride two, because he is in a tarnation hurry. It's e'en a most equal to eatin' soup with a fork, when you are short of time. It puts me in mind of catching birds by sprinkling salt on their tails; it's only one horse a man can ride out of half a dozen, arter all. One has no shoes, t'other has a colt, one arnt broke, another has a sore back, while a fifth is so eternal cunnin, all Cumberland couldn't catch him, till winter drives him up to the barn for food.

Most of them are dyke marshes have what they call 'honey pots' in 'em; that is a deep hole all full of squash, where you can't find no bottom. Well, every now and then, when a feller goes to look for his horse, he sees his tail a stickin' right out an eend, from one of these honey pots, and wavin' like a head of broom corn; and sometimes you see two or three trapped there, e'en a most smothered, everlastin' tired, half swimmin', half wadin', like rats in a molasses cask. When they find 'em in that are pickle, they go and get ropes, and tie 'em tight round their necks, and half hang 'em to make 'em float, and then haul 'em out. Awful looking critters they be, you may depend, when they do come out; for all the world like half drowned kittens—all slinkey slimey—with their great long tails glued up like a swab of oakum dipped in tar. If they don't look foolish it's a pity! Well, they have to nurse these critters all winter, with hot mashies, warm covering, and what not, and when spring comes, they mostly die, and if they don't, they are never no good arter. I wish with all my heart half the horses in the country were barrelled up in these here 'honey pots,' and then there'd be near about one half too many left for profit. Jist look at one of these barn yards in the spring—half a dozen half-starved colts, with their hair looking a thousand ways for Sunday, and their coats hangin' in tatters, and half a dozen good for nothin' old horses, a crowdin' out the cows and sheep.

Can you wonder that people who keep such an unprofitable stock, come out of the small eend of the horn in the long run?

CHAPTER X.

THE ROAD TO A WOMAN'S HEART—THE BROKEN HEART.

As we approached the Inn at Amherst, the Clockmaker grew uneasy. Its pretty well on in the evening, I guess, said he, and Marm Pugwash is as onsartin in her temper as a mornin in April; its all sunshine or all clouds with her, and if she's in one of her tantrums, she'll stretch out her neck and hiss, like a goose with a flock of goss-lins. I wonder what on airth Pugwash was a thinkin on, when he

signed articles of partnership with that are woman; she's not a bad lookin piece of furniture neither, and its a proper pity sich a clever woman should carry such a stiff upper lip—she rominds me of our old minister Joshua Hopewell's apple trees.

The old minister had an orchard of most particular good fruit, for he was a great hand at buddin, graftin, and what not, and the orchard (it was on the south side of the house) stretched right up to the road. Well, there were some trees hung over the fence, I never seed such bearers, the apples hung in ropes, for all the world like strings of onions, and the fruit was beautiful. Nobody touched the minister's apples, and when other folks lost their'n from the boys, his'n always hung there like bait to a hook, but there never was so much as a nibble at em. So I said to him one day, Minister, said I, how on airth do you manage to keep your fruit that's so exposed, when no one else cant do it nohow. Why, says he, they are dreadful pretty fruit, ant they? I guess, said I, there ant the like on 'em in all Connecticut. Well, says he, I'll tell you the secret, but you needn't let on to no one about it. That are row next the fence I grafted it myself, I took great pains to get the right kind, I sent clean up to Roxberry, and away down to Squaw-neck Creek (I was afeard he was agoin to give me day and date for every graft, being a terrible long-winded man in his stories), so says I, I know that, minister, but how do you preserve them? Why I was a goin' to tell you, said he, when you stopped me. That are outward row I grafted myself with the choicest I could find, and I succeeded. They are beautiful, but so eternal sour, no human soul can eat them. Well, the boys think the old minister's graftin has all succeeded about as well as that row, and they sarch no farther. They snicker at my graftin, and I laugh in my sleeve, I guess, at their penetration.

Now, Marm Pugwash is like the Minister's apples, very temptin fruit to look at, but desperate sour. If Pugwash had a watery mouth when he married, I guess its pretty puckery by this time. However, if she goes to act ugly, I'll give her a dose of 'soft sawder,' that will take the frown out of her frontispiece, and make her dial-plate as smooth as a lick of copal varnish. Its a pity she's such a kickin' devil, too, for she has good points—good eye—foot—neat pastern—fine chest—a clean set of limbs, and carries a good——. But here we are, now you'll see what 'soft sawder' will do.

When we entered the house, the traveller's room was all in darkness, and on opening the opposite door into the sitting room, we found the female part of the family extinguishing the fire for the night. Mrs. Pugwash had a broom in her hand, and was in the act (the last act of female housewifery) of sweeping the hearth. The strong flickering light of the fire, as it fell upon her tall fine figure and beautiful face, revealed a creature worthy of the Clockmaker's comments.

Good evening, Marm, said Mr. Slick, how do you do, and how's Mr. Pugwash? He, said she, why he's been abed this hour, you don't expect to disturb him this time of night I hope. Oh no, said Mr. Slick, certainly not, and I am sorry to have disturbed you, but we got detained longer than we expected; I am sorry that—. So am I, said she, but if Mr. Pugwash will keep an inn when he has no occasion to, his family can't expect no rest.

Here the Clockmaker, seeing the storm gathering, stooped down suddenly, and staring intently, held out his hand and exclaimed, Well, if that aint a beautiful child—come here, my little man, and shake hands along with me—well, I declare, if that are little feller aint the finest child I ever seed—what, not abed yet? ah, you rogue, where did you get them are pretty rosy cheeks; stole them from mamma, eh? Well, I wish my old mother could see that child, it is such a treat. In our country, said he, turning to me, the children are all as pale as chalk, or as yaller as an orange. Lord, that are little feller would be a show in our country—come to me, my man. Here the 'soft sawder' began to operate. Mrs. Pugwash said in a milder tone than we had yet heard, 'Go, my dear, to the gentleman—go, dear.' Mr. Slick kissed him, asked him if he would go to the States along with him, told him all the little girls there would fall in love with him, for they didn't see such a beautiful face once in a month of Sundays. Black eyes—let me see—ah mamma's eyes too, and black hair also; as I am alive, why you are a mamma's own boy, the very image of mamma. Do be seated, gentlemen, said Mrs. Pugwash—Sally, make a fire in the next room. She ought to be proud of you, he continued. Well, if I live to return here, I must paint your face, and have it put on my clocks, and our folks will buy the clocks for the sake of the face. Did you ever see, said he, again addressing me, such a likeness between one human and another, as between this beautiful little boy and his mother. I am sure you have had no supper, said Mrs. Pugwash to me; you must be hungry and weary, too—I am sorry to give you so much trouble, said I. Not the least trouble in the world, she replied, on the contrary, a pleasure.

We were then shewn into the next room, where the fire was now blazing up, but Mr. Slick protested he could not proceed without the little boy, and lingered behind me to ascertain his age, and concluded by asking the child if he had any aunt that looked like mamma.

As the door closed, Mr. Slick said, it's a pity she don't go well in gear. The difficulty with those critters is to get them to start, arther that there is no trouble with them if you don't check 'em too short. If you do, they'll stop again, run back and kick like mad, and then Old Nick himself wouldn't start 'em. Pugwash, I guess, don't understand the natur of the critter: she'll never go kind in harness for him.

When I see a child, said the Clockmaker, I always feel safe with

these women folk ; for I have always found that the road to a woman's heart lies through her child.

You seem, said I, to understand the female heart so well, I make no doubt you are a general favourite among the fair sex. Any man, he replied, that understands horses, has a pretty considerable fair knowledge of women, for they are just alike in temper, and require the very identical same treatment. *Incourage the timid ones, be gentle and steady with the fractious, but lather the sulky ones like blazes.*

People talk an everlasting sight of nonsense about wine, women, and horses. I've bought and sold 'em all, I've traded in all of them, and I tell you, there aint one in a thousand that knows a grain about either on 'em. You hear folks say, Oh, such a man is an ugly grained critter, he'll break his wife's heart; just as if a woman's heart was as brittle as a pipe stalk. The female heart, as far as my experience goes, is just like a new India Rubber Shoe; you may pull and pull at it, till it stretches out a yard long, and then let go, and it will fly right back to its old shape. Their hearts are made of stout leather, I tell you; there is a plaguy sight of wear in 'em.

I never knowed but one case of a broken heart, and that was in tother sex, one Washington Banks. He was a sneezer. He was tall enough to spit down on the heads of your grenadiers, and near about high enough to wade across Charlestown River, and as strong as a tow-boat. I guess he was somewhat less than a foot longer than the moral law and catechism too. He was a perfect pictur of a man; you couldn't falt him in no particular; he was so just a made critter; folks used to run to the winder when he passed, and say there goes Washington Banks, beant he lovely? I do believe there wasn't a gall in the Lowell factories, that warn't in love with him. Sometimes, at intermission, on Sabbath days when they 'all came out together (an amasin hansom sight too, near about a whole congregation of young galls), Banks used to say, "I vow, young ladies, I wish I had five hundred arms to reciprocate one with each of you; but I reckon I have a heart big enough for you all; it's a whapper, you may depend, and every mite and morsel of it at your service." Well, how do you act, Mr. Banks, half a thousand little clipper clapper tongues would say, "all at the same time, and their dear little eyes sparklin,' like so many stars twinklin' of a frosty night.

Well, when I last see'd him, he was all skin and bone, like a horse turned out to die. He was teetotally defleshed, a mere walkin' skeleton. I am dreadful sorry, says I, to see you, Banks, lookin so wecked; why you look like a sick turkey hen, all legs; what on airth ails you? I am dyin, says he, *of a broken heart.* What, says I, have the galls been jiltin you? No, no, says he, I beant such a fool as that neither. Well, says I, have you made a bad speculation?

No, says he, shakin his head, I hope I have too much clear grit in me to take on so bad for that. What under the sun is it, then? said I. Why, says he, I made a bet the fore part of summer with Lieutenant Oby Knowles, that I could shoulder the best bower of the Constitution frigate. I won my bet, *but the anchor was so eternal heavy it broke my heart.* Sure enough he did die that very fall, and he was the only instance I ever heerd tell of a *broken heart.*

CHAPTER XI.

CUMBERLAND OYSTERS PRODUCE MELANCHOLY FOREBODINGS.

THE '*soft sawder*' of the Clockmaker had operated effectually on the beauty of Amberst, our lovely hostess of Pugwash's Inn: indeed, I am inclined to think with Mr. Slick, that 'the road to a woman's heart lies through her child,' from the effect produced upon her by the praise bestowed on her infant boy.

I was musing on this feminine susceptibility to flattery, when the door opened, and Mrs. Pugwash entered, dressed in her sweetest smiles, and her best cap, an auxiliary by no means required by her charms, which, like an Italian sky, when unclouded, are unrivalled in splendour. Approaching me, she said, with an irresistible smile, Would you like Mr.—(here there was a pause, a hiatus, evidently intended for me to fill up with my name; but that no person knows, nor do I intend they shall; at Medley's Hotel, in Halifax, I was known as the stranger in No. 1. The attention that incognito procured for me, the importance it gave me in the eyes of the master of the house, its lodgers, and servants, is indescribable. It is only great people who travel incog. State travelling is inconvenient and slow; the constant weight of form and etiquette oppresses at once the strength and the spirits. It is pleasant to travel unobserved, to stand at ease, or exchange the full suit for the undress coat and fatigue jacket. Wherever, too, there is mystery there is importance: there is no knowing for whom I may be mistaken—but let me once give my humble cognomen and occupation, and I sink immediately to my own level, to a plebeian station and a vulgar name: not even my beautiful hostess, nor my inquisitive friend, the Clockmaker, who calls me 'Squire', shall ex-tract that secret!) Would you like, Mr.—Indeed I would, said I, Mrs. Pugwash, pray be seated, and tell me what it is. Would you like a dish of superior Shittyacks for supper? Indeed I would, said I, again laughing; but pray tell me what it is? Laws me! said she with a stare, where have you been all your days, that you never heard of our Shittyack Oysters? I thought every body had heard

of them. I beg pardon, said I, but I understood at Halifax, that the only oysters in this part of the world were found on the shores of Prince Edward Island. Oh! dear no, said our hostess, they are found all along the coast from Shittyack, through Bay of Vartes, away to Ramshay. The latter we seldom get, though the best; there is no regular conveyance, and when they do come, they are generally shelled and in kegs, and never in good order. I have not had a real good Ramshay in my house these two years, since Governor Maitland was here; he was amazin fond of them, and Lawyer Tolkemdeaf sent his carriage there on purpose to procure them fresh for him. Now we can't get them, but we have the Shittyacks in perfection; say the word and they shall be served up immediately.

A good dish and an unexpected dish is most acceptable, and certainly my American friend and myself did ample justice to the Oysters, which, if they have not so classical a name, have quite as good a flavour as their far-famed brethren of Milton. Mr. Slick eat so heartily, that when he resumed his conversation, he indulged in the most melancholy forebodings.

Did you see that are nigger, said he, that removed the Oyster shells? well, he's one of our Chesapickers, one of General Cuffy's slaves. I wish Admiral Cockburn had a taken them all off our hands at the same rate. We made a pretty good sale of them are black cattle, I guess, to the British; I wish we were well rid of 'em all. *The Blacks and the Whites* in the States show their teeth and snarl, they are jist ready to fall to. *The Protestants and Catholics* begin to lay back their ears, and turn tail for kickin. *The Abolitionists and Planters* are at it like two bulls in a pastur. *Mob-law and Lynch-law* are working like yeast in a barrel, and frothing at the bung-hole. *Nullification and Tariff* are like a charcoal pit, all covered up, but burning inside, and sending out smoke at every crack enough to stifle a horse. *General Government and State Government* every now and then square off and sparr, and the first blow given will bring a genuine set-to. *Surplus Revenue* is another bone of contention; like a shin of beef throwna mong a pack of dogs, it will set the whole on 'em by the ears.

You have heer'd tell of cotton rags dipt in turpentine, havn't you, how they produce combustion? Well, I guess we have the elements of spontaneous combustion among us in abundance; when it does break out, if you don't see an eruption of human gore worse than Etna lava, then I'm mistaken. There'll be the very devil to pay, that's a fact. I expect the blacks will butcher the Southern whites, and the Northerners will have to turn out and butcher them again; and all this shoot, hang, cut, stab, and burn business, will sweeten our folks' temper, as raw meat does that of a dog—it fairly makes me sick to think on it. The explosion may clear the air again, and

all be tranquil once more, but its an even chance if it don't leave us the three steam-boat options, to be blown sky high, to be scalded to death, or drowned.

If this sad picture you have drawn be indeed true to nature, how does your country, said I, appear so attractive, as to draw to it so large a portion of our population? It tante its attraction, said the Clockmaker; its nothin but its power of suction; it is a great whirlpool—a great vortex—it drags all the straw, and chips, and floating sticks, drift wood and trash into it. The small crafts are sucked in, and whirl round and round like a squirrel in a cage—they'll never come out. Bigger ones pass through at certain times of tide, and can come in and out with good pilotage, as they do at *Hell Gate* up the Sound.

You astonish me, said I, beyond measure; both your previous conversations with me, and the concurrent testimony of all my friends who have visited the States, give a different view of it. *Your friends!* said the Clockmaker, with such a tone of ineffable contempt, that I felt a strong inclination to knock him down for his insolence—your friends! Ensigns and leftenants, I guess, from the British marchin regiments in the Colonies, that run over five thousand miles of country in five weeks, on leave of absence, and then return, lookin as wise as the monkey that had seen the world. When they get back they are so chock full of knowledge of the Yankees, that it runs over of itself, like a hogshhead of molasses, rolled about in hot weather—a white froth and scum bubbles out of the bung; wishy washy-trash they call tours, sketches, travels, letters, and what not; vapid stuff, jist sweet enough to catch flies, cockroaches, and half-fledged galls. It puts me in mind of my French. I larnt French at night school one winter, of our minister, Joshua Hopewell (he was the most larned man of the age, for he taught himself een amost every language in Europe); well, next spring, when I went to Boston, I met a Frenchman, and I began to jabber away French to him: 'Polly woes a french shay,' says I. I don't understand Yankee yet, says he. You don't understand I says I, why its French. I guess you didn't expect to hear such good French, did you, away done east here? but we speak it real well, and its generally allowed we speak English, too, better than the British. Oh, says he, you one very droll Yankee, dat very good joke, Sare: you talk Indian and call it French. But, says I, Mister Mount shear, it is French, I vow; real merchantable, without wainy edge or shakes—all clear stuff; it will pass survey in any market—its ready stuck and seasoned. Oh, very like, says he, bowin as polito as a black waiter at New Orleans, very like, only I never heerd it afore; oh, very good French dat—*clear stuff*, no doubt, but I no understand—its all my fault, I dare say, Sare.

Thinks I to myself, a nod is as good as a wink to a blind horse, I see how the cat jumps—Minister knows so many languages he hant been particular enough to keep 'em in separate parcels, and mark 'em on the back, and they've got mixed, and sure enough I found my French was so overrun with other sorts, that it was better to lose the whole crop than to go to weedin, for as fast as I pulled up any strange seedlin, it would grow right up agin as quick as wink, if there was the least bit of root in the world left in the ground, so I leit it all rot on the field.

There is no way so good to larn French as to live among 'em, and if you *want to understand us, you must live among us, too*; your Halls, Hamiltons, and De Rouses, and such critters, what *can* they know of us? Can a chap catch a likeness flyin along a railroad? can he even see the features? Old Admiral Anson once axed one of our folks afore our glorious Revolution (if the British had a known us a little grain better at that time, they wouldn't have got whipped like a sack as they did then) where he came from? From the Chesapeake, said he. Aye, aye, said the Admiral, from the West Indies. I guess, said the Southaner, you may have been clean *round the world*, Admiral, but you have been plaguy *little in it*, not to know better nor that.

I shot a wild goose at River Philip last year, with the rice of Varginey fresh in his crop: he must have cracked on near about as fast as them other geese, the British travellers. Which know'd the most of the country they passed over, do you suppose? I guess it was much of a muchness—near about six of one, and a half dozen of tother; two eyes aint much better than one, if they are both blind.

No, if you want to know all about us and the blue noses (a pretty considerable share of Yankee blood in them too, I tell you; the old stock come from New England, and the breed is tolerable pure yet, near about one half apple scarce, and tother half molasses, all except to the Easterd, where there is a cross of the Scotch), jist ax me and I'll tell you candidly. I'm not one of them that can't see no good points in my neighbour's critter, and no bad ones in my own; I've seen too much of the world for that, I guess. Indeed, in a general way, I praise other folk's beasts, and keep dark about my own. Says I, when I meet Blue Nose mounted, that's a real smart horse of your'n, put him out, I guess he'll trot like mad. Well, he lets him have the spur, and the critter does his best, and then I pass him like a streak of lightning with mine. The feller looks all taken aback at that. Why, says he, that's a real clipper of your'n, I vow. Middlin, says I, (quite cool, as if I had heard that are same thing a thousand times), he's good enough for me, jist a fair trotter, and nothin to brag of. That goes near about as far agin in a general way, as a crackin and a boastin

does. Never *tell* folks you can go a head on 'em, but *do* it; it spares a great deal of talk, and helps them to save their breath to cool their broth. *sting for us*

No, if you want to know the inns and the outs of the Yankees—I've wintered them and summered them; I know all their points, shape, make, and breed; I've tried 'em alongside of other folks, and I know where they fall short, where they mate 'em, and where they have the advantage, about as well as some who think they know a plaguy sight more. It tants them that stare the most, that see the best always, I guess. Our folks have their faults, and I know them (I warn't born blind, I reckon), but your friends, the tour writers, are a little grain too hard on us. Our old nigger wench had several dirty, ugly lookin children, and was proper cross to 'em. Mother used to say, '*Juno, its better never to wipe a child's nose at all, I guess, than to wring it off.*'

CHAPTER XII.

THE AMERICAN EAGLE.

Just look out of the door, said the Clockmaker, and see what a beautiful night it is, how calm, how still, how clear it is, beant it lovely?—I like to look up at them are stars, when I am away from home, they put me in mind of our national flag, and it is generally allowed to be the first flag in the univarse now. The British can whip all the world, and we can whip the British. Its near about the prettiest sight I know of, is one of our first class frigates, manned with our free and enlightened citizens, all ready for sea; it is like the great American Eagle, on its perch, balancing itself for a start on the broad expanse of blue sky, afeared of nothin of its kind, and president of all it surveys. It was a good emblem that we chose, warn't it?

There was no evading so direct, and, at the same time, so conceited an appeal as this. Certainly, said I, the emblem was well chosen. I was particularly struck with it on observing the device on your naval buttons during the last war—an eagle with an anchor in its claws. That was a natural idea, taken from an ordinary occurrence: a bird purloining the anchor of a frigate—an article so useful and necessary for the food of its young. It was well chosen, and exhibited great taste and judgment in the artist. The emblem is more appropriate than you are aware of—boasting of what you cannot perform—grasping at what you cannot attain—an emblem of

arrogance and weakness, of ill-directed ambition and vulgar pretension.

It is a common phrase, said he, (with great composure) among seamen, to say 'damn your buttons,' and I guess its natural for you to say so of the buttons of our navals; I guess you have a right to that are oath. Its a sore subject, that, I reckon, and I believe I hadn't ought to have spoken of it to you at all. Brag is a good dog, but hold fast is a better one.

He was evidently annoyed, and with his usual dexterity gave vent to his feelings by a sally upon the blue-noses, who, he says, are a cross of English and Yankee, and therefore first cousins to us both. Perhaps, said he, that are eagle might with more propriety have been taken off as perched on an anchor, instead of holding it in his claws, and I think it would have been more nateral; but I suppose it was some stupid foreign artist that made that are blunder—I never seed one yet that was equal to ourn. If that Eagle is represented as trying what *he cant do*, its an honourable ambition arter all, but these blue-noses wont try what *they can do*. They put me in mind of a great big hulk of a horse in a cart, that wont put his shoulder to the collar at all for all the lambastin in the world, but turns his head round and looks at you, as much as to say, 'what an everlastin heavy thing an empty cart is, isn't it?' *An Owl should be their emblem, and the motto, 'He sleeps all the days of his life.'* The whole country is like this night; beautiful to look at, but silent as the grave—still as death, asleep, becalmed.

If the sea was always calm, said he, it would pyson the univarse; no soul could breathe the air, it would be so uncommon bad. Stagnant water is always unpleasant, but salt water, when it gets tainted, beats all natur; motion keeps it sweet and wholesome, and that our minister used to say is one of the 'wonders of the great deep.' This province is stagnant; it tante deep, like still water neither, for its shaller enough, gracious knows, but it is motionless, noiseless, lifeless. If you have ever been to sea in a calm, you'd know what a plagy tiresome thing it is for a man that's in a hurry. An everlasting flappin of the sails, and a creakin of the booms, and an onsteady pitchin of the ship, and folks lyin about dozin away their time, and the sea a heavin a long heavy swell, like the breathin of the chist of some great monster asleep. A passenger wonders the sailors are so plagy easy about it, and he goes a lookin out east, and a spyin out west, to see if there's any chance of a breeze, and says to himself, 'Well, if this aint dull music its a pity.' Then how streaked he feels when he sees a steamboat a clipping it by him like mad, and the folks on board pok'n fun at him, and askin him if he has any word to send home. Well, he says, if

any soul ever catches me on board a sail vessel again, when I can go by steam, I'll give him leave to tell me of it, that's a fact.

That's partly the case here. They are becalmed, and they see us going a head on them, till we are een almost out of sight; yet they han't got a steamboat, and they han't got a rail-road; indeed, I doubt if one half on 'em ever seed or heerd tell of one or tother of them. I never seed any folks like 'em except the Indians, and they wont even so much as look—they havn't the least morsel of curiosity in the world; from which one of ourun itarian preachers (they are dreadful hands at *doubtin* them. I dont doubt but that some day or another, they will *doubt* whether everything aint a *doubt*) in a very learned work, doubts whether they were ever descended from Eve at all. Old marm Eve's children, he says, are all lost, it is said, in consequence of *too much* curiosity, while these copper coloured folks are lost from havin *too little*. How can they be the same? Thinks I, that may be logic, old Dubersome, but it an't sense, don't extremes meet? Now, these blue-noses have no motion in 'em, no enterprise, no spirit, and if any critter shows any symptoms of activity, they say he is a man of no judgment, he's speculative, he's a schemer, in short, he's mad. They vegitate like a lettuce plant in sarse garden, they grow tall and spindlin, run to seed right off, grow as bitter as gaul, and die.

A gall once came to our minister to hire as a house help; says she, Minister, I suppose you don't want a young lady to do chamber business and breed worms, do you? For I've half a mind to take a spell at livin out (she meant, said the Clockmaker, house work and rearing silk worms). My pretty maiden, says he, a pattin her on the cheek (for I've often observed old men always talk kinder pleasant to women), my pretty maiden, where was you brought up? Why, says she, I guess I warn't brought at all, I growd up. Under what platform, says he (for he was very particular that all his house helps should go to his meetin), under what Church platform? Church platform, says she, with a toss of her head like a young colt that got a check of the curb, I guess I warn't raised under a platform at all, but in as good a house as yourn, grand as you be.—You said well, said the old minister, quite shocked, when you said you growd up, dear, for you have grown up in great ignorance. Then I guess you had better get a lady that knows more than me, says she, that's flat. I reckon I am every bit and grain as good as you be—If I dont understand a bum-byx (silk worm) both feedin, breedin, and rearin, then I want to know who does, that's all; church platform, indeed, says she, I guess you were raised under a glass frame in March, and transplanted on Independence day, warn't you? And off she sot, lookin as scorney as a London lady, and leavin the poor minister standin starin like a stuck pig. Well, well, says he, a liftin

up both hands, and turnin up the whites of his eyes like a duck in thunder, if that don't bang the bush!! It fairly beats sheep shearin, after the blackberry bushes have got the wool. It does, I vow; them are the tares them Unitarians sow in our grain fields at night; I guess they'll ruin the crops yet, and make the grounds so everlasting foul, we'll have to pare the sod and burn it, to kill the roots. Our fathers sowed the right seed here in the wilderness, and watered it with their tears, and watched over it with fastin and prayer, and now its fairly run out, that's a fact, I snore. Its got choaked up with all sorts of trash in natur, I declare. Dear, dear, I vow I never seed the beat o' that in all my born days.

Now the blue noses are like that are gall; they have grown up, and grown up in ignorance of many things they hadn't ought not to know; and its as hard to teach grown up folks as it is to break a six year old horse; and they do ryle one's temper so—they act so ugly that it temps one sometimes to break their confounded necks—its near about as much trouble as its worth. What remedy is there for all this supineness, said I; how can these people be awakened out of their ignorant slothfulness, into active exertion? The remedy, said Mr. Slick, it at hand—its already workin its own cure. They must recede before our free and enlightened citizens like the Indians: our folks will buy them out, and they must give place to a more intelligent and active people. They must go to the lands of Labrador, or be located back of Canada; they can hold on there a few years, until the wave of civilization reaches them, and then they must move again as the savages do. It is decreed; I hear the bugle of destiny a soundin of their retreat, as plain as anything. Congress will give them a concession of land, if they petition, away to Alleghany back-side territory, and grant them relief for a few years; for we are out of debt, and don't know what to do with our surplus revenue. The only way to shame them, that I know, would be to sarvo them as uncle Enoch sarved a neighbour of his in Varginy.

There was a lady that had a plantation near hand to his'n, and there was only a small river atwixt the two houses, so that folks could hear each other talk across it. Well, she was a dreadful cross-grained woman, a real catamount, as savage as as he bear that has cubs, an old farrow critter, as ugly as sin, and one that both hooked and kicked too—a most particular onmarciful she-devil, that's a fact. She used to have some of her niggers tied up every day, and flogged uncommon severe, and their screams and screeches were horrid—no soul could stand it; nothin was heerd all day, but *oh lord, Missus! oh lord, Missus!* Enoch was fairly sick of the sound, for he was a tender-hearted man, and says he to her one day, Now do, marm, find out some other place to give your cattle the cowskin, for it worries me to hear 'em take on so dreadful bad—I can't stand it, I vow;

Tring

Tring

Kötak
Sarval

they are flesh and blood as well as we be, though the meat is a different colour; but it was no good—she jist up and told him to mind his own business, and she guessed she'd mind hern. He was determined to shame her out of it; so one mornin arter breakfast he goes into the cane field, and says he to Lavander, one of the black overseers, Muster up the whole gang of slaves, every soul, and bring 'em down to the wipin post, the whole stock of them, bulls, cows, and calves. Well, away goes Lavander, and drives up all the niggers. Now you catch it, says he, you lazy villains; I tole you so many a time—I tole you Massa he lose all patience wid you, you good for nothin rascals. I grad, upon my soul, I werry grad; you mind now what old Lavander say anoder time. (The black overseers are always the most cruel, said the Clockmaker; they have no sort of feeling for their own people.)

Well, when they were gathered there according to orders, they looked streaked enough you may depend, thinkin they were going to get it all round, and the wenches they fell to a cryin, wringin their hands, and boo-hooing like mad. Lavander was there with his cowskin, grinnin like a chessy cat, and cracking it about, ready for business. Pick me out, says Enoch, four that have the loudest voices; hard matter dat, Massa, dey all talk loud, dey all lub talk more better nor work—de idle villains; better gib 'em all a little tickel, jist to teach 'em larf on tother side of de mouth: dat side bran new, they never use it yet. Do as I oder you, Sir, said Uncle, or I'll have you triced up, you cruel old rascal you. When they were picked out and sot by themselves, they hanged their heads, and looked like sheep goin to the shambles. Now, says Uncle Enoch, my Pickininnies, do you sing out, as loud as Niagara, at the very tip end of your voice—

Don't kill a nigger, pray,
Let him lib anoder day.

Oh Lord Missus—Oh Lord Missus.

My back be very sore,
No stand it any more.

Oh Lord Missus—Oh Lord Missus.

And all the rest of you join chorus, as loud as you can baul, *Oh Lord Missus*. The black rascals understood the joke real well. They larfed ready to split their sides: they fairly lay down on the ground, and rolled over and over with lafter. Well, when they came to the chorus, *Oh Lord Missus*, if they didn't let go, its a pity. They made the river ring agin—they were heerd clean out to sea. All the folks ran out of the Lady's House, to see what on airth was the matter on Uncle Enoch's plantation—they thought there was actilly a rebellion there; but when they listened awhile, and heerd it over and over again, they took the hint and returned a larfin in their sleeves. Says they, Master Enoch Slick, he upsides with Missus this

hitch any how. Uncle never heerd anything more of *Oh Lord Missus*, after that. Yes, they ought to be shamed out of it, those blue-noses. When reason fails to convince, there is nothin left but ridicule. If they have no ambition, apply to their feelings, clap a blister on their pride, and it will do the business. Its like a puttin ginger under a horse's tail; it makes him carry up real handsum, I tell you. When I was a boy, I was always late to school; well, father's preachin I did'nt mind much, but I never could bear to hear mother say. Why Sam, are you actilly up for all day? Well, I hope your airly risin won't hurt you, I declare. What on airth is agoin to happen now? Well, wonders will never cease. It raised my dander; at that says I, Now, mother, don't say that are any more for it makes me feel ugly, and I'll get up as airly as any on you; and so I did, and I soon found what's worth knowin in this life, *An airly start makes easy stages.*

CHAPTER XIII.

THE CLOCKMAKER'S OPINION OF HALIFAX.

THE next morning was warmer than several that had preceded it. It was one of those uncommonly fine days that distinguish an American autumn. I guess, said Mr. Slick, the heat to-day is like a glass of Mint Julip, with a lump of ice in it, it tastes cool and feels warm—its real good, I tell you; I love such a day as this dearly. Its generally allowed the finest weather in the world is in America—there an't the beat of it to be found anywhere. He then lighted a cigar, and throwing himself back on his chair, put both feet out of the window, and sat with his arms folded, a perfect picture of happiness.

You appear, said I, to have travelled over the whole of this Province, and to have observed the country and the people with much attention; pray what is your opinion of the present state and future prospects of Halifax? If you will tell me, said he, when the folks there will wake up, then I can answer you, but they are fast asleep; as to the Province, its a splendid province, and calculated to go ahead; it will grow as fast as a Varginy gall, and they grow so amazin fast, if you put your arm round one of their necks to kiss them, by the time you've done, they've grown up into women. Its a pretty Province, I tell you, good above and better below; surface covered with pastures, meadows, woods, and a nation sight of water privileges, and under the ground full of mines—it puts me in mind of the soup at the *Tree-mont* house.

One day I was a walkin in the Mall, and who should I meet but Major Bradford, a gentleman from Connecticut, that traded in calves and pumpkins for the Boston market. Says he, Slick, where do you get your grub to-day? At General Peep's tavern, says I. Only fit for niggers, says he; why don't you come to the *Tree-mont* house, that's the most splendid thing its generally allowed in all the world. Why, says I, that's a notch above my mark, I guess it's too plagy dear for me, I can't afford it no how. Well, says he, its dear in one sense, but its dog cheap in another—its a grand place for speculation—there's so many rich southerners and strangers there that have more money than wit, that you might do a pretty good business there without goin out of the street door. I made two hundred dollars this mornin in little less than half no time. There's a Carolina Lawyer there, as rich as a bank, and says he to me arter breakfast, Major, says he, I wish I knew where to get a real slapping trotter of a horse, one that could trot with a flash of lightning for a mile, and beat it by a whole neck or so. Says I, my Lord (for you must know, he says he's the nearest male heir to a Scotch dormant peerage), my Lord, says I, I have one a proper sneezer, a chap that can go ahead of a rail-road steamer, a real natural traveller, one that can trot with the ball out of the small eend of a rifle, and never break into a gallop. Says he, Major, I wish you wouldn't give me that are knick name, I don't like it (though he looked as tickled all the time as possible), I never knew, says he, a lord that worn't a fool, that's a fact, and that's the reason I don't go ahead and claim the title. Well, says I, my Lord, I don't know, but somehow I can't help a thinkin, if you have a good claim, you'd be more like a fool not to go ahead with it. Well, says he, Lord or no Lord, let's look at your horse. So away I went to Joe Brown's livery-stable, at t'other eend of the city, and picked out the best trotter he had, and no great stick to brag on either; says I, Joe Brown, what do you ax for that are horse? Two hundred dollars, says he. Well, says I, I will take him out and try him, and if I like him, I will keep him. So I shows our Carolina Lord the horse, and when he gets on him, says I, Don't let him trot as fast as he can, resarve that for a heat: if folks find out how everlastin fast he is, they'd be afeard to stump you for a start. When he returned, he said he liked the horse amazingly, and axed the price; four hundred dollars, says I, you can't get nothin special without a good price, pewter cases never hold good watches; I know it, says he, the horse is mine. Thinks I to myself, that's more than ever I could say of him then any how.

Well, I was goin to tell you about the soup—says the Major, it's near about dinner time, jist come and see how you like the location. There was a sight of folks there, gentlemen and ladies

Handwritten: *Handwritten:*
 in the public room (I never seed so many afore, except at commencement day), all ready for a start, and when the gong sounded, off we sott like a flock of sheep. Well, if there warn't a jam you may depend—some one give me a pull, and I near abouts went heels up over head, so I reached out both hands, and caught hold of the first thing I could, and what should it be but a lady's dress—well, as I'm alive, rip went the frock, and tear goes the petticoat, and when I righted myself from my beam ends, away they all came home to me, and there she was, the pretty critter, with all her upper riggin standin as far as her weist, and nothin left below but a short linen under garment. If she didn't scream, its a pity, and the more she screamed, the more folks larved, for no soul could help larfin, till one of the waiters folded her up in a table cloth.

Handwritten: *Handwritten:*
 What an awkward devil you be, Slick, says the Major, now that comes of not falling in first, they should have formed four deep, rear rank in open order, and marched in to our splendid national air, and filed off to their seats, right and left shoulders forward. I feel kinder sorry, too, says he, for that are young heifer, but she shewed a proper pretty leg, tho' Slick, didn't she—I guess you don't often get such a chance as that are. Well, I gets near the Major at table, and afore me stood a china utensil with two handles, full of soup, about the size of a foot tub, with a large silver scoop in it, near about as big as a ladle of a maple sugar kettle. I was jist about bailing out some soup into my dish, when the Major said, fish it up from the bottom, Slick,—well, sure enough, I gives it a drag from the bottom, and up came the fat pieces of turtle, and the thick rich soup, and a sight of little forced meat balls, of the size of sheep's dung. No soul could tell how good it was—it was near about as handsom as father's old genuine particular cider, and that you could feel tingle clean away down to the tip ends of your toes. Now, says the Major, I'll give you, Slick, a new wrinkle on your horn. Folks ain't thought nothin of, unless they live at Treemont: its all the go. Do you dine at Peep's tavern every day, and then off hot foot to Treemont, and pick your teeth on the street steps there, and folks will think you dine there. I do it often, and it saves two dollars a day. Then he puts his finger on his nose, and says he; '*Mum is the word.*'

Now, this Province is jist like that are soup, good enough at top, but dip down and you have the riches, the coal, the iron ore, the gypsum, and what not. As for Halifax, its well enough in itself, though no great shakes neither, a few sizeable houses, with a proper sight of small ones, like half a dozen old hens with their broods of young chickens; but the people, the strange critters, they are all asleep. They walk in their sleep, and talk in their sleep, and what they say one day they forget the next, they say they were dreaming. You know where Governor Campbell lives, don't you, in a largestone

house, with a great wall round it, that looks like a state prison; well, near hand there is a nasty dirty horrid lookin buryin ground there—its filled with large grave rats as big as kittons, and the springs of black water there, go through the chinks of the rocks and flow into all the wells, and fairly pyson the folks—its a dismal place, I tell you—I wonder the air from it don't turn all the silver in the General's house, of a brass colour (and folks say he has four cart loads of it), its so everlasting bad—its near about as noseey as a slave ship of niggers. Well, you may go there and shake the folks to all eternity and you won't wake 'em, I guess, and yet there ant much difference atween their sleep and the folks at Halifax, only they lie still there and are quiet, and don't walk and talk in their sleep like them above ground.

Halifax reminds me of a Russian officer I once seed at Warsaw; he had lost both arms in battle; but I guess I must tell you first why I went there, cause that will show you how we speculate. One Sabbath day, after bell ringin, when most of the women had gone to meetin (for they were great hands for pretty sarmons, and our Unitarian ministers all preach poetry, only they leave the ryme out—it sparkles like perry), I goes down to East India wharf to see Captain Zeek Hancock, of Nantucket, to enquire how oil was, and if it would bear doing anything in; when who should come along but Jabish Green. Slick, says he, how do you do; isn't this as pretty a day as you'll see between this and Norfolk? it whips English weather by a long chalk; and then he looked down at my watch seals, and looked and looked as if he thought I'd stole 'em. At last he looks up, and says he, Slick, I suppose you wondn't go to Warsaw, would you, if it was made worth your while? Which Warsaw? says I, for I believe in my heart we have a hundred of them. None of ourn at all, says he; Warsaw in Poland. Well, I don't know, says I; what do you call worth while? Six dollars a day, expenses paid, and a bonus of one thousand dollars, if speculation turns out well. I am off, says I, whenever you say go. Tuesday, says he, in the Hamburgh packet. Now, says he, i'm in a tarnation hurry; I'm goin a pleasurin to day in the Custom House Boat, along with Josiah Bradford's galls down to Nahant. But I'll tell you what I am at: the Emperor of Russia has ordered the Poles to cut off their queus on the 1st of January; you must buy them all up, and ship them off to London for the wig makers. Human hair is scarce and risin. Lord a massy! says I, how queer they will look, won't they. Well, I vow, that's what the sea folks call sailing *under bare Poles*, come true, aint it? I guess it will turn out a good spec, says he; and a good one it did turn out—he cleared ten thousand dollars by it.

When I was at Warsaw, as I was a sayin, there was a Russian officer there who had lost both his arms in battle; a good natured

contented critter, as I een amost ever see'd, and he was fed with spoons by his neighbours, but arter a while they grew tired of it, and I guess he near about starved to death at last. Now Halifax is like that are *Spooney*, as I used to call him ; it is fed by the outports, and they begin to have enough to do to feed themselves—it must larn to live without 'em. They have no river, and no country about them ; let them make a railroad to Minas Basin, and they will have arms of their own to feed themselves with. If they don't do it, and do it soon, I guess they'll get into a decline that no human skill will cure. They are proper thin now ; you can count their ribs een amost as far as you can see them. *The only thing that will either make or save Halifax, is a railroad across the country to Bay of Fundy.*

It will do to talk of, says one ; You'll see it some day, says another ; Yes, says a third, it will come, but we are too young yet.

Our old minister had a darter, a real clever looking gail as you'd see in a day's ride, and she had two or three offers of marriage from sponisible men—most particular good specs—but minister always said ' Phœbe, you are too young—the day will come—but you are too young yet, dear. Well, Phœbe didn't think so at all ; she said, She guessed she knew better nor that ; so the next offer she had, she had no notion to lose another chance—off she sot to Rhode Island and got married ; says she, Father's too old, he don't know. That's jist the case at Halifax. The old folks say the country is too young—the time will come, and so on ; and in the mean time time the young folks wont wait, *and run off to the States, where the maxim is, ' youth is the time for improvement ; a new country is never too young for exertion—push on—keep movin—go ahead.'*

Darn it all, said the Clockmaker, rising with great animation, clinching his fist, and extending his arm—darn it all, it fairly makes my dander rise, to see the nasty idle loungin good for nothing do little critters—they aint fit to tend a bear trap, I vow. They ought to be quilted round and round a room, like a lady's lap dog, the matter of two hours a day, to keep them from dyin of apoplexy. Hush, hush, said I, Mr. Slick, you forget. Well, said he, resuming his usual composure—well, it's enough to make one vexed though, I declare—isn't it ?

Mr. Slick has often alluded to this subject, and always in a most decided manner ; I am inclined to think he is right. Mr. Howe's papers on the railroad I read till I came to his calculations, but I never could read figures, ' I can't cypher,' and there I paused ; it was a barrier : I retreated a few paces, took a running leap, and cleared the whole of them. Mr. Slick says he has *under* and not *over* rated its advantages. He appears to be such a shrewd, observing, intelligent man, and so perfectly at home on these subjects, that I confess I have more faith in this humble but eccentric Clockmaker,

than in any other man I have met with in this Province. I therefore pronounce 'there will be a railroad.'

CHAPTER XIV.

SAYINGS AND DOINGS IN CUMBERLAND.

I RECKON, said the Clockmaker, as we strolled through Amherst, you have read Hook's story of the boy that one day asked one of his father's guests, who his next door neighbour was, and when he heard his name, asked him if he warn't a fool. No, my little feller, said he, he beant a fool, he is a most particular sensible man; but why did you ax that are question? Why, said the little boy, mother said t'other day you ware next door to a fool, and I wanted to know who lived next door to you. His mother felt pretty ugly, I guess, when she heard him run right slap on that are breaker.

Now these Cumberland folks have curious next door neighbours, too; they are placed by their location right a'twixt fire and water; they have New Brunswick politics on one side, and Nova Scotia politics on t'other side of them, and Bay Fundy and Bay Varte on t'other two sides; they are actilly in hot water; they are up to their croopers in politics, and great hands for talking of House of Assembly, political Unions, and what not. Like all folks who wade so deep, they can't always tell the natur of the ford. Sometimes they strike their shins agin a snag of a rock; at other times they go whap into a quicksand, and if they don't take special care they are apt to go souse over head and ears into deep water. I guess if they'd talk more of *Rotations*, and less of *elections*, more of them are *Dykes*, and less of *Banks*, and attend more to *top-dressing*, and less to *re-dressing*, it 'ed be better for 'em.

Now you mention the subject, I think I have observed, said I, that there is a great change in your countrymen in that respect. Formerly, whenever you met an American, you had a dish of politics set before you, whether you had an appetite for it or not; but lately I have remarked they seldom allude to it. Pray to what is this attributable? I guess, said he, they have enough of it to home, and are sick of the subject. They are cured the way our pastry cooks cure their prentices of stealing sweet notions out of their shops. When they get a new prentice, they tell him he must never so much as look at all them are nice things; and if he dares to lay the weight of his finger upon one of them, they'll have him up for it before a justice; they tell him its every bit and grain as bad as stealing from a till. Well that's sure to set him at it, just as a high fence does a breachy

ox, first to look over it, and then to push it down with its rump; its human natur. Well, the boy eats and eats till he cant eat no longer, and then he gets sick at his stomach, and hates the very sight of sweetmeats afterwards.

We've had politics with us, till we're dog sick of 'em, I tell you. Besides, I guess we are as far from perfection as when we set out a roin for it. You may get *purity of election* but how are you to get *purity of Members?* It would take a great deal of cyphering to tell that. I never see'd it yet, and never heerd tell of one who had seed it.

The best member I een amost ever seed was John Adams. Well, John Adams could no more plough a straight furrow in politics than he could haul the plough himself. He might set out straight to be-ginnin for a little way, but he was sure to get crooked afore he got to the cend of the ridge—and sometimes he would have two or three crooks in it. I used to say to him, how on airth is it, Mr. Adams (for he was no way proud like, though he was prezident of our great nation, and it is allowed to be the greatest nation in the world, too: for you might see him sometimes of an arternoon a swimmin along with the boys in the Potomac, I do believe that's the way he larned to give the folks the dodge so spry); well, I used to say to him, how on airth is it, Mr. Adams, you can't make straight work on it? He was a grand hand at an excuse (though minister used to say that folks that were good at an excuse, were seldom good for nothin else); sometimes, he said, the ground was so tarnation stony, it throwed the plough out; at other times he said the off ox was such an ugly wilful tempered critter, there was no doin nothin with him; or that there was so much machinery about the plough, it made it plagy hard to steer, or may be it was the fault of them that went afore him that they laid it down so bad; unless he was hired for another term of four years, the work wouldn't look well; and if all them are excuses would'nt do, why he would take to scolding the nigger that drove the team, throw all the blame on him, and order him to have an everlastin lacin with the cowskin. You might as well catch a weasel asleep as catch him. He had somethin the matter with one eye—well, he knew I know'd that when I was a boy; so one day, a feller presented a petition to him, and he told him it was very affectin. Says he, it fairly draws tears from me, and his weak eye took to lettin off its water like statiee; so as soon as the chap went, he winks to me with t'other one, quite knowin, as much as to say, you see its all in my eye, Slick, but don't let on to any one about it, that I said so. That eye was a regular cheat, a complete New England wooden nutmeg. Folks said Mr. Adams was a very tender-hearted man. Perhaps he was, but I guess that eye did'nt pump its water out o' that place.

Members in general aint to be depended on, I tell you. Politics

makes a man as crooked as a pack does a pedlar, not that they are so awful heavy, neither, but it *teaches a man to stoop in the long run*. Arter all, there's not that difference in 'em (at least there aint in Congress) one would think; for if one of them is clear of one vice, why, as like as not, he has another fault just as bad. An honest farmer, like one of these Cumberland folks, when he goes to choose a'twixt two that offers for votes, is jist like the flying fish. That are little critter is not content to stay to home in the water, and mind its business, but he must try his hand at flyin, and he is no great dab at flyin, neither. Well, the moment he's out of water, and takes to flyin, the sea fowl are arter him, and let him have it; and if he has the good luck to escape them, and dive into the sea, the dolphin, as like as not, has a dig at him, that knocks more wind out of him than he got while aping the birds, a plagy sight. I guess the blue-noses know jist about as much about politics as this foolish fish knows about flyin. *All critters in natur are better in their own element.*

It beats cock figtin, I tell you, to hear the blue-noses, when they get together, talk politics. They have got three or four evil spirits, like the Irish Banshees, that they say cause all the mischief in the Province—the Council, the Banks, the House of Assembly, and the Lawyers. If a man places a higher valiation on himself than his neighbours do, and wants to be a magistrate before he is fit to carry the buck horn for one, and finds himself safely delivered of a mistake, he says it is all owing to the Council. The members are cunnin critters, too, they know this feelin, and when they come home from Assembly, and people ax 'em, 'where are all them are fine things you promised us?' Why, they say, we'd a had 'em all for you, but for that eternal Council, they nullified all we did. The country will come to no good till them chaps show their respect for it, by covering their bottoms with homespun. If a man is so tarnation lazy he won't work, and in course has no money, why he says its all owin to the banks, they won't discount, there's no money, they've ruined the Province. If there beant a road made up to every citizen's door, away back to the woods (who as like as not has squatted there), why he says the House of Assembly have voted all the money to pay great men's salaries, and there's nothin left for poor settlers, and cross roads. Well, the lawyers come in for their share of cake and ale, too, if they don't catch it, its a pity.

There was one Jim Munroe, of Onion County, Connecticut, a desperate idle fellow, a great hand at singin songs, a skatin, drivin about with the galls, and so on. Well, if any body's windows were broke, it was Jim Munroe—and if there were any youngsters in want of a father they were sure to be poor Jim's. Jist so it is with the lawyers here; they stand godfather for every misfortune that happens in the country. When there is a mad dog a goin about,

Blindman
2/20/17
 every dog that barks is said to be bit by the mad one, so he gets credit for all the mischief that every dog does for three months to come. So every feller that goes yelpin home from a court house, smartin from the law, swears he is bit by a lawyer. Now there may be something wrong in all these things (and it cand't be otherwise in natur), in Council, Banks, House of Assembly, and Lawyers; but change them all, and its an even chance if you don't get worse ones in their room. It is in politics as in horses; when a man has a beast that's near about up to the notch, he'd better not swap him; if he does, he's een amost sure to get one not so good as his own. *My rule is, I'd rather keep a critter whose faults I do know, than change him for a beast whose faults I don't know.*

CHAPTER XV.

THE DANCING MASTER ABROAD.

I WISH that are black heifer in the kitchen would give over singing that are everlastin dismal tune, said the Clockmaker, it makes my head ache. You've heerd a song afore now, said he, hav'n't you, till you was fairly sick of it? for I have, I vow. The last time I was in Rhode Island (all the galls sing there, and it's generally allowed there's no such singers anywhere; they beat the *Eye-talians* a long chalk—they sing so high some on' em, they go clear out o'hearin sometimes, like a lark), well, you heerd nothin but 'Oh no, we never mention her;' well, I grew so plaguy tired of it, I used to say to myself, I'd sooner see it than hear tell of it, I vow; I wish to gracious you 'would never mention her,' for it makes me feel ugly to hear that same thing for ever and ever and amen that way. Well, they've got a cant phrase here, 'the schoolmaster is abroad,' and every feller tells you that fifty times a-day.

There was a chap said to me not long ago at Truro, Mr. Slick, this country is rapidly improvin, 'the schoolmaster is abroad now,' and he looked as knowin as though he had found a mare's nest. So I should think, said I, and it would jist be about as well, I guess, if he'd stay to home and mind his business, for your folks are so consoomedly ignorant, I reckon he's abroad een almost all his time. I hope when he returns, he'll be the better of his travels, and that's more nor many of our young folks are who go 'abroad,' for they import more airs and nonsense than they dispose of one while, I tell you—some of the stock remains on hand all the rest of their lives. There's nothin I hate so much as cant, of all kinds; its a sure sign of a tricky disposition. If you see a feller cant in religion, clap your

so he gets
months to
court house,
Now there
t be other-
Lawyers ;
get worse
man has a
vap him ; if
own. *My
change*

hand into your pocket, and lay right hold of your puss, or he'll steal it, as sure as you're alive ; and if a man cant in politics, he'll sell you if he gets a chance, you may depend. Law and physic are jist the same, and every mite and morsel as bad. If a lawyer takes to cantin, its like the fox preachin to the geese, he'll eat up his whole congregation ; and if a doctor takes to it, he's a quack as sure as rates. The Lord have massy on you, for he wont. I'd sooner trust my chance with a naked hook any time, than one that's half covered with bad bait. The fish will sometimes swallow the one, without thinkin, but they get frightened at tother, turn tail, and off like a shot.

ver singing
makes my
n't you, till
me I was in
lly allowed
lians a long
ut o'hearin
o, we never
say to my-
to gracious
gly to hear
ell, they've
every feller

Now, to change the tune, I'll give the blue-noses a new phrase. They'll have an election most likely next year, and then '*the Dancin Master will be abroad.*' A candidate is a most purticular polite man, a noddin here, and a bowin there, and a shakin hands all round. Nothin improves a man's manners like an election. '*The Dancin Master's abroad then ;*' nothin gives the paces equal to that, it makes them as squirmy as an eel ; they cross hands and back agin, set to their partners, and right and left in great style, and slick it off at the eend, with a real complete bow, and a smile for all the world as sweet as a cat makes at a pan of new milk. Then they get as full of compliments as a dog is full of flees—enquirin how the old lady is to home, and the little boy that made such a wonderful smart answer, they never can forget it till next time ; a praisin a man's farm to the nines, and a tellin of him how scandalous the road that leads to his location has been neglected, and how much he wants to find a real complete hand that can build a bridge over his brook, and axin him if *he* ever built one. When he gets the hook baited with the right fly, and the simple critter begins to jump out of water arter it, all mouth and gills, he winds up the reel, and takes leave, a thinkin to himself, 'now you sec what's to the eend of my line, I guess I'll know where to find you when I want you.'

Slick, this
'now,' and
nest. So I
I guess, if
are so con-
time. I
and that's
r they im-
, I tell you
their lives.
a suro sign
clap your

There's no sort of fishin requires so much practice as this. When bait is scarce, one worm must answer for several fish. A handful of oats in a pan, arter it brings one horse up in a pastur for the bridle, serves for another ; a shakin of it, is better than a givin of it—it saves the grain for another time. It's a poor business arter all, is electioneering, and when '*the Dancin Master is abroad,*' he's as apt to teach a man to cut capers and get larfed at as anything else. It tante every one that's soople enough to dance real complete. Politics take a great deal of time, and grinds away a man's honesty near about as fast as cleaning a knife with brick dust, '*it takes its steel out.*' What does a critter get arter all for it in this country, why nothin but expense and disappointment. As King Solomon says (and that are man was up to a thing or two, you may depend, tho' our professor did

*Wagon.
Jackson*

say he warn't so knowin as Uncle Sam), it's all vanity and vexation of spirit.

Longer
—verfery
zuzufly
Aginny
winnin

I raised a four year old colt once, half blood, a perfect pictur of a horse, and a genuine clipper, could gallop like the wind; a real daisy,^{game} a perfect doll, had an eye like a weasel, and nostril like Commodore Rodger's speakin trumpet. Well, I took it down to the races at New York, and father he went along with me; for says he, Sam, you don't know every thing, I guess, you hant cut your wisdom teeth yet, and you are goin among them that's had 'em through their gums this while past. Well, when we gets to the races, father he gets colt and puts him in an old waggon, with a worn out Dutch harness and breast band; he looked like Old Nick, that's a fact. Then he fastened a head martingale on, and buckled it to the girths atwixt his fore legs. Says I, father, what on airth are you at? I vow I feel ashamed to be seen with such a catamaran as that, and colt looks like old Saytan himself—no soul would know him. I guess I warn't born yesterday, says he, let me be, I know what I am at. I guess I'll slip it into 'em afore I've done, as slick as a whistle. I guess I can see as far into a mill-stone as the best on' em.

Try

Well, father never entered the horse at all, but stood by and seed the races, and the winnin horse was followed about by the matter of two or three thousand people a praisin of him and admirin him. They seemed as if they never had see'd a horse afore. The owner of him was all up on eend a boastin of him, and a stumpin the course to produce a horse to run agin him for four hundred dollars. Father goes up to him looking as soft as dough, and as meechin as you please, and says he, friend, it tante every one that has four hundred dollars—its a plaguy sight of money, I tell you; would you run for one hundred dollars, and give me a little start? if you would, I'd try my colt out of my old waggon agin you, I vow. Let's look at your horse, says he; so away they went, and a proper sight of people arter them to look at colt, and when they seed him they sot up such a larf, I felt een a most ready to cry for spite. Says I to myself, what can possess the old man to act arter that fashion, I do believe he has taken leave of his senses. You needn't larf, says father, he's smarter than he looks; our Minister's old horse, Captain Jack, is reckoned as quick a beast of his age as any in our location, and that are colt can beat him for a lick of a quarter of a mile quite easy—I seed it myself. Well, they larfed agin louder than before, and says father, if you dispute my word, try me; what odds will you give? Two to one, says the owner—800 to 400 dollars. Well, that's a great deal of money, aint it, says father; if I was to lose it I'd look pretty foolish, wouldn't I. How folks would pass their jokes at me when I went home agin. You wouldn't take that are waggon and harness for fifty dollars of it, would you? says he. Well, says the other, sooner than

disappoint you, as you seem to have set your mind on losing your money, I don't care if I do.

As soon as it was settled, father drives off to the stables, and then returns mounted, with a red silk pocket handkerchief tied round his head, and colt a looking like himself, as proud as a nabob, chock full of spring like the wire eend of a bran new pair of trowser gallusses—one said that's a plaguy nice lookin colt that old feller has arter all; that horse will show play for it yet, says a third; and I heard one feller say, I guess that's a regular Yankee trick, a complete take in. They had a fair start for it, and off they sot, father took the lead and kept it, and won the race, tho' it was a pretty tight scratch, for father was too old to ride colt, he was near about the matter of seventy years old.

Well, when the colt was walked round after the race, there was an amazin crowd arter him, and several wanted to buy him; but says father, how am I to get home without him, and what shall I do with that are waggon and harness so far as I be from Slickville. So he kept them in talk, till he felt their pulses pretty well, and at last he closed with a Southerner for 700 dollars, and we returned, having made a considerable good spec of colt. Says father to me, Sam, says he, you seed the crowd a follerin the winnin horse, when we came there, didn't you? Yes sir, said I, I did. Well, when colt beat him, no one follered him at all but come a crowded about *him*. That's popularity, said he, soon won, soon lost—cried up sky high one minute, and deserted the next, or run down; colt will share the same fate. He'll get beat afore long, and then he's done for. The multitude are always fickle minded. Our great Washington found that out, and the British Officer that beat Buonaparte; the bread they gave him turned sour afore he got half through the loaf. His soap had hardly stiffened afore it ran right back to lye and grease agin.

I was sarved the same way, I liked to have missed my pension—
the Committee said I warn't at Bunker's hill at all, the villains. That was a Glo— (thinks I, old boy, if you once get into that are field, you'll race longer than colt, a plaguy sight; you'll run clear away to the fence to the far eend afore you stop, so I jist cut in and took a hand myself). Yes, says I, you did 'em father, properly, that old waggon was a bright scheme, it led 'em on till you got 'em on the right spot, didn't it? Says father, *There's a moral, Sam, in every thing in natur.* Never have nothin to do with elections, you see the valy of popularity in the case of that are horse—sarve the public 999 times, and the 1000th, if they don't agree with you, they desart and abuse you—see how they sarved old John Adams, see how they let Jefferson starve in his old age, see how good old Munroe like to have got right into jail, after his term of President was up. They may talk of independence, says father, but Sam, I'll tell you what independence is—and

he gave his hands a slap agin his trowsers pocket and made the gold eagles he won at the race all jingle agin—that, says he, giving them another wipe with his fist (and winkin as much as to say do you hear that, my boy), *that I call independence*. He was in great spirits, the old man, he was so proud of winnin the race, and puttin the leake into the New Yorkers—he looked all dander. Let them great hungry, ill-favoured, long-legged bittorns, says he (only he called them by another name that don't sound quite pretty), from the outlandish states to Congress, *talk about independence*; but Sam, said he (hitting the Shinners agin till he made them dance right up an eend in his pocket), *I like to feel it*.

No Sam, said he, line the pocket well first, make that independent, and then the spirit will be like a horse turned out to grass in the spring, for the first time, he's all head and tail, a snortin and kickin and racin and carryin on like mad—it soon gets independent too.

- Yankee
- Swann
Elly's
- mixing
While it's in the stall it may hold up, and paw, and whiner, and feel as spry as any thing, but the leather strap keeps it to the manger, and the lead weight to the eend of it makes it hold down its head at last. No, says he, here's independence, and he gave the Eagles such a drive with his fist, he burst his pocket, and sent a whole raft of them a spinnin down his leg to the ground. Says I, Father (and I swear I could hardly keep from larfin, he looked so peskily vexed), Father, says I, I guess there's a moral in that are too—*Extremes nary way are none o' the best*. Well, well, says he (kinder snappishly), I suppose you're half right, Sam, but we've said enough about it, let's drop the subject, and see if I have picked 'em all up, for my eyes are none of the best now, I'm near hand to seventy.

CHAPTER XVI.

MR. SLICK'S OPINION OF THE BRITISH.

Yankee
- Swann
- Swann
WHAT success had you, said I, in the sale of your Clocks among the Scotch in the eastern part of the Province? do you find them as gullible as the blue-noses? Well, said he, you have heerd tell that a Yankee never answers one question, without axing another, haven't you? Did you ever see an English Stage Driver make a bow? because if you hante obsarved it, I have, and a queer one it is, I swan. He brings his right arm up, jist across his face, and passes on, with a knowin nod of his head, as much as to say, how do you do? but keep clear o' my wheels, or I'll fetch your horses a lick in the mouth as sure as you're born; jist as a bear puts up his paw to fend off the blow of a stick from his nose. Well, that's the way I pass them are bare

breeched Scotchmen. Lord, if they were located down in these here Cumberland mashes, how the mosquitoes would tickle them up—wouldn't they? They'd set 'em scratchin thereabouts, as an Irishman does his head, when he's in search of a lie. Them are fellers cut their eye teeth afore they ever sot foot in this country, I expect. When they get a hawbee, they know what to do with it, that's a fact; they open their pouch and drop it in, and its got a spring like a fox-trap—it holds fast to all it gets, like grim death to a dead nigger. They are proper skin flints, you may depend. Oatmeal is no great shakes at best; it tante even as good for a horse as real yaller Varginy corn, but I guess I warn't long in finding out that the grits hardly pay for the riddlin. No, a Yankee has as little chance among them as a Jew has in New England: the sooner he clears out the better. You can no more put a leak into them, than you can send a chisel into Teakewood—it turns the edge of the tool the first drive. If the blue-noses knew the value of money as well as they do, they'd have more cash, and fewer Clocks and tin reflectors, I reckon.

Now, its different with the Irish; they never carry a puss, for they never have a cent to put in it. They are always in love or in liquor, or else in a row; they are the merriest shavers I ever seed. Judge Beeler, I dare say you have heerd tell of him—he's a funny feller—he put a notice over his factory gate at Lowell, 'no cigars or Irishmen admitted within these walls;' for, said he, the one will set a flame agoin among my cottons, and t'other among my galls. I won't have no such inflammable and dangerous things about me on no account. When the British wanted our folks to join in the treaty to chock the wheels of the slave trade, I recollect hearin old John Adam say, we had ought to humour them; for, say he, they supply us with labour on easier terms, by shippin out the Irish. Says he, they work better, and they work cheaper, and they don't live so long. The blacks, when they are past work, hang on for ever, and a proper bill of expense they be; but hot weather and new rum rub out the poor rates for t'other ones.

The English are the boys for tradin with; they shell out their cash like a sheaf of wheat in frosty weather—it flies all over the thrashin floor; but then they are a cross-grained, ungainly, kicken breed of cattle, as I een a most ever seed. Whoever gave them the name of John Bull, knew what he was about, I tell you; for they are bull-necked, bull-headed folks, I vow; sulky, ugly-tempered, vicious critters, a pawin and a roarin the whole time, and plaguy onsafe unless well watched. They are as headstrong as mules, and as conceited as peacocks.

The astonishment with which I heard this tirade against my countrymen, absorbed every feeling of resentment. I listened with amazement at the perfect composure with which he uttered it. He

hulls from my traps.

-Gambler -bowza

Heinrich Ludwig

treated is as one of those self-evident truths, that need neither proof nor apology, but as a thing well known and admitted by all mankind.

There's no richer sight that I know of, said he, than to see one on 'em when he first lands in one of our great cities. He swells out as big as a balloon, his skin is ready to burst with wind—a regular walking bag of gas; and he prances over the pavement like a bear over hot iron—a great awkward hulk of a feller (for they ain't to be compared to the French in manners), a smirkin at you, as much as to say, 'look here, Jonathan, here's an Englishman; here's a boy that's got blood as pure as a Norman pirate, and lots of the blunt of both kinds, a pocket full of one, and a mouthful of t'other: bean't he lovely? and then he looks as fierce as a tiger, as much as to say 'sayboo to a goose, if you dare.'

No, I believe we may stump the Univarse; we improve on every thing, and we have improved on our own species. You'll search one, while I tell you, afore you'll find a man that, take him by and large, is equal to one of our free and enlightened citizens. He's the chap that has both speed, wind, and bottom; he's clear grit—ginger to the back bone, you may depend. Its generally allowed there ain't the beat of them to be found any where. Spry as a fox, supple as an eel, and cute as a weasel. Though I say it, that shouldn't say it, they fairly take the shine off creation—they are actilly equal to cash.

He looked like a man who felt that he had expressed himself so aptly and so well, that any thing additional would only weaken its effect; he therefore changed the conversation immediately, by pointing to a tree at some little distance from the house, and remarking that it was the rock maple or sugar tree. Its a pretty tree, said he, and a profitable one too to raise. It will bear tapping for many years, tho' it get exhausted at last.

This Province is like that are tree: it is ^{was} tapped till it begins to die at the top, and if they don't drive in a spile and stop the everlastin flow of the sap, it will perish altogether. All the money that's made here, all the interest that's paid in it, and a pretty considerable portion of rent too, all goes abroad for investment, and the rest is sent to us to buy bread. Its drained like a bog, it has opened and covered trenches all through it, and then there's others to the foot of the up-land, to cut off the springs.

Now you may make even a bog too dry; you may take the moisture out to that degree, that the very sile becomes dust, and blows away. The English funds, and our banks, railroads, and canals, are all absorbing your capital like a sponge, and will lick it up as fast as you can make it. That very Bridge we heerd of at Windsor, is owned in New Brunswick, and will pay toll to that province. The capitalists of Nova Scotia treat it like a hired house, they won't keep it in repair; they neither paint it to presarve the boards, nor stop a leak

to keep the frame from rottin; but let it go to wrack sooner than drive a nail or put in a pane of glass. It will sarve our turn out, they say.

Glady's mbr
 There's neither spirit, enterprise, nor patriotism here; but the whoie country is as inactive as a bear in winter, that does nothin but scrountch up in his den, a thinkin to himself, "Well, if I ain't an unfortunate divil, it's a pity; I have a most splendid warm coat as are a gentleman in these here woods, let him be who he will; but I got no socks to my feet, and have to sit for everlastingly a suckin of my paws to keep 'hem warm; if it warn't for that, I guess I'd make some o' them chaps that have hoofs to their feet and horns to their heads, look about 'em pretty sharp, I know. It's dismal, now ain't it? If I had the framin of the Governor's message, if I wouldn't show 'em how to put timber together, you may depend; I'd make them scratch their heads and stare, I know."

Remun:
 I went down to Matanzas in the Fulton Steam Boat once—well, it was the first of the kind they ever seed, and proper scared they were to see a vessel, without sails or oars, goin right strait a head, nine knots an hour, in the very wind's eye, and a great streak of smoke arter her as long as the tail of a comet. I believe they thought it was old Nickalive, a treatin himself to a swim. You could see the niggers a clippin it away from the shore, for dear life, and the soldiers a movin about, as if they thought that we were a goin to take the whole country. Presently a little, half-starved, orange-coloured looking Spanish officer, all dressed off in his livery, as fine as a fiddle, came off with two men in a boat to board us. Well, we yawed once or twice, and motioned to him to keep off for fear he should get hurt; but he came right on afore the wheel, and I hope I may be shot if the paddle didn't strike the bow of the boat with that force, it knocked up the stern like a plank tilt, when one of the boys playing on it is heavier than t'other, and chucked him right atop of the wheel house—you never see'd a fellow in such a dunderment in your life. He had picked up a little English from seein our folks there so much, and when he got up, the first thing he said was, 'Damn all sheenery, I say, where's my boat? and he looked round as if he thought it had jumped en board too. Your boat, said the Captain, why I expect it's gone to the bottom, and your men have gone down to look arter it, for we never see'd or heard tell of ono or t'other of them arter the boat was struck. Yes, I'd make 'em stare like that are Spanish officer, as if they had see'd out of their eyes for the first time. Governor Campbell did'nt expect to see such a eountry as this when he came here, I reckon, I know he didn't.

When I was a little boy, about knee high or so, and lived down Connecticut river, mother used to say, Sam, if you don't give over

Livingston
Livingston
Livingston

acting so like old Scratch, I'll send you off to Nova Scotia, as sure as you are born I will, I vow. Well, Lord, how that are used to frighten me; it made my hair stand right up on eend, like a cat's back when she's wrathy; it made me drop it as quick as wink—like a tin night-cap put on a dipt candle agoin to bed, it put the fun right out. Neighbour Dearborn's darter married a gentleman to Yarmouth, that speculates in the smuggling line; well, when she went on board to sail down to Nova Scotia, all her folks took on as if it was a funeral; they said she was goin to be buried alive, like the nuns in Portengale that get a frolickin, break out of the pastur, and race off, and get catched and brought back agin. Says the old Colonel, her father, Deliverance, my dear, I would sooner foller you to your grave, for that would be an eend to your troubles, than to see you go off to that dismal country, that's nothing but an iceberg aground; and he howled as loud as an Irishman that tries to wake his wife when she is dead. Awful accounts we have of the country, that's a fact; but if the Province is not so bad as they make it out, the folks are a thousand times worse.

You've seen a flock of partridges of a frosty mornin in the fall, a crowdin out of the shade to a sunny spot, and huddlin up there in the warmth—well, the blue-noses have nothin else to do half the time but sun themselves. Whose fault is that? Why its the fault of the legislature; *they don't encourage internal improvement, nor the investment of capital in the country, and the result is apathy, inaction, and poverty.* They spend three months in Halifax, and what do they do? Father gave me a dollar once, to go to the fair at Hartford, and when I came back, says he, Sam, what have you got to show for it? Now I ax what have they to show for their three months' sitting? They mislead folks; they make 'em believe all the use of the Assembly is to bark at Councillors, Judges, Bankers, and such cattle, to keep 'em from eatin up the crops; and it actilly cost more to feed them when they are watching, than all the others could eat if they did breach a fence and get in. Indeed, some folks say they are the most breachy of the two, and ought to go to pound themselves. If their fences are good, them hungry cattle couldn't break through; and if they aint, they ought to stake 'em up, and with them well; *but it's no use to make fences unless the land is cultivated.* If I see a farm all gone to wrack, I say here's bad husbandry and bad management; and if I see a Province like this, of great capacity and great natural resources, poverty-stricken, I say there's bad legislation.

No, said he (with an air of more seriousness than I had yet observed), *how much it is to be regretted, that, laying aside personal attacks and petty jealousies, they would not unite as one man, and with one mind and one heart apply themselves sedulously to the inter-*

nal improvement and development of this beautiful Province. Its value is utterly unknown, either to the general or local Government, and the only persons who duly appreciate it are the Yankees.

CHAPTER XVII.

A YANKEE HANDLE FOR A HALIFAX BLADE. = *Bless. King. 1792*

I MET a man this mornin, said the Clockmaker, from Halifax, a real conceited lookin critter as you een amost ever seed, all shines and didos. He looked as if he had picked up his airs, arter some officer of the regilars had worn 'em out and cast 'em off. They sot on him like second-hand clothes, as if they hadn't been made for him, and didn't exactly fit. He looked fine, but awkward, like a captain of militia when he gets his uniform on, to play sodger; a thinkin himself mighty handsom, and that all the world is a lookin at him. He marched up and down afore the street door like a peacock, as large as life and twice as natural; he had a riding whip in his hand, and every now and then struck it agin his thigh, as much as to say, Aint that a splendid leg for a boot, now? Won't I astonish the Amherst folks, that's all? Thinks I, you are a pretty blade, aint you? I'd like to fit a Yankee handle on to you, that's a fact. When I came up, he held up his head near about as high as a Shot factory, and stood with his fists on his hips, and eyed me from head to foot, as a shakin quaker does a town lady: as much as to say, what a queer critter you be, that's toggery I never seed afore; you're some carnal-minded maiden, that's sertain.

Well, says he to me, with the air of a man that chucks a cent into a beggar's hat, a fine day this, sir. Do you actilly think so, said I? and I gave it the real Connecticut drawl. Why, said he, quite short, if I didn't think so, I wouldn't say so. Well, says I, I dont know, but if I did think so, I guess I would'nt say so. Why not? says he—Because I expect, says I, any fool could see that as well as me; and then I stared at him, as much as to say, now if you like that are swap, I am ready to trade with you agin as soon as you like. Well, he turned right round on his heel, and walked off, a whislin Yankee Doodle to himself. He looked jist like a man that finds whislin a plaguy sight easier than thinkin.

Presently I heard him ax the groom who that are Yankee lookin feller was. That, said the groom; why, I guess it's Mr. Slick. Sho!! said he, how you talk. What, Slick the Clockmaker, why it ant possible; I wish I had a known that are afore, I declare, for I have a great curiosity to see *him*—folks say he is amazin clever feller that

—and he turned and stared, as if it was old Hickory himself. Then he walked round and about like a pig round the fence of a potatoe field, a watchin for a chance to cut in; so, thinks I, I'll jist give him something to talk about, when he gets back to the city, I'll fix a Yankee handle on to him in no time.

How's times to Halifax, sir, said I.—Better, says he, much better, business is done on a surer bottom than it was, and things look bright agin. So does a candle, says I, jist afore it goes out; it burns up ever so high, and then sinks right down, and leaves nothin behind but grease, and an everlastin bad smell. I guess they don't know how to feed their lamp, and it can't burn long on nothin. No, sir, the jig is up with Halifax, and it's all their own fault. If a man sits at his door, and sees stray cattle in his field, a catin up of his crop, and his neighbours a cartin off his grain, and won't so much as go, and drive 'em out, why I should say it sarves him right.

I don't exactly understand, sir, said he—thinks I, it would be strange if you did, for I never see one of your folks yet that could understand a hawk from a handsaw. Well, says I, I will tell you what I mean—draw a line from Cape Sable to Cape Cansoo, right thro' the province, and it will split it into two, this way, and I cut an apple into two halves; now, says I, the worst half, like the rotten half of the apple, belongs to Halifax, and the other and sound half belongs to St. John. Your side of the province on the sea coast is all stone—I never seed such a proper sight of rocks in my life, it's enough to starve a rabbit. Well, t'other side on the Bay of Fundy is a super-fine country, there aint the heat of it to be found any where. Now, wouldn't the folks living away up to the Bay, be pretty fools to go to Halifax, when they can go to St. John with half the trouble. St. John is the natural capital of the Bay of Fundy, it will be the largest city in America next to New York. It has an immense back country as big as Great Britain, a first chop river, amazin sharp folks, most as cute as the Yankees—it's a splendid location for business. Well, they draw all the produce of the Bay sheres, and where the produce goes the supplies return—it will take the whole trade of the Province; I guess your rich folks will find they've burnt their fingers, they've put their foot in it, that's a fact. Houses without tenants, wharves without shipping, a town without people—what a grand investment! If you have any loose dollars, let 'em out on mortgage in Halifax, that's the security—keep clear of the country for your life—the people may run, but the town can't. No, take away the troops and you're done—you'll sing the dead march folks did at Louisbourg and Shelburne. Why you hant got a single thing worth havin, but a good harbour, and as for that the coast is full on 'em. You havn't a pine log, spruce board, or a refuse shingle; you neither raise wheat, oats, or hay, nor never can; you have no staples on airth, unless it be them

See to

See to

See to

See to

See to

See to

Bridewell
 iron ones for the padlocks in Bridewell—you've sowed pride and reaped poverty, take care of your crop, for it's worth harvestin—you have no river and no country, what in the name of fortin, have you to trade on?

But, said he (and he shewed the whites of his eyes like a wall-eyed horse), but, said he, Mr. Slick, how is it, then, Halifax ever grew at all, hasn't it got what it always had; it's no worse than it was. I guess, said I, that pole aint strong enough to bear you neither; if you trust to that you'll be into the brook, as sure as you are born; you once had the trade of the whole Province, but St. John has run off with that now—you've lost all but your trade in blue berries and rabbits with the niggers at Hammond Plains. *You've lost your customers, your rivals have a better stand for business—they've got the corner store—four great streets meet there, and its near the market slip.*

Well, he stared; says he, I believe you're right, but I never thought of that afore (thinks I, nobody ever suspects you of the trick of thinkin that ever I heer'd tell of): some of our great men, said he, laid it all to your folks selling so many Clocks and Polyglot Bibles, they say you have taken off a horrid sight of money. Did they, indeed, said I; well, I guess it tante pins and needles that's the expense of house-keepin, it is something more costly than that. Well, some folks say its the Banks, says he. Better still, says I, perhaps you've heard tell too, that greasing the axle makes a gig harder to draw, for there's jist about as much sense in that. Well, then, says he, others say it's smugglin has made us so poor. That guess, said I, is most as good as tother one, whoever found out that secret ought to get a patent for it, for its worth knowin. Then the country has grown poorer, hasn't it, because it has bought cheaper this year, than it did the year before? Why, your folks are cute chaps, I vow; they'd puzzle a Philadelphia Lawyer, they are so amazin knowin. Ah, said he, and he rubb'd his hands and smiled like a young doctor, when he gets his first patient; ah, said he, if the timber duties are altered, down comes St. John, body and breeches; it's built on a poor foundation—its all show—they are speculatin like mad—they'll ruin themselves. Says I, if you wait till they're dead for your fortin, it will be one while, I tell, afore you pocket the shiners. It's no joke waitin for a dead man's shoes. Suppose an old feller of eighty was to say when that are young feller dies, I'm to inherit his property, what would you think? Why I guess you'd think he was an old fool. *Guinice says*
Yes.
husa
 No, sir, if the English dont want their timber, we do want it all, we have used ourn up, we hant got a stick even to whittle. If the British dont offer, we will, and St. John, like a dear little weeping widow, will dry up her tears, and take to frolickin agin and accept it right off.

There isn't at this moment such a location hardly in America, as St. John; for beside all its other advantages, it has this great one, its only rival, Halifax, has got a dose of opium that will send it snoring out of the world, like a feller who falls asleep on the ice of a winter's night. It has been asleep so long, I actilly think it never will wake. Its an easy death, too, you may rouse them up if you like, but I vow I wont. I once brought a feller too that was drowned, and one night he got drunk and quitted me, I couldn't walk for a week; says I, Youre the last chap I'll ever save from drowning in all my born days, if that's all the thanks I get for it. No, sir, Halifax has lost the run of its custom. Who does Yarmouth trade with? St. John. Who does Annapolis County trade with? St. John. Who do all the folks on the Basin of Mines, and Bay shore, trade with? St. John. Who does Cumberland trade with? St. John. Well, Pictou, Lunenburg, and Liverpool supply themselves, and the rest, that aint worth havin, trade with Halifax. They take down a few half-starved pigs, old viteran geese, and long legged fowls, some ram mutton and tuf beef, and swap them for tea, sugar, and such little notions for their old women to home; while the railroads and canals of St. John are goin to cut off your Gulf Shore trade to Miramichi, and along there. Flies live in the summer and die in winter, you're jist as noisy in war as those little critters, but you sing small in peace.

No, your done for, you are up a tree, you may depend, pride must fall. Your town is like a ball-room arter a dance. The folks have eat, drank, and frolicked, and left an empty house; the lamps and hangings are left, but the people are gone.

Is there no remedy for this? said he, and he looked as wild as a Cherokee Indian. Thinks I, the handle is fitten on proper tight now. Well, says I, when a man has a cold, he had ought to look out pretty sharp, afore it gets seated on his lungs; if he don't, he gets into a gallopin consumption, and it's gone goose with him. There is a remedy, if applied in time: *make a railroad to Minas Basin, and you have a way for your customers to get to you, and a conveyance for your goods to them.* When I was in New York last, a cousin of mine, Hezekiah Slick, said to me, I do believe, Sam, I shall be ruined; I've lost all my custom, they are widening and improving the streets, and there's so many carts and people to work in it, folks can't come to my shop to trade; what on airth shall I do, and I'm payin a dreadful high rent, too? Stop Ki, says I, when the street is all finished off and slicked up, they'll all come back agin, and a whole raft more on'em too, you'll sell twice as much as ever you did, you'll put off a proper swad of goods next year, you may depend; and so he did, he made money, hand over hand. A railroad will bring back your customers, if done right off; but wait till trade has made new channels, and fairly gets settled in them, and you'll never divart it

- Row

By the way
This is
your book
Mr. Slick

agin to all eternity. When a feller waits till a gall gets married, I guess it will be too late to pop the question then.

St. John *must* go ahead, at any rate; you *may*, if you choose, but you must exert yourselves, I tell you. If a man has only one leg, and wants to walk, he must get an artificial one. If you have no river, make a railroad, and that will supply its place. But, says he, Mr. Slick, people say it never will pay in the world, they say its as mad a scheme as the canal. Do they, indeed, says I; send them to me then, and I'll fit the handle on to them in tu tu's. I say it will pay, and the best proof is, our folks will take tu thirds of the stock. Did you ever hear any one else but your folks, ax whether a dose of medicine would pay when it was given to save life? If that everlastin long Erie canal can secure to New York the supply of that far off country, most tother side of creation, surely a railroad of forty-five miles can give you the trade of the Bay of Fundy. A railroad will go from Halifax to Windsor and make them one town, easier to send goods from one to tother, than from Governor Campbell's House to Admiral Cockburn's. A bridge makes a town, a river makes a town, a canal makes a town, but a railroad is bridge, river, thoroughfare, canal, all in one; what a wappin large place that would make, wouldn't it? It would be the dandy, that's a fact. No, when you go back, take a piece of chalk, and the first dark night, write on every door in Halifax, in large letters—*a railroad*—and if they don't know the meanin of it, says you its a Yankée word; if you'll go to Sam Slick, the Clockmaker (the chap that fixed a Yankee handle on to a Halifax blade, and I made him a scrape of my leg, as much as to say that's you), every man that buys a Clock shall hear all about a *Railroad*.

CHAPTER XVIII.

THE GRAHAMITE AND THE IRISH PILOT.

I THINK, said I, this is a happy country, Mr. Slick. The people are fortunately all of one origin, there are no national jealousies to divide, and no very violent politics to agitate them. They appear to be cheerful and contented, and are a civil, good-natured, hospitable race. Considering the unsettled state of almost every part of the world, I think I would as soon cast my lot in Nova Scotia as in any part I know of.

Its a clever country, you may depend, said he, a very clever country: full of mineral wealth, aboundin in superior water privileges and noble harbours, a large part of it prime land, and it is in the very

heart of the fisheries. But the folks put me in mind of a sect in our country they call the Grahamites—they eat no meat and no exciting food, and drink nothin stronger than water. They call it Philosophy (and that is such a pretty word it has made fools of more folks than them afore now), but I call it tarnation nonsense. I once travelled all through the State of Maine with one of them are chaps. He was as thin as a whippin post. His skin looked like a blown bladder arter some of the air had leaked out, kinder wrinkled and rumped like, and his eye as dim as a lamp that's livin on a short allowance of ile. He put me in mind of a pair of kitchen tongs, all legs, shaft, and head, and no belly, a real gander gutted lookin critter, as holler as a bamboo walkin cane, and twice as yaller. He actilly looked as if he had been picked off a rack at sea, and dragged through a gimlet hole. He was a lawyer. Thinks I, the Lord a massy on your clients, you hungry, half-starved lookin critter, you, you'll eat 'em up alive as sure as the Lord made Moses. You are just the chap to strain at a'gnat and swallow a camel, tank, shank, and flank, all at a gulp.

Well, when we came to an inn, and a beefsteak was sot afore us for dinner, he'd say : Oh that is too good for me, it's too exciting ; all fat meat is diseased meat—give me some bread and cheese. Well, I'd say, I don't know what you call too good, but it tante good enough for me, for I call it as tuf as laushong, and that will bear chawing all day. When I liquidate for my dinner, I like to get about the best that's goin, and I an't a bit too well pleased if I don't. Exciting indeed!! thinks I. Lord, I should like to see you excited, if it was only for the fun of the thing. What a temptin lookin critter you'd be among the galls, wouldn't you? Why, you look like a subject the doctor boys had dropped on the road arter they had dug you up, and had cut stick and run for it.

Well, when tea came, he said the same thing, it's too exciting, give me some water, do; that's follorin the law of natur. Well, says I, if that's the case, you ought to eat beef; why, says he, how do you make out that are proposition? Why, says I, if drinking water, instead of tea, is natur, so is eaten grass according to natur; now all flesh is grass, we are told, so you had better eat that and call it vegetable : like a man I once seed, who fasted on fish on a Friday, and when he had none, whipped a leg o' mutton into the oven, and took it out fish; says he its ' changed plaice,' that's all, and ' plaice' ain't a bad fish. The Catholics fast enough, gracious knows, but when they fast on a great rousin big splendid salmon at two dollars and forty cents, a pound, and lots of old Madeira to make it float light on the stomach; there's some sense in mortifying the appetite arter that fashion, but plaguy little in your way. No, says I, friend, you may talk about natur as you please, I've studied natur all my life, and I vow if your natur could speak out, it would tell you, it don't

over half like to be starved arter that plan. If you know'd as much about the marks of the mouth as I do, you'd know that you have carnivorous as well as graniverous teeth, and that natur meant by that, you should eat most anything that are door-keeper, your nose, would give a ticket to, to pass into your mouth. Father rode a race at New-York course, when he was near hand to seventy, and that's more nor you'll do, I guess, and he eats as hearty as a turkey cock, and he never confined himself to water neither, when he could get anything convened him better. Says he, Sam, grandfather Slick used to say there was an old proverb in Yorkshire, 'a full belly makes a strong back,' and I guess if you try it, natur will tell you so too. If ever you go to Connecticut, jist call into father's and he'll give you a real right down genuine New England breakfast, and if that don't happify your heart, then my name's not Sam Slick. It will make you feel about among the stiiest, I tell you. It will blow your jacket out like a pig at sea. You'll have to shake a reef or two out of your waistbans and make good stowage, I guess, to carry it all under hatches. There's nothin like a good pastur to cover the ribs, and make the hide shine, depend on't.

Now this Province is like that are Grahamite lawyer's beef, it's too good for the folks that's in it; they either don't avail its value or won't use it, because work ant arter their 'law of natur.' As you say, they are quiet enough (there's worse folks than the blue-noses, too, if you come to that), and so they had ought to be quiet, for they have nothin to fight about. As for politics, they have nothin to desearve the name; but they talk enough about it, and a plaguy sight of nonsense they do talk, too.

Now with us, the country is divided into two parties, of the mam-mouth breed, the *ins* and the *outs*, the *administration* and the *opposition*. But where's the administration here? Where's the War Office, the Foreign Office, and the Home Office? where's the Secretary of the Navy? where the State Bank? where's the Ambassadors and Diplomastists (them are the boys to wind off a snarl of ravellins as slick as if it were on a reel) and where's that Ship of State, fitted up all the way from the forecassle clean up to the stern post, chuck full of good snug berths, handsomly found and furnished, tier over tier, one above another, as thick as it can hold? That's a helm worth handlen, I tell you; I don't wonder that folks mutiny below, and fight on the decks above for it—it makes a plaguy uproar the whole time, and keeps the passengers for everlastinly in a state of alarm for fear they'd do mischief by bustin the byler, a runnin aground, or gettin foul of some other craft.

This Province is better as it is, quieter and happier far; they have berths enough and big enough, they should be careful not to increase 'em; and if they were to do it over agin, perhaps they'd be as well

with fewer, They have two parties here, the Tory party and the Opposition party, and both on 'em run to extremes. Them radicals, says one, are for levellin all down to their own level, tho' not a peg lower; that's their gage, jist down to their own notch and no further; and they'd agitate the whole country to obtain that object, for if a man can't grow to be as tall as his neighbour, if he cuts a few inches off him why then they are both of one height. They are a most dangerous, disaffected people—they are eternally appealin to the worst passions of the mob. Well, says t'other, them aristocrats, they'll ruiate the country, they spend the whole revenu on themselves. What with Bankers, Councillors, Judges, Bishops, and Public Officers, and a whole tribe of Lawyers as hungry as hawks, and jist about as marciful, the country is devoured, as if there was a flock of lucusts a feeding on it. There's nothin left for roads and bridges. When a chap sets out to canvass, he's got to antagonise one side or t'other. If he hangs on to the powers that be, then he's a Councilman, he's for votin large salaries, for doin as the great people at Halifax tell him. *He is a fool.* If he is on t'other side, a railin at Banks, Judges, Lawyers, and such cattle, and baulin for what he knows he can't get, then *He is a rogue.* So that, if you were to listen to the weak and noisy critters on both sides, you'd believe the House of Assembly was *one-half rogues, and t'other half fools.* All this arises from ignorance. *If they knew more of each other, I guess they'd lay aside one-half their fears and all their abuse. The upper class don't know one-half the virtue that's in the middlin and lower classes; and they don't know one-half the integrity and good feelin that's in the others, and both are fooled and gulled by their own noisy and designin champions.* Take any two men that are by the ears, they opinionate all they hear of each other, impute all sorts of onworthy motives, and misconstrue every act; let them see more of each other, and they'll find out to their surprise, that they have not only been looking thro' a magnifyin glass, that warn't very true, but a coloured one also, that changed the complexion and distorted the features, and each one will think t'other a very good kind of chap, and like as not a plaguy pleasant one too.

If I was axed which side was farthest from the mark in this Province, I vow I should be puzzled to say. As I don't belong to the country, and don't care a snap of my finger for either of 'em, I suppose I can judge better than any man in it, but I snore I don't think there's much difference. The popular side (I wont say patriotic, for we find in our steam-boats a man who has a plaguy sight of property in his portmanteau is quite as anxious for its safety as him that's only one pair of yarn stockings and a clean shirt, is for hisn) the popular side are not so well informed as tother, and they have the misfortin of havin their passions addressed more than their reason,

grow
Kanon

sign
ban

grow

therefore they are often out of the way, or rather led out of it, and put astray by bad guides; well, t'other side have the prejudices of birth and education to dim their vision, and are alarmed to undertake a thing, from the dread of ambush or open foes, that their guides are eternally descrying in the mist—and beside, power has a nateral tendency to corpulency. As for them guides, I'd make short work of 'em if it was me.

In the last war with Britain, the Constitution frigate was close in once on the shores of Ireland, a lookin arter some marchant ships, and she took on board a pilot; well, he was a deep, sly, twistical lookin chap, as you een amost ever seed. He had a sort of dark down look about him, and a lear out of the corner of one eye, like a horse that's goin to kick. The captain guessed he read in his face 'well, now, if I was to run this here Yankee right slap on a rock and bilge-her, the King would make a man of me for ever.' So, says he to the first lestenant, reeve a rope thro' that are block at the tip eend of the fore yard, and clap a runnin nuse in it. The Lestenant did it as quick as wink, and came back, and says he, I guess it's done. Now, says the Captain, look here, pilot, here's a rope you han't seed yet, I'll jist explain the use of it to you in case you want the loan of it. If this here frigate, manned with our free and enlightened citzens, gets aground, I'll give you a ride on the slack of that are rope, right up to that yard by the neck, by Gum. Well, it rub'd all the writin out of his face, as quick as spitten on a slate takes a sum out, you may depend. Now, they should rig up a crane over the street door of the State House at Halifax, and when any of the pilots at either eend of the buildin, run 'em on the breakers on purpose, string 'em up li'e an onsafe dog. A sign of that are kind, with 'a house of public entertainment,' painted under it, would do the business in less than no time. If it wouldn't keep the hawkes out of the poultry yard, it's a pity—it would scare them out of a year's growth, that's a fact—if they used it once, I guess they wouldn't have occasion for it agin in a hurry—it would be like the Aloe tree, and that bears fruit only once in a hundred yeafs.

If you want to know how to act any time, squire, never go to books, leave them to galls and school boys; but go right off and cypher it out of natur, that's a sure guide, it will never deceive you, you may depend. For instance, *what's that to me*, is a phrase so common that it shows it's a nateral one, when people have no particular interest in a thing. Well, when a feller gets so warm on either side as never to use that phrase at all, watch him, that's all! keep your eye on him, or he'll walk right into you afore you know where you be. If a man runs to me and says, 'your fence is down,' thank you, says I, that's kind—if he comes agin and says, 'I guess some stray cattle have broke into your short sarce garden,' I thank him

agin; says I, come now, this is neighborly; but when he keeps eternally tellin me this thing of one sarvant, and that thing of another sarvant, hints that my friends an't true, that my neighbours are inclined to take advantage of me, and that suspicious folks are seen, about my place, I say to myself, what on airth makes this critter take such a wonderful interest in my affairs? I dont like to hear such tales—he's arter somethin as sure as the world, if he warnt he'd say, '*what's that to me.*' I never believe much what I heard said by a man's *violent friend*, or *violent enemy*, I want to hear what a disinterested man has to say—*now, as a disinterested man, I say if the members of the House of Assembly, instead of raisin up ghosts and hobgoblins to frighten folks with, and to show what swordsmen they be, a cuttin and thrustin at phantoms that only exist in their own brains, would turn to heart and hand, and develope the resources of this fine country, facilitate the means of transport—promote its internal improvement, and encourage its foreign trade, they would make it the richest and greatest, as it now is one of the happiest sections of all America—I hope I may be skinned if they wouldn't—they would, I swan.*

CHAPTER XIX.

THE CLOCKMAKER QUILTS A BLUE-NOSE.

THE descendants of Eve have profited little by her example. The curiosity of the fair sex is still insatiable, and, as it is often ill-directed, it frequently terminates in error. In the country this feminine propensity is troublesome to a traveller, and he who would avoid importunities, would do well to announce at once, on his arrival at a Cumberland Inn, his name and his business, the place of his abode, and the length of his visit.

Our beautiful hostess, Mrs. Pugwash, as she took her seat at the breakfast table this morning, exhibited the example that suggested these reflections. She was struck with horror at our conversation, the latter part only of which she heard, and of course misapplied and misunderstood.

She was run down by the President, said I, and has been laid up for some time. Gulard's people have stripped her, in consequence of her making water so fast. Stripped whom? said Mrs. Pugwash, as she suddenly dropped the tea-pot from her hand; stripped whom, —for heaven's sake tell me who it is? The Lady Ogle, said I. Lady Ogle, said she, how horrid! Two of her ribs were so broken as to require to be replaced with new ones. Two new ribs, said she, well, I

never heard the beat of that in all my born days; poor critter, how she must have suffered. On examining her below the waist they found—Examining her still lower, said she (all the pride of her sex revolting at the idea of such an indecent exhibition), you don't pretend to say they stripped her below the waist; what did the Admiral say? Did he stand by and see her handled in that way? The Admiral, madam, said I, did not trouble his head about it. They found her extremely unsound there, and much worm eaten. Worm eaten, she continued, how awful! it must have been them nasty jiggers that got in there; they tell me they are dreadful thick in the West Indies; Joe Crow had them in his feet, and lost two of his toes. Worm eaten, dear, dear! but still that aint so bad as having them great he fellows strip one. I promise you if them Gulards had undertaken to strip me, I'd taught them different guess manners; I'd died first before I'd submitted to it. I alway heard tell the English quality ladies were awful bold, but I never heard the like o' that.

What on airth are you drivin at? said Mr. Slick. I never seed you so much out in your latitude afore, marm, I vow. We were talking of repairin a vessel, not strippin a woman: what under the sun could have put that are crotchet into your head? She looked mortified and humbled at the result of her own absurd curiosity, and soon quitted the room. I thought I should have snorted right out two or three times, said the Clockmaker; I had to pucker up my mouth like the upper eend of a silk puss, to keep from yawhavin in her face, to hear the critter let her clapper run that fashion. She is not the first hand that has caught a lobster, by puttin in her oar afore her turn, I guess. She'll mind her stops next hitch, I reckon. This was our last breakfast at Amherst.

An early frost that smote the potatoe fields, and changed the beautiful green colour of the Indian corn into shades of light yellow, and dark brown, reminded me of the presence of autumn—of the season of short days and bad roads, I determined to proceed at once to Parrsboro, and thence by the Windsor and Kentville rout to Annapolis, Yarmouth, and Shelburne, and to return, by the shore road, through Liverpool and Lunenburg to Halifax. I therefore took leave (though not without much reluctance) of the Clockmaker, whose intention had been to go to Fort Lawrence. Well, said he, I vow I am sorry to part company along with you; a considerable long journey like ourn, is like sitting up late with the galls, a body knows its getting on pretty well towards mornin, and yet feels loth to go to bed, for its just the time folks grow sociable.

I got a scheme in my head, said he, that I think will answer both on us; I got debts due to me in all them are places for Clocks sold by the concern, now suppose you leave your horse on these marshes this fall, he'll get as fat as a fool, he won't be able to see out of his

Jiggars

*Gwilla
Kingwell*

office provide

*Jung
Frank*

*Loath
to go to bed*

eyes in a month, and I'll put 'Old Clay' (I call him Clay arter our senator, who is a prime bit of stuff) into a Yankee waggon I have here, and drive you all round the coast.

This was too good an offer to be declined. A run at grass for my horse, an easy and comfortable waggon, and a guide so original and amusing as Mr. Slick, were either of them enough to induce my acquiescence.

As soon as we had taken our seats in the waggon, he observed, We shall progress real handsom now; that are horse goes eternal fast, he near about set my axle on fire twice. He's a spanker you may depend. I had him when he was a two year old, all legs and tail, like a devil's darnin needle, and had him broke on purpose by father's old nigger, January Snow. He knows English real well, and can do near about any thing but speak it. He helped me once to ginn a blue-nose a proper handsom quiltin. He must have stood a poor chance indeed, said I, a horse kicking, and a man striking him at the same time. Oh! not arter that pattern all, said he; Lord, if Old Clay had kicked him; he'd a gsmashed him like that are saucer you broke at Pugnose's inn, into ten hundred thousand million slinders. Oh! no, if I didn't fix his flint for him in fair play, it's a pity. I'll tell you how it was. I was up to Truro, at Ezra Whitter's Inn. There was an arbitration there atween Deacon Text and Deacon Faithful. Well, there was a nation sight of folks there, for they said it was a biter bit, and they came to witness the sport, and to see which critter would get the ear mark.

Well, I'd been doin a little business there among the folks, and had jist sot off for the river, mounted on Old Clay, arter takin a glass of Ezra's most particular handsom Jamaiky, and was trottin off pretty slick, when who should I run agin but Tim Bradley. He is a dreadful hugly, cross-grained critter, as you een amost ever seed, when he is about half-shaved. Well, I stopped short, and says I, Mr. Bradley, I hope you beant hurt; I'm proper sorry I run agin you, you can't feel uglier than I do about it, I do assure you. He called me a Yan'ee pedlar, a cheatin vagabond, a wooden nutmeg, and threw a good deal of assorted hardware of that kind at me; and the crowd of folks cried out, Down with the Yankee, let him have it, Tim, teach him better manners; and they carried on pretty high, I tell you. Well, I got my dander up too, I felt all up on eend like; and, thinks I to myself, my lad, if I get a clever chance, I'll give you such a quiltin as you never had since you were raised from a seedlin, I vow. So, says I, Mr. Bradley, I guess you had better let me be; you know I can't fight no more than a cow—I never was brought up to wranglin, and I don't like it. Haul off the cowardly rascal, they all bawled out, haul him off, and lay it into him. So he lays right hold of me by the collar, and gives me a pull, and I lets on as if I'd lost my balance, and

may be
head of
of Long
North
Poly
W. H. W.
Z. W. W.

W. H. W.
Z. W. W.

falls right down. Then I jumps up on eend, and says, I 'go ahead, Clay,' and the old orse he sets off ahead, so I knew I had him when I wanted him. Then, says I, I hope you are satisfied now, Mr. Bradley, with that are ungenteel fall you ginn me. Well, he makes a blow at me, and I dodged it; now, says I, you'll be sorry for this, I tell you; I won't be treated this way for nothin; I'll go right off and swear my life again you, I'm most afeerd you'll murder me. Well, he strikes at me again (thinking he had a genuine soft horn to deal with), and hits me in the shoulder. Now, says I, I won't stand here to be lathered like a dog all day long this fashion, it tante pretty at all, I guess I'll give you a chase for it. Off I sets arter my horse like mad, and he arter me (I did that to get clear of the crowd, so that I might have fair play at him). Well, I soon found I had the heels of him, and could play him as I liked. Then I slackened up a little, and when he came close up to me, so as nearly to lay his hand upon me, I squatted right whap down, all short, and he pitched over me near about a rod or so, I guess, on his head, and plowed up the ground with his nose, the matter of a foot or two. If he didn't polish up the coultter, and both mould boards of his face, it's a pity. Now, says I, you had better lay where you be and let me go, for I am proper tired; I blow like a horse that's got the heaves; and besides, says I, I guess you had better wash your face, for I am most a feard you hurt yourself. That ryled him properly; I meant that it should; so he ups and at me awful spiteful, like a bull; then I lets him have it, right, left, right, jist three cokers, beginning with the right hand, shifting to the left, and then with the right hand agin. This way I did it, said the Clockmaker (and he showed me the manner in which it was done), it's a beautiful way of hitting, and always does the business—a blow for each eye, and one for the mouth. It sounds like ten pounds ten on a blacksmith's anvil; I bunged up both eyes for him, and put in the dead lights in two tu's and drew three of his teeth, quicker a plaguy sight than the Truro doctor could, to save his soul alive. Now, says I, my friend, when you recover your eye-sight, I guess you'll see your mistake—I warn't born in the woods to be scared by an owl. The next time you feel in a most particular elegant good humour, come to me, and I'll play you the second part of that identical same tune, that's a fact.

With that, I whistled for Old Clay, and back he comes, and I mounted and off, jist as the crowd came up. The folks looked staggered, and wondered a little grain how it was done so cleverly in short metre. If I didn't quilt him in no time you may depend; I went right slap into him, like a flash of lightning into a gooseberry bush. He found his suit ready made and fitted afore he thought he was half measured. Thinks I, friend Bradley, I hope you know yourself now, for I vow no livin soul would; you've swallowed your

ter our se-
have here,

grass for my
original and
uce my ac-

observed,
oes eternal
panker you
all legs and
purpose by
al well, and
nce to ginn
tood a poor
king him at
Lord, if Old
saucer you
on flinders.
a pity. I'll
itter's Inn.
eacon Faith-
said it was
hich critter

e folks, and
akin a glass
n off pretty
is a dread-
d, when he
Mr. Bran-
n you, you
called me a
nd threw a
e crowd of
Tim, teach
I tell you.
nd, thinks
you such a
in, I vow.
you know
wrangling,
awled out;
me by the
ance, and

you'd better

you'd better
you'd better

you'd better

you'd better
you'd better
you'd better

soup without singin out scaldins, and you're near about a pint and a half nearer cryin than larfin.

Yes, as I was sayin, this 'Old Clay' is a real knowin one, he's as spry as a colt yet, clear grit, ginger to the back bone; I can't help a thinkin sometimes the breed must have come from old Kentuck, half horse, half alligator, with a cross of the airthquake.

I hope I may be tee-totally ruinated, if I'd take eight hundred dollars for him. Go ahead, you old clinker built villain, said he, and show the gentleman how wonderful *handsom* you can travel. Give him the real Connecticut quick step. That's it—that's the way to carry the President's message to Congress, from Washington to New York, in no time—that's the go to carry a gall from Coston to Rhode Island, and trice her up to a Justice to be married, afore her father's out of bed of a summer's mornin. Aint he a beauty? a real doll? none of your Cumberland critters, that the more you quilt them, the more they won't go; but 'a proper one, that will go free gratis for nothin, all out of his own head *volunterrily*. Yes, a horse like 'Old Clay,' is worth the whole seed, breed and generation, of them Amherst beasts put together. He's a horse, overy inch of him, stock, lock, and harrel, is *old Clay*.

CHAPTER XX.

SISTER SALL'S COURTSHIP.

Sally
 THERE goes one of them arc everlasting rottin poles in that bridge; they are no better than a trap for a critter's leg, said the Clockmaker. They remind me of a trap Jim Munroe put his foot in one night, that near about made one leg half a yard longer than tother. I believe I told you of him, what a desperate idle feller he was—he came from Onion County in Connecticut. Well, he was courtin Sister Sall—she was a real *handsom* looking gall; you scarce ever seed a more out and out complete critter than she was—a fine figur head, and a beautiful model of a craft as any in the state; a real *clipper*, and as ful of fun and frolic as a kitten. Well, he fairly turned Sall's head; the more we wanted her to give him up, the more she would'nt, and we got plaguy oneasy about it, for his character was none of the best. He was a univarsal favourite with the galls, and tho' he didn't behave very pretty neither, forgettin to marry where he promised, and where he hadn't ought to have forgot, too; yet so it was, he had such an uncommon winnin way with him, he could talk them over in no time—Sall was fairly bowitched.

At last, father said to him one evening when he came a courtin, Jim, says he, you'll never come to no good, if you act like old Scratch as you do; you aint fit to come into no decent man's house, at all, and your absence would be ten times more agreeable than your company, I tell you. I won't consent to Sall's goin to them are huskin-parties and quilting frolics along with you no more, on no account, for you know how Polly Brown and Nancy White——. Now don't, says he, now don't, Uncle Sam; say no more about that; if you know'd all you wouldn't say it was my fault; and besides, I have turned right about, I am on tother tack now, and the long leg, too; I am as steady as a pump bolt, now. I intend to settle myself and take a farm. Yes, yes, and you could stock it, too, by all accounts, pretty well, unless you are much misreported, says father, but it won't do. I knew your father, he was our sargeant, a proper clever and brave man he was, too; he was one of the heroes of our glorious revolution. I had a great respect for him, and I am sorry, for his sake, you will act as you do; but I tell you once for all, you must give up all thoughts of Sall, now and for everlastin. When Sall heerd this, she began to nix away like mad in a desperate hurry—she looked foolish enough, that's a fact. First she tried to bite in her breath, and look as if there was nothin particular in the wind, then she blushed all over like scarlet fever, but she recovered that pretty soon, and then her colour went and came, and came and went, till at last she grew as white as chalk, and down she fell slap off her seat on the floor, in a faintin fit. I see, says father, I see it now, you eternal villain, and he made a pull at the old fashioned sword, that always hung over the fire place (we used to call it old Bunker, for his stories always begun, 'when I was at Bunker's hill'), and drawing it out he made a clip at him as wicked as if he was stabbing a rat with a hay-fork; but Jim, he outs of the door like a shot, and draws it to arter him, and father sends old Bunker right through the panel. I'll chop you up as fine as mince meat, you villain, said he, if ever I catch you inside my door again; mind what I tell you, 'You'll swing for it yet.' Well, he made himself considerable scarce arter that, he never sot foot inside the door again, and I thought he had ginn up all hopes of Sall, and she of him; when one night, a most particular uncommon dark night, as I was a comin home from neighbour Dearborne's, I heerd some one a talkin under Sall's window. Well, I stops and listens, and who should be near the ash saplin, but Jim Munroe, a tryin to persuade Sall to run off with him to Rhode Island to be married. It was all settled, he should come with a horse and shay to the gate, and then help her out of the window, jist at nine o'clock, about the time she commonly went to bed. Then he axes her to reach down her hand for him to kiss (for he was proper clever at soft sawder) and she stretches it down and he kisses it; and

pint and a
one, he's as
can't help a
ntuck, half
ht hundred
aid he, and
avel. Give
the way to
gton to New
on to Rhode
her father's
a real doll?
t them, the
be gratis for
se like 'Old
f them Am-
him, stock,

that bridge;
lockmaker.
one night,
r. I believe
came from
sister Sall—
seed a more
head, and a
per, and as
Sall's head;
e wouldn't,
none of the
o' he didn't
e promised,
it was, he
talk them

mightily

black

huff

huff
huff
huff

huff
huff
huff

says he, I believe I must have the whole of you out arter all, and givcs her a jirk that kinder startled her: it came so sudden like, it made her scream; so off he sot hot foot, and over the gate in no time.

Well, I cyphered over this all night, a calculating how I should reciprocate that trick with him, and at last I hit on a scheme. I recollected father's words at partin ' *mind what I tell you, you'll swing for it yet;*' and thinks I, friend Jim, I'll make that prophecy come true, yet, I guess. So the next night, jist at dark, I gives January Snow, the old nigger, a nidge with my elbow, and as soon as he looks up, I winks and walks out and he arter me—says I, January, can you keep your tongue within your teeth, you old nigger you? Why massa, why you ax that are question? my Gor Ormity, you tink old Snow he dont know that are yet; my tongue he got plenty room now, debil a tooth left, he can stretch out ever so far; like a little leg in a big bed, he lay quiet enough, massa, neber fear. Well, then, says I, bend down that are ash saplin softly, you old Snowball, and make no noise. The saplin was no sooner bent than secured to the ground by a notched peg and a noose, and a slip knot was suspended from the tree, jist over the track that led from the pathway to the house. Why, my Gor, massa that's a—. Hold your mug, you old nigger, says I, or I'll send your tongue a sarchin arter your teeth; keep quiet, and follow me in presently.

Well, jist as it struck nine o'clock, says I, Sally, hold this here hank of twine for a minute, till I wind a trifle on it off; that's a dear critter. She sot down her candle, and I put the twine on her hands, and then I begins to wind and wind away ever so slow, and drops the ball every now and then, so as to keep her down stairs. Sam, says she, I do believe you won't wind that are twine off all night, do give it to January, I won't stay no longer, I'm een amos' dead asleep. The old feller's arm is so plaguy onsteady, says I, it won't do; but hark, what's that, I'm sure I heerd something in the ash saplin, didn't you, Sall? I heerd the geese there, that's all, says she; they always come under the windows at night; but she looked scared enough, and says she, I wow I'm tired a holdin out of arms this way, and I won't do it no longer; and down she throw'd the hank on the floor. Well, says I, step one minute, dear, till I send old January out to see if any body is there; perhaps some o' neighbour Dearborne's cattle have broke into the sarce garden. January went out, tho' Sall say'd it was no use, for she knew the noise of the geese, they always kept close to the house at night, for fear of the varmin. Presently in runs old Snow, with his hair standin up an eend, and the whites of his eyes lookin as big as the rims of a soup plate; Oh! Gor Ormity, said he, oh massa, oh Miss Sally, oh!! What on airth is the matter with you, said Sally, how you do frighten me, I vow I believe you're mad

—oh my Gor, said he, oh! massa Jim Munroe he hang himself, on the ash saplin under Miss Sally's window—oh my Gor!!! That shot was a settler, it stuck poor Sall right atwixt wind and water; she gave a lurch ahead, then healed over and sunk right down in another faintin fit; and Juno, old Snow's wife, carried her off and laid her down on the bed—poor thing, she felt ugly enough, I do suppose.

Well, father, I thought he'd a fainted too, he was so struck up all of a heap, he was completely bung fungored; dear, dear, said he, I didn't think it would come to pass so soon, but I knew it would come; I foretold it; says I, the last time I seed him, Jim, says I, mind what I say, *you'll swing for it yet*. Give me the sword I wore when I was at Bunker's hill, may be there is life yet, I'll cut him down. The lantern was soon made ready, and out we went to the ash saplin. Cut me down, Sam, that's a good fellow, said Jim, all the blood in my body has swashed into my head, and's a runnin out o' my nose, I'm een a most smothered—be quick, for heaven's sake. The Lord be praised, said father, the poor sinner is not quite dead yet. Why, as I'm alive—well if that don't beat all natur, why he has hanged himself by one leg, and's a swingin like a rabbit upside down, that's a fact. Why, if he aint snared, Sam; he is properly wired, I declare—I vow this is some o' your doins, Sam—well it was a clever scheme too, but a little grain too dangerous, I guess. Don't stand starin and jawin there all night, said Jim, cut me down, I tell you—or cut my throat and be damned to you, for I am choakin with blood. Roll over that are hogshead, old Snow, said I, till I get a top on it and cut him down; so I soon released him, but he couldn't walk a bit. His ancle was swelled and sprained like vengeance, and he swore one leg was near about six inches longer than tother. Jim Munroe, says father, little did I think I should ever see you inside my door agin, but I bid you enter now, we owe you that kindness, any how.

Well, to make a long story short, Jim was so chap fallen, and so down in the mouth, he begged for heaven's sake it might be kept a secret; he said he would *run* the state, if ever it got wind, he was sure he couldn't *stand* it. It will be one while, I guess, said father, afore you are able to run or stand either; but if you will give me your hand, Jim, and promise to give over your evil ways, I will not only keep it secret, but you shall be a welcome guest at old Sam Slick's a once more, for the sake of your father—he was a brave man, one of the heroes of Bunker's hill, he was our sergeant and—. He promises, says I, father (for the old man had stuck his right foot out, the way he always stood when he told about the old war; and as Jim couldn't stir a peg, it was a grand chance, and he was agoin to give him the whole revolution from General Gage up to Independence)—he promises, says I, father. Well, it was all settled, and things soon grew as calm as a pan of milk two days old; and

afore a year was over, Jim was as steady agoin man as Minister Joshua Hopewell, and was married to our Sali. Nothin was ever said about the snare till arter the weddin. When the minister had finished axin a blessin, father goes up to Jim, and says he, Jim Munroe, my boy, givin him a rousin slap on the shoulder that sot him a coughin for the matter of five minutes (for he was a mortal powerful man, was father) Jim Munroe, my boy, says he, you've got the snare round your neck, I guess now, instead of your leg; the Saplin has been a father to ycu, may you be the father of many Saplins.

We had a most special time of it, you may depend, all except the minister; father got him into a corner, and gave him chapter and verse of the whole war. Every now and then as I come near them, I heard Bunker's Hill, Brandywine, Clinton, Gates, and so on. It was broad day when we parted, and the last that went was poor minister. Father followed him clean down to the gate, and says he, Minister, we hadn't time this hitch, or I'd a told you all about the *Evakystation* of New York, but I'll tell you that the next time we meet.

CHAPTER XXI.

SETTING UP FOR GOVERNOR.

Referring to
gang room
I NEVER see one of them queer little old-fashioned teapots, like that in the cupboard of Marm Pugwash, said the Clock-maker, that I don't think of Lawyer Crowning-shield and his wife. When I was down to Rhode Island last, I spent an evening with them. After I had been there a while, the black house-help brought in a little home-made dipt candle, stuck in a turnip sliced in two, to make it stand straight, and sot it down on the table. Why, says the Lawyer to his wife, Increase, my dear, what on earth is the meaning o' that? What does little Viney mean by bringin in such a light as this, that aint fit for even a log hut of one of our free and enlightened citizens away down east; where's the lamp? My dear, says she, I ordered it—you know they are a goin to set you up for Governor next year, and I allot we must economise or we will be ruined—the salary is only four hundred dollars a year, you know, and you'll have to give up your practice—we can't afford nothin now.

Well, when tea was brought in, there was a little wee china teapot, that held about the matter of half a pint or so, and cups and saucers about the bigness of children's toys. When he seed that, he grow most peskily ryled, his under lip curled down like a peach leaf that's got a worm in it, and he stripped his teeth and showed his

grinders, like a bull dog. What foolery is this, said he? My dear, said she, it's the foolery of being Governor; if you choose to sacrifice all your comfort to being the first rung in the ladder, don't blame me for it. I didn't nominate you. I had not art nor part in it. It was cooked up at that are Convention, at Town Hall. Well, he sot for some time without sayin a word, lookin as black as a thunder cloud, just ready to make all natur crack agin. At last he gets up, and walks round behind his wife's chair, and taking her face between his two hands, he turns it up, and gives her a buss that went off like a pistol—it fairly made my mouth water to see him; thinks I, them lips aint a bad bank to deposit one's spare kisses in, neither. Increase, my dear, said he, I believe you are half right, I'll decline to-morrow, I'll have nothin to do with it—I *won't be a Governor, on no account.*

Well, she had to haw and gee like, both a little, afore she could get her head out of his hands; and then she said, Zachariah, says she, how you do act, aint you ashamed? Do for gracious sake behave yourself; and she coloured up all over like a crimson piany; if you hav'n't fozzled all my hair too, that's a fact, says she; and she put her curls to rights, and looked as pleased as fun, though poutin all the time, and walked right out of the room. Presently in come two well-dressed house-helps, one with a splendid gilt lamp, a real London touch, and another with a tea tray, with a large solid silver coffee-pot, and tea-pot, and a cream jug and sugar bowl of the same genuine metal, and a most elegant set of real gilt china. Then came in Marm Crowningshield herself, lookin as proud as if she would not call the President her cousin: and she gave the Lawyer a look, as much as to say, I guess when Mr. Slick is gone, I'll pay you off that are kiss with interest, you dear you—I'll answer a bill at sight for it, I will, you may depend.

I believe, said he agin, you are right, Increase, my dear; its an expensive kind of honour that bein Governor, and no great thanks neither; great cry and little wool, all talk and no cider—its enough I guess for a man to govern his own family, aint it, dear? Sartin, my love, said she, sartin, a man is never so much in his own proper sphere as there; and beside, said she, his will is supreme to home, there is no danger of any one non-concurring him there, and she gave me a sly look, as much as to say, I let him think he is master in his own house, *for when ladies wear the breeches, their petticoats ought to be long enough to hide them*; but I allot, Mr. Slick, you can see with half an eye that the 'grey mare is the better horse here.'

What a pity it is, continued the Clockmaker, that the blue-noses would not take a leaf out of Marm Crowningshield's book—talk more of their own affairs, and less of politics. I'm sick of the

everlastin sound of ' House of Assembly,' and ' Council,' and ' great folks.' They never alleviate talking about them from July to etar-nity.

I had a curious conversation about politics once, away up to the right here. Do you see that are house, said he, in the field, that's got a lurch to leeward, like a north river sloop, struck with a squall, off West Point, lopsided like? It looks like Seth Pine, a tailor down to Hartford, that had one leg shorter than tother, when he stood at ease at militia trainin, a restin on the littlest one. Well, I had a special frolic there the last time I passed this way. I lost the linch pin out of my forred axle, and I turned up there to get it sot to rights. Just as I drove through the gate, I saw the eldest gail a makin for the house for dear life—she had a short petticoat on that looked like a kilt, and her bare legs put me in mind of the long shanks of a bittern down in a ^{rush} swamp, a drivin away like mad full chizel arter a frog. I could not think what on airth was the matter. Thinks I, she wants to make herself look decent like afore I get in, she don't like to pull her stockings on afore me; so I pulls up the old horse, and let her have a fair start. Well, when I came to the door, I heerd a proper scuddin; there was a regular flight into Egypt, jist such a noise as little children make when the mistress comes suddenly into school, all a huddlin and seroudgin into their seats, as quick as wink. Dear me, says the old woman, as she put her head out of a broken window to avail who it was, is it you, Mr. Slick? I sniggers, if you did not frighten us properly, we actilly thought it was the Sheriff; do come in.

Poor thing, she looked half starved and half savage, hunger and temper had made proper strong lines in her face, like water furrows in a ploughed field; she looked bony and thin, like a horse that has had more work than oats, and had a wicked expression, as though it warnt over safe to come too near her heels—an everlastin kicker. You may come out, John, said she to her husband, its only Mr. Slick; and out came John from under the bed backwards, on all fours, like an ox out of the shoein frame, or a lobster skullin wrong eend foremost—he looked as wild as a hawk. Well, I swan I thought I should have split, I could hardly keep from bursting right out with larfter—he was all covered with feathers, lint, and dust, the savins of all the sweepins since the house was built, shoved under there for tidiness. He actilly sneezed for the matter of ten minutes—he seemed half choked with the flaff and stuff that came out with him like a cloud. Lord, he looked like a goose halpicked, as if all the quills were gone, but the pen feathers and down were left, jist ready for singin and stuffin. He put me in mind of a sick Adjutant, a great tall hulkin bird, that comes from the East Indgies, amost as high as a man, and most as knowin as a blue-nose. I'd a ginn a hundred dollars to

have had that chap as a show at a fair—tar and feathers warn't half as nateral. You've seen a gall both larf and cry at the same time, hante you? well I hope I may be shot if I couldn't have done the same. To see that critter come like a turkey out of a bag at Christmas, to be fired at for ten cents a shot, was as good as a play; but to look round and see the poverty—the half naked children—the old pine stumps for chairs—a small bin of poor watery yaller potatoes in the corner—daylight through the sides and roof of the house, lookin like the tarred seams of a ship, all black where the smoke got out—no utensils for cookin or eatin—and starvation wrote as plain as a hand-bill on their holler cheeks, skinney fingers, and sunk eyes, went right straight to the heart. I do declare I believe I should have cried, only they didn't seem to mind it themselves. They had been used to it, like a man that's married to a thunderin ugly wife, he gets so accustomed to the look of her everlastin dismal mug, that he don't think her ugly at all.

Well, there was another chap a settin by the fire, and he *did* look as if he saw it and felt it too, he didn't seem over half pleased, you may depend. He was the District Schoolmaster, and he told me he was takin a spell at boardin there, for it was their turn to keep him. Thinks I to myself, poor devil, you've brought your pigs to a pretty market, that's a fact. I see how it is, the blue-noses can't 'cypher.' The cat's out of the bag now—it's no wonder they don't go ahead, for they don't know nothin—the 'Schoolmaster is *abroad*,' with the devil to it, for he has *no home* at all. Why, Squire, you might jist as well expect a horse to go right off in gear, before he is halter broke, as a blue-nose to get on in the world, when he has got no schoolin.

But to get back to my story. Well, says I, how's times with you, Mrs. Spry? Dull, says she, very dull, there's no markets now, things don't fetch nothin. Thinks I, some folks hadn't ought to complain of markets, for they don't raise nothin to sell, but I didn't say so; *for poverty is keen enough, without sharpening its edge by poking fun at it.* Potatoes, says I, will fetch a good price this fall, for it's a short crop in a general way; how's your'n? Grand, says she, as complete as ever you seed; our tops were small and didn't look well; but we have the handsomest bottoms, its generally allowed, in all our place; you never seed the beat of them, they are actilly worth lookin at. I vow I had to take a chaw of tobacky to keep from snorting right out, it sounded so queer like. Thinks I to myself, old lady, it's a pity you couldn't be changed eend for eend then, as some folks do their stockings; it would improve the look of your dial-plate amazingly then, that's a fact.

Now there was human natur, squire, said the Clockmaker, there was pride even in that hovel. It is found in rags as well as king's

robes, where butter is spread with the thumb as well as the silver knife, *natur is natur wherever you find it.*

Jist then, in came one or two neighbours to see the sport, for they took me for a sheriff or constable, or something of that breed, and when they saw it was me they sot down to hear the news; they fell right too at politics as keen as anything, as if it had been a dish of real Connecticut Slaps Jacks, or Hominy; or what is better still, a glass of real genuine splendid mint julep, *who-ew-up*, it fairly makes my mouth water to think of it. I wonder, says one, what they will do for us this winter in the House of Assembly? Nothin, says the other, they never do nothin but what the great people at Halifax tell 'em. Squire Yeoman is the man, he'll pay up the great folks this hitch, he'll let 'em have their own, he's jist the boy that can do it. Says I, I wish I could say all men were as honest then, for I am afeard there are a great many won't pay me up this winter; I should like to trade with your friend, who is he? Why, says he, he is the member for Isle Sable County, and if he do n't let the great folks have it, it's a pity. Who do you call great folks, for, said I, I vow I havn't see'd one since I came here. The only one that I know that comes near hand to one is Nicholas Overknocker, that lives all along shore, about Margaret's Bay, and *he is* a great man, it takes a yoke of oxen to drag him. When I first see'd him, says I, what on airth is the matter o' that man, has he the dropsy, for he is actilly the greatest man I ever see'd; he must weigh the matter of five hundred weight; he'd cut three inches on the rib, he must have a proper sight of lard, that chap? No, says I, don't call 'em great men, for there ain't a great man in the country, that's a fact; there ain't one that deserves the name; folks will only larf at you if you talk that way. There may be some rich men, and I believe there be, and it's a pity there warn't more on 'em, and a still greater pity they have so little spirit or enterprise among 'em, but a country is none the worse of having rich men in it, you may depend. Great folks! well, come, that's a good joke, that bangs the bush. No my friend, says I, the meat that's *at the top of the barrel, is sometimes not so good as that's a little grain lower down; the upper and lower cends are plaguy apt to have a little taint in 'em, but the middle is always good.*

Well, says the blue-nose, perhaps they beant great men, exactly in that sense, but they are great men compared to us poor folks? and they eat up all the revenue, there's nothin left for roads and bridges, they want to ruin the country, that's a fact. Want to ruin your granny, says I (for it raised my dander to hear the critter talk such nonsense), I did hear of one chap, says I, that sot fire to his own house once, up to Squantum, but the cunnin rascal insured it

first; now how can your great folks ruin the country without ruinin themselves, unless they have insured the Province? Our folks will insure all creation for half nothin, but I never heerd tell of a country being insured agin rich men. Now if you ever go to Wall Street, to get such a policy, leave the door open behind you, that's all; or they'll grab right hold of you, shave your head and blister it, clap a straight jacket on you, and whip you right into a mad house, afore you can say Jack Robinson. No, your great men are nothin but rich men, and I can tell you for your comfort, there's nothin to hinder you from bein rich too, if you will take the same means as they did. They were once all as poor folks as you be, or their fathers afore them; for I know their whole breed, seed, and generation, and they wouldn't thank you to tell them that you knew their fathers and grandfathers, I tell you. If ever you want the loan of a hundred pounds from any of them, keep dark about that—see as far ahead as you please, but it tante always pleasant to have folks see too far back. Perhaps they be a little proud or so, but that's nateral; all folks that grow up right off, like a mushroom in one night, are apt to think no small beer of themselves. A cabbage has plaguy large leaves to the bottom, and spreads them out as wide as an old woman's petticoats, to hide the ground it sprung from, and conceal its extraction, but what's that to you? If they get too large salaries, dock 'em down at once, but don't keep talkin about it for everlastinly. If you have too many sarvants, pay some on 'em off, or when they quit your sarvice don't hire others in their room, that's all; but you miss your mark when you keep firin away the whole blessed time that way.

I went out a gunnin when I was a boy, and father went with me to teach me. Well, the first flock of plover I see'd I let slip at them and missed them. Says father, says he, What a blockhead you be, Sam, that's your own fault, they were too far off, you hadn't ought to have fired so soon. At Bunker's hill we let the British come right on till we see'd the whites of their eyes, and then we let them have it slap bang. Well, I felt kinder grigged at missin my shot, and I didn't over half like to be scolded too; so, says I, Yes, father; but recollect you had a mud bank to hide behind, where you were proper safe, and you had a rest for your guns too; but as soon as you see'd a little more than the whites of their eyes, you run for your dear life, full split, and so I don't see much to brag on in that arter all, so come now. I'll teach you to talk that way, you puppy, you, said he, of that glorious day; and he fetched me a wipe that I do believe, if I hadn't a dodged, would have spoiled my gunnin for that hitch; so I gave him a wide birth arter that all day. Well, the next time I missed, says I, she hung fire so everlastinly, it's no wonder, and the next miss, says I, the powder is no good, I vow. Well, I missed

every shot, and I had an excuse for every one on 'em—the flint was bad, or she flashed in the pan, or the shot scaled, or something or another; and when all wouldn't do, I swore the gun was no good at all. Now, says father (and he edged up all the time, to pay me off for that hit at his Bunker hill story, which was the only shot I didn't miss), you han't got the right reason arter all. It was your own fault, Sam.

Now that's jist the case with you; you may blame Banks and Council, and House of Assembly, and 'the great men,' till you are tired, but it's all your own fault—you've no spirit and no enterprise, you want industry and economy; use them, and you'll soon be as rich as the people at Halifax you call great folks—they didn't grow rich by talking, but by working; instead of lookin' after other folks' business, they looked about the keenest arter their own. You are like the machinery of one of our boats, good enough, and strong enough, but of no air'thly use till you get the steam up; you want to be set in motion, and then you'll go a head like any thing, you may depend. *Give up politics—it's a barren field, and well watched too; where one critter jumps a fence into a good field and gets fat, more nor twenty are chased round and round, by a whole pack of yelpin curs, till they are fairly beat out, and eend by bein half starved, and are at the liftin at last. Look to your farms—your water powers—your fisheries, and factories. In short, says I, putting on my hat and startin, look to yourselves, and don't look to others.*

CHAPTER XXII.

A CURE FOR CONCEIT.

It's a most curious unaccountable thing, but it's a fact, said the Clockmaker, the blue-noses are so conceited, they think they know every thing; and yet there aint a livin soul in Nova Scotia knows his own business real complete, farmer or fisherman, lawyer or doctor, or any other folk. A farmer said to me one day, up to Pugnose's inn, at River Philip, Mr. Slick, says he, I allot this aint 'a bread country;' I intend to sell off the house I improve and go to the States. If it aint a bread country, said I, I never see'd one that was. There is more bread used here, made of best superfine flour, and No. 1, Genessee, than in any other place of the same population in the univarse. You might as well say it aint a Clock Country, when to my sartin knowledge there are more clocks thar bibles in it. I guess you expect to raise your bread ready made, don't you? Well, there's only one class of our free and enlightened citizens that can do that,

and that's them that are born with silver spoons in their mouths. It's a pity you wasn't availed of this truth, afore you up killoch and off—take my advice and bide where you be.

Well, the fishermen are jist as bad. The next time you go into the fish-market at Halifax, stump some of the old hands; says you, 'how many fins has a cod, at a word,' and I'll liquidate the bet if you lose it. When I've been along-shore afore now, a vendin of my clocks, and they began to raise my dander, by belittleing the Yankees, I always brought them up by a round turn by that requirement, 'how many fins has a cod, at a word.' Well they never could answer it; and then, says I, when you larn your own business, I guess it will be time enough to teach other folks theirn.

How different it is with our men folk, if they can't get thro' a question, how beautifully they can go round it, can't they? Nothin never stops them. I had two brothers, Josiah and Eldad, one was a lawyer, and the other a doctor. They were talkin about their examinations one night, at a husklin frolic, up to Governor Ball's big stone barn at Slickville. Says Josy, When I was examined, the Judge axed me all about real estate; and, says he, Josiah, says he, what's a fee? Why, says I, Judge, it depends on the natur of the case. In a common one, says I, I call six dollars a pretty fair one; but lawyer Webster has got afore now, I've heerd tell, 1,000 dollars, and that *I do call a fee*. Well, the judge he larfed ready to split his sides (thinks I, old chap, you'll burst like a steam byler, if you han't got a safety valve somewhere or another); and, says he, I vow that's superfine; I'll indorse your certificate for you, young man; there's no fear of you, you'll pass the inspection brand any how.

Well, says Eldad, I hope I may be skinned if the same thing did'n't een amost happen to me at my examination. They axed me a nation sight of questions, some on 'em I could answer, and some on 'em no soul could, right of the reel at a word, without a little cypherin; at last they axed me, 'How would you calculate to put a patient into a sweat, when common modes wouldn't work no how?' Why, says I, I'd do as Doctor Comfort Payne sarved father. And how was that, said they. Why, says I, he put him into such I sweat as I never see'd in him afore, in all my born days, since I was raised, by sending him in his bill, and if that didn't sweat him it's a pity; it was an *active* dose you may depend. I guess that are chap has cut his eye teeth, said the President, let him pass as approbated.

They both knowed well enough, they only made as if they didn't, to poke a little fun at them, for the Slick family were counted in a general way to be pretty considerable cute.

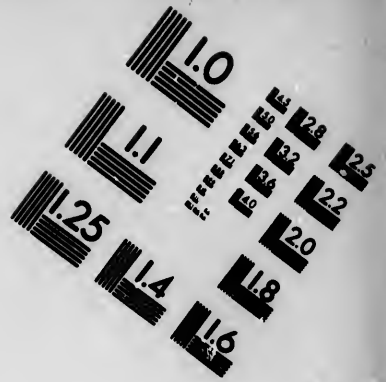
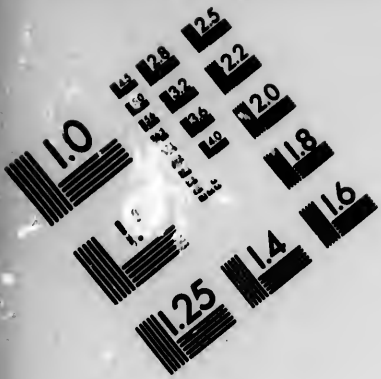
They reckon themselves here a chalk above us Yankees, but I guess they have a wrinkle or two to grow afore they progress ahead on us yet. If they han't got a full cargo of conceit here, then I never

see'd a load, that's all. They have the hold chock full, deck piled up to the pump handles, and scuppers under water. They larnt that of the British, who are actilly so full of it, they remind me of Commodore Trip. When he was about half shaved he thought every body drunk but himself. I never liked the last war, I thought it unnateral, and that we hadn't ought to have taken hold of it at all, and so most of our New England folks thought; and I wasn't sorry to hear Ginerol Dearborne was beat, seein we had no call to go into Canada. But when the Guerrière was captivated by our old Ironsides, the Constitution, I did feel lifted up amost as high as a stalk of Varginy corn among Connecticut middlins; I grew two inches taller, I vow, the night I heerd that news. Brag, says I, is a good dog, but hold fast is better. The British navals had been a braggin and hectorin so long, that when they landed in our cities, they swaggered o'en amost as much as Uncle Peleg (big Peleg as he was called), and when he waked up the centre of one of our narrow Boston streets, he used to swing his arms on each side of him, so that folks had to clear out of both foot paths: he's cut, afore now, the fingers of both hands agin the shop windows on each side of the street. Many's the poor feller's crupper bonè he's smashed, with his great thick boots, a throwin out his feet afore him e'en amost out of sight, when he was in full rig a swigglin away at the top of his gait. Well, they cut as many shines as Uncle Peleg. One frigate they guessed would captivate, sink, or burn our whole navy. Says a naval one day, to the skipper of a fishing-boat that he took, says he, Is it true Commodore Decatur's sword is made of an old iron hoop? Well, says the skipper, I'm not quite certified as to that, seein as I never sot eyes on it; but I guess if he gets a chance he'll shew you the temper of it some of these days any how.

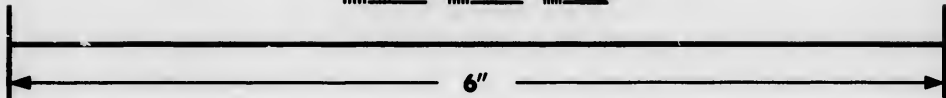
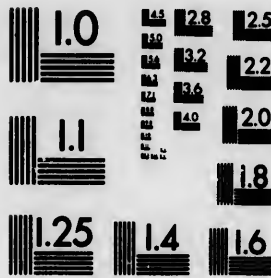
I mind once a British man-o'-war took one of our Boston vessels, and ordered all hands on board, and sent a party to skuttle her; well, they skuttled the fowls and the old particular genuine rum, but they obliviated their arrand and left her. Well, next day another frigate (for they were as thick as toads arter a rain) comes near her, and fires a shot for her to bring to. No answer was made, there bein no livin soul on board, and another shot fired, still no answer. Why, what on airth is the meanin of this, said the Captain, why don't they haul down that damn'd goose and gridiron (that's what he called our eagle and stars on the flag). Why, says the first leftenant, I guess they are all dead men, that shot frightened them to death. They are afeard to show their noses, says another, lest they should be shaved off by our shots. They are all down below a 'calculatin' their loss, I guess, says a third. I'll take my davy, says the Captain, it's some Yankee trick, a torpedo in her bottom, or some such trap—we'll let her be, and sure enough, next day, back she came to shore of her—

self. I'll give you a quarter of an hour, says the Captain of the *Guerrière* to his men, to take that ore Yankoo frigate, the *Constitution*. I guess he found his mistake where he didn't expect it, without any great search for it either. Yes (to eventuate my story), it did me good. I felt dreadful nice, I promise you. It was as lovely as bitters of a cold mornin'. Our folks beat 'em arter that so often, they got a little grain too much conceit also. They got their heels too high for their boots, and began to walk like uncles Peleg, too, so that when the Chesapeake got whipped I warn't sorry. We could spare that one, and it made our navals look round, like a feller who gets a hoist, to see who's a larfin at him. It made 'em brush the dust off, and walk on rather sheepish. It cut their combs, that's a fact. The war did us a plaguy sight of good in more ways than one, and it did the British some good, too. It taught 'em not to carry their chins too high, for fear they shouldn't see the gutters—a mistake that's spoiled many a bran new coat and trowsers afore now.

Well, these blue-noses have caught this disease, as folks do the Scotch fiddle, by shakin hands along with the British. Conceit has become here, as Doctor Rush says (you have heard tell of him, he's the first man of the age, and it's generally allowed our doctors take the shine off of all the world), acclimated, it is citizenized among 'em, and the only cure is a real good quiltin'. I met a first chop Colchester Gag this summer agoin to the races to Halifax, and he knowed as much about racin, I do suppose, as a Chictaw Ingian does of a railroad. Well, he was a prasin of his horse, and runnin on like Statiee. He was begot, he said, by Roncesvalles, which was better than any horse that ever was seen, because he was once in a duke's stable in England. It was only a man that had blood like a lord, said he, that knew what blood in a horse was. Captain Currycomb, an officer at Halifax, had seen his horse and praised him, and that was enough—that stamped him—that fixed his value. It was like the President's name to a bank note, it makes it pass current. Well, says I, I han't got a drop of blood in me nothin stronger than molasses and water, I vow, but I guess I know a horse when I see him for all that, and I don't think any great shakes of your beast, any how; what start will you give me, says I, and I will run 'Old Clay' agin you, for a mile lick right an cend. Ten rods, said he, for twenty dollars. Well, we run, and I made 'Old Clay' bite in his breath, and only beat him by half a neck. A tight scratch, says I, that, and it would have sarved me right if I had been beat. I had no business to run an old roadster so everlastin fast, it ain't fair on him, is it? Says he, I will double the bet and start even, and run you agin if you dare. Well, says I, since I won the last it wouldn't be pretty not to give you a chance; I do suppose I oughtn't to refuse, but I don't love to abuse my beast by knockin him about this way.



**IMAGE EVALUATION
TEST TARGET (MT-3)**



**Photographic
Sciences
Corporation**

23 WEST MAIN STREET
WEBSTER, N.Y. 14580
(716) 872-4503

0
1.8 2.0 2.2 2.5
2.8 3.2 3.6 4.0
4.5 5.0 5.6 6.3
7.1 8.0 9.0 10.0

10
11
12.5 14 16 18
20 22.5 25 28
31.5 36 40 45
50 56 63 71
80 90 100

As soon as the money was staked, I said, Hadn't we better, says I, draw stakes, that are blood horse of your'n has such uncommon particular bottom, he'll perhaps leave me clean out of sight. No fear of that, said he, larfin, but he'll beat you easy, any how. No flinchin; says he, I'll not let you go back of the bargain. It's run or forfeit. Well, says I, friend, there is fear of it; your horse will leave me out of sight, to a sartainty, that's a fact, for he *can't keep up to me no time*. I'll drop him, hull down, in tu tu's. If Old Clay didn't make a fool of him, it's a pity. Didn't he gallop pretty, that's all? He walked away from him, jist as the Chancellor Livingston steam-boat passes a sloop at anchor in the north river. Says I, I told you your horse would beat me clean out of sight, but you wouldn't believe me; now, says I, I will tell you something else. That are horse will help you to lose more money to Halifax than you are a thinkin on; for there ain't a beast gone down there that won't beat him. He can't run a bit, and you may tell the British Captain. I say so. *Take him home and sell him, buy a good yoke of oxen; they are fast enough for a farmer, and give up blood horses to them that can afford to keep stable-helps to tend 'em, and leave bettin alone to them as has more money than wit, and can afford to lose their cash, without thinkin agin of their loss.* When I want your advice, said he, I will ask it, most peskily sulky. You might have got it before you *axed* for it, said I, but not afore you *wanted* it, you may depend on it. But stop, said I, let's see that all's right afore we part; so I counts over the fifteen pounds I won of him, note by note, as slow as anything, on purpose to ryle him, then I mounts 'Old Clay' agin, and says I, Friend, you have considerably the advantage of me this hitch, any how. Possible! says he, how's that? Why, says I, I guess you'll return rather lighter than you came—and that's more nor I can say any how, and then I gave him a wink and a jupe of the head, as much as to say, 'do you take?' and rode on and left him starin and scratchin his head like a feller who's lost his road. If that citizen ain't a born fool or too far gone in the disease, depend on't he found '*a cure for conceit.*'

CHAPTER XXIII.

THE BLOWIN TIME.

THE long rambling dissertation on conceit to which I just listened, from the Clockmaker, forcibly reminded me of the celebrated aphorism '*gnothi seauton,*' know thyself, which, both from its great antiquity and wisdom, has been by many attributed to an oracle.

With all his shrewdness to discover, and his humours to ridicule

the foibles of others, Mr. Slick was blind to the many defects of his own character; and, while prescribing 'a cure for conceit,' exhibited in all he said, and all he did, the most overwhelming conceit himself. He never spoke of his own countrymen, without calling them 'the most free and enlightened citizens on the face of the airth,' or as 'takin the shine off of all creation.' His country he boasted to be the 'best atween the poles,' 'the greatest glory under heaven.' The Yankees he considered (to use his expression) as 'actilly the class-leaders in knowledge among all the Americans,' and boasted that they have not only 'gone ahead of all others,' but had lately arrived at that most enviable ne plus ultra point 'goin ahead of themselves.' In short, he entertained no doubt that Slickville was the finest place in the greatest nation in the world, and the Slick family the wisest family in it.

I was about calling his attention to this national trait, when I saw him draw his reins under his foot (a mode of driving peculiar to himself, when he wished to economise the time that would otherwise be lost, by an unnecessary delay), and taking off his hat (which, like a pedlar's pack, contained a general assortment), select from a number of loose cigars one that appeared likely to 'go,' as he called it. Having lighted it by a lucifer, and ascertained that it was 'true in draft,' he resumed his reins, and remarked, 'This must be an everlasting fine country beyond all doubt, for the folks have nothin to do but to ride about and talk politics. In winter, when the ground is covered with snow, what grand times they have a slayin over these here mashes with the galls, or playin ball on the ice, or goin to quil-tin frolics of nice long winter evenings, and then a drivin home like mad, by moonlight. Natur meant that season on purpose for courtin. A little tidy scrumptious lookin slay, a real clipper of a horse, a string of bells as long as a string of inions round his neck, and a sprig on his back, lookin for all the world like a bunch of apples broke off at gatherin time, and a sweetheart alongside, all muffled up but her eyes and lips—the one lookin right into you, and the other talkin right at you—is e'en amost enough to drive one ravin, tarin, distracted mad with pleasure, aint it? And then the dear critters say the bells make such a din there's no hearin one's self speak; so they put their pretty little mugs close up to your face, and talk, talk, talk, till one can't help looking right at them instead of the horse, and then whap you both go capsized into a snow drift together, skins, cushions, and all. And then to see the little critter shake berself when she gets up, like a duck landin from a pond, a chatterin away all the time like a Canary bird, and you a haw-hawin with pleasure, is fun alive, you may depend. In this way blue-nose gets led on to offer himself as a lovier, afore he knows where he bees.

But when he gets married, he recovers his eyesight in little less

ter, says I,
uncommon
t. No fear
No flinchin;
or forfeit.
eave me out
p to me no
didn't make
s all? He
steam-boat
dd you your
believe me;
horse will
thinkin on;
him. He
so. Take
fast enough
ord to keep
has more
out thinkin
will ask it,
azed for it,
But stop.
s over the
ything, on
d says I,
hitch, any
uess you'll
I can say
d, as much
d scratchin
a born fool
or conceit.

t listened,
ted apho-
great an-
cle.
o ridicule

Handwritten note: ...

Handwritten note: ...

Handwritten note: ...

Handwritten note: ...

Handwritten note: ...

than half no time. He soon finds he's treed; his flint is fixed then, you may depend. She larns him how vinegar is made: *Put plenty of sugar into the water aforehand, my dear, she said, if you want to make it real sharp.* The larf is on the other side of his mouth then. If his slay gets upsot, its no longer a funny matter, I tell you; he catches it right and left. Her eyes don't look right up to him any more, nor her little tongue ring, ring, ring, like a bell any longer, but a great big hood covers her head, and a whappin great muff covers her face, and she looks like a bag of soiled clothes agoin to the brook to be washed. When they get out, she don't wait any more for him to walk lock and lock with her, but they march like a horse and a cow to water, one in each gutter. If there aint a transmogri-fication its a pity. The difference atween a wife and a sweetheart is neer about as great as there is between new and hard cider—a man never tires of puttin one to his lips, but makes plaguy wry faces at tother. It makes me so kinder wamblecropt when I think on it, that I'm afeared to venture on matrimony at all. I have seen some blue-noses most properly bit, you may depend. You've seen a boy a slidin on a most beautiful smooth bit of ice, han't you, larfin, and hoopin, and hallowin like one possessed, when presently sowse he goes in over head and ears? How he outs, fins, and flops about, and blows like a porpoise properly frightened, don't he? and when he gets out, there he stands, all shiverin and shakin, and the water a squish-squashin in his shoes, and his trowsers all stickin slimsey like to his legs. Well, he sneaks off home, lookin like a fool, and thinkin every body he meets is a larfin at him—many folks here are like that are boy, afore they have been six months married. They'd be proper glad to get out of the scrape too, and sneak off if they could, that's a fact. The marriage yoke is plaguy apt to gall the neck, as the ash bow does the ox in rainy weather, unless it be most particularly well fitted. You've seen a yoke of cattle that warn't properly mated, they spend more strength in pulling agin each other, than in pullin the load. Well, that's apt to be the case with them as choose their wives in sleighin parties, quiltin frolics, and so on; instead of the dairies, looms, and cheese-house.

Now the blue-noses are all a stirrin in winter. The young folks drive out the galls, and talk love and all sorts of things as sweet as dough-nuts. The old folks find it near about as well to leave the old women to home, for fear they shouldn't keep tune together; so they drive out alone to chat about House of Assembly with their neighbours, while the boys and hired helps do the chores. When the Spring comes, and the fields are dry enough to be sowed, they all have to be plowed, *cause full rains wash the lands too much for fall ploughin.* Well, the plows have to be mended and sharpened, *cause*

whats the use of doin that afore its wanted. Well, the wheat gets in too late, and then comes rust, but whose fault is that? *Why the climate to be sure, for Nova Scotia aint a bread country.*

When a man has to run ever so far as fast as he can clip, he has to stop and take breath; you must do that or choke. So it is with a horse; run him a mile, and his flanks will heave like a blacksmith's bellows; you must slack up the rein, and give him a little wind, or he'll fall right down with you. It stands to reason, don't it? Atwixt spring and fall work is 'Blowin time.' Then Courts come on, and Grand Jury business, and Militia trainin, and Race trainin, and what not; and a fine spell of ridin about and doin nothin, a real 'Blowin time.' Then comes harvest, and that is proper hard work, mowin and pitchin hay, and reapin and bindin grain, and potatoe diggin. That's as hard as sole leather, afore its hammered on the lap stone—it's most next to any thing. It takes a feller as tough as Old Hickory (General Jackson) to stand that.

Ohio is most the only country I know of where folks are saved that trouble, and there the freshets come jist in the nick of time for 'em, and sweep all the crops right up in a heap for 'em, and they have nothin to do but take it home and house it, and sometimes a man gets more than his own crop, and finds a proper swad of it all ready piled up, only, a little wet or so; but all countries aint like Ohio. Well, arter harvest comes fall, and then there's a grand 'blowin time,' till spring. Now, how the Lord the blue-noses can complain of their country, when it's only one-third work and two-thirds 'blowin time,' no soul can tell.

Father used to say, when I lived on the farm along with him—Sam, says he, I vow I wish there was jist four hundred days in the year, for it's a plaguy sight too short for me. I can find as much work as all hands on us can do for 365 days, and jist 35 days more, if we had 'em. We han't got a minit to spare; you must shell the corn, and winner the grain at night, and clean all up slick, or I guess we'll fall astarn, as sure as the Lord made Moses. If he didn't keep us all at it, a drivin away full chisel, the whole blessed time, it's a pity. There was no 'blowin time' there, you may depend. We plowed all the fall, for dear life; in winter we thrashed, made and mended tools, went to market and mill, and got out our firewood and rails. As soon as frost was gone, came sowin and plantin, weedin and hocin—then harvest and spreadin compost—then gatherin manure, fencin and ditchin—and then turn tu and fall plowin agin. It all went round like a wheel without stoppin, and so fast, I guess you couldn't see the spokes, just one long everlasting stroke from July to etarnity, without time to look back on the tracks. Instead of racin over the country, like a young doctor, to show how busy a man is that has nothin to do, as blue-nose does, and then take a 'blowin

time, we kept a rale travellin gate, an eight-mile-an-hour pace, the whole year round. *They buy more nor they sell, and eat more than they raise*, in this country. What a pretty way that is, isn't? If the critters knew how to cypher, they would soon find out that a sum stated that way always eends in a naught. I never knew it to fail, and I defy any soul to cypher it so, as to make it come out any other way, either by Schoolmaster's Assistant, or Algebra. When I was a boy, the Slickville bank broke, and an awful disorderment it made, that's a fact; nothin else was talked of. Well, I studied it over a long time, but I couldn't make it out: so says I, Father, how came that are bank to break; warn't it well built? I thought that are Quincy granite was so amazin strong all natur wouldn't break it. Why you foolish critter, says he, it tante the buildin that's broke, its the consarn that's smashed. Well, says I, I know folks are plaguilly consarned about it, but what do you call 'folks smashin their consarns'? Father, he larfed out like any thing; I thought he never would stop—and sister Sall got right up and walked out of the room, as mad as a hatter. Says she, Sam, I do believe you are a born fool, I vow. When father had done larfin, says he, I'll tell you, Sam, how it was. They ciphered it so, that they brought out nothin for a remainder. Possible! says I; I thought there was no eend to their puss. I thought it was like Uncle Peleg's musquash hole, and that no soul could ever find the bottom of it. My!! says I. Yes, says he, that are bank spent and lost more money than it made, and when folks do that, they must smash at last, if their puss be as long as the national one of Uncle Sam. This province is like that are bank of ourn, it's goin the same road, and they'll find the little eend of the horn afore they think they are half way down to it.

If folks would only give over talkin about that everlasting House of Assembly and Council, and see to their farms, it would be better for 'em, I guess; for arter all, what is it? Why it's only a sort of first chop Grand Jury, and nothin else. It's no more like Congress or Parliament, than Marm Pugwash's keepin room is like our State hall. It's jist nothin—Congress makes war and peace, has a say in all treaties, confirms all great nominations of the President, regilates the army and navy, governs twenty-four independent States, and snaps its fingers in the face of all the nations of Europe, as much as to say, who be you? I allot I am as big as you be. If you are six foot high, I am six foot six in my stockin feet, by gum, and can lambaste any two of you in no time. The British can whip all the world, and we can whip the British. But this little House of Assembly, that folks make such a touss about, what is it? Why jist a decent Grand Jury. They make their presentments of little money votes, to mend these everlastin rottin little wooden bridges, to throw a poultice of mud once a year on the roads, and then take a 'blowin

time' of three months and go home. The littler folks be, the bigger they talk. You never seed a small man that didn't wear high heel boots and a high crowned hat, and that warn't ready to fight most any one, to show he was a man every inch of him.

I met a member the other day, who swaggered near about as large as Uncle Peleg. He looked as if he thought you couldn't find his 'ditto' any where. He used some most particular educational words, genuine jaw-breakers. He put me in mind of a squirrel I once shot in our wood location. The little critter got a hickory nut in his mouth; well, he found it too hard to crack, and too big to swallow, and for the life and soul of him, he couldn't spit it out agin. If he didn't look like a proper fool, you may depend. We had a pond back of our barn, about the bigness of a good sizeable wash-tub, and it was chock full of frogs. Well, one of these little critters fancied himself a bull-frog, and he puffed out his cheeks, and took a real 'blowin time' of it; he roared away like thunder; at last he puffed and puffed out till he burst like a byler. If I see the Speaker this winter (and I shall see him to a sartainty if they don't send for him to London, to teach their new Speaker), and he's up to snuff, that are man; he knows how to cypher—I'll jist say to him, Speaker, says I, if any of your folks in the House go to swell out like dropsy, give 'em a hint in time. Says you, if you have are a little safety valve about you, let off a little steam now and then, or you'll go for it; recollect the Clock-maker's story of the 'Blowin time.'

CHAPTER XXIV.

FATHER JOHN O'SHAUGHNESSY.

TO-MORROW will be Sabbath day, said the Clockmaker; I guess we'll bide where we be till Monday. I like a Sabbath in the country—all natur seems at rest. There's a cheerfulness in the day here, you don't find in towns. You have natur before you here, and nothin but art there. The deathy stillness of a town, and the barred windows, and shut shops, and empty streets, and great long lines of big brick buildins, look melancholy. It seems as if life had ceased tickin, but there hadn't been time for decay to take hold on there; as if day had broke, but man slept. I can't describe exactly what I mean, but I always feel kinder gloomy and whamblecropt there.

Now in the country it's jist what it ought to be—a day of rest for man and beast from labour. When a man rises on the Sabbath, and looks out on the sunny fields and wavin crops, his heart feels proper grateful, and he says, come, this is a splendid day, aint it? let's get

ready and put on our bettermost close, and go to meetin. His first thought is prayerfully to render thanks; and then when he goes to worship he meets all his neighbours, and he knows them all, and they are glad to see each other, and if any two on 'em han't exactly goe'd together durin the week, why they meet on kind of neutral ground, and the minister or neighbours make peace atween them. But it tante so in towns. You don't know no one you meet there. It's the worship of neighbours, but it's the worship of strangers, too, for neighbours don't know nor care about each other. Yes, I love a Sabbath in the country.

While uttering this soliloquy, he took up a pamphlet from the table, and turning to the title page, said, have you ever seen this here book on the 'Elder Controversy' (a controversy on the subject of Infant Baptism). This author's friends say it's a clincher; they say he has sealed up Elder's mouth as tight as a bottle. No, said I, I have not; I have heard of it, but never read it. In my opinion the subject has been exhausted already, and admits of nothing new being said upon it. These religious controversies are a serious injury to the cause of true religion; they are deeply deplored by the good and moderate men of all parties. It has already embraced several denominations in the dispute in this Province, and I hear the agitation has extended to New Brunswick, where it will doubtless be renewed with equal zeal. I am told all the pamphlets are exceptionable in point of temper, and this one in particular, which not only ascribes the most unworthy motives to its antagonist, but contains some very unjustifiable and gratuitous attacks upon other sects unconnected with the dispute. The author has injured his own cause, for an *intemperate advocate is more dangerous than an open foe*. There is no doubt on it, said the Clockmaker, it is as clear as mud, and you are not the only one that thinks so, I tell you.

About the hottest time of the dispute, I was to Halifax, and who should I meet but Father John O'Shaughnessy, a Catholic Priest. I had met him afore in Cape Breton, and had sold him a clock. Well, he was a leggin it off hot foot. Possible I says I, Father John, is that you? Why, what on airth is the matter of you—what makes you in such an everlastin hurry, driving away like one ravin, distracted mad? A sick visit, says he; poor Pat Lanigan, him that you mind to Bradore Lake, well, he's near about at the pint of death. I guess not, said I, for I jist hear tell he was dead. Well, that brought him up all standin, and he bouts ship in a jiffy, and walks a little way with me, and we got a talkin about this very subject. Says he, What are you, Mr. Slick? Well, I looks up to him and winks, A Clockmaker, says I: well, he smilod, and says he, I see; as much as to say I hadn't ought to have axed that are question at all, I guess, for every man's religion is his own, and nobody else's business. Then, says

he, you know all about this country—who does folks say has the best of the dispute? Says I, Father John, it's like the battles up to Canada lines last war, each side claims victory; I guess there ain't much to brag on nary way, damage done on both sides, and nothing gained, as far as I can learn. He stopt short, and looked me in the face, and says he, Mr. Slick, you are a man that has see'd a good deal of the world, and a considerable of an understandin man, and I guess I *can* talk to you. Now, says he, for gracious sake, do jist look here, and see how you heretics (Protestants I mean, says he—for I guess that are word slipt out without leave) are by the ears, a drivin away at each other, the whole blessed time, tooth and nail, hip and thigh, hammer and tongs, disputin, revelin, wranglin, and beloutin each other with all sorts of ugly names that they can lay their tongues to. Is that the way you love your neighbour as yourself? *We say this is a practical comment on schism,* and by the powers of Moll Kelly, said he, but they all ought to be well lambasted together, the whole batch on 'em entirely. Says I, Father John, give me your hand; there are some things, I guess, you and I don't agree on, and most likely never will, seein that you are a Popish priest; but in that idee I do opinionate with you, and I wish, with all my heart, all the world thought with us. *—gucken.*

I guess he didn't half like that are word Popish priest; it seemed to grig him like; his face looked kinder ryled, like well water arter a heavy rain; and said he, Mr. Slick, says he, your country is a free country, ain't it? The freest, says I, on the face of the airth—you can't 'ditto' it nowhere. We are as free as the air, and when our dander's up, stronger than any hurrican you ever see'd—tear up all creation most; there aint the beat of it to be found any where. Do you call this a free country? said he. Pretty considerable middlin, says I, seein that they are under a king. Well, says he, if you were seen in Connecticut a shakin hands along with a Popish priest, as you are pleased to call me (and he made me a bow, as much as to say, mind your trumps the next deal) as you now are in the streets of Halifax along with me, with all your crackin and boastin of your freedom, I guess, you wouldn't sell a clock agin in that State for one while, I tell you—and he bid me good mornin and turned away. Father John! says I.—I can't stop, says he; I must see that poor critter's family; they must be in great trouble, and a sick visit is afore controvary in my creed. Well, says I, one word with you afore you go; if that are name Popish priest was an ongenteel one, I ax your pardon; I didn't mean no offence. I do assure you, and I'll say this for your satisfaction, tu, you're the first man in this Province that ever gave me a real right down complete checkmate since I first sot food in it; I'll be skinned if you aint. *—Gr. Slick.*

Yes, said Mr. Slick, Father John was right; these antagonizing

chaps ought to be well quilted, the whole raft of 'em. It fairly makes me sick to see the folks, each on 'em a backin up of their own man. At it agin, says one; fair play, says another; stick it into him, says a third; and that's your sort, says a fourth. Them are the folks who do mischief. They show such clear grit it fairly frightens me. It makes my hair stand right up an eend to see ministers do that are. *It appears to me that I could write a book in favour of myself and my notions, without writing agin any one, and if I couldn't I wouldn't write at all, I snore.* Our old minister, Mr. Hopewell (a real good man, and a larned man too that), they sent to him once to write agin the Unitarians, for they are agoin a head like statice in New England, but he refused. Said he, Sam, says he, when I first went to Cambridge, there was a boxer and wrastler came there, and he beat every one wherever he went. Well, old Mr. Possit was the Church of England parson at Charles-town, at the time, and a terrible powerful man he was—a rael sneezer, and as *active* as a weasel. Well, the boxer met him one day, a little way out of town, a takin of his evenin walk, and said he, Parson, says he, they say you are a most plaguy strong man, and uncommon stiff too. Now, says he, I never seed a man yet that was a match for me; would you have any objection jist to let me be availed of your strength here in a friendly way, by ourselves, where no soul would be the wiser; if you will I'll keep dark about it, I swan. Go your way, said the Parson, and tempt me not; you are a carnal minded, wicked man, and I take no pleasure in such vain, idle sports. Very well, said the boxer; now here I stand, says he, in the path, right slap afore you; if you pass round me, then I take it as a sign that you are afeard on me, and if you keep the path, why then you must first put me out—that's a fact. The Parson jist made a spring forrard and kitched him up as quick as wink, and throwed him right over the fence whap on the broad of his back, and then walked on as if nothin had happened—as demure as you please, and lookin as meek as if butter wouldn't melt in his mouth. Stop, said the boxer, as soon as he picked himself up, stop, Parson, said he, that's a good man, and jist chuck over my horse too, will you, for I swan I believe you could do one near about as easy as t'other. My! said he, if that don't bang the bush; you are another guess chap from what I took you to be, any how.

Now, said Mr. Hopewell, says he, I won't write, but if are a Unitarian crosses my path, I'll jist over the fence with him in no time, as the parson did the boxer; *for writin only aggravates your opponents, and never convinces them. I never see'd a convart made by that way yet; but I'll tell you what I have see'd, a man set his own flock a doubtin by his own writin. You may happify your enemies, cantankerate your opponents, and injure your own cause by it, but I*

defy you to sarve it. These writers, said he, put me in mind of that are boxer's pupils. He would sometimes set two on 'em to spar; well, they'd put on their gloves and begin, larfin and jokin, all in good humour. Presently one on 'em would put in a pretty hard blow: well, tother would return it in airnest. Oh, says the other, if that's your play, off gloves and at it; and sure enough, away would fly their gloves, and at it they'd go tooth and nail.

No, Sam, the misfortin is, we are all apt to think Scriptur intended for our neighbours, and not for ourselves. The poor all think it made for the rich. Look at that are Dives, they say, what an ell fired scrape he got into by his avarice, with Lazarus; and ain't it writ as plain as any thing, that them folks will find it as easy to go to heaven, as for a camel to go through the eye of a needle. Well, then, the rich think it all made for the poor—that they sharn't steal nor bear false witness, but shall be obedient to them that's in authority. And as for them are Unitarians, and he always got his dander up when he spoke of them, why there's no doin nothin with them, says he. When they get fairly stumped, and you produce a text that they can't get over, nor get round, why they say it tante in our version, at all—that's an interpolation, it's an invention of them are everlastin monks; there's nothin left for you to do with them, but to sarve them as Parson Possit detailed the boxer—lay right hold of 'em and chuk 'em over the fence, even if they were as big as all out doors. That's what our folks ought to have done with 'em at first, pitched 'em clean out of the state, and let 'em go down to Nova Scotia, or some such outlandish place, for they aint't fit to live in no-Christian country at all.

Fightin is no way to make convarts; *the true way is to win 'em.* You may stop a man's mouth, Sam, says he, by crammin a book down his throat, but you won't convince him. Its a fine thing to write a book all covered over with Latin and Greek, and Hebrew, like a bridle that's real jam, all spangled with brass nails, but who knows whether it's right or wrong? Why not one in ten thousand. If I had my religion to choose, and warn't able to judge for myself, I'll tell you what I'd do: I'd jist ask myself *who leads the best lives?* Now, says he, Sam, I won't say who do, because it would look like vanity to say it was the folks who hold to our platform, but I'll tell you who don't. *It ain't them that makes the greatest professions always;* and mind what I tell you, Sam, when you go a tradin with your clocks away down east to Nova Scotia, and them wild provinces, keep a bright look out on them as cant too much, *for a long face* is plaguy apt to *cover a long conscience*—that's a fact.

CHAPTER XXV.

TAMING A SHREW.

'THE road from Amherst to Parrsboro' is tedious and uninteresting. In places it is made so straight, that you can see several miles of it before you, which produces an appearance of interminable length, while the stunted growth of the spruce and birch trees bespeaks a cold, thin soil, and invests the scene with a melancholy and sterile aspect. Here and there occurs a little valley with its meandering stream, and verdant and fertile intervals, which, though possessing nothing peculiar to distinguish it from many others of the same kind, strikes the traveller as superior to them all, from the contrast to the surrounding country. One of these secluded spots attracted my attention, from the number and neatness of the buildings, which its proprietor, a tanner and carrier, had erected for the purposes of his trade. Mr. Slick said, he knew him, and he guessed it was a pity he couldn't keep his wife in as good order as he did his factory. They don't hitch their horses together well at all. He is properly hen-pecked, said he; he is afeard to call his soul his own, and he leads the life of a dog; you never seed the beat of it, I vow. Did you ever see a rooster hatch a brood of chickens? No, said I, not that I can recollect. Well, then I have, said he, and if he don't look like a fool all the time he is a settin on the eggs, it's a pity; no soul could help larfin to see him. Our old nigger, January Snow, had a spite agin one of father's roosters, seein that he was a coward, and wouldn't fight. He used to call him Dearborne, arter our General that behaved so ugly to Canada: and, says he one day, I guess you are no better than a hen, you everlastin old chicken-hearted villain, and I'll make you a larfin stock to all the poultry. I'll put a trick on you you'll bear in mind all your born days. So he catches old Dearborne, and pulls all the feathers off his breast, and strips him as naked as when he was born, from his throat clean down to his tail, and then takes a bundle of nettles and gives him a proper switchin that stung him, and made him smart like mad; then he warms some eggs and puts them in a nest, and sets the old cock right a top of 'em. Well, the warmth of the eggs felt good to the poor critter's naked belly, and kinder kept the itchin of the nettles down, and he was glad to bide where he was, and whenever he was tired and got off, his skin felt so cold, he'd run right back and squat down agin, and when his feathers began to grow, and he got obstropolous, he got another ticklin with the nettles, that made him return double quick to his location. In a little time he larnt the trade real complete.

Now, this John Porter (and there he is on the bridge I vow, I never seed the beat o' that, speak of old Saytin and he's sure to appear), well, he's jist like old Dearborne, only fit to hatch eggs. When we came to the Bridge, Mr. Slick stopped his horse, to shake hands with Porter, whom he recognised as an old acquaintance and customer. He enquired after a bark mill he had smuggled from the States for him, and enlarged on the value of such a machine, and the cleverness of his countrymen who invented such useful and profitable articles; and was recommending a new process of tanning, when a female voice from the house was heard, vociferating, 'John Porter, come here this minute.' 'Coming, my dear,' said the husband. 'Come here, I say, directly; why do you stand talking to that yankee villain there?' The poor husband hung his head, looked silly, and bidding us good bye, returned slowly to the house. As we drove on, Mr. Slick said, that was me—I did that. Did what? said I. That was me that sent him back, I called him and not his wife. I had that are bestowment ever since I was knee high or so; I'm a real complete hand at Ventriloquism; I can take off any man's voice I ever heard to the very nines. If there was a law agin forgin that, as there is for handwritin, I guess I should have been hanged long ago. I've had high goes with it many a time, but its plaguy dangerous, and I don't practise it now but seldom.

I had a real bout with that are citizen's wife once, and completely broke her in for him; she went as gentle as a circus horse for a space, but he let her have her head agin, and she's as bad as ever now. I'll tell you how it was.

I was down to the Island a sellin clocks, and who should I meet but John Porter; well, I traded with him for one part cash, part truck, and produce, and also put off on him that are bark mill you heerd me axin about, and it was pretty considerable on in the evenin afore we finished our trade. I came home along with him, and had the clock in the waggon to fix it up for him, and to show him how to regilate it. Well, as we neared his house, he began to fret and take on dreadful oneasy; says he, I hope Jane wont be abed, cause if she is she'll act ugly, I do suppose. I had heerd tell of her afore; how she used to carry a stiff upper lip, and make him and the broomstick well acquainted together; and, says I, why do you put up with her tantrums, I'd make a fair division of the house with her, if it was me, I'd take the inside and allocate her the outside of it pretty quick, that's a fact. Well, when we came to the house, there was no light in it, and the poor critter looked so streaked and down in the mouth, I felt proper sorry for him. When he rapped at the door, she called out, Who's there? It's me, dear, says Porter. You, is it, said she, then you may stay where you be, thom as gave

you your supper, may give you your bed, instead of sendin you sneakin home at night like a thief. Said I, in a whispher, says I, Leave her to me, John Porter—jist take the horses up to the barn, and see arter them, and I'll manage her for you, I'll make her as sweet as sugary candy, never fear. The barn you see is a good piece off to the eastward of the house; and as soon as he was cleverly out of hearin, says I, a imitatin of his voice to the life, Do let me in, Janè, says I, that's a dear critter, I've brought you home some things you'll like, I know. Well, she was an awful jealous critter; says she, Take em to her you spent the evenin with, I don't want you nor your present neither. Arter a good deal of coaxin I stood on tother tack, and began to threaten to break the door down; says I, You old un-hansum lookin sinner, you vinerger cryet you, open the door this minit or I'll smash it right in. That grigged her properly, it made her very wrathy (for nothin sets up a woman's spunk like callin her ugly, she gets her back right up like a cat when a strange dog comes near her; she's all eyes, claws, and bristles).

I heerd her bounce right out of bed, and she came to the door as she was, ondressed, and onbolted it; and as I entered it, she fetched me a box right across my cheek with the flat of her hand, that made it tingle agin. I'll teach you to call names agin, says she, you varmint. It was jist what I wanted; I pushed the door tu with my foot, and seizin her by the arm with one hand, I quilted her with the horsewhip real handsom with the other. At first she roared like mad; I'll give you the ten commandments, says she (meaning her ten claws), I'll pay you for this, you cowardly villain, to strike a woman. How dare you lift your hand, John Porter, to your lawful wife, and so on; all the time runnin round and round, like a colt that's a breakin, with the mouthin bit, rarein, kickin, and plungin like statiee. Then she began to give in. Says she, I beg pardon, on my knees I beg pardon—don't murder me, for Heaven's sake—don't, dear John, don't murder your poor wife, that's a dear, I'll do as you bid me, I promise to behave well, upon my honour I do—oh! dear John, do, forgive me, do dear. When I had her brought properly to, for havin nothin on but a thin under garment every crack of the whip told like a notch on a baker's tally, says I, Take that as a taste of what you'll catch when you act that way like old Scratch. Now go and dress yourself, and get supper for me and a stranger I have brought home along with me, and be quick, for I vow I'll be master in my own house. She moaned like a dog hit with a stone, half whine half yelp; dear, dear, says she, if I aint all covered over with welts as big as my finger, I do believe I'm flayed alive; and she boohood right out like any thing. I guess, said I, you've got 'em where folks won't see 'em, any how, and I calculate you

won't be over forrard to show'em where they be. But come, says I, be a stirrin, or I'll quilt you agin as sure as you're alive—I'll tan your hide for you, you may depend, you old ungainly tempered heif'er you. *licking*

When I went to the barn, says I, John Porter, your wife made right at me, like one ravin distracted mad when I opened the door, thinkin it was you; and I was obliged to give her a crack or two of the cowskin to get clear of her. It has effectuated a cure completely; now foller it up, and don't let on for your life, it warn't you that did it, and you'll be master once more in your own house. She's all docity jist now, keep her so. As we returned we saw a light in the keepin room, the fire was blazin up cheerfulsome, and Marm Porter moved about as brisk as a parched pea, though as silent as dumb, and our supper was ready in no time. As soon as she took her seat and sot down, she sprung right up on cend, is if she sot on a pan of hot coals, and coloured all over; and then tears started in her eyes. Thinks I to myself, I calculate I wrote that are lesson in large letters any how, I can read that writin without spellin, and no mistake; I guess you've got pretty well warmed thereabouts this hitch. Then she tried it agin, first she sot on one leg, then on tother, quite oneasy, and then right atwixt both, a fidgettin about dreadfully; like a man that's rode all day on a bad saddle, and lost a little leather on the way. If you had seed how she stared at Porter, it would have made you snicker. She couldn't credit her eyes. He warn't drunk, and he warn't crazy, but there he sot as peeked and as meechin as you please. She seemed all struck up of a heap at his rebellion. The next day when I was about startin, I advised him to act like a man, and keep the weather gage now he had it and all would be well: but the poor critter only held on a day or two, she soon got the upper hand of him, and made him confess all, and by all accounts he leads a worse life now than ever. I put that are trick on him jist now to try him, and I see its gone goose with him; the jig is up with him, she'll soon call him with a whistle like a dog. I often think of the hornpipe she danced there in the dark along with me, to the music of my whip—she touched it off in great style, that's a fact. I shall mind that go one while, I promise you. It was actilly equal to a play at old Bowry. You may depend, Squire, the only way to tame a shrew, is by the cowskin. Grandfather Slick was raised all along the coast of Kent in Old England, and he used to say there was an old saying there, which, I expect, is not far off the mark:

'A woman, a dog, and a walnut tree,
The more you lick 'em the better they be.'

CHAPTER XXVI.

THE MINISTER'S HORN MUG.

THIS Country, said Mr. Slick, abounds in superior mill privileges, and one would naterally calculate that such a sight of water power, would have led to a knowledge of machinery. I guess if a blue nose was to go to one of our free and enlightened citizens, and tell him Nova Scotia was intersected with rivers and brooks in all directions, and nearly one quarter of it covered with water, he'd say, well, I'll start right off and see it, I vow, for I guess I'll larn somethin. I allot I'll get another wrinkle away down east there. With such splendid chances for experimentin, what first-chop mills they must have to a sartainty. I'll see such new combinations, and such new applications of the force of water to motion, that I'll make my fortin, for we can improve on any thing amost. Well, he'd find his mistake out I guess, as I did once, when I took passage in the night at New York for Providencé, and found myself the next morning clean out to sea, steerin away for Cape Hatteras, in the Charleston steamer. He'd find he'd gone to the wrong place I reckon; there aint a mill of any kind in the Province fit to be seen. If we had 'em, we'd sarve em as we do the gamblin houses down south, pull 'em right down, there wouldn't be one on 'em left in eight and forty hours.

Some domestic factories they ought to have here; it's an essential part of the social system. Now we've run to the other extreme, its got to be too big an interest with us, and aint suited to the political institutions of our great country. Natur designed us for an agricultural people, and our government was predicated on the supposition that we would be so. Mr. Hopewell was of the same opinion. He was a great hand at gardenin, orchadin, farmin, and what not. One evening I was up to his house, and says he, Sam, what do you say to a bottle of my old *genuine* cider, I guess I got some that will take the shine off of your father's, by a long chalk, much as the old gentleman brags of his'n—I never bring it out afore him. He thinks he has the best in all Connecticut. It's an innocent ambition that; and Sam, it would be but a poor thing for me to gratify my pride, at the expense of humblin his'n. So I never lets on that I have any better, but keep dark about this superfine particular article of mine, for I'd as lives he'd think so as not. He was a real *primitive* good man was minister. I got some, said he, that was bottled that very year that glorious action was fought atween the Constitution and the Guerrière. Perhaps the whole world couldn't show such a brillant whippin as that was. It was a splendid deed, that's a fact. The British can whip the whole

airth, and we can whip the British. It was a bright promise for our young eagle, a noble bird that, too; great strength, great courage, and surpassing sagacity.

Well, he went down to the cellar, and brought up a bottle, with a stick tied to its neck, and day and date to it, like the lye-bills on the trees in Squire Hendrick's garden. I like to see them are cobwebs, says he, as he brushed 'em off, they are like grey hairs in an old man's head, they indicate venerable old age. As he uncorked it, says he, I guess, Sam, this will warm your gizzard, my boy: I guess our great nation may be stumped to produce more elegant liquor than this here. It's the dandy, that's a fact. That, said he, a smackin his lips, and lookin at its sparklin top, and layin back his head, and tippin off a horn mug brim full of it—that, said he—and his eyes twinkled agin, for it was playy strong—that is the produce of my own orchard. Well, I said, minister, says I, I never see you a swiggin it out of that are horn mug, that I dont think of one of your texts. What's that, Sam? says he—for you always had a most special memory when you was a boy; why, says I, 'that the horn of the righteous man shall be exalted,' I guess that's what they mean by 'exalten the horn,' aint it? Lord if ever you was to New Orleans, and seed a black thunder cloud rise right up and cover the whole sky in a minit, you'd a thought of it if you had seed his face. It looked as dark as Egypt. For shame, says he, Sam, that's on-decent; and let me tell you that a man that jokes on such subjects, shews both a lack of wit and sense too. I like mirth, you know I do, for it's only the Pharisees and hypocrites that wear long faces, but then mirth must be innocent to please me; and when I see a man make merry with serious things, I set him down as a lost sheep. That comes of your speculatin to Lowell; and, I vow, them factorin towns will corrupt our youth of both sexes, and become hotbeds of iniquity. Evil communications endamnify good manners, as sure as rates; one scabby sheep will infect a whole flock—vice is as catchin as that nasty disease the Scotch have, it's got by shakin hands, and both eend in the same way in brimstone. I approbate domestic factories, but nothin further for us. It don't suit us or our institutions. A republic is only calculated for an enlightened and vartuous people, and folks chiefly in the farmin line. That is an innocent and a happy vocation. Agriculture was ordained by Him that made us, for our chief occupation.

Thinks I, here's a pretty how do you do; I'm in for it now, that's a fact; he'll jist fall to and read a regular sarmon, and he knows so many by heart he'll never stop. It would take a Philadelphia lawyer to answer him. So, says I, Minister, I ax your pardon, I feel very ugly at havin given you offence, but I didn't mean it, I do assure you. It jist popt out unexpectedly, like a cork out of one of them

are cider bottles. I'll do my possibles that the like don't happen agin, you may depend; so 'spose we drink a glass to our reconciliator. That I will, said he, and we will have another bottle too, but I must put a little water into *my glass* (and he dwelt on that word, and looked at me quite feelin, as much as to say, don't for goodness sake make use of that are word *horn* agin, for it's a joke I don't like), for my head hante quite the strength my cider has. Taste this, Sam, said he (openin of another bottle), it's of the same age as the last, but made of different apples, and I am fairly stumped sometimes to say which is best.

These are the pleasures, says he, of a country life. A man's own labour provides him with food, and an appetite to enjoy it. Let him look which way he will, and he sees the goodness and bounty of his Creator, his wisdom, his power, and his majesty. There never was any thing so true, as that are old sayin, 'man made the town, but God made the country,' and both bespeak their different architects in terms too plain to be misunderstood. The one is filled with virtue and the other with vice. One is the abode of plenty, and the other of want; one is a ware-duck of nice pure water—and t'other one a cess-pool. Our towns are gettin so commercial and factoring, that they will soon generate mobs, Sam (how true that are has turned out, hain't it? He could see near about as far into a mill-stone, as them that picks the hole into it), and mobs will introduce disobedience and defiance to laws, and that must eend in anarchy and bloodshed. No, said the old man, raising his voice, and giving the table a wipe with his fist that made the glasses all jingle agin, give me the country; that country to which he that made it said, "Bring forth grass, the herb yieldin seed, and the tree yieldin fruit," and *who saw that it was good*. Let me jine with the feathered tribe in the mornin (I hope you get up airyly now, Sam; when you was a boy there was no gittin you out of bed at no rate), and at sunset in the hymns which they utter in full tide of song to their Creator. Let me pour out the thankfulness of my heart to the Giver of all good things, for the numerous blessings I enjoy, and intreat him to bless my increase, that I may have wherewithal to relieve the wants of others, as he prevents and relieves mine. No! give me the country. Its—Minister was jist like a horse that has the spavin: he sot off considerable stiff at first, but when he once got under way, he got on like a house a fire. He went like the wind, full split.

He was jist beginnin to warm on the subject, and I knew if he did, what wonderful bottom he had; he would hang on for ever amost; so, says I, I think so too minister, I like the country, I always sleep better there than in towns: it tante so plaguy hot, nor so noisy neither, and then it's a pleasant thing to set out on the stoop and smoke in the cool, ain't it? I think, says I, too, Minister that

are uncommon handsom cider of your'n deserves a pipe, what do you think? Well, says he, I think myself a pipe would'nt be amiss, and I got some rael good Varginy, as you een amost ever seed, a present from Rowland Randolph, an old college chum; and none the worse to my palate, Sam, for bringin bye-gone recollections with it. Phœbe, my dear, said he to his darter, bring the pipes and tobacco. As soon as the old gentleman fairly got a pipe in his mouth, I give Phœbe a wink, as much as to say, warn't that well done. That's what I call a most particular handsom fix. He can *talk* now (and that *I do like* to hear him do), but he can't make a speech, or preach a sarmon, and that *I don't like* to hear him do, except on Sabbath day, or up to Town Hall, on oration times.

Minister was an uncommon pleasant man (for there was nothin amost he didn't know), except when he got his dander up, and then he did spin out his yarns for everlastinly.

But I'm of his opinion. If the folks here want their country to go ahead, they must honour the plough, and General Campbell ought to hammer that are into their noddles, full chisel, as hard as he can drive. I could larn hin somethin, I guess, about hammerin he ain't up to. It tante every one that knows how to beat a thing into a man's head. How could I have sold so many thousand clocks, if I had'nt had that nack. Why, I wouldn't have sold half a dozen, you may depend.

Agricultur is not only neglected but degraded here. What a number of young folks there seem to be in these parts, a ridin about, titivated out real jam, in their go-to-meetin clothes, a doin nothin. It's melancholy to think on it. That's the effect of the last war. The idleness and extravagance of those times took root, and bore fruit abundantly, and now the young people are above their business. They are too high in the instep, that's a fact.

Old Drivvle, down here to Maccan, said to me one day, For gracious sake, says he, Mr. Slick, do tell me what I shall do with Johnny. His mother sets great store by him, and thinks he's the makins of a considerable smart man—he's growin up fast now, and I am pretty well to do in the world, and reasonable forehanded, but I don't know what the dogs to put him to. The Lawyers are like spiders, they've eat up all the flies, and I guess they'll have to eat each other soon, for there's more on 'em than causes now every court. The Doctor's trade is a poor one, too, they don't get barely cash enugh to pay for their medicines; I never seed a country practitioner yet that made any thing worth speakin of. Then, as for preachin, why church and dissenters are pretty much tarred with the same stick, they live in the same pastur with their flocks; and, between 'em, its fed down pretty close, I tell you. What would you advise me to do with him? Well, says I, I'll tell you if you

won't be missy with me. Missy with you, indeed, said he, I guess I'll be very much obliged to you; it tante every day one gets a chance to consult with a person of your experience—I count it quite a privilege to have the opinion of such an understandin man as you be. Well, says I, take a stick and give him a rael good quiltin, jist tantune him like blazes, and set him to work.—What does the critter want? you have a good farm for him, let him go and airn his bread; and when he can raise that, let him get a wife to make butter for it; and when he has more of both than he wants, let him sell 'em and lay up his money, and he will soon have his bread buttered on both sides—put him to, eh! why put him to the PLOUGH, *the most nateral, the most happy, the most innocent, and the most healthy employment in the world.* But, said the old man (and he did not look over half-pleased), markets are so confounded dull, labour so high, and the banks and great folks a swallerin all up so, there don't seem much encouragement for farmers, its hard rubbin, now-a-days, to live by the plough—he'll be a hard workin poor man all his days. Oh! says I, if he wants to get rich by farmin, he can do that too. Let him sell his wheet and eat his oatmeal and rye; send his beef, mutton, and poultry to market, and eat his pork and potatoes, make his own cloth, weave his own linen, and keep out of shops, and he'll soon grow rich—there are more fortins got by savin than by makin, I guess, a plaguy sight—he can't eat his cake and have it too, that's a fact. *No, make a farmer of him, and you will have the satisfaction of seeing him an honest, an independent, and a respectable member of society—more honest than traders, more independent than professional men, and more respectable than either.*

Ahem! says Marm Drivvle, and she began to clear her throat for action: she slumped down her nittin, and clawed off her spectacles, and looked right straight at me, so as to take good aim. I see'd a regular norwester a bruin, I knew it would bust somewhere sartan, and make all smoke agin: so I cleared out and left old Drivvle to stand the squall. I conceit he must have had a tempestical time of it, for she had got her Ebenezer up, and looked like a proper sneezer. Make her Johnny a farmer, eh! I guess that was too much for the like o' her to stomach.

Pride, Squire, continued the Clockmaker (with such an air of concern, that, I verily believe, the man feels an interest in the welfare of a Province, in which he has spent so long a time), *Pride, Squire, and a false pride too, is the ruin of this country. I hope I may be skinned if it tante.*

ind. the /
 of /
 m. c.
 2. behind /
 2. behind /

CHAPTER XXVII.

THE WHITE NIGGER.

ONE of the most amiable, and at the same time most amusing, traits in the Clockmaker's character, was the attachment and kindness with which he regarded his horse. He considered 'Old Clay' as far above a Provincial horse, as he did one of his 'free and enlightened citizens' superior to a blue-nose. He treated him as a travelling companion, and when conversation flagged between us, would often soliloquise to him, a habit contracted from pursuing his journeys alone. Well now, he would say, "Old Clay, I guess you took your time agoin up that are hill—s'pose we progress now. Go along, you old sculpin, and turn out your toes. I reckon you are as deff as a *sculpin* *shad*, do you hear there, 'go ahead, Old Clay.' There now, he'd say, Squire, aint that dreadful pretty? There's action. That looks about right—legs all under him—gathers all up snug—no bobbin of his head—no rollin of his shoulders—no wabblin of his hind parts, but steady as a pump bolt, and the motion all underneath. When he fairly lays himself to it, he trots like all vengeance. Then look at his ears, jist like rabbits, non o' your flop ears, like them Amherst beasts, half horses, half pigs, but strait up and pineted, and not too near at the tips; for that are, I conceit, always shews a horse aint true to draw. *There are only two things, Squire, worth lookin at in a horse, action and soundness, for I never saw a critter that had good action that was a bad beast.* Old Clay puts me in mind of one of our free and enlightened——

Excuse me, said I, Mr. Slick, but really you appropriate that word 'free' to your countrymen, as if you thought no other people in the world were entitled to it but yourselves. Neither be they, said he. We first sot the example. Look at our declaration of independence. It was writ by Jefferson, and he was the first man of the age; perhaps the world never seed his ditto. It's a beautiful peace of penmanship that, he gave the British the butt end of his mind there. I calculate you couldn't falt it in no particular, it's generally allowed to be his cap shief. In the first page of it, second section, and first varse, are these words, 'We hold this truth to be self-evident, that all men are created equal.' I guess King George turned his quid when he read that. It was somethin to chaw on, he hadn't been used to the flavour of, I reckon.

Jefferson forgot to insert one little word, said I, he should have said, 'all white men;' for, as it now stands, it is a practical untruth, in a country which tolerates domestic slavery in its worst and most for-

bidding form. It is a declaration of *shame*, and not of *independence*. It is as perfect a misnomer as ever I knew. Well, said he, I must admit there is a screw loose somewhere thereabouts, and I wish it would convene to Congress, to do somethin or another about our niggers, but I am not quite certified how that is to be sot to rights.—I concait that you don't understand us. But, said he (evading the subject with his usual dexterity), we deal only in niggers,—and those thick-skulled, crooked-shanked, flat-footed, long-heeled, woolly-headed gentlemen, don't seem fit for much else but slavery, I do suppose; they aint fit to contrive for themselves. They are jist like grasshoppers; they dance and sing all summer, and when winter comes they have nothin provided for it, and lay down and die. They require some one to see arter them. Now, we deal in black niggers only, but the blue-noses sell their own species—they trade in white slaves. Thank God, said I, slavery does not exist in any part of his Majesty's dominions now, we have at least wiped off that national stain. Not quite, I guess, said he, with an air of triumph, it tante done within Nova Scotia, for I have see'd these human cattle sales with my own eyes—I was availed of the truth of it up here to old Furlong's, last November. I'll tell you the story, said he; and as this story of the Clockmaker's contained some extraordinary statements, which I had never heard of before, I noted it in my journal, for the purpose of ascertaining their truth; and, if founded on fact, of laying them before the proper authorities.

Last fall, said he, I was on my way to Partridge Island, to ship off some truck and produce I had taken in, in the way of trade; and as I neared old Furlong's house, I seed an amazin crowd of folks about the door; I said to myself, says I, who's dead, and what's to pay now—what on airth is the meanin of all this? Is it a vandew, or a weddin, or a rollin frolic, or a religious stir, or what is it? Thinks I, I'll see—so I hitches old Clay to the fence, and walks in. It was some time afore I was able to swiggle my way thro' the crowd, and get into the house. And when I did, who should I see but Deacon Westfall, a smooth-faced, slick-haired, meechin-lookin chap as you'd see in a hundred, a standin on a stool, with an auctioneer's hammer in his hand; and afore him was one Jerry Oaks and his wife, and two little orphan children, the prettiest little toads I ever beheld in all my born days. Gentlemen, said he, I will begin the sale by putting up Jerry Oaks, of Apple River, he's a considerable of a smart man yet, and can do many little chores besides feedin the children and pigs, I guess he's near about worth his keep. Will you warrant him sound, wind and limb? says a tall, ragged lookin countryman, for he looks to me as if he was foundered in both feet, and had a string halt into the bargain. When you are as old as I be, says Jerry, mayhap you may be foundered too, young man; I have

gavar

ereve

leho

rokkano

seen the day when you wouldn't dare to pass that joke on me, big as you be. Will any gentleman bid for him, says the deacon, he's cheap at 7s. 6d. Why deacon, said Jerry, why surely your honour isn't agoin for to sell me separate from my poor old wife, are you? Fifty years have we lived together as man and wife, and a good wife has she been to me, through all my troubles and trials, and God knows I have had enough of e'm. No one knows my ways and my ailments but her, and who can tend me so kind, or who will bear with the complaints of a poor old man but his wife. Do, deacon, and Heaven bless you for it, and yours, do sell us together; we have but a few days to live now, death will divide us soon enough. Leave her to close my old eyes, when the struggle comes, and when it comes to you, deacon, as come it must to us all, may this good deed rise up for you, as a memorial before God. I wish it had pleased him to have taken us afore it came to this, but his will be done; and he hung his head, as if he felt he had drained the cup of degradation to its dregs. Can't afford it, Jerry—'can't afford it, old man, said the deacon (with such a smile as a November sun gives, a passin atween clouds). Last year they took oats for rates, now nothin but wheat will go down, and that's as good as cash, and you'll hang on, as most of you do, yet these many years. There's old Joe Crowe, I believe in my conscience he will live for ever. The biddin then went on, and he was sold for six shillings a week. Well, the poor critter gave one long, loud, deep groan, and then folded his arms over his breast so tight that he seemed tryin to keep in his heart from bustin. I pitied the misfortunate wretch from my soul, I don't know as I ever felt so streaked afore. Not so his wife, she was all tongue. She begged and prayed, and cried, and scolded, and talked at the very tip end of her voice, till she became, poor critter, exhausted, and went offin a faintin fit, and they ketched her up and carried her out to the air, and she was sold in that condition.

Well, I couldn't make head or tail of all this, I could hardly believe my eyes and ears; so says I to John Porter (him that has that catamount of a wife, that I had such a touss with), John Porter, says I, who ever see'd or heer'd tell of the like of this, what under the sun does it all mean? What has that are critter done that he should be sold arter that fashion? Done, said he, why nothin, and that's the reason they sell him. This is town-mectin day, and we always sell the poor for the year to the lowest bidder. Them that will keep them for the lowest sum, gets them. Why, says I, that feller that bought him is a pauper himself, to my sartin knowledge. If you were to take him up by the heels and shake him for a week, you couldn't shake sixpence out of him. How can he keep him? it appears to me the poor buy the poor here, and that they all starve together. Says I, there was a very good man once lived to Liverpool, so good,

he said he had'n't sinned for seven years; well, he put a mill-dam across the river, and stopt all the fish from going up, and the court fined him fifty pounds for it, and this good man was so wrath, he thought he should feel better to swear a little, but conscience told him it was wicked. So he compounded with conscience, and cheated the devil, by callin it a 'dam fine business.' Now, friend Porter, if this is your poor-law, it is a damn poor law, I tell you, and no good can come of such hard-hearted doins. It's no wonder your country don't prosper, for who ever heor'd of a blessin on such carryins on as this? Says I, Did you ever hear tell of a sartain rich man, that had a beggar called Lazarus laid at his gate, and how the dogs had more compassion than he had, and came and licked his sores; cause if you have, look at that forehanded and sponisible man there, Deacon Westfall, and you see the rich man. And then look at that are pauper, dragged away in that ox-cart from his wife for ever, like a feller to States' Prison, and you see Lazarus. Recollect what follered, John Porter, and have neither art nor part in it, as you are a Christian man.

It fairly made me sick all day, John Porter follered me out of the house, and as I was a turnin Old Clay, said he, Mr. Slick, says he, as I never see'd it in that are light afore, for it's our custom, and custom, you know, will reconcile one to most anything. I must say, it does appear, as you lay it out, an unfeelin way of providin for the poor; but, as touchin the matter of dividin man and wife, why (and he peered all round to see that no one was within hearin), why, I dont know, but if it was my allotment to be sold, I'd as lives they'd sell me separate from Jane as not, for it appears to me it's about the best part of it.

Now, what I have told you, Squire, said the Clockmaker, is the truth; and if members, instead of their everlastin politics, would only look into these matters a little, I guess it would be far better for the country. So, as for our declaration of independence, I guess you needn't twilt me with our slave-sales, for we deal only in blacks; but blue-nose approbates no distinction in colours, and when reduced to poverty, is reduced to slavery, and is sold— a *White Nigger*.

CHAPTER XXVIII.

FIRE IN THE DAIRY. — *de jure*

As we approached within fifteen or twenty miles of Parrsboro', a sudden turn of the road brought us direct in front of a large wooden house, consisting of two stories and an immense roof, the height of

which edifice was much increased by a stone foundation, rising several feet above ground. Now, did you ever see, said Mr. Slick, such a catamaran as that; there's a proper goney for you, for to go and raise such a buildin as that are, and he has as much use for it, I do suppose, as my old waggon here has for a fifth wheel. Blue-nose always takes keer to have a big house, cause it shows a big man, and one that's considerable forehanded, and pretty well to do in the world. These Nova Scotians turn up their blue-noses, as a bottle nose porpoise turns up bis snout, and puff and snort exactly like him at a small house. If neighbour Carrit has a two story house, all filled with winders, like Sandy Hook lighthouse, neighbour Parsnip must add jist two feet more on to the post of hisn, and about as much more to the rafter, to go ahead of him; so all these long sarce gentlemen strive who can get the furdest in the sky, away from their farms. In New England our maxim is a small house, and amost an everlastin almighty big barn; but these critters reverse it, they have little hovels for their cattle, about the bigness of a good sizeable bear trap, and a house for the humans as grand as Noah's Ark. Well, jist look at it and see what a figur it does cut. An old hat stuffed into one pane of glass, and an old flannel petticoat, as yaller as jaundice, in another, finish off the front; an old pair of breeches, and the pad of a bran new cart-saddle worn out, titivate the eend, while the backside is all closed up on account of the wind. When it rains, if there aint a pretty how-do-you-do, its a pity—beds toated out of this room, and tubs set in tother to catch soft water to wash; while the clapboards, loose at the eends, go clap, clap, clap, like galls a hacklin flax, and the winders and doors keep a dancin to the music. The only dry place in the house is in the chimbley corner, where the folks all huddle up, as an old hen and her chickens do under a cart of a wet day. I wish I had the matter of half a dozen pound of nails (you'll hear the old gentleman in the grand house say), I'll be darned if I don't, for if I had, I'd fix them are clapboards, I guess they'll go for it some o' these days. I wish you had, his wife would say, for they do make a most particular unhansum clatter, that's a fact; and so they let it be till the next tempestical time comes, and then they wish agin. Now this grand house has only two rooms down stairs, that are altogether slicked up and finished off complete. the other is jist petitioned off rough like, one half great dark entries, and tother half places that look a plaguy sight more like packin boxes than rooms. Well, all up stairs is a great onfurnished place, filled with every sort of good for nothin trumpery in natur—barrels without eends—corn cobs half husked—cast off clothes and bits of old harness, sheep skins, hides, and wool, apples, one half rotten, and tother half squashed—a thousand or two of shingles that have bust their withs, and broke loose all over the floor, hay rakes, forks, and

dry pane

jaundice

guess

*long
judging*

sickles, without handles or teeth; rusty scythes, and odds and ends without number. When any thing is wanted, then there is a general overhaul of the whole cargo, and away they get shifted forrard, one by one, all handled over and chucked into a heap together till the lost one is found; and the next time, away they get pitched to the starn agin, higglety pigglety, heels over head, like sheep taken a split for it over a wall; only they increase in number each move, cause some on 'em are sure to get broke into more pieces than they was afore. Whenever I see one of these grand houses, and a hat lookin out o' the winder with nary head in it, thinks I, I'll be darned if that's a place for a wooden clock, nothin short of a London touch would go down with them folks, so I calculate I wont alight.

Whenever you come to such a grand place as this, Squire, depend on't the farm is all of a piece, great crops of thistles, and an ever-lastin yield of weeds, and cattle the best fed of any in the country, for they are always in the grain fields or mowin lands, and the pigs a rootin in the potatoe patches. A spic and span new gig at the door, shinin like the mud banks of Windsor, when the sun's on 'em, and an old wrack of a hay waggin, with its tongue onhitched, and stickin out behind, like a pig's tail, all indicate a big man. He's above thinkin of farmin tools, he sees to the bran new gig, and the hired helps look arter the carts. Catch him with his go-to-meetin clothes on, a rubbin agin their nasty greasy axles, like a tarry nigger; not he, indeed, he'd stick you up with it.

The last time I came by here, it was a little bit arter day light down, rainin cats and dogs, and as dark as Egypt; so, thinks I, I'll jist turn in here for shelter to Squire Bill Blake's. Well, I knocks away at the front door, till I thought I'd a split it in; but arter a rappin awhile to no purpose, and findin no one come, I gropes my way round to the back door, and opens it, and feelin all along the partition for the latch of the keepin room, without findin it, I knocks agin, when some one from inside calls out 'walk.' Thinks I, I don't cleverly know whether that indicates 'walk in,' or 'walk out,' its plaguy short metre, that's a fact; but I'll see any how. Well, arter gropin about awhile, at last I got hold of the string and lifted the latch and walked in, and there sot old Marm Blake, close into one corner of the chimbley fire-place, a see-sawin in a rockin chair, and a half grown black house-help, half asleep in tother corner, a scroudgin up over the embers. Who be you, said Marm Blake, for I can't see you. A stranger, said I. Beck, says she, speakin to the black heifer in the corner, Beck, says she, agin, raisin her voice, I believe you are as def as a post, get up this minit and stir the coals, till I see the man. Arter the coals were stirred into a blaze, the old lady surveyed me from head to foot, then she axed me my name, and where I came from, where I was agoin, and what my business was. I guess,

said she, you must be reasonable wet, sit to the fire, and dry yourself, or mayhap your health may be endamnified pr'aps.

So I sot down, and we soon got pretty considerably well acquainted, and quite sociable like, and her tongue, when it fairly waked up, began to run like a mill race when the gate's up. I hadn't been talkin long, 'fore I well nigh lost sight of her altogether agin, for little Beck began to flourish about her broom, right and left, in great style, a clearin up, and she did raise such an awful thick cloud o' dust, I didn't know if I should ever see or breathe either agin. Well, when all was so to rights and the fire made up, the old lady began to apologise for having no candles; she said she'd had a grand tea party the night afore, and used them all up, and a whole sight of vittals too, the old man hadn't been well since, and had gone to bed airly. But, says she, I do wish with all my heart you had a come last night, for we had a most a special supper—punken pies and dough nuts, and apple sarce, and a roast goose stuffed with Indian puddin, and a pig's har-salet stewed in molasses and onions, and I don't know what all, and the fore part of to-day folks called to finish. I actilly have nothin left to set afore you; for it was none o' your skim-milk parties, but superfine uppercrust real jam, and we made clean work of it. But I'll make some tea, any how, for you, and perhaps, after that, said she, alterin of her tone, perhaps you'll expound the Scriptures, for it's one while since I've heerd them laid open powerfully. I han't been fairly lifted up since that good man Judas Oglethorp travelled this road, and then she gave a groan and hung down her head, and looked corner-ways, to see how the land lay thereabouts. The tea-kettle was accordingly put on, and some lard fried into oil, and poured into a tumbler; which with the aid of an inch of cotton-wick, served as a make shift for a candle.

Well, arter tea, we sot and chatted awhile about fashions, and markets, and sarmons, and scandal, and all sorts o' things, and, in the midst of it, in runs the nigger wench, screemin out at the tip eend of her voice, oh Missus! Missus! there's fire in the Dairy, fire in the Dairy! I'll give it to you for that, said the old lady, I'll give it to you for that, you good for nothin hussy, that's all your carelessness, go and put it out this minit, how on airth did it get there? my night milk's gone, I dare say; run this minit and put it out and save the milk. I am dreadful afeard of fire, I always was from a boy, and seein the poor foolish critter seize a broom in her fright, I ups with the tea-kettle and follows her; and away we clipt thro' the entry, she callin out, mind the cellar door on the right, take kear of the close horse on the left, and so on, but as I couldn't see nothin, I kept right straight ahead. At last my foot kitched in somethin or another, that pitched me somewhat less than a rod or so, right agin the poor black critter, and away we went heels over head. I heerd a splash and

a groan
Lullie
Lullie
 a groan, and I smelt somethin plaguy sour, but couldn't see nothin; at last I got hold of her and lifted her up, for she didn't scream, but made a strange kind of choakin noise, and by this time up came Marm Blake with a light. If poor Beck didn't let go then in airnest, and sing out, for dear life, it's a pity, for she had gone head first into the swill tub, and the tea kettle had scalded her feet. She kept a dancin right up and down, like one ravin distracted mad, and boohood like any thing, clawin away at her head the whole time, to clear away the stuff that stuck to her wool.

Lullie's job
navigation
 I held in a long as I could, till I thought I should have busted, for no soul could help a larfin, and at last I haw hawed right out. You good for nothin stupid slut you, said the old lady, to poor Beck, it sarves you right, you had no business to leave it there—I'll pay you. But, said I, interferin for the unfortunate critter, Good gracious, Marm? you forget the fire. No, I don't, said she, I see him; and seesin the broom that had fallen from the nigger's hand, she exclaimed, I see him, the nasty varmint, and began to belabor most onmarcifully a poor half starved cur that the noise had attracted to the entry. I'll teach you, said she, to drink milk; I'll larn you to steal into the dairy; and the besot critter joined chorus with Beck, and they both yelled together, till they fairly made the house ring agin. Presently old Squire Blake popt his head out of a door, and rabbin his eyes half asleep and half awake, said, What the devil's to pay now, wife? Why nothin, says she, only, '*fire's in the dairy,*' and Beck's in the swill tub, that's all. Well, don't make such a touss, then, said he, if that's all, and he shot tu the door and went to bed agin. When we returned to the keepin room, the old lady told me that they always had had a dog 'called '*Fire,*' ever since her grandfather, Major Donald Fraser's time, and what was very odd, says she, every one on' em would drink milk if he had a chance.

By this time the shower was over, and the moon shinin so bright and clear that I thought I'd better be up and stirrin, and arter'slippin a few cents into the poor nigger wench's hand, I took leave of the grand folks in the big house. Now, Squire, among these middlin sized farmers you may lay this down as a rule—*The bigger the house the bigger the fools be that's in it.*

But, howsomever, I never call to mind that are go in the big house, up to the right, that I don't snicker when I think of '*Fire in the dairy.*'

CHAPTER XXIX.

A BODY WITHOUT A HEAD.

I ALLOT you had ought to visit our great country, Squire, said the Clockmaker, afore you quit for good and all. I calculate you don't understand us. The most splendid location 'atween the Poles is the United States, and the first man alive is General Jackson, the hero of the age, him that's skeered the British out of their seven senses. Then there's the great Daniel Webster, it's generally allowed, he's the greatest orator on the face of the airth, by a long chalk, and Mr. Van Buren, and Mr. Clay, and Amos Kindle, and Judge White, and a whole raft of statesmen, up to everything, and all manner of politics; there ain't the beat of 'em, to be found any where. If you was to hear 'em, I conceit you'd hear genuine pure English for once, any how; for it's generally allowed we speak English better than the British. They all know me to be an American citizen here, by my talk, for we speak it complete in New England.

Yes, if you want to see a free people—them that makes their own laws, accordin to their own notions—go to the States. Indeed, if you can falt them at all, they are a little grain too free. Our folks have their head a trifle too much, sometimes, particularly in Elections, both in freedom of speech and freedom of press. One hadn't ought to blart right out always all that comes uppermost. A horse that's too free frets himself and his rider too, and both on 'em lose flesh in the long run. I'd e'en amost as lives use the whip sometimes, as to be for everlastinly a pullin at the rein. One's arm gets plaguy tired, that's a fact. I often think of a lesson I larnt Jehiel Quirk once, for let'en his tongue outrun his good manners.

I was down to Rhode Island one summer to larn gilden and bronzin, so as to give the finishin touch to my clocks. Well, the folks elected me a hogreave, jist to poke fun at me, and Mr. Jehiel, a bean pole of lawyer, was at the bottom of it. So one day, up to Town Hall, where there was an oration to be delivered on our Independence, jist afore the orator commenced, in runs Jehiel in a most allfired hurry; and, says he, I wonder, says he, if there's are a hogreave here, because if there be I require a turn of his office. And then, said he, a lookin up to me and callin out at the tip cend of his voice, Mr. Hogreave Slick, said he, here's a job out here for you. Folks snickered a good deal, and I felt my spunk a risen like half flood, that's a fact; but I bit in my breath, and spoke quite cool. Possible, says I; well duty, I do suppose, must be done,

*Suppose you
-waggon*

*Jim's tip
-waggon
-waggon*

though it tante the most agreeable in the world. I've been a thinkin', says I, that I would be liable to a fine of fifty cents for sufferin a hog to run at large, and as you are the biggest one, I presume, in all Rhode Island, I'll jist begin by ringin your nose, to prevent you from the futur from pokin your snout where you hadn't out to—and I seized him by the nose and nearly wrung it off. Well, you never heerd sich a shouting and clappin of hands, and cheerin, in your life—they haw-hawed like thunder. Says I, Jehiel Quirk, that was a superb joke of yourn, how you made the folks larf, didn't you? You are e'en amost the wittiest critter I ever see'd. I guess you'll mind your parts o' speech, and study the *accidence* agin afore you let your clapper run arter that fashion, won't you?

I thought, said I, that among your republicans, there were no gradations of rank or office, and that all were equal, the Hogleave and the Governor, the Judge and the Crier, the master and his servant; and although, from the nature of things, more power might be entrusted to one than the other, yet that the rank of all was precisely the same. Well, said he, it is so in theory, but not always in practice; and when we do *practise* it, it seems to go a little agin the grain, an if it warn't quite right neither. When I was last to Baltimore there was a Court there, and Chief Justice Marshall was detailed there for duty. Well, with us in New England, the Sheriff attends the Judge to Court, and, says I to the Sheriff, why don't you escort that are venerable old Judge to the State House, he's a credit to our nation that man, he's actilly the first pothook on the crane, the whole weight is on him, if it warn't for him the fat would be in the fire in no time; I wonder you don't show him that respect—it wouldn't hurt you one morsel, I guess. Says he, quite miffy like, don't he know the way to Court as well as I do? If I thought he didn't, I'd send one of my niggers to show him the road. I wonder who was his lackey last year, that he wants me to be hisn this time. It don't convene to one of our free and enlightened citizens, to tag arter any man, that's a fact; its too English and too foreign for our glorious institutions. He's bound by law to be there at ten o'clock, and so be I, and we both know the way there I reckon.

I told the story to our minister, Mr. Hopewell (and he has some odd notions about him that man, though he don't always let out what he thinks); says he, Sam, that was in bad taste (a great phrase of the old gentleman's that), in bad taste, Sam. That are Sheriff was a goney; don't cut your cloth arter his pattern, or your garment won't become you, I tell you: We are too enlightened to worship our fellow citizens as the ancients did, but we ought to pay great respect to vartue and exalted talents in this life; and, arter their death, there should be statues of eminent men placed in our national tem-

o' Park /
dancer

—
to

ples, for the veneration of arter ages, and public ceremonies performed annually to their honour. Arter all, Sam, said he, (and he made a considerable of a long pause, as if he was dubersome whether he ought to speak out or not), arter all, Sam, said he, atween ourselves (but you must not let on I said so, for the fulness of time han't yet come), half a yard of blue ribbon is a plaguy cheap way of rewarden merit, as the English do; and although we larf at em (for folks always will larf at what they han't got, and never can get), yet titles aint bad things as objects of ambition are they? Then, tappen me on the shoulder, and looken up and smilin, as he always did when he was pleased with an idee, Sir Samuel Slick would not sound bad, I guess, would it Sam?

When I look at the English House of Lords, said he, and see so much larning, piety, talent, honour, vartue, and refinement collected together, I ax myself this here question, can a system which produces and sustains such a body of men, as the world never saw before and never will see agin, be defective? Well, I answer myself, perhaps it is, for all human institutions are so, but I guess it's e'en about the best arter all. It wouldn't do here now, Sam, nor perhaps for a century to come, but it will come sooner or later with some variations. Now the Newtown pippin, when transplanted to England, don't produce such fruit as it does in Long-Island, and English fruits don't presarve their flavour here, neither; allowance must be made for difference of soil and climate—(Oh Lord I thinks I, if he turns into his orchard, I'm done for; I'll have to give him the dodge some how or another, through some hole in the fence, that's a fact, but he passed on that time.) So it is, said he, with constitutions; ourn will gradually approximate to theirs, and theirs to ourn. As they lose their strength of executive, they will varge to republicanism, and as we invigorate the form of government (as we must do, or go to the old boy), we shall tend towards a monarchy. If this comes on gradually, like the changes in the human body, by the slow approach of old age, so much the better; but I fear we shall have fevers, and convulsion-fits, and cholics, and an everlasting ripin of the intestines first; you and I wont live to see it, Sam, but our posteriors will, you may depend.

I don't go the whole figur with minister, said the Clockmaker, but I do opinionate with him in part. In our business relations we bely our political principles—we say every man is equal in the Union, and should have an equal vote and voice in the Government; but in our Banks, Railroad Companies, Factory Corporations, and so on, every man's vote is regulated by his share and proportion of stock; and if it warn't so, no man would take hold on these things at all.

Natur ordained it so—a father of a family is head, and rules supreme in his household; his eldest son and darter are like first lefte-

nants under him, and then there is an overseer over the niggers; it would not do for all to be equal there. So it is in the univarse, it is ruled by one Superior Power; if all the Angels had a voice in the Government, I guess——Here I fell fast asleep; I had been nodding for some time, not in approbation of what he said, but in heaviness of slumber, for I had never before heard him so prosy since I first overtook him on the Colchester road. I hate politics as a subject of conversation, it is too wide a field for chit chat, and too often ends in angry discussion. How long he continued this train of speculation I do not know, but, judging by the different aspect of the country, I must have slept an hour.

I was at length aroused by the report of his rifle, which he had discharged from the waggon. The last I recollected of his conversation was, I think, about American angels having no voice in the Government, an assertion that struck my drowsy faculties as not strictly true; as I had often heard that the American ladies talked frequently and warmly on the subject of politics, and knew that one of them had very recently the credit of breaking up General Jackson's cabinet.—When I awoke, the first I heard was, well, I declare, if that ain't an amazin fine shot, too, considerin how the critter was a runnin the whole blessed time; if I han't cut her head off with a ball, jist below the throat, that's a fact. There's no mistake in a good Kentucky rifle, I tell you. Whose head? said I, in great alarm, whose head, Mr. Slick? for heaven's sake what have you done? (for I had been dreaming of those angelic politicians, the American ladies.) Why that are hen-partridge's head, to be sure, said he; don't you see how special wonderful wise it looks, a flutterin about arter its head. True, said I, rubbing my eyes, and opening them in time to see the last muscular spasms of the decapitated body; true, Mr. Slick, it is a happy illustration of our previous conversation—a *body without a head*.

CHAPTER XXX.

A TALE OF BUNKER'S HILL.

MR. SLICK, like all his countrymen whom I have seen, felt that his own existence was involved in that of the Constitution of the United States, and that it was his duty to uphold it upon all occasions. He affected to consider its government and its institutions as perfect, and if any doubt was suggested as to the stability or character of either, would make the common reply of all Americans, 'I guess you don't understand us,' or else enter into a laboured defence. When

left, however, to the free expression of his own thoughts, he would often give utterance to those apprehensions which most men feel in the event of an experiment not yet fairly tried, and which has in many parts evidently disappointed the sanguine hopes of its friends. But, even on these occasions, when his vigilance seemed to slumber, he would generally cover them, by giving them, as the remarks of others, or concealing them in a tale. It was this habit that gave his discourse rather the appearance of thinking aloud than a connected conversation.

We are a great nation, Squire, he said, that's sartain; but I am afear'd we didn't altogether start right. It's in politics as in racin, every thing depends upon a fair start. If you are off too quick, you have to pull up and turn back agin, and your beast gets out of wind and is baffled, and if you lose in the start you han't got a fair chance arterwards, and are plaguy apt to be jockied in the course. When we set up housekeepin, as it were for ourselves, we hated our step-mother, Old England, so dreadful bad, we wouldn't foller any of her ways of managin at all, but made new receipts for ourselves. Well, we missed it in many things most consumedly, some how or another. Did you ever see, said he, a congregation split right in two by a quarrel? and one part go off and set up for themselves. I am sorry to say, said I, that I have seen some melancholy instances of the kind. Well, they shoot ahead, or drop astern, as the case may be, but they soon get on another tack, and leave the old ship clean out of sight. When folks once take to emigratin in religion in this way, they never know where to hide. First they try one location, and then they try another; some settle here and some improve there, but they don't hitch their horses together long. Sometimes they complain they *have too little water*, at other times that they *have too much*; they are never satisfied, and, wherever these separatists go, they onsettle others as bad as themselves. *I never look on a deserter as any great shakes.*

My poor father used to say, 'Sam, mind what I tell you, if a man don't agree in all particulars with his church, and can't go the whole hog with 'em, he ain't justified on that account, no how, to separate from them, for Sam, '*Schism is a sin in the eye of God.*' The whole Christian world, he would say, is divided into two great families, the Catholic and Protestant. Well, the Catholic is a united family, a happy family, and a strong family, all governed by one head; and Sam, as sure as eggs is eggs, that are family will grub out ^{his} t'other one, stalk, branch, and root, it won't so much as leave the seed of it in the ground, to grow by chance as a nateral curiosity. Now the Prolestant family is like a bundle of refuse shingles, when withered up together (which it never was and never will be to all etarnity), no great of a bundle arter all, you might take it up under

one arm, and walk off with it without winkin. But, when all lyin loose as it always is, jist look at it, and see what a sight it is, all blowin about by every wind of doctrine, some away up een a most out of sight, others rollin over and over in the dirt, some split to pieces, and others so warped by the weather and cracked by the sun—no two of 'em will lie so as to make a close jint. They are all divided into sects, railin, quarrellin, separatin, and agreein in nothin, but hatin each other. It is aful to think on. Tother family will some day or other gather them all up, put them into a bundle and bind them up tight, and condemn 'em as fit for nothin under the sun, but the fire. Now he who splits one of these here sects by schism, or he who preaches schism commits a grievous sin; and Sam, if you vally your own peace of mind, have nothin to do with such folks.

Its pretty much the same in politics. I aint quite clear in my conscience, Sam, about our glorious revolution. If that are blood was shed justly in the rebellion, then it was the Lord's doin, but if unlawfully, how am I to answer for my share in it. I was at Bunker's Hill (the most splended battle its generally allowed that ever was fought); what effects my shots had, I can't tell, and I am glad I can't, all except one, Sam, and that shot— Here the old gentleman became dreadfully agitated, he shook like an ague fit, and he walked up and down the room, and rung his hands and groaned bitterly. I have wrestled with the Lord, Sam, and have prayed to him to enlighten me on that pint, and to wash out the stain of that are blood from my hands. I never told you that are story, nor your mother neither, for she could not stand it, poor critter, she's kinder narvous.

Well, Doctor Warren (the first soldier of his age, though he never fought afore), commanded us all to resarve our fire till the British came within pint blank shot, and we could cleverly see the whites of their eyes, and we did so—and we mowed them down like grass, and we repeated our fire with aful effect. I was among the last that remained behind the breastwork, for most on 'em, arter the second shot, cut and run full split. The British were close to us; and an officer, with his sword drawn, was leading on his men and encouragin them to the charge. I could see his features, he was a rael handsome man, I can see him now with his white breeches and black walters, and red coat, and three cornered cocked hat, as plain as I was yesterday, instead of the year '75. Well, I took a steady aim at him and fired. He didn't move for a space, and I thought I had missed him, when all of a sudden, he sprung right straight up an eend, his sword slipt through his hands up to the pint, and then he fell flat on his face atop of the blade, and it came straight out through his back. He was fairly skivered. I never seed anything so aful since I was raised, I actilly screamed out with horror—and

I threw away my gun and joined them that were retreatin over the neck to Charlestown. Sam, that are British officer, if our rebellion was onjust, or onlawful, was murdered, that's a fact; and the idee, now I am growing old, haunts me day and night. Sometimes I begin with the Stamp Act, and I go over' all our grievances, one by one, and say aint they a sufficient justification? Well, it makes a long list, and I get kinder satisfied, and it appears as clear as any thing. But sometimes there come doubts in my mind jist like a guest that's not invited or not expected, and takes you at a short like, and I say, warn't the Stamp Act repealed, and concessions made, and warn't offers sent to settle all fairly—and I get troubled and oneasy again? And then I say to myself, says I, oh yes, but them offers came too late. I do nothin now, when I am alone, but argue it over and over agin. I actilly dream on that man in my sleep sometimes, and then I see him as plain as if he was afore me, and I go over it all agin till I come to that are shot, and then I leap right up in bed and scream like all vengeance, and your mother, poor old critter, says, Sam, says she, what on airth ails you to make you act so like old Scratch in your sleep—I do believe there's somethin or another on your conscience. And I say, Polly dear, I guess we're a goin to have rain, for that plaguy cute rheumatis has seized my foot, and it does antagonize me so I have no peace. It always does so when its like for a change. Dear heart, she says (the poor simple critter), then I guess I had better rub it, hadn't I, Sam? and she crawls out of bed, and gets her red flannel petticoat, and rubs away at my foot ever so long. Oh, Sam, if she could rub it out of my heart as easy as she thinks she rubs it out of my foot, I should be in peace, that's a fact.

What's done, Sam, can't be helped, there is no use in cryin over spilt milk, but still one can't help a thinkin on it. But I don't love schisms and I don't love rebellion.

Our revolution has made us grow faster and grow richer; but, Sam, when we were younger and poorer, we were more pious and more happy. We have nothin fixed either in religion or politics. What connection there ought to be atween Church and State, I am not availed, but some there ought to be as sure as the Lord made Moses. Religion when left to itself, as with us, grows too rank and luxuriant. Suckers and sprouts and intersecting shoots, and superfluous wood make a nice shady tree to look at, but where's the fruit, Sam? that's the question—where's the fruit? No; the pride of human wisdom, and the presumption it breeds, will ruinat us. Jefferson was an infidel, and avowed it, and called it the enlightenment of the age. Cambridge College is Unitarian, cause it looks wise to doubt, and every drumstick of a boy ridicules the belief of his forefathers. If our country is to be darkened by infidelity, our Government defied

rank and luxuriant
superfluous wood
Suckers and sprouts

by every State, and every State ruled by mobs—then, Sam, the blood we shed in our revolution will be atoned for in the blood and suffering of our fellow citizens. The murders of that civil war will be expiated by a political suicide of the State.'

I am somewhat of father's opinion, said the Clockmaker, though I don't go the whole figur with him, but he needn't have made such an everlastin touss about fixin that are British officer's flint for him, for he'd a died of himself by this time, I do suppose, if he had a missed his shot at him. Praps we might have done a little better, and praps we mightn't, by sticken a little closer to the old constitution. But one thing I will say, I think, arter all, your Colony Government is about as happy and as good a one as I know on. A man's life and property are well protected here at little cost, and he can go where he likes and do what he likes, provided he don't trespass on his neighbour.

I guess that's enough for any on us, now aint it?

CHAPTER XXXI.

GULLING A BLUE NOSE.

your friend
 I ALLOT, said Mr. Slick, that the blue-noses are the most gullible folks on the face of the airth,—rigular soft horns, that's a fact. Politicks and such stuff set 'em a gapin, like children in a chimbley corner listening to tales of ghosts, Salem witches, and Nova Scotia snow storms; and while they stand starin and yawpin, all eyes and mouth, they get their pockets picked of every cent that's in 'em. One candidate chap says, 'Feller citizens, this country is goin to the dogs hand over hand: look at your rivers, you have no bridges; at your wild lands, you have no roads; at your treasury, you hante got a cent in it; at your markets, things don't fetch nothin; at your fish, the Yankees ketch 'em all. There's nothin behind you but sufferin, around you but poverty, afore you but slavery and death. What's the cause of this unheard of awful state of things, ay, what's the cause? Why Judges, and Banks, and Lawyers, and great folks, have swallered all the money. They've got you down, and they'll keep you down to all etarnity, you and your posteriors arter you. Rise up like mon, arouse yourselves like freemen, and elect me to the Legislatur, and I'll lead on the small but patriotic band, I'll put the big wigs thro' their facins, I'll make 'em shake in their shoes, I'll knock off your chains and make you free.' Well the goneys fall tu and elect him, and he desarts right away, with balls, rifle, powder, horn, and all. *He promised too much.*

Then comes a rael good man, and an everlastin fine preacher, a most a special spiritual man, renounces the world, the flosch, and the devil, preaches and prays day and night, so kind to the poor, and so humble, he has no more pride than a babe, and so short-handed, he's no butter to his bread—all self-denial, mortifyin the flesh. Well, as soon as he can work it, he marries the richest gall in all his flock, and then his bread is buttered on both sides. *He promised too much.*

Then comes a Doctor, and a prime article he is too, I've got, says he, a screw augur emetic and hot crop, and if I can't cure all sorts o' things in natur my name a'int quack. Well, he turn's stomach and pocket, both inside out, and leaves poor blue-nose—a dead man. *He promised too much.*

Then comes a Lawyer, an honest lawyer, too, a real wonder under the sun, as straight as a shingle in all his dealins. He's so honest he can't bear to hear tell of other lawyers, he writes agin 'em, raves agin 'em, votes agin 'em, they are all rogues but him. He's jist the man to take a case in hand, cause he will see justice done. Well, he wins his case, and fobs all for costs, cause he's sworn to see justice done to himself. *He promised too much.*

Then comes a Yankee Clockmaker (and here Mr. Slick looked up and smiled), with his 'Soft Sawder,' and 'Human Natur,' and he sells clocks warranted to run from July to Eternity, stoppages included, and I must say they do run as long as—as long as wooden clocks commonly do, that's a fact. But I'll shew you presently how I put the leak into 'em, for hero's a feller a little bit ahead on us, whose flint I've made up my mind to fix this while past. Here we were nearly thrown out of the waggon, by the breaking down of one of those small wooden bridges, which prove so annoying and so dangerous to travellers. Did you hear that are snap? said he, well, as sure as fate, I'll break my clocks over them eternal log bridges, if Old Clay clips over them arter that fashion. Them are poles are plaguy treacherous, they are jist like old Marm Patience Doesgood's teeth, that keeps the great United Independent Democratic Hotel, at Squaw Neck Creek, in Massachusetts, one half gone, and tother half rotten eends.

I thought you had disposed of your last Clock, said I, at Colchester, to Deacon Flint. So I did, he replied, the last one I had to sell to *him*, but I got a few left for other folks yet. Now there's a man on this road, one Leb Allen, a real genuine skinflint, a proper close-fisted customer as you'll amost see any where, and one that's not altogether the straight thing in his dealin neither. He don't want no one to live but himself, and he's mighty handsum to me, sayin my Clocks are all a cheat, and that we ruin the country, a drainin every drop of money out of it, a callin me a Yankee broom and what not. But it tante all jist Gospel that he says. Now I'll put a Clock on him afore he knows it, I'll go right into him as slick as a whistle, and play him

*Lowell**Windsor*

to the eend of my line like a trout. I'll have a hook in his gills, while he's thinkin he's only smellin at the bait. There he is now, I be darned if he aint, standin afore his shop door, lookin as strong as high proof Jamaiky; I guess I'll whip out of the bung while he's a lookin arter the spicket, and p'raps he'll be none o' the wiser till he finds it out, neither.

Well Squire, how do you do, said he, how's all at home? Reasonable well, I give you thanks, won't you alight? Can't to-day, said Mr. Slick, I'm in a considerable of a hurry to katch the packet, have you any commands for Sow West? I'm goin to the Island, and across the Bay to Windsor. Any word that way? No, says Mr. Allen, none that I can think on, unless it be to inquire how butter's goin; they tell me cheese is down, and produce of all kind particular dull this fall. Well, I'm glad I can tell you that question, said Slick, for I don't calculate to return to these parts, butter is risin a cent or two; I put mine off mind at ten-pence. Don't return! possible! why, how you talk? Have you done with the clock trade? I guess I have, it tante worth follerin now. Most time, said the other, laughin, for by all accounts the clocks warn't worth havin, and most infarnal dear too, folks begin to get their eyes open. It warn't needed in your case, said Mr. Slick, with that peculiarly composed manner that indicates suppressed feeling, for you were always wide awake, if all the folks had cut their eye teeth as airly as you did, there'd be plaguy few clocks sold in these parts, I reckon. But you are right, Squire, you may say that, they actually were *not* worth havin, and that's the truth. The fact is, said he, throwin down his reins, and affectin a most confidential tone, I felt almost ashamed of them myself, I tell you. The long and short of the matter is jist this, they don't make no good ones now-a-days no more, for they calculate 'em for shipping and not for home use. I was all struck up of a heap when I seed the last lot I got from the States. I was properly bit by them, you may depend; they didn't pay cost, for I couldn't recommend them with a clear conscience, and I must say I do like a fair deal, for I'm strait up and down, and love to go right ahead, that's a fact. Did you ever see them I fetched when I first came, them I sold over the Bay? No, said Mr. Allen, I can't say I did. Well, continued he, they *were* a prime article, I tell you, no mistake there, fit for any market, it's generally allowed there aint the beat of them to be found any where. If you want a clock, and *can* lay your hands on one of them, I advise you not to let go the chance; you'll know 'em by the Lowell mark, for they were all made at Judge Beler's factory. Squire Shepody, down to Five Islands, axed me to get him one, and a special job I had of it, near about more sarch arter it than it was worth, but I did get him one, and a particular hansum one it is, copald and gilt superior. I guess it's worth ary half-dozen in

these parts, let tothers be where they may. If I could a got supplied with the like o' them, I could a made a grand spec out of them, for they took at once, and went off quik. Have you got it with you, said Mr. Allen, I should like to see it. Yes, I have it here, all done up in tow, as snug as a bird's egg; to keep it from jarrin, for it hurts 'em consumedly to jolt 'em over them are eternal wooden bridges. *Yankee paper* But it's no use to take it out, it aint for sale, its bespoke, and I wouldn't take the same trouble to get another for twenty dollars. The only one that I know of that there's any chance of gettin, is one that Increase Crane has up to Wilmot, they say he's a sellin off.

After a good deal of persuasion, Mr Slick unpacked the clock, but protested against his asking for it, for it was not for sale. It was then exhibited, every part explained and praised, as new in invention and perfect in workmanship. Now Mr. Allen had a very exalted opinion of Squire Shepody's taste, judgment, and saving knowledge; and, as it was the last and only chance of getting a clock of such superior quality, he offered to take it at the price the squire was to have it, at seven pounds ten shillings. But Mr. Slick vowed he couldn't part with it at no rate, he didn't know where he could get the like agin (for he warn't quite sure about Increase Crane's), and the Squire would be confounded disappointed, he couldn't think of it. In proportion to the difficulties, rose the ardour of Mr. Allen, his offers advanced to 8*l.* to 8*l.* 10*s.*, to 9*l.* I vow, said Mr. Slick. I wish I hadn't let on that I had it at all. I don't like to refuse you, but where am I to get the like. After much discussion of a similar nature, he consented to part with the clock, though with great apparent reluctance, and pocketed the money with a protest that, cost what it would, he should have to procure another, for he couldn't think of putting the Squire's pipe out arter that fashion, for he was a very clever man, and as fair as a boot-jack.

Now, said Mr. Slick, as we proceeded on our way, that are feller is properly sarved, he got the most inferior article I had, and I jist doubled the price on him. It's a pity he should be a tellin of lies of the Yankees all the time, this will help him now to a little grain of truth. Then mimicking his voice and manner, he repeated Allen's words with a strong nasal twang, 'Most time for you to give over the clock trade, I guess, for by all accounts they ain't worth havin, and most infarnel dear, too, folks begin to get their eyes open.' Better for you, if you'd a had your'n open I reckon; a joke is a joke but I conceait you'll find that no joke. The next time you tell stories about Yankee pedlars, put the wooden clock in with the wooded punkin seeds, and Hickory hams, will you? The blue-noses, Squire, are all like Zeb Allen, they think they know every thing, but they get gulled from year's eend to year's eend. They expect too much from others, and do too little for themselves. They actilly expect the sun to shine,

and the rain to fall, through their little House of Assembly. What have you done for us? they keep axin their members. Who did you spunk up to last Session? jist as if all legislation consisted in attackin some half-dozen puss-proud folks at Halifax, who are jist as big noodles as they be themselves. Your hear nothin but politics, politics, politics, one everlastin sound of give, give, give. If I was Governor I'd give 'em the butt end of my mind on the subject, I'd crack their pates till I let some light in 'em if it was me, I know. I'd say to the members, don't come down here to Halifax with your long lock-rums about politics, makin a great touss about nothin; but open the country, foster agricultur, encourage trade, incorporate companies, make bridges, facilitate conveyance, and above all things make a railroad from Windsor to Halifax; and mind what I tell you now, write it down for fear you should forget it, for it's a fact; and if you don't believe me, I'll lick you till you do, for there ain't a word of a lie in it, by Gum: '*One such work as the Windsor Bridge, is worth all your laws, votes, specches, and resolutions, for the last ten years, if tied up and put into a meal bag together. If it tante I hope I may be shot.*'

CHAPTER XXXII.

TOO MANY IRONS IN THE FIRE.

WE had a pleasant sail of three hours from Parrsborough to Windsor. The arrivals and departures by water, are regulated at this place by the tide, and it was sunset before we reached Mrs. Wilcox's comfortable inn. Here, as at other places, Mr. Slick seemed to be perfectly at home; and he pointed to a wooden clock, as a proof of his successful and extended trade, and of the universal influence of 'soft sawder,' and a knowledge of 'human natur.' Taking out a penknife, he cut off a splinter from a stick of firewood, and balancing himself on one leg of his chair, by the aid of his right foot, commenced his favourite amusement of whittling, which he generally pursued in silence. Indeed it appeared to have become with him an indispensable accompaniment of reflection.

He sat in this abstracted manner, until he had manufactured into delicate shavings the whole of his raw material, when he very deliberately resumed a position of more ease and security, by resting his chair on two legs instead of one, and putting both his feet on the mantel-piece. Then, lighting his cigar, he said in his usual quiet manner, There's a plaguy sight of truth in them are old proverbs. They are distilled facts steamed down to an essence. They are like

He is born in a rural.

portable soup, an amazin deal of matter in a small compass. They are what I vally most, experience. Father used to say, I'd as lives have an old homespun, self-taught doctor as are a Professor in the College at Philadelphia or New York to attend me; for what they do know, they know by experience and not by books; and experience is every thing; it's hearin, and seein, and tryin, and arter that a feller must be a born fool if he don't know. That's the beauty of old proverbs; they are as true as a plum line, and as short and sweet as sugar candy. Now when you come to see all about this country you'll find the truth of that are one—'a man that has too many irons in the fire, is plaguy apt to get some on 'em burnt.'

Do you recollect that are tree I show'd you to Parrsboro', it was all covered with *black knobs*, like a wart rubbed with caustic. Well, the plum trees had the same disease a few years ago, and they all died, and the cherry trees I conceit will go for it too. The farms here are all covered with the same '*black knobs*,' and they do look like old scratch. If you see a place all gone to wrack and ruin, it's mortgaged you may depend. The '*black knob*' is on it. My plan, you know, is to ax leave to put a clock in a house, and let it be till I return. I never say a word about sellin it, for I know when I come back, they won't let it go arter they are once used to it. Well, when I first came, I knowed no one, and I was forced to inquire whether a man was good for it, afore I left it with him; so I made a pint of axin all about every man's place that lived on the road. Who lives up there in the big house? says I—it's a nice location that, pretty considerable improvements, them. Why, Sir, that's A. B.'s; he was well to do in the world once, carried a stiff upper lip and keered for no one; he was one of our grand aristocrats, wore a long-tailed coat, and a ruffled shirt, but he must take to ship buildin, and has gone to the dogs. Oh, said I, too many irons in the fire. Well, the next farm, where the pigs are in the potatoe field, whose is that? Oh, Sir, that's C. D.'s.; he was a considerable fore-handed farmer, as any in our place, but he sot up for an Assembly-man, and opened a Store, and things went agin him some-how, he had no luck arterwards. I hear his place is mortgaged, and they've got him cited in chancery. '*The black knob*' is on him, said I. The black what, Sir? says blue-nose. Nothin, says I. But the next, who improves that house? Why that's E. F.'s.; he was the greatest farmer in these parts, another of the aristocracy, had a most noble stock o' cattle, and the matter of some hundreds out in jint notes; well, he took the contract for beef with the troops; and he fell astarn, so I guess it's a gone goose with him. He's heavy mortgaged. 'Too many irons agin,' said I. Who lives to the left there? that man has a most special *sino intervalo*, and a grand orchard too, he must be a good mark that. Well, he was once, Sir, a few years ago; but he built a

*Long
John
Golya
L. Henry*

Jd. ...
12/27/18...
 fullin mill, and a cardin mill, and put up a lumber establishment, and speculated in the West Indy line, but the dam was carried away by the freshets, the lumber fell, and faith he fell too; he's shot up, he han't been see'd these two years, his farm is a common, and fairly run out. Oh, said I, I understand now, my man, these folks had too many irons in the fire, you see, and some on 'em have got burnt. I never heerd tell of it, says blue-nose; they might, but not to my knowledge; and he scratched his head, and looked as if he would ask the meanin of it, but didn't like to. Arter that I axed no more questions; I knew a mortgaged farm as far as I could see it. There was a strong family likeness in 'em all—the sume ugly features, the same cast o' countenance. The 'black knob' was discernible—there was no mistake—barn doors broken off—fences burnt up—glass out of windows—more white crops than green—and both lookin weedy—no wood pile, no sarce garden, no compost, no stock—moss in the mowin lands, thistles in the ploughed lands, and neglect every where—skinnin had commenced—takin all out and puttin nothin in—gittin ready for a move, *so as to leave nothin behind*. Flittin time had come. Foregatherin, for foreclosin. Preparin to curse and quit.—That beautiful river we came up to day, what superfine farms it has on both sides of it, hante it? its a sight to behold. Our folks have no notion of such a country so far down east, beyond creation most, as Nova Scotia is. If I was to draw up an account of it for the Slickville Gazette, I guess few would accept it as a bonâ fide draft, without some sponsible man to indorse it, that warnt given to flammⁱⁿ. They'd say there was a land speculation to the bottom of it, or a water privilege to put into the market, or a plaister rock to get off, or some such scheme. They would, I snore. But I hope I may never see daylight agin, if there's sich a country in all our great nation as the *vi-cinity* of Windsor.

Vj. ...
Jan
Lumber
 Now it's jist as like as not, some goney of a blue-nose, that see'd us from his fields, sailin up full split, with a fair wind on the packet, went right off home and said to his wife, 'Now do for gracious sake, mother, jist look here, and see how slick them folks go along; and that Captain has nothin to do all day, but sit straddle legs across his tiller, and order about his sailors, or talk like a gentleman to his passengers: he's got most as easy a time of it as Ami Cuttle has, since he took up the fur trade, a snarin rabbits. I guess I'll buy a vessel, and leave the lads to do the plowin and little chores, they've growd up now to be considerable lumps of boys.' Well, away he'll go, hot foot (for I know the critters better nor they know themselves), and he'll go and buy some old wrack of a vessel, to carry plaister, and mortgage his farm to pay for her. The vessel will jam him up-tight for repairs and new riggin, and the Sheriff will soon pay him a visit (and he's a most particular troublesome visitor that; if he once

only gets a slight how-d'ye-do acquaintance, he becomes so amazin intimate arterwards, a comin in without knockin, and a runnin in and out at all hours, and makin so plaguy free and easy, it's about as much as a bargain if you can get clear of him afterwards). Benipt by the tide, and benipt by the Sheriff, the vessel makes short work with him. Well, the upshot is, the farm gets neglected, while Captain Cuddy is to sea a drogin of plaister. The thistles run over his grain fields, his cattle run over his hay land, the interest runs over its time, the mortgage runs over all, and at last he jist runs over to the lines to Eastport, himself. And when he finds himself there, a standin in the street, near Major Pine's tavern, with his hands in his trowser pockets, a chasin of a stray shillin from one end of 'em to another, afore he can catch it, to swap for a dinner, wont he look like a rivin distracted fool, that's all? He'll feel about as streaked as I did once, a ridin down the St. John river. It was the fore part of March—I'd been up to Fredericton a speculatin in a small matter of lumber, and was returnin to the city a gallopin along on one of old Buntin's horses, on the ice, and all at once I missed my horse, he went right slap in and slid under the ice out of sight as quick as wink, and there I was a standin all alone. Well, says I, what the dogs has become of my horse and port mantle? they have given me a proper dodge, that's a fact. That is a narrer squeak, it fairly bangs all. Well, I guess he'll feel near about as ugly, when he finds himself brought up al' standin that way; and it will come so sudden on him, he'll say, why it aint possible I've lost farm and vessel both, in tu tu's that way, but I dont see neither on 'em. Eastport is near about all made up of folks who have had to cut and run for it.

I was down there last fall, and who should I see but Thomas Rigby, of Windsor. He knew me the minit he laid eyes upon me, for I had sold him a clock the summer afore. (I got paid for it, though, for I see'd he had too many irons in the fire not to get some on 'em burnt; and besides, I knew every fall and spring the wind set in for the lines, from Windsor, very strong—a regular trade wind—a sort of monshune, that blows all one way, for a long time without shiftin.) Well, I felt proper sorry for him, for he was a very clever man, and looked cut up dreadfully, and amazin down in the mouth. Why, says I, possible! is that you, Mr. Rigby? why, as I am alive! if that aint my old friend—why how do you do? Hearty, I thank you, said he, how be you? Reasonable well, I give you thanks, says I; but what on airth brought you here? Why, says he, Mr. Slick, I couldn't well avoid it; times are uncommon dull over the bay; there's nothin stirrin there this year, and never will I'm thinkin. No mortal soul *can* live in Nova Scotia. I do believe that our country was made of a Saturday night, arter all the rest of the Universe was finished. One half of it has got all the

ballast of Noah's ark thrown out there; and the other half is eat up by Bankers, Lawyers, and other great folks. All our money goes to pay salaries, and a poor man has no chance at all. Well, says I, are you done up stock and fluke—a total wrack? No, says he, I have two hundred pounds left yet to the good, but my farm, stock, and utensils, them young blood horses, and the bran new vessel I was a buildin, are all gone to pot, swept as clean as a thrashin floor, that's a fact; Shark and Co. took all. Well, says I, do you know the reason of all that misfortin? Oh, says he, any fool can tell that; bad times to be sure—every thing has turned agin the country, the banks have it all their own way, and much good may it do 'em. Well, says I, what's the reason the banks don't eat us up too, for I guess they are as hungry as youn be, and no way particular about their food neither, considerable sharp set—cut like razors, you may depend. I'll tell you, says I, how you got that are slide, that sent you heels over head—' *You had too many irons in the fire.*' You hadn't ought to have taken hold of ship buildin at all, you knowed nothin about it; you should have stuck to your farm, and your farm would have stuck to you, Now go back, afore you spend your money, go up to Douglas, and you'll buy as good a farm for two hundred pounds as what you lost, and see to that, and to that only, and you'll grow rich. As for Banks, they can't hurt a country no great, I guess, except by breakin, and I concait there's no fear of youn breakin; and as for lawyers, and them kind o' heavy coaches, give 'em half the road, and if they run agin you, take the law of 'em. *Undivided, unremitin attention paid to onc thing, in ninety-nine cases out of a hundred, will ensure success; but you know the old sayin about 'too many irons.'*

Now, says I, Mr. Rigby, what o'clock is it? Why, says he, the moon is up a piece, I guess its seven o'clock or thereabouts. I suppose its time to be a movin. Stop, says I, jist come with me, I got a real nateral curiosity to show you—such a thing as you never laid your eyes on in Nova Scotia, I know. So we walked along towards the beach; Now, says I, look at that are man, old Lunar, and his son, a sawin plank by moonlight, for that are vessel on the stocks there; come agin to morrow mornin afore you can cleverly discern objects the matter of a yard or so afore you, and you'll find 'em at it agin. I guess that vessel won't ruinate those folks. *They know their business and stick to it.* Well, away went Rigby, considerable sulky (for he had no notion that it was his own fault, he laid all the blame on the folks to Halifax), but I guess he was a little grain posed, for back he went, and bought to Sowack, where I hear he has a better farm than he had afore.

I mind once we had an Irish gall as a dairy help; well, we had a wicked devil of a cow, and she kicked over the mill. pail, and in ran

Dora, and swore the Bogle did it; jist so poor Rigby, he wouldn't allow it was nateral causes, but laid it all to politics. Talkin of Dora, puts me in mind of the galls, for she warnt a bad lookin heifer that; may! what an eye she had, and I concaited she had a particular small foot and ankle too, when I helped her up once into the hay mow, to sarch for eggs; but I can't exactly say, for when she brought 'em in, mother shook her head and said it was dangerous; she said she might fall through and hurt herself, and always sent old Snow arterwards. She was a considerable of a long headed woman, was mother, she could see as far ahead as most folks. She warn't born yesterday, I guess. But that are proverb is true as respects the galls too. Whenever you see one on 'em with a whole lot of sweethearts, its an even chance if she gets married to any on 'em. One cools off, and another cools off, and before she brings any one on 'em to the right weldin heat, the coal is gone and the fire is out. Then she may blow and blow till she's tired; she may blow up a dust, but the deuce of a flame can she blow up agin, to save her soul alive. I never see a clever lookin gall in danger of that, I don't long to whisper in her ear, you dear little critter, you, take care, *you have too many irons in the fire, some on 'em will get stone cold, and tother ones will get burnt so, they'll never be no good in natur.*

CHAPTER XXXIII.

WINDSOR AND THE FAR WEST.

THE next morning the Clockmaker proposed to take a drive round the neighbourhood. You hadn't ought, says he, to be in a hurry; you should see the vicinity of this location; there aint the beat of it to be found anywhere.

While the servants were harnessing old Clay, we went to see a new bridge, which had recently been erected over the Avon River. That, said he, is a splendid thing. A New Yorker built it, and the folks in St. John paid for it. You mean of Halifax, said I; St. John is in the other province. I mean what I say, he replied, and it is a credit to New Brunswick. No, Sir, the Halifax folks neither know nor keer much about the country—they wouldn't take hold on it, and if they had a waited for them, it would have been one while afore they got a bridge, I tell you. They've no spirit, and plaguy little sympathy with the country, and I'll tell you the reason on it. There are a good many people there from other parts, and always have been, who come to make money and nothin else, who don't call it home, and don't feel to home, and who intend to up killoch and off, a soon

as they have made their ned out of the blue noses. They have got about as much regard for the country as a pedlar has, who trudges along with a pack on his back. He *walks*, cause he intends to *ride* at last; *trusts*, cause he intends to *sue* at last; *smiles*, cause he intends to *cheat* at last; *saves all*, cause he intends to *move all* at last. Its actilly overruu with transient paupers, and transient speculators, and these last grumble and growl like a bear with a sore head, the whole blessed time, at every thing; and can hardly keep a civil tongue in their head, while they're fobbin your money hand over hand. These critters feel no interest in any thing but cent. per cent.; they deaden public spirit; they han't got none themselves, and they larf at it in others; and when you add their numbers to the timid ones, the stingy ones, the ignorant ones, and the poor ones that are to be found in every place, why the few smart ~~ones~~ ones that's left, are too few to do any thing, and so nothin is done. It appears to me if I was a blue-nose I'd——; but thank fortin I ain't, so I says nothin—but there is somethin that ain't altogether jist right in this conuntry, that's a fact.

But what a country this Bay country is, isn't it? Look at that medder, bean't it lovely? The Prayer Eyes of Illanoy are the top of the ladder with us, but these dykes take the shine off them by a long chalk, that's sartin. The land in our far west, it is generally allowed can't be no better; what you plant is sure to grow and yield well, and food is so cheap, you can live there for half nothin. But it don't agree with us New England folks; we don't enjoy good health there; and what in the world is the use of food, if you have such an eternal dyspepsy you can't disgest it. A man can hardly live there till next grass, afore he is in the yaller leaf. Just like one of our bran new vessels built down in Maine, of best hackmatack, or what's better still, of our rael American live oak (and that's allowed to be about the best in the world), send her off to the West Indies, and let her lie there awhile, and the worms will riddle her bottom all full of holes like a tin cullender, or a board with a grist of duck shot thro' it, you wouldn't believe what a *boze* they be. Well, that's jist the case with the western climate. The heat takes the solder out of the knees and elbows, weakens the joints, and makes the frame ricketty.

Besides, we like the smell of the Salt Water, it seems kinder nateral to us New Englanders. We can make more a plowin of the seas, than plowin of a prayer eye. It would take a bottom near about as long as Connecticut river, to raise wheat enough to buy the cargo of a Nantucket whaler, or a Salem tea ship. And then to leave one's folks, and *native* place where one was raised halter broke, and trained to go in gear, and exchange all the comforts of the old States, for them are new ones, don't seem to go down well at all. Why, the very sight of the Yankee galls is good for sore eyes, the dear little critters, they do look so scrumptious, I tell you, with their cheeks

bloomin like a red rose budded on a white one, and their eyes like Mrs. Adams's diamonds (that folks say shine as well in the dark as in the light), neck like a swan, lips chock full of kisses—lick I it fairly makes one's mouth water to think on 'em. But it's no use talkin, they are just made critters, that's a fact, full of health, and life, and beauty,—now, to change them are splendid white water lilies of Connecticut and Rhode Island, for the yaller crocusses of Illanoy, is what we don't like. It goes most confoundedly agin the grain, I tell you. Poor critters, when they get away back there, they grow as thin as a sawed lath, their little peepers are as dull as a boiled codfish, their skin looks like yaller fever, and they seem all mouth like a crocodile. And that's not the worst of it neither, for when a woman begins to grow saller it's all over with her; she's up a tree then you may depend, there's no mistake. You can no more bring back her bloom, than you can the colour to a leaf the frost has touched in the fall. Its gone goose with her, that's a fact. And that's not all, for the temper is plaguy apt to change with the cheek too. When the freshness of youth is on the move, the sweetness of temper is amazin apt to start along with it. A bilious cheek and a sour temper are like the Siamese twins, there's a nateral cord of union atween them. The one is a sign board, with the name of the firm written on it in big letters. He that don't know this, can't read, I guess. It's no use to cry over spilt milk, we all know, but it's easier said than done that. Women kind, and especially single folks, will take on dreadful at the fadin of their roses, and their frettin only seems to make the thorns look sharper. Our minister used to say to sister Sall (and when she was young she was a rael witch, amost an everlastin sweet girl), Sally, he used to say, now's the time to larn, when you are young; store your mind well, dear, and the fragrance will remain long arter the rose has shed its leaves. *The otter of roses is stronger than the rose, and a plaguy sight more valuable.* Sall wrote it down, she said it warn't a bad idee that; but father larfed, he said he guessed minister's courtin days warn't over, when he made such pretty speeches as that are to the girls. Now, who would go to expose his wife or his darters, or himself, to the dangers of such a climate, for the sake of 30 bushels of wheat to the acre, instead of 15. There seems a kinder somethin in us that rises in our throat when we think on it, and won't let us. We dont like it. Give me the shore, and let them that like the Far West, go there, I say.

This place is as fertile as Illanoy or Ohio, as healthy as any part of the Globe, and right along side of the salt water; but the folks want three things—*Industry, Enterprise, Economy*; these bluc-noses don't know how to vally this location—only look at it, and see what a place for business it is—the centre of the Province—the nateral

capital of the Bazin of Minas, and part of the bay of Fundy—the great thoroughfare to St. John, Canada, and the United States—the exports of lime, gypsum, freestone, and grindstone—the dykes—but it's no use talkin; I wish we had it, that's all. Our folks are like a rock maple tree—stick 'em in any where, but eend up and top down, and they will take root and grow; but put 'em in a rael good soil like this, and give 'em a fair chance, and they will go a head and thrive right off, most amazin fast, that's a fact. Yes, if we had it we would make another guess placc of it from what it is. *In one year we would have a railroad to Halifax, which, unlike the stone that killed two birds, would be the makin of both places.* I often tell the folks this, but all they can say is, oh we are too poor and too young. Says I, you put me in mind of a great long legged, long tailed colt, father had. He never changed his name of colt as long as he lived, and he was as old as the hills; and though he had the best of feed, was as thin as a wippin post. He was colt all his days—always young—always poor; and young and poor you'll be I guess to the eend of the chapter.

On our return to the Inn the weather, which had been threatenin for some time past, became very tempestuous. It rained for three successive days, and the roads were almost impassable. To continue my journey was wholly out of the question. I determined, therefore, to take a seat in the coach for Halifax, and defer until next year the remaining part of my tour. Mr. Slick agreed to meet me here in June, and to provide for me the same conveyance I had used from Amherst. I look forward with much pleasure to our meeting again. His manner and idiom were to me perfectly new and very amusing; while his good sound sense, searching observation, and queer humour, rendered his conversation at once valuable and interesting. There are many subjects on which I should like to draw him out; and I promise myself a fund of amusement in his remarks on the state of society and manners at Halifax, and the machinery of the local government, on both of which he appears to entertain many original and some very just opinions.

As he took leave of me in the coach, he whispered, 'Inside of your great big cloak you will find wrapped up a box, containin a thousand rael genuine first chop Havanahs—no mistake—the clear thing. When you smoke 'em, think sometimes of your old companion, SAM SLICK, THE CLOCKMAKER.'

CHAPTER XXXIV.

THE MEETING.

WHOEVER has condescended to read the preceding Chapters of the Clockmaker, or the Sayings and Doings of Mr. Samuel Slick, will recollect that our tour of Nova Scotia terminated at Windsor last autumn, in consequence of bad roads and bad weather, and that it was mutually agreed upon between us to resume it in the following spring. But, alas! spring came not. They retain in this country the name of that delightful portion of the year, but it is 'Vox et preterea nihil.' The short space that intervenes between the dissolution of winter and the birth of summer deserves not the appellation. Vegetation is so rapid here, that the valleys are often clothed with verdure before the snow has wholly disappeared from the forest.

There is a strong similarity between the native and his climate; the one is without youth, and the other without spring, and both exhibit the effects of losing that preparatory season. *Cultivation is wanting.* Neither the mind nor the soil is properly prepared. *There is no time.* The farmer is compelled to hurry through all his field operations as he best can, so as to commit his grain to the ground in time to insure a crop. Much is unavoidably omitted that ought to be done, and all is performed in a careless and slovenly manner. The same haste is observable in education, and is attended with similar effects; a boy is hurried to school, from school to a profession, and from thence is sent forth into the world before his mind has been duly disciplined or properly cultivated.

When I found Mr. Slick at Windsor, I expressed my regret to him that we could not have met earlier in the season; but really, said I, they appear to have no spring in this country. Well, I don't know, said he; I never seed it in that light afore; I was athinkin we might stump the whole univarsal world for climate. It's generally allowed, our climate in America can't be no better. The spring may be a little short or so, but then it is added to t'other cend, and makes a'most an everlastin fine autumn. Where will you ditto our fall? It whips English weather by a long chalk, none of your hangin, shootin, drownin, throat-cuttin weather, but a clear sky and a good breeze, rael cheerfulsome.

That, said I, is evading the question; I was speaking of the shortness of spring, and not of the comparative merit of your autumn, which I am ready to admit is a very charming portion of the year in America. But there is one favour I must beg of you during this tour, and that is, to avoid the practice you indulged in so much last

year, of exalting everything American by depreciating everything British. This habit is, I assure you, very objectionable, and has already had a very perceptible effect on your national character. I believe I am as devoid of what is called national prejudices as most men, and can make all due allowances for them in others. I have no objection to this superlative praise of your country, its institutions, or its people, provided you do not require me to join in it, or express it in language disrespectful of the English.

Well, well, if that don't beat all, said he; you say, you have no prejudices, and yet you can't bear to hear tell of our great nation, and our free and enlightened citizens. Captain Aul (Hall), as he called himself, for I never seed an Englishman yet that spoke good English, said he hadn't one mite or morsel of prejudice, and yet in all his three volumes of travels through the U-nited States (the greatest nation it's generally allowed atween the Poles), only found two things to praise, the kindness of our folks to him, and the State prisons. None are so blind, I guess, as them that won't see; but your folks can't bear it, that's a fact. Bear what? said I. The superiority of the Americans, he replied; it does seem to grig 'em, there's no denyin it; it does somehow or another seem to go agin their grain to admit it most consumedly; nothin a'most ryles them so much as that. But their sun has set in darkness and sorrow, never again to peer above the horizon. They will be blotted out of the list of nations. Their glory has departed across the Atlantic to fix her everlastin abode in the U-nited States. Yes, man to man, baganut to baganut,—ship to ship,—by land or by sea,—fair fight, or rough and tumble,—we've whipped'em, that's a fact, deny it who can; and we'll whip 'em, ag'in to all eternity. We average more physical, moral, and intellectual force than any people on the face of the airth; we are a right-minded, strong-minded, sound-minded, and high-minded people, I hope I may be shot if we ain't. On fresh or on salt water, on the lakes or the ocean, down comes the red cross and up go the stars. From Bunker's Hill clean away up to New Orleans the land teems with the glory of our heroes. Yes, our young Republic is a Colossus, with one foot in the Atlantic and the other in the Pacific, its head above the everlastin hills, graspin in its hands a tri—A rifle, shooting squirrels, said I; a very suitable employment for such a tall, overgrown, long-legged youngster.

Well, well, said he, resuming his ordinary quiet demeanor, and with that good humor that distinguished him, put a rifle, if you will, n his hands, I guess you'll find he's not a bad shot neither. But I must see to Old Clay, and prepare for our journey, which is a considerable of a long one, I tell *you*,—and taking up his hat, he proceeded to the stable. Is that fellow mad or drunk, said a stranger who came from Halifax with me in the coach; I never heard such a

vapouring fool in my life;—I had a strong inclination, if he had not taken himself off, to shew him out of the door.—Did you ever hear such insufferable vanity? I should have been excessively sorry, I said, if you had taken any notice of it. He is, I assure you, neither mad nor drunk, but a very shrewd, intelligent fellow. I met with him accidentally last year while travelling through the eastern part of the province; and although I was at first somewhat annoyed at the unceremonious manner in which he forced his acquaintance upon me, I soon found that his knowledge of the province, its people and government, might be most useful to me. He has some humour, much anecdote, and great originality;—he is, in short, quite a character. I have employed him to convey me from this place to Shelburne, and from thence along the Atlantic coast to Halifax. Although not exactly the person one would choose for a travelling companion, yet if my guide must also be my companion, I do not know that I could have made a happier selection. He enables me to study the Yankee character, of which in his particular class he is a fair sample; and to become acquainted with their peculiar habits, manners, and mode of thinking. He has just now given you a specimen of their national vanity; which, after all, is, I believe, not much greater than that of the French, though perhaps more loudly and rather differently expressed. He is well informed and quite at home on all matters connected with the machinery of the American government, a subject of much interest to me. The explanations I receive from him enable me to compare it with the British and Colonial constitutions, and throw much light on the speculative projects of our reformers. I have sketched him in every attitude and in every light, and I carefully note down all our conversations, so that I flatter myself, when this tour is completed, I shall know as much of America and Americans as some who have even written a book on the subject.

CHAPTER XXXV.

THE VOLUNTARY SYSTEM.

THE day after our arrival at Windsor, being Sunday, we were compelled to remain there until the following Tuesday, so as to have one day at our command to visit the College, Retreat Farm, and the other objects of interest in the neighbourhood. One of the inhabitants having kindly offered me a seat in his pew, I accompanied him to the church, which, for the convenience of the College, was built nearly a mile from the village. From him I learned, that, independently of

the direct influence of the Church of England upon its own members, who form a very numerous and respectable portion of the inhabitants of Nova Scotia, its indirect operation has been both extensive and important in this colony.

The friends of the establishment, having at an early period founded a college, and patronised education, the professions have been filled with scholars and gentlemen, and the natural and very proper emulation of other sects being thus awakened to the importance of the subject, they have been stimulated to maintain and endow academies of their own.

The general diffusion through the country of a well-educated body of clergymen, like those of the establishment, has had a strong tendency to raise the standard of qualification among those who differ from them, while the habits, manners, and regular conduct of so respectable a body of men naturally and unconsciously modulate and influence those of their neighbours, who may not perhaps attend their ministrations. It is, therefore, among other causes doubtless, owing in a great measure to the exertions and salutary example of the Church in the Colonies that a higher tone of moral feeling exists in the British Provinces than in the neighbouring states, a claim which I find very generally put forth in this country, and though not exactly admitted, yet certainly not denied even by Mr. Slick himself. The suggestions of this gentleman induced me to make some inquiries of the Clockmaker, connected with the subject of an establishment; I therefore asked him what his opinion was of the Voluntary System. Well, I don't know, said he; what is yourn? I am a member, I replied, of the Church of England; you may, therefore, easily suppose what my opinion is. And I am a citizen, said he, laughing, of Slickville, Onion county, state of Connecticut, United States of America: you may therefore guess what my opinion is too: I reckon we are even now, ar'n't we? To tell you the truth, said he, I never thought much about it. I've been a considerable of a traveller in my day; arovin about here and there and everywhere; atradin wherever I seed a good chance of making a speck; paid my shot into the plate, whenever it was handed round in meetin, and axed no questions. It was about as much as I could cleverly do, to look arter my own consarns, and I left the ministers to look arter theirs; but take 'em in a ginerel way they are pretty well to do in the world with us, especially as they have the women on their side. Whoever has the women is sure of the men, you may depend, squire; openly or secretly, directly or indirectly; they *do* contrive, somehow or another, to have their own way in the eend, and tho' the men have the reins, the women tell 'em which way to drive. Now, if ever you go for to canvas for votes, always canvas the wives, and you are sure of the husbands.

*for the
know*

I recollect when I was last up to Alabama, to one of the new cities lately built there, I was awalkin one mornin airly out o' town 'to get a leetle fresh air, for the weather was so plaguy sultry I could hardly breathe a'most, and I seed a most splendid location there near the road; a beautiful white two-story house with a grand virandah runnin all round it, painted green, and green vernitians to the winders, and a white pallisade fence in front lined with a row of Lombardy poplars, and two rows of 'em leadin up to the front door, like two files of sodgers with sixt baganuts; each side of the avenue was a grass plot, and a beautiful image of Adam stood in the centre of one on 'em,—and of Eve, with a fig-leaf apron on, in 'other, made of wood by a native artist, and painted so nateral no soul could tell 'em from stone.

The avenue was all planked beautiful, and it was lined with flowers in pots and jars, and looked a touch above common, I tell you. While I was astoppin' to look at it, who should drive by but the milkman with his cart. Says I, stranger, says I, I suppose you don't know who lives here, do you? I guess you are a stranger, said he, ain't you? Well, says I, I don't exactly know as I ain't; but who lives here? "The Rev. Ahab Meldrum, said he, I reckon. Ahab Meldrum, said I to myself; I wonder if it can be the Ahab Meldrum I was to school with to Slickville, to minister's, when we was boys. It can't be possible it's him, for he was fitter for a State's prisoner than a State's preacher, by a long chalk. He was a poor stick to make a preacher on, for minister couldn't beat nothin into him a'most, he was so cussed stupid; but I'll see any how: so I walks right through the gate and raps away at the door, and a tidy, well-rigged nigger help opens it and shews me into a'most an elegant furnished room. I was most darnted to sit down on the chairs, they were so splendid, for fear I should spile 'em. There was mirrors and vases, and lamps, and picturs, and crinkum crankums, and notions of all sorts and sizes in it. It looked like a bazar a'most, it was fill'd with such an everlastin sight of curiosities.

The room was considerable dark too, for the blinds was shot, and I was skear'd to move for fear o' doin mischief. Presently in comes Ahab, slowly sailin in, like a boat droppin down stream in a calm, with a pair o' purple slippers on, and a figured silk dressin gound, and carrying a'most a beautiful-bound book in his hand. May I presume, says he, to inquire who I have the onexpected pleasure of seeing this mornin? If you'll gist throw open one o' them are shutters, says I, I guess the light will save us the trouble o' axin' names. I know who you be by your voice any how, tho' it's considerable softer than it was ten years ago. I'm Sam Slick, says I,—what's left o' me at least. Verily, said he, friend Samuel, I'm glad to see you: and how did you leave that excellent man and distin-

guished scholar, the Rev. Mr Hopewell, and my good friend your father? Is the old gentleman still alive? if so, he must anow be ripefull of years as he is full of honors. Your mother, I think I heerd, was dead—gathered to her fathers—peace be with her!—she had a good and a kind heart. I loved her as a child: but the Lord taketh whom he loveth. Ahab, says I, I have but a few minutes to stay with you, and if you think to draw the wool over my eyes, it might perhaps take you a longer time than you are athinkin on or than I have to spare;—there are some friends you've forgot to inquire after tho',—there's Polly Bacon and her little boy.

Spare me, Samuel, spare me, my friend, says he; open not that wound afresh, I beseech thee. Well, says I, none o' your nonsense then; shew me into a room where I can spit, and feel to home, and put my feet upon the chairs without adamagin things, and I'll sit and smoke and chat with you a few minutes; in fact I don't care if I stop and breakfast with you, for I feel considerable peckish this mornin. Sam, says he, atakin hold of my hand, you were always right up and down, and as straight as a shingle in your dealins. I can trust *you*, I know, but mind,—and he put his fingers on his lips—mum is the word;—bye gones are bye gones,—you wouldn't blow an old chum among his friends, would you? I scorn a nasty, dirty, mean actions, say I, as I do a nigger. Come, foller me, then, says he;—and he led me into a back room, with an oncarpeted painted floor, farnished plain, and some shelves in it, with books and pipes and cigars, pigtail, and what not. Here's liberty-hall, said he; chew or smoke, or spit as you please;—do as you like here; we'll throw off all resarve now; but mind that cursed nigger; he has a foot like a cat, and an ear for every keyhole—don't talk too loud.

Well, Sam, said he, I'm glad to see you too, my boy; it puts mein mind of old times. Many's the lark you and I have had together in Slickville, when old Hunks—(it made me start, that he meant Mr. Hopewell, and it made me feel kinder dandry at him, for I wouldn't let any one speak disrespectful of him afore me for nothin, I know)—when old Hunks thought we was abed. Them was happy days o' light heels and light hearts. I often think on 'em and think on 'em too with pleasure. Well, Ahab, says I, I don't gist altogether know as I do; there are some things we might gist as well a'most have left alone, I reckon; but what's done is done, that's a fact. A hem! said he, so loud, I looked round and I seed two niggers bringin in the breakfast, and a grand one it was,—tea and coffee and Indgian corn and cakes, and hot bread and cold bread, fish, fowl, and flesh, roasted, boiled and fried; presarves, pickles, fruits; in short, every thing a'most you could think on. You needn't wait, said Ahab to the blacks; I'll ring for you when I want you; we'll help ourselves.

Well, when I looked round and seed this critter alivin' this way, on the fat o' the land, up to his knees in clover like, it did pose me considerable to know how he worked it so cloverly, for he was thought always, as a boy, to be rather more than half onder-baked, considerable soft-like. So, says I, Ahab, says I, I calculate you'r like the cat we used to throw out of minister's garrat winder, when was aboardin there to school. How so, Sam? said he. Why, says I, you always seem to come on your feet some how or another. You have got a plaguy nice thing of it here; that's a fact, and no mistake (the critter had three thousand dollars a year); how on airth did you manage it? I wish in my heart I had ataken up the trade o' preachin' too; when it does hit it does capitally, that's sertain. Why, says he, if you'll promise not to let on to any one about it, I'll tell you. I'll keep dark about it, you may depend, said I. I'm not a man that can't keep nothin in my gizzard, but go right off and blart out all I hear. I know a thing worth two o' that, I guess. Well, says he, it's done by a new rule I made in grammar—the feminine gender is more worthy than the neuter and the neuter, more worthy than the masculine; I gist soft sawder the women. It taint every man 'll let you tickle him; and if you do, he'll make faces at you enough 'tighen you into fits; but tickle his wife and it's electrical—he'll laugh like any thing. They are the forred wheels, start them, and the hind ones foller of course. Now it's mostly women that tend meetin here: the men-folks have their politics and trade to talk over, and what not, and ain't time; but the ladies go considerable regular, and we have to depend on them, the dear critters. I gist lay myself out to get the blind side o' them, and I sugar and gild the pill so as to make it pretty to look at and easy to swallow. Last Lord's day, for instance, I preached on the death of the widder's son. Well, I drew such a pictur of the lone watch at the sick bed, the patience, the kindness, the tenderness of women's hearts, their forgiving disposition—(the Lord forgive me for saying so, tho', for if there is a created critter that never forgives, it's a woman; they seem to forgive a wound on their pride, and it skins over and looks all heal'd up like, but touch 'em on the sore spot ag'in, and see how 'cute their memory is)—their sweet temper, soothers of grief, dispensers of joy, ministrin angels.—I make all the virtues of the feminine gender always,—then I wound up with a quotation from Walter Scott. They all like poetry, do the ladies, and Shakspeare, Scott, and Byron, are amaziu' favorites; they go down much better than the m old-fashioned staves o' Watts.

' Oh woman, in our hour of ease,
Uncertain, coy, and hard to please,
And variable as the shade
By the light quivering aspen made:
When pain and anguish wring the brow,
A ministering angel thou.'

If I didn't touch it off to the nines it's a pity. I never heerd you preach so well, says one, since you was located here. I drew from natur', says I, a squeezin' of her hand. Nor never so touchin', says another. You know my moddle, says I, lookin' spooney on her. I fairly shed tears, said a third; how often have you drawn them from me? says I. So true, said they, and so nateral, and truth and natur' is what we call eloquence. I feel quite proud, said I, and considerably elated, my admired sisters,—for who can judge so well as the ladies of the truth of the description of their own virtues? I must say I felt somehow kinder, inadequate to the task too, I said,—for the depth and strength and beauty of the female heart passes all understandin'.

When I left 'em I heard 'em say, ain't he a dear man, a sweet critter, a'most a splendid preacher; none o' your mere moral lecturers, but a rael right down genuine gospel preacher. Next day I received to the tune of one hundred dollars in cash, and fifty dollars produce, presents from one and another. The truth is, if a minister wants to be popular he should remain single, for then the galls all have a chance for him; but the moment he marries he's up a tree; his flint is fixed then; you may depend it's gone goose with him arter that; that's a fact. No, Sam; they are the pillars of the temple, the dear little critters—And I'll give you a wrinkle for your horn, perhaps you ain't got yet, and it may be some use to you when you go down atradin with the benighted colonists in the outlandish British provinces. *The road to the head lies through the heart.* Pocket, you mean, instead of head, I guess, said I; and if you don't travel that road full chissel it's a pity. Well, says I, Ahab, when I go to Slickville I'll gist tell Mr. Hopewell what a most a precious, superfine, superior darn'd rascal you have turned out; if you ain't No. 1, letter A, I want to know who is, that's all. You do beat all, Sam, said he; it's *the system that's vicious, and not the preacher.* If I didn't give 'em the soft sawder they would neither pay me nor hear me; that's a fact. Are you so soft in the horn now, Sam, as to suppose the galls would take the trouble to come to hear me tell 'em of their corrupt natur' and fallen condition; and first thank me, and then pay me for it? Very entertainin that to tell 'em the worms will fatten on their pretty little rosy cheeks, and that their sweet plump flesh is nothin' but grass, flourishin to day, and to be cut down, withered, and rotten to-morrow, ain't it? It ain't in the natur' o' things; if I put them out o' conceit o' themselves, I can put them in conceit o' me; or that they will come down handsome, and do the thing ginteel, it's gist onpossible. It warn't me made the system, but the system made me. *The voluntary don't work well.*

System or no system, said I, Ahab, you are Ahab still, and Ahab you'll be to the eend o' the chapter. You may deceive the women by soft sawder, and yourself by talkin' about systems, but you won't

walk into me so easy, I know. It ain't pretty at all. Now, said I, Ahab, I told you I wouldn't blow you, nor will I. I will neither speak o' things past nor things present. I know you wouldn't, Sam, said he; you were always a good feller. But it's on one condition, says I, and that is, that you allow Polly Bacon a hundred dollars a-year—she was a good gall and a decent gall when you first know'd her, and she's in great distress now to Slickville, I tell *you*. That's onfair, that's onkind, Sam, said he; that's not the clean thing; I can't afford it; it's a breach o' confidence this, but you got me on the hip, and I can't help myself;—say fifty dollars, and I will. Done, said I, and mind you're up to the notch, for I'm in airnest—there's no mistake. Depend upon me, said he. And, Sam, said he, ashakin hands along with me at partin',—excuse me, my good feller, but I hope e may never have the pleasure to see your face ag'in. Ditto, says I; but mind the fifty dollars a-year, or you will see me to a sartainty—good b'ye.

How different this cussed critter was from poor, dear, good, old Joshua Hopewell. I seed him not long arter. On my return to Connecticut, gist as I was a passin' out o' Molasses into Onion County, who should I meet but minister amounted upon his horse, old Captain Jack. Jack was a racker, and in his day about as good a beast as ever hoisted tail (you know what a racker is, don't you squire? said the clockmaker; they brings up the two feet on one side first, together like, and then t'other two at once, the same way; and they do get over the ground at a'most an amazin' size, that's sartain), but poor old critter, he looked pretty streak'd. You could count his ribs as far as you could see him, and his skin was drawn so tight over him, every blow of minister's cane on him sounded like a drum, he was so holler. A candle poked into him lighted would have shown through him like a lantern. He carried his head down to his knees, and the hide seem'd so scant a pattern, he showed his teeth like a cross dog, and it started his eyes and made 'em look all outside like a weasel's. He actilly did look as if he couldn't help it. Minister had two bags roll'd up and tied on behind him, like a portmanter, and was ajoggin on alookin down on his horse, and the horse alookin down on the road; as if he was seekin a soft spot to tumble down upon.

It was curious to see Captain Jack too, when he heerd Old Clay a comin' along full split behind him; he cocked up his head and tail, and prick'd up his ears, and looked corner ways out of an eye, as much as to say, if you are for a lick of a quarter of a mile I don't feel much up to it, but I'll try you any way;—so here's at you. He did try to do pretty, that's sartain, as if he was ashamed of lookin so like Old Scratch, gist as a fellar does up the shirt collar and combs his hair with his fingers, afore he goes into the room among the galls.

The poor skilliton of a beast was ginger to the backbone, you may depend—all clear grit; what there was of him was whalebone; that's a fact. But minister had no rally *about him*; he was proper chop-fallen, and looked as dismal as if he had lost every friend that he had on airth. Why, minister, says I, what onder the sun is the matter of you? You and Captain Jack look as if you had had the cholera; what makes *you* so dismal and your *horse* so thin? what's out o' joint now? Nothin' gone wrong, I hope, since I left? Nothin' has gone right with me, Sam, of late, said he; I've been sorely tried with affliction, and my spirit is fairly humbled. I've been more in *plaid* this day, my son, than I ever was afore in all my born days. Minister, says I, I've gist one favour to ax o' you; give me the sinner's name, and afore daybreak to-morrow mornin' I'll bring him to a reck'nin and see how the balance stands. I'll kick him from here to Washington, and from Washington back to Slickville, and then I'll cow-skin him, till this ridin-whip is worn up to shoe strings, and pitch him clean out o' the State. The infarnal villain! tell me who he is, and if he war as big as all out-doors, I'd waik into him. I'll teach him the road to good manners, if he can save eyesight to see it,—hang me if I don't. I'd like no better fun, I vow. So gist shew me the man that darst insult you, and if he does so ag'in, I'll give you leave to tell me of it. Thank you, Sam, says he; thank you, my boy, but it's beyond your help. It ain't a parsonal affront of that natur', but a spiritual affront. It ain't an affront offered to me as Joshua Hopewell, so much as an affront to the minister of Slickville. That is worse still, said I, because you can't resent it yourself. Leave him to me, and I'll fix his flint for him.

It's a long story, Sam, and one to raise grief, but not anger;—you mustn't talk or think of fightin, it's not becomin a Christian man: but here's my poer habitation; put up your horse and come in, and we'll talk this affair over by and by. Come in and see me,—for, sick as I am, both in body and mind, it will do me good. You was always a kind-hearted boy, Sam, and I'm glad to see the heart in the right place yet;—come in, my son. Well, when we got into the house, and sot down,—says I, minister, what the dickens was them two great roll's o' canvas for, I seed snugg'd up and tied to your crupper? You looked like a man who had taken his grist to mill, and was returnin with the bags for another; what onder the sun had you in them? I'll tell you, Sam, said he,—you know, said he, when you was to home, we had a State Tax for the support o' the church, and every man had to pay his share to some church or another. I mind, says I, quite well. Well, said he, the inimy of souls has been to work among us, and instigated folks to think this was too compulsory for a free people, and smelt too strong of establishments, and the legislatur' repealed the law; so now, instead o' havin a rigilar legal stipind, we have

what they call the voluntary,—every man pays what he likes, when he likes, and to whom he likes, or if it don't convene him he pays nothin';—do you apprehend me? As clear as a boot-jack, says I; nothin' could be plainer, and I suppose that some o' your factory people that make canvas have given you a present of two rolls of it to make bags to hold your pay in? My breeches-pockets, says he, Sam, ashakin o' his head, I estimate, are big enough for that. No, Sam; some subscribe and some don't. Some say, we'll give, but we'll not bind ourselves;—and some say, we'll see about it. Well, I'm e'en a'most starved, and Captain Jack does look as poor as Job's turkey; that's a fact. So I thought, as times was hard, I'd take the bags and get some oats for him, from some of my subscribin' congregation;—it would save them the cash, and suit me gist as well as the blunt. Wherever I went, I might have fill'd my bags with excuses, but I got no oats;—but that warn't the worst of it neither, they turn'd the tables on me and took me to task. A new thing that for me, I guess in my old age, to stand up to be catekised like a converted Heathen. Why don't you, says one, jine the Temperance Society, minister? Because, says I, there's no warrant for it in Scriptur', as I see. A Christian obligation to sobriety is, in my mind, afore any engagement on honor. Can't think, says he, of payin' to a minister that countenances drunkenness. Says another,—minister, do you smoke? Yes, says I, I do sometimes: and I don't care if I take a pipe along with you now;—it seems sociable like. Well, says he, it's an abuse o' the critter,—a waste o' valuable time and an encouragement of slavery; I don't pay to upholders of the slave system; I go the whole figur' for abolition. One found me too Calvinistic, and another too Armenian; one objected to my praying for the President,—for, he said, he was an everlastin' almighty rascal;—another to my wearin' a gown, for it was too Popish. In short, I git nothin' but objections to a'most everything I do or say, and I see considerable plain my income is gone; I may work for nothin' and find thread now, if I choose. The only one that paid me, cheated me. Says he, minister, I've been alookin' for you for some time past, to pay my contribution, and I laid by twenty dollars for you. Thank you, said I, friend, but that is more than your share; ten dollars, I think, is the amount of your subscription. Well, says he, I know that, but I like to do things handsom, and he who gives to a minister lends to the Lord;—but, says he, I'm afeer'd it won't turn out so much now, for the Bank has fail'd since. It's a pity you hadn't acall'd afore, but you must take the will for the deed. And he handed me a roll of the Bubble Bank paper, that ain't worth a cent. Are you sure, said I, that you put this aside for me when it was good? O sartin, says he, I'll take my oath of it. There's no 'casion for that, says I, my friend, nor for me to take more than my due neither;—here are ten of them back again.

I hope you may not lose them altogether, as I fear I shall. But he cheated me,—I know he did.

This is the blessin of the voluntary, as far as I'm consarned. Now, I'll tell you how it's agoin' to work upon them; not through my agency tho', for I'd die first;—afore I'd do a wrong thing to gain the whole univarsal world. But what are you doin' of, Sam, said he, acrackin' of that whip so? says he; you'll e'en a'most deefen me. Atryin' of the spring of it, says I. The night afore I go down to Nova Scotia, I'll teach 'em Connecticut quickstep—I'll larn 'em to make somersets—I'll make 'em cut more capers than the caravan monkey ever could to save his soul alive, I know. I'll quilt 'em, as true as my name is Sam Slick; and if they follers me down east, I'll lam-baste them back a plaguy sight quicker than they came; the nasty, dirty, mean, sneakin villains. I'll play them a voluntary—I'll fa la sol them to a jig tune, and show 'em how to count baker's dozen. Crack, crack, crack, that's the music, minister; crack, crack, crack, I'll set all Slickville ayelpin!

I'm in trouble enough, Sam, says he, without addin that are to it; don't quite break my heart, for such carryin's on would near about kill me. Let the poor deludid critters be, promise me now. Well, well, says I, if you say so, it shall be so;—but I must say I long to be at 'em. But how is the voluntary agoin for to operate on them? Emetic, diuretic, or purgative, eh? I hope it will be all three, and turn them inside out, the ungrateful scoundrils, and yet not be gist strong enough to turn them back ag'in. Sam, you're an altered man, says he. It appears to me the whole world is changed. Don't talk so on—Christian: we must forget and forgive. They will be the greatest sufferers themselves, poor critters, havin destroyed the independence of their minister,—their minister will pander to their vanity. He will be afeer'd to tell them unpalatable truths. Instead of tellin' 'em they are miserable sinners in need of repentance, he will tell 'em they are a great nation and a great people, will quote history more than the Bible, and give 'em orations not sarmons, encomiums and not censures. Presents, Sam, will bribe indulgence. *The minister will be a dumb dog!* It sarves 'em right, says I; I don't care what becomes of them. I hope they will be *dumb* dogs, for dumb dogs bite, and if they drive you mad,—as I believe from my soul they will,—I hope you'll bite every one on 'em.

But, says I, minister, talkin' of presents, I've got one for you that's somethin like the thing, I know; and I took out my pocket-book and gave him a hundred dollars. I hope I may be shot if I didn't. I felt so sorry for him.

Who's this from? said he, smilin. From Alabama, said I; but the giver told me not to mention his name. Well, said he, I'd arather he'd asent me a pound of good Virginy pig tail, because I could have

thank'd him for that, and not felt too much obligation. *Presents of money injure both the giver and receiver, and destroy the equilibrium of friendship, and diminish independence and self-respect*: but it's all right; it will enable me to send neighbour Dearbourn's two sons to school. It will do good. 'Cute little fellers them, Sam, and will make considerable smart men, if they are properly seed to; but the old gentleman, their father, is, like myself, nearly used up, and plaguy poor. Thinks I, if that's your sort, old gentleman, I wish I had my hundred dollars in my pocket-book ag'in, as snug as a bug-^{Wing} in a rug, and neighbour Dearbourn's two sons might go and whistle for their schoolin'. Who the plague cares whether they have any larnin' or not? I'm sure I don't. It's the first of the voluntary system I've tried, and I'm sure it will be the last.

Yes, yes, squire, the voluntary don't work well,—that's a fact. Ahab has lost his soul to save his body, minister has lost his body to save his soul, and I've lost my hundred dollars slap to save my feet-ins. The deuce take the voluntary, I say.

CHAPTER XXXVI.

TRAINING A CARRIBOO.

In the evening we sauntered out on the bank of the river, Mr. Slick taking his rifle with him, to shoot blue-winged duck, that often float up the Avon with the tide in great numbers. He made several shots with remarkable accuracy, but having no dogs we lost all the birds, but two, in the eddies of this rapid river. It was a delightful evening, and on our return we ascended the cliff that overlooks the village and the surrounding country, and sat down on the projecting point of limestone rock, to enjoy the glories of the sunset.

This evenin, said Mr. Slick, reminds me of one I spent the same way at Toronto, in Upper Canada, and of a conversation I had with a British traveller there. There was only himself and me at the inn, and havin nothin above partickilar to do, says I, 'spose we take the rifle and walk down by the lake this splendid afternoon; who knows but we might see somethin' or another to shoot? So off we sot, and it was so cool and pleasant we stroll'd a considerable distance up the beach, which is like this, all limestone gravel, only cleaner and less sediment in it.

When we got tired of the glare of the water, and a nasty yallor scum that was on it at that season, we turned up a road that led into the woods. Why, says I, if there ain't a Carriboo, as I'm alive. Where? said he, seizin the rifle, and bringin it to his shoulder with

great eagerness,—where is it? for heaven sake let me have a shot at it! I have long wish'd, said he, to have it to say, before I leave the province, that I had performed that feat of killin a Carriboo. Oh, Lord! said I, throwin up the point of the gun to prevent an accident, Oh, Lord! it ain't one o' them are sort o' critters at all; it's a human Carriboo. It's a member, him that's in that are gig lookin as wise as a barber's block with a new wig on it. The Toronto folks call 'em Carriboos, 'cause they are ontamed wild critters from the woods, and come down in droves to the legislatur'. I guess he's a goin to spend the night to the hotel, where we be; if he is, I'll bring him into our room and train him: you'll see what sort o' folks makes laws sometimes. I do believe, arter all, says I, this universal suffrage will make universal fools of us all;—it ain't one man in a thousand knows how to choose a horse, much less a member, and yet there are some standin rules about the horse, that most any one can larn, if he'll give his mind to it. There's the mark o' mouth, —then there's the limbs, shape, make, and soundness of 'em; the eye, the shoulder, and, above all, the action. It seems all plain enough, and yet it takes a considerable 'cute man to make a horse-jockey, and a little graih of the rogue too; for there is no mistake about the matter—you must lie a few to put 'em off well. Now, that's only the lowest grade of knowledge. It takes more skill yet to be a nigger-jockey. A nigger-jockey, said he; for heaven's sake, what is that? I never heerd the term afore, since I was a created sinner—I hope I may be shot if I did. Possible! said I, never heerd tell of a nigger-jockey! My sakes, you must come to the states then;—we'll put more wrinkles on your horns in a month there than you'll get in twenty years here, for these critters don't know nothin. A nigger-jockey, sir, says I, is a gentleman that trades in niggers,—buys them in one state, and sells them in another, where they arn't known. It's a beautiful science, is nigger flesh; it's what the lawyers call a liberal profession. Uncle Enoch made enough in one year's tradin in niggers to buy a splendid plantation; but it ain't every one that's up to it. A man must have his eye teeth cut afore he takes up that trade, or he is apt to be let in for it himself, instead of putting a leak into others; that's a fact. Niggers don't show their age like white folk, and they are most always older that they look. A little rest, ilein the joints, good feed, a clean shirt, a false tooth or two, and dyin the wool black if it's got grey, keepin 'em close shav'd, and gist givin 'em a glass o' whiskey or two afore the sale to brighten up the eye, has put off many an old nigger of fifty-five for forty. It does more than trimmin and groomin a horse by a long chalk. Then if a man knows geography, he fixes on a spot in next state for meetin ag'in, slips a few dollars in Sambo's hand, and Sambo slips the halter off in the manger, meets massa there, and is sold a second time ag'in.

jest.

Wash the dye out, let the beard grow, and remove the tooth, and the devil himself couldn't swear to him ag'in.

If it takes so much knowledge to choose a horse, or choose a nigger, what must it take to choose a member?—Who knows he won't give the people the slip as Sambo does the first master; ay, and look as different too, as a nigger does, when the dye rubs out, and his black wool looks white ag'in. Ah, squire, there are tricks in all trades, I do believe, except the clock trade. The nigger business, says I, is apt to get a man into court, too, as much as the horse trade, if he don't know the quirks of the law. I shall never forget a joke I passed off once on a Southerner. I had been down to Charleston South Carr, where brother Siah is located as a lawyer, and drives a considerable business in that line. Well, one day as I was awalkin along out o' town, asmokin of my cigar, who should I meet but a poor old nigger, with a'most an almighty heavy load of pine-wood on his back, as much as he could cleverly stagger onder. Why, Sambo, said I, whose slave be you? You've got a considerable of a heavy load there for a man of your years. Oh, massa, says he, Gor Ormighty bless you (and he laid down his load, and puttin one hand on his loins; and t'other on his thigh, he tried to straighten himself up). I free man now, I no longer slave no more. I purchased my freedom from General Crockodile, him that keeps public at Mud Creek. Oh, massa, but him general took me in terrible, by gosh! Says he, Pompey, says he, you one werry good nigger, werry faithful nigger. I great opinion of you, Pompey; I make a man of you, you dam old tar brush. I hope I may be skinned alive with wild cats if I don't. How much money you save, Pomp? Hunder dollars, say I. Well, says he, I will sell you your freedom for that are little sum. Oh, massa general, I said, I believe I lib and die wid you;—what old man like me do now? I too old for freeman. O no, massa, leab poor old Pomp to die among de niggers. I tend young massa General, and little missey General, and teach 'em how to cow-skin de black villains. Oh, you smart man yet, he says,—*quite sound*, werry smart man, you airn a great deal o' money;—I too great regard for you to keep you slave any longer. Well, he persuade me at last, and I buy freedom, and now I starve. I hab no one to take care of me now; I old and good for nothin—I wish old Pomp very much dead;—and he boohood right out like a child. Then he sold you to yourself, did he? said I. Yes, massa, said he, and here de paper and de bill ob sale. And he told you you *sound man* yet?—True, massa, ebbery word. Then, says I, come along with me, and I toated him along into Siah's office. Sy, says, I, here's a job for you. General Crockodile sold this poor old nigger to himself, and warrinted him *sound* wind and limb. He cheated him like a cantin hypocritical sinner as he is, for he's *foundered* in his right foot, and ringboned on the left. Sue him on

his warrant—there's some fun in't.—Fun, said Sy, I tell you it's a capital joke; and he jump'd up and danced round his office a snapping of his fingers, as if he wor bit by a galley-nipper. How it will comflustrigate old Sim Hloter, the judge, won't it; I'll bambouse ^{m. 12} him, I'll bogogify his brain for him with warranties general, special, and implied, texts, notes, and comentries. I'll lead him a dance through civil law and common law, and statuto law; I'll read old Latin, old French, and old English to him; I'll make his head turn like a mill-stone; I'll make him stare like an owl, atryin to read by daylight, and he larfed ready to kill himself. Sure enough he did ^{bother} bother him; so agoin up from one court to another, that Crockodile was glad to compound the matter to get clear of the joke, and paid old Pomp his hundred dollars back again; that's a fact.

In the course of the evenin Mr. Buck, the member elect for the township of Flats in the Home district, came in, and I introduced him with much ceremony to the Britisher, agivin of him a wink at the same time, as much as to say, now I'll show you the way to train a Carriboo. Well, Squire Buck, said I, I vow I'm glad to see you;—how did you leave Mrs. Buck and all to homo?—all well, I hope? Reasonable well, I give you thanks, sir, said he. And so they've elected you a member, Ih? Well, they wanted some honest men among 'Im—that's a fact, and some onderstandin men too; how do you go, Tory or Radical? Oh, pop'lar side of course, said Mr. Buck. M'Kenzie and Papinau have open'd my eyes I tell you; I had no notion afore our government was so rotten—I'm for elective councils, short parliaments, ballot, universal suffrage, and ag'in all officials. Right, said I, you are on the right side then, and no mistake. You've a plain path afore you; go straight ahead, and there's no fear. I should like to do so, said he, but I don't onderstand these matters enough, I'm ascerd, to probe 'Im to the bottom; perhaps you'll be so good as to advise me a little. I should like to talk over these things with you, as they say you are a considerable of an onderstandin man, and have seed a good deal of the world. Well, said I, nothin would happily me more, I do assure you. Be independant, that's the great thing; be independant, that is, attack everything. First of all, there's the Church; that's a grand target, fire away at that till you are tired. *Raise a prejudice if you can, and then make everything a Church question.* But I'm a churchman myself, Mr. Slick; you wouldn't have me attack my own church, would you? So much the better, said I; it looks liberal;—*true liberality, as far as my experience goes, lies in praisin every other church, and abusin of your own;* it's only bigots that attack other folks' doctrine and tenets; no strong-minded, straight-a-head, right up and down man does that. It shows a narrer mind and narrer heart that. But what fault is there with the church? said he: they mind their own business, as

far as I see, and let other folks alone; they have no privilege here that I know on, that other sects ha'en't got. It's pop'lar talk among some folks, and that's enough, said I. They are rich, and their clergy are learned and genteel, and there's a good many envious people in the world;—there's radicals in religion as well as in politics, that would like to see 'em all brought to a level. And then there's church lands: talk about dividin them among other sects, givin them to schools, and so on. There's no harm in robbin Peter if you pay Paul with it—a fair exchange is no robbery, all the world over; then wind up with a Church tithe sale, and a military massacre of a poor dissentin old woman that was baganuted by bloody-minded sodgers while tryin' to save her pig. It will make an affectin speech, draw tears from the gallery, and thunders of applause from the House.

Then there's judges, another grand mark; and councillors and rich men; call 'em the little big men of a little colony, the would-be-aristocracy—the official gang—the favor'd few; call them by their christian and surnames; John Den and Richard Fen; turn up your noses at 'em like a horse's tail, that's double-nick'd. Salaries are a never-ending theme for you; officials shouldn't be paid at all; the honor is enough for 'em; a patriot sarves his country for nothin. Take some big salary for a text, and treat it this way: says you, there's John Doe's salary, it is seven hundred and thirty pounds a year, that is two pounds a day. Now, says you, that is sixteen common labourers' pay at two and sixpence each per day;—shall it be said that one great mammoth official is worth sixteen free citizens who toil harder and fare worse than he does? then take his income for ten years and multiply it. See, says you, in ten years he has received the enormous sum of seven thousand five hundred pounds: then run over all the things seven thousand five hundred pounds would effect on roads, bridges, schools, and so on, and charge him with havin been the means of robbin the country of all these blessings: call 'em blood-suckers, pampered minions, bloated leeches. Then there's the college, says you; it's for the aristocracy, to keep up distinctions, to rivit our fetters, to make the rich richer, and the strong stronger; talk of native genius and self-taught artists, of natur's scholars, of homespun talent; it flatters the multitude this—it's pop'lar, you may depend. Call the troops mercenaries, vile hirelings, degraded slaves; turn up your eyes to the ceiling and invoke defeat and slaughter on 'em; if they are to enforce the law, talk of standing armies, of slavery, of legionary tyrants,—call them foreigners, vulturs thirsting for blood,—butchers,—every man killed in a row, or a mob, call a victim, a *murdered man*,—that's your sort, my darlin—go the whole hog, and do the thing genteel. *Anything that gives power to the masses will please the masses.* If there was nothin to attack there would be no champions; if there is no grievance you

must make one : call all changes reform, whether it makes it better or not,—anything you want to alter, an abuse. call All that oppose you, call anti-reformers, upholders of abuses, bigots, sycophants, office-seeking Tories. Say they live by corruption, by oppressin the people, and that's the reason they oppose all change. How streaked they'll look, won't they? It will make them scratch their heads and stare, I know. If there's any man you don't like, use your privilege and abuse him like old Scratch,—lash him like a nigger, cut him up beautiful—oh, it's a grand privilege that! Do this, and you'll be the speaker of the House, the first pot-hook on the crane, the truckle-head and cap-sheave—you will, I snore. Well, it does open a wide field, don't it, said Mr. Buck, for an ambitious man? I vow, I believe I'll take your advice; I like the idea amazin'ly. Lord, I wish I could talk like you,—you do trip it off so glib—I'll take your advice tho'—I will, I vow. Well, then, Mr. Buck, if you will really take my advice, *I'll give it you, said I, free-gratis for nothin. Be honest, be consistent, be temperate; be rather the advocate of internal improvement than political change; of rational reform, but not organic alterations. Neither flatter the mob, nor flatter the government; support what is right, oppose what is wrong; what you think speak; try to satisfy yourself, and not others; and if you are not popular, you will at least be respected; popularity lasts but a day, respect will descend as a heritage to your children.*

CHAPTER XXXVII.

NICK BRADSHAW.

*Admiring
view
of
the
country*

We left Gaspereaux early in the morning, intending to breakfast at Kentville. The air was cool and bracing, and the sun, which had just risen, shed a lustre over the scenery of this beautiful and fertile valley, which gave it a fresh and glowing appearance. A splendid country this, squire, said the Clockmaker; that's a fact; the Lord never made the beat of it. I wouldn't ax no better location in the farmin line than any of these allotments; grand grazin grounds and superfine tillage lands. A man that know'd what he was about might live like a fightin cock here, and no great scratchin for it neither. Do you see that are house on that risin hummock to the right there? Well, gist look at it, that's what I call about right. Flanked on both sides by an orchard of best-grafted fruit, a tidy little clever flower-garden in front, that the galls see to, and a'most a grand sarce garden over the road there sheltered by them are willows. At the back side see them ever-lastin big barns; and, by

Don't

Just

gosh! there goes the dairy cows; a pretty sight too, that fourteen of them marchin' Indgian file after milkin', down to that are medder. Whenever you see a place all snuged up and lookin' like that are, depend on it the folks are honeysuckle, and rose-bushes shew the family are brought up right; somethin' to do to home, instead of racin' about to quiltin' parties, huskin' frolicks, gossipin', talkin' scandal, and neglectin' their business. Them little matters are like throwin' up straws, they shew which way the wind is. When galls attend to them are things, it shows they are what our minister used to call, 'right-minded.' It keeps them busy, and when folks are busy, they ha'n't time to get into mischief; and it amuses them too, and it keeps the dear little critters healthy and cheerful. I believe I'll alight and breakfast there, if you've no objection. I should like you to see that citizen's improvements, and he's a plaguy nice man too, and will be proud to see you, you may depend.

We accordingly drove up to the door, where we were met by Squire James Horton, a respectable, intelligent, cheerful-looking man, apparently of about fifty years of age. He received me with all the ease and warmth of a man to whom hospitality was habitual and agreeable,—thanked Mr. Slick for bringing me to see him, and observed that he was a plain farmer, and lived without any pretensions to be other than he was, and that he always felt pleased and gratified to see any stranger who would do him the favor to call upon him, and would accommodate himself to the plain fare of a plain countryman. He said, he lived out of the world, and the conversations of strangers was often instructive, and always acceptable to him. He then conducted us into the house, and introduced us to his wife and daughters, two very handsome and extremely interesting girls, who had just returned from superintending the operations of the dairy. I was particularly struck with the extreme neatness and propriety of their attire, plain and suitable to their morning occupations, but scrupulously nice in its appearance.

As the clock struck seven (a wooden clock, to which Mr. Slick looked with evident satisfaction as a proof of his previous acquaintance), the family were summoned, and Mr. Horton addressed a short but very appropriate prayer to the Throne of Grace, rendering the tribute of a grateful heart for the numerous blessings with which he was surrounded, and supplicating a continuance of divine favour. There was something touching in the simplicity and fervour of his devotion, while there was a total absence of that familiar tone of address so common in America, which, often bordering on profanity, shocks and disgusts those who have been accustomed to the more decorous and respectful language of our beautiful liturgy.

Breakfast was soon announced, and we sat down to an excellent and substantial repast, everything abundant and good of its kind,

and the whole prepared with a neatness that bespoke a well-regulated and orderly family. We were then conducted round the farm, and admired the method, regularity, and good order of the establishment. I guess this might compare with any of your English farms, said the Clockmaker; it looks pretty considerable slick this—don't it? We have great advantages in this country, said Mr. Horton; our soil is naturally good, and we have such an abundance of salt sludge on the banks of the rivers, that we are enabled to put our uplands in the highest state of cultivation. Industry and economy can accomplish anything here. We have not only good markets, but we enjoy an almost total exemption from taxation. We have a mild and paternal government, our laws are well and impartially administered, and we enjoy as much personal freedom as is consistent with the peace and good order of society. God grant it may long continue so! and that we may render ourselves worthy of these blessings, by yielding the homage of grateful hearts to the Great Author and Giver of all good things. A bell ringing at the house at this time, reminded us that we were probably interfering with some of his arrangements, and we took leave of our kind host, and proceeded on our journey, strongly impressed with those feelings which a scene of domestic happiness and rural felicity like this never fails to inspire.

We had not driven more than two or three miles before Mr. Slick suddenly checked his horse, and pointing to a farm on the right-hand side of the road, said, Now there is a contrast for you, with a vengeance. That critter, said he, when he built that wraek of a house (they call 'em a half-house here), intended to add as much more to it some of these days, and accordingly put his chimbley outside, to sarve the new part as well as the old. He has been too lazy, you see, to remove the hankin put there, the first fall, to keep the frost out o' the cellar, and it has rotted the sills off, and the house has fell away from the chimbley, and he has had to prop it up with that great stick of timber, to keep it from coming down on its knees altogether. All the winders are boarded up but one, and that has all the glass broke out. Look at the barn!—the roof has fell in in the middle, and the two gables stand starin each other in the face, and as if they would like to come closer together if they could, and consult what was best to be done. Them old geese and vetren fowls, that are so poor the foxes won't steal 'em for fear o' hurtin their eeth,—that little yaller, lantern-jaw'd, long-legg'd, rabbit-eared runt of a pig, that's so weak it can't curl its tail up,—that old frame of a crow, astandin there with its eyes shot-to, acontemplatin of its latter eend,—and that varmint-lookin horse with his hocks swelled bigger than his belly, that looks as if he had come to her funeral,—is all his stock, I guess. The goney has showed his sense in one thing, however, he has burnt all his fence up; for there is no danger

ix 2 up

*don't go
gub'ly
samaf.*

Gibson

of other folks' cattle breakin into his field to starve, and gives his Old Mooley a chance o' nights if she find an open gate, or a pair of bars down, to get a treat of clover now and then. O dear, if you was to get up airy of a mornin, afore the dew was off the ground, and mow that are field with a razor, and rake it with a fine-tooth comb, you wouldn't get stuff enough to keep one grasshopper through the winter, if you was to be hanged for it. 'Spose we drive up to the door to light a cigar; if Nick Bradshaw is to home, I should like to have a little chat with him. It's worth knowin kow he can farm with so little labour; for anything that saves labour in this country, where help is so plaguy dear, is worth larnin, you may depend.

Observing us pause and point towards his domain, Nicholas lifted off the door and laid it on its side, and, emerging from his den of dirt and smoke, stood awhile reconnoitring us. He was a tall, well-built, athletic-looking man, possessed of great personal strength and surprising activity, but looked like a good-natured, careless fellow, who loved talking and smoking better than work, and preferred the pleasures of the tap-room to the labours of the field. He thinks we want his vote, said the Clockmaker. He's looking as big as all out-doors, gist now, and waitin for us to come to *him*. He wouldn't condescend to call the king his cousin gist at this present time. It's independant day with him, I calculate; happy-lookin critter, too, ain't he, with that are little, short, black pipe in his mouth? The fact is, squire, the moment a man takes to a pipe he becomes a philosifer;—it's the poor man's friend; it calms the mind, soothes the temper, and makes a man patient onder trouble. It has made more good men, good husbands, kind masters, indulgent fathers, and honest fellers, than any other blessed thing in this universal world. The Indgians always buried a pipe and a skin of tobacco with their folks, in case smokin should be the fashion in the next world, that they mightn't go onpro-
 Gist look at him: his hat has got no crown in it, and the rim hangs loose by the side, like the hale of a bucket. His trousers and jacket are all flyin in tatters of different colour'd patches. He has one old shoe on one foot, and an ontanned mocasin on t'other. He ain't had his beard cut since last sheep-shearin, and he looks as shaggy as a yearlin colt. And yet you see the critter has a rakish look too. That are old hat is cocked on one side quite knowin, he has both hands in his trousers'-pockets, as if he had somethin worth feelin there, while one eye shot-to on account of the smote, and the other standin' out of the way of it as far as it can, makes him look like a bit of a wag. A man that didn't smoke couldn't do that now, squire. You may talk about fortitude, and patience, and Christian resignation, and all that are sort of thing, but you're tired; I've seen it and heard tell of it too, but I never knew an instance yet where it didn't come a little grain-heavy or sour out of the oven. Philosophy

*of the same
p. = 150*

*Bill you 2
of the
Indians
11-10-11*

*long
Cinderling*

is like most other guests I've seed, it likes to visit them as keeps good tables, and though it has some poor acquaintances, it ain't more nor half pleased to be seen walkin lock and lock with 'em. But smokin—Here he comes, tho', I swan; he knows Old Clay, I reckon: he sees it ain't the candidate chap.

This discovery dispelled the important airs of Nicholas, and taking the pipe out of his mouth, he retreated a pace or two, and took a running leap of ten or twelve feet across a stagnant pool of green water that graced his lawn, and served the double purpose of rearing goslings and breeding moschetoes, and by repeating these feats of agility on the grass several times (as if to keep himself in practice), was by the side of the waggon in a few minutes.

Mornin, Mr. Bradshaw, said the Clockmaker; how's all to home to-day? Reasonable well, I give you thanks:—won't you alight? Thank you, I gist stopt to light a cigar.—I'll bring you a bit o' fire, said Nick, in the twinklin of an eye; and bounding off to the house with similar gigantic strides, he was out of sight in a moment. Happy, good-natured citizen that, you see, squire, said Mr. Slick, he ha'n't been fool enough to stiffen himself by hard work neither; for you see he is as supple as an eel. The critter can jump like a catamount, and run like a deer; he'd catch a fox a'most, that chap.

Presently out bounded Nick in the same antelope style, waving over his head a lighted brand of three or four feet long. Here it is, said he, but you must be quick, for this soft green wood won't hold fire in no time—it goes right out. It's like my old house there, and that's so rotten it won't hold a nail now; after you drive one in you can pull it out with your finger. How are you off for tobacco? said Mr. Slick. Grand, said he, got half a fig left yet. Got it for you in a minit, and the old ladies' pipe too, and without waiting for a reply, was curvetting again off to the house. That gony, said the Clockmaker, is like a gun that goes off at half cock—there's no doin nothin with him. I didn't want his backey, I only wanted an excuse to give him some; but it's a strange thing that, squire, but it's as sure as rates, *the poor are every where more liberal, more obligin, and more hospitable, accordin to their means, than the rich are:* they beat them all hollar,—its a fact, I assure you.

When he returned, Mr. Slick told him that he was so spry, he was out of hearing before he could stop him; that he didn't require any himself, but was going to offer him a fig of first chop genuine stuff he had. Thank you, said he, as he took it, and put it to his nose;—it has the right flavour that—rather weak for me, tho'. I'm thinking it'll gist suit the old lady. She smokes a good deal now for the cramp in her leg. She's troubled with the cramp sometimes, away down some where about the calf, and smokin, they say, is good for it.

He then took the tobacco very scientifically between the forefinger

and thumb of his left hand, and cut it into small shreds that fell into the palm. Then holding both knife and fig between his teeth, he rolled, untwisted, and pulverised the cut tobacco by rubbing and grinding it between his two hands, and refilled and lighted his pipe, and pronouncing the tobacco a prime article, looked the very picture of happiness. How's crops in a general way this year? said Mr. Slick. Well, they are just about midlin, said he; the seasons han't been very good lately, and somehow the land don't bear as it used to when I was a boy; but I'm in great hopes times are goin to be better now. They say things look brighter; *I feel a good deal encouraged myself.* They tell me the governor's agoin to appoint a new council; I guess, they'll do sun'thin for the country. Ah, said the Clockmaker, that indeed, that would be sun'thin like,—it would make times quite brisk ag'in—farmers could afford to live then. It would raise markets considerable. So I see in the papers, said Nick: the fact o' the matter is, the assembly men must do sun'thin for the country, or it will go to the dogs, that's sertain. They tell me too that the council doors are to be opened, so that we can hear the debates;—that will be a great privilege, won't it? Very, said the Clockmaker, it will help the farmers amazin'ly that: I should count that a great matter; they must be worth hearin them counsellors. It's quite a treat to hear the members in the house, particularly when they talk about bankin, currency, constitution, bounties, and such tough knotty things;—they go so deep into these matters, and know so much about 'em, it's quite edifyin. I've larnt more new things, and more things I niver knew afore, in half an hour in the assembly, than ever I heerd afore in my life, and I expect t'other house will be quite as wise. Well, I'm glad to hear you say so, said Nicholas; *I feel somehow quite encouraged myself:* if we had a bounty of about a shilling a bushel for raisin potatoes, two and sixpence a bushel for wheat, and fifteen pence for oats, I think a body *might* have a chance to make out to scratch along to live here; and I'm told when the council doors are opened, we shall actually get them. I must say, *I feel quite encouraged myself.* But stop, said he, laying his hand on Mr. Slick, do you see that are varmint alookin' arter the old lady's chiekins over there by the barn? I had a crack at him yesterday, but he was too far off—wait a bit; and he scampered off to the house, brought out his gun, which had been previously loaded, and throwing himself on all fours, proceeded towards the barn as rapidly as a quadruped. Stop, stop, daddy, said a little half-naked imp of a boy, stop till I get my cock-shy. Well, bear a hand then, said he, or he'll be off: I won't wait a minit.

The boy darted into the house, and returned in an instant with a short round hard wood club in his hand, and throwing himself in the same posturc, thrust his head under the skirts of his father's coat,

and crawled after him, between his legs, the two appearing like one long monstrous reptile. The hawk, observing this unusual motion, rose higher in the air, as he slowly sailed round the building; but Nicholas, not liking to be balked of his shot, fired at a venture, and fortunately broke his wing. Stop, daddy, said the boy, recovering his feet, stop, daddy, it's my turn now; and following the bird, that fled with inconceivable rapidity, like an ostrich, half running, half flying, threw his cock-shy at him with unerring aim, and killed him. Ain't he a whopper, daddy! said he. See! and he stretched out his wings to their full extent—he's a sneezer, ain't he? I'll show him to mammy, I guess, and off he ran to the house to exhibit his prize. —Make a smart man that, said Nick, regarding his boy, as he carried off the bird, with looks of entire satisfaction; make a considerable of a smart man that, if the assembly men would only give us a chance; but *I feel quite encouraged now*. I think we shall have a good brood of chickens this year, now that thievin' rascal has got his flint fixt; and if them three regiments come to Halifax that's talked of this winter, poultry will fetch a'most a grand price, that's sartain. It appears to me there's a hawk, or a wild cat, or a fox, or a lawyer, or a constable, or a somethin or another for everlastin'ly a botherin of a poor man; but *I feel quite encouraged now*.

I never seed that critter yet, said the Clockmaker, that he didn't say he felt 'quite encouraged;' he's always lookin for the Assembly to do great things for him, and every year feels 'quite encouraged' they will do sun'thin at the next session that will make his fortun. *I wonder if folks will ever larn that politicks are the seed mentioned in Scriptur' that fell by the road-side, and the fowls came and picked them up. They don't benefit the farmer, but they feed them hungry birds,—the party leaders.*

Gife. W. D. ... The bane of this country, squire, and indeed of all America, is havin' too much land; they run over more ground than they can cultivate, and crop the land so severely that they run it out. A very large portion of land in America has been run out by repeated grain crops, and when you add that to land naturally too poor to bear grain, or too broken for cultivation, you will find this great country in a fair way to be ruined.

The State of Vermont has nothin like the exports it used to have, and a plaguy sight of the young folks come down to Boston to hire out as helps. The two Carolinas and Varginia are covered with places that have been given up as ruined, and many other States. We hav'n't the surplus of wheat and grain we used to have in the U-nited States, and it never will be so plenty again. That's the reason you hear of folks clearin land, makin a farm, and sellin off again and goin farther into the bush. They've exhausted it, and find it easier to clear new lands than to restore the old.

A great deal of Nova Scotia is run out, and if it warn't for the lime, marsh-mud, sea-weed, salt-sand, and what not, they've got here in such quantities, there'd be no cure for it. It takes good farmin to keep an upland location in order, I tell you, and make it sustain itself. It takes more too to fetch a farm that's had the gizzard taken out of it, than it's worth. It actilly frightens me, when I think your agriculture in Britain is progressin, and the land better tilled every day, while thousands upon thousands of acres with us, are turned into barrens. No traveller as I've seed has noticed this, and our folks are not aware of it themselves to the extent of the evil. Squire, you and I won't live to see it; but if this awful robbin' of posterity goes on for another century as it has progressed for the last hundred years, we'll be a nation of paupers. Very little land in America, even of the best, will carry more than one crop of wheat arter it's clear'd afore it wants manure; and where it's clear'd so fast, where's the manure to come from?—it puzzles me (and I won't turn my back on any man in the farmin line)—the Lord knows, for I don't; but if there's a thing that scares me, it's this.

Hullo! hullo!—said a voice behind us, and when we turned to look from whence it came, we saw Nicholas running and leaping over the fences of his neighbours like a greyhound. Stop a minit, said he, I want to speak to you. I feel *quite encouraged* since I seen you; there's one question I forgot to ask you, Mr. Slick, for I should like amazin'ly to have your opinion. Who do you go for? I go for the Squire, said he; I'm agoin for to go round the sea-coast with him. I don't mean that at all, said he;—who do you go for in the election? There's to be a poll a Monday to Kentville; and Aylesford and Gasperaux are up; who do you go for? I don't go for either of'em; I wouldn't give a chaw of tobakey for both on'em: what is it to me who goes? Well, I don't suppose it is, but it's a great matter to us; who would you advise me to vote for? Who is agoin for to do the most good for you? Aylesford. Who promises the most? Aylesford. Vote for t'other one then, for I never seed or heard tell of a fellar yet, that was very ready with promises, that warn't quite as ready to break them when it suited his purpose; and if Aylesford comes abotherin of you, call out little Nick with his 'cock-shy,' and let him take a shot at him. Any critter that finds out all the world are rogues, and tells of the great things he's agoin for to do, ginerally overlooks the biggest rogue of all, and that's himself. Oh! Gasperaux for ever! he's the man for your money, and no mistake. Well, said Nicholas, I believe you're halfright. Aylesworth did promise a shillin a bushel bounty on potatoes tho', but I believe he lied after all. I'll take your advice,—*I feel quite encouraged now*. If you'd like a coal to light your cigar by, said he, I'll step in here and get you one. Thank you, said Mr. Slick; I have no occa-

sion for one gist now. Well, I believe I'll drop in and light a pipe there myself then, anyhow. Good-bye—*I feel quite encouraged now.*

Oh dear! said the Clockmaker, what a good-natered, good-for-nothin simple toad that is. I suppose when the sheriff takes the vote of such critters, he flatters himself he takes the sense of the county. What a difference atween him and Horton! The one is a lazy, idle critter, wanderin about talkin politics, or snarin rabbits, catchin eels, or shootin hawks, and neglectin his work, and a pretty kettle of fish he's made of it. The other, a careful, steadygoin, industrious man, that leaves politics to them as like dabblin in troubled waters, and attends steadily to his business, and he's a credit to his country.

Yes, too much land is the ruin of us all this side o' the water. Afore I went to England I used to think that the onequal divisions of property there, and the system of landlord and tenant, was a curse to the country, and that there was more dignity and freedom to the individual, and more benefit to the nation, for every man to own the land he cultivated, as with us. But I've changed my mind; I see it's the cause of the high state of cultivation in England, and the prosperity of its agriculture. If the great men had the land in their own hands there, every now and then an improvident one would skin the soil, and run it out; bein let to others he can't do it himself, and he takes plaguy good care by his lease his tenant shan't do it neither. Well then, there he is, with his capital to make great improvements, substantial repairs, and so on, and things are pushed up to perfection.

In Nova Scotia there are hundreds and thousands that would be better off as tenants, if they would but only think so. When a chap spends all his money in buying lands, and mortgages them to pay the rest of the price, he ain't able to stock his farm, and work it properly; and he labours like a nigger all his life, and dies poor at last, while the land gets run out in his hands, and is no good for ever after. Now if he was to hire the farm, the money that he paid for the purchase would stock it complete, enable him to hiro labor,—to wait for markets,—to buy up cattle cheap, and to sell them to advantage. He'd make money hand over hand, while he'd throw the cost of all repairs and improvements on the owner. But you might talk till you were grey-headed, and you wouldn't persuade folks of that in this country. The glorious privilege of having a vote, to give to some goney of a member, carries the day. Well may they call it a dear privilege that, for it keeps them poor to their dyin day. No, esquire, your system of ladlord and tenant is the best for the farmer, and the best for the nation. There never can be a high state of general cultivation without it. Agriculture wants the labour of the farmer and the money of the capitalist,—both must go hand in hand.

When it is left to the farmer alone, it must dwindle for want of means,—and the country must dwindle too. A nation, even if it is as big as our great one, if it has no general system of landlord and tenant adopted in it, must run out. We are ondergoin that process now. I'm most plaguy afeerd we shall run out; that's a fact. A country is but a large estate at best;—and if it is badly till'd and hard cropped, it must, in the end, present the melancholy spectacle of a great exhausted farm. That's *quite encouragin'* now, as Nick Bradshaw says,—ain't it?

CHAPTER XXXVIII.

TRAVELLING IN AMERICA.

DID you ever drink any Thames water, squire? said the Clock-maker; because it is one of the greatest nateral curiosities in the world. When I returned from Poland, in the hair spekelation, I sailed from London, and we had Thames water on board. Says I to the captain, says I, I guess you want to pyson us, don't you, with that are nasty, dirty, horrid stuff? how can you think o' takin such water as that? Why, says he, Mr. Slick, it does make the best water in the world—that's a fact; yes, and the best porter too;—it farments, works off the scum, clarifies itself, and beats all natur';—and yet look at all them are sewers, and drains, and dye stuffs, and factory-wash, and onmentionables that are poured into it;—it beats the bugs, don't it? Well, squire, our great country is like that are Thames water,—it does receive the outporins of the world,—homicides and regicides,—jail birds and galley-birds,—poorhouse chaps and workhouse chaps,—rebels, infidels, and forgers,—rogues of all sorts, sizes, and degrees,—but it farments, you see, and works clear; and what a'most a beautiful clear stream o' democracy it does make,—don't it? Not hot enough for fog, nor cold enough for ice, nor limex enough to fur up the bylers, nor too hard to wash clean, nor raw enough to chop the skin,—but gist the thing; that's a fact. I wish to gracious you'd come and see for yourself. I'd go with you and cost you nothin. I'd take a prospectus of a new work and get subscribers; take a pattern book of the Lowell factories for orders; and spikilate a little by the way, so as to clear my shot wherever we went.

You must see for yourself,—you can't larn nothin from books. I've read all the travels in America, and there ain't one that's worth a cent. They don't understand us. They remind me of a lawyer examinin of a witness; he don't want either the truth, the whole truth, or nothin but the truth, but he wants to pick out of him

George W. W.
Jaw
(Shore) Pa.
yul
+ Minn

gist so much as will prove his case, d'yo see, and would like him to keep dark about the rest; puts artful questions to him on purpose to get an answer to suit him; stops him when he talks too fast, leads him when he goes too slow, praises his own witnesses sky high, and abuses the other side for lyin, equivocatin, parjured villains. That's gist the case with English travellers; instead of lookin all round and seein into things first, and then comin to an opinion, they make up their minds afore they come, and then look for facts to support their views. First comes a great high tory, and a republic smells so bad in his nostrils, he's got his nose curl'd up like a pug-nose dog all thro' his journey. He sees no established church, and swears there's no religion; and he sees no livery helps, and he says it's all vulgar; and if he sees a citizen spit, he jumps a one side as scared as if it were a rifle agoin off. Then comes a radical (and them English radicals are cantankerous-lookin critters—that's a fact),—as sour as vinegar, and lookin as cross and as hungry as a bear gist starved out in the spring, and *they* say we have the slavery of opinion here; that our preachers want moral courage, and that our great cities are cursed with the aristocracy of wealth. There is no pleasin either on 'em. Then come what minister used to call the Optimists, a set of folks who talk you deaf about the perfectibility of human natur'; that men, like caterpillars, will all turn into beautiful critters with wings like butterflies,—a sort of grub angels;—that our great nation is a paradise, and our folks gist agettin' out o' the chrysolis state into somethin divine.

I seldom or never talk to none o' them, unless it be to bam 'em. They think they know everything, and all they got to do is, to up Hudson like a shot, into the lakes full split, off to Mississippi and down to New Orleans full chisel, back to New York and up Killock, and home in a liner, and write a book. They have a whole stock of notes. Spittin—gougin,—lynchin,—burnin alive,—steam boats blowed up,—snags,—slavery,—stealin,—Texas,—state prisons,—men talk slow,—women talk loud,—both walk fast,—chat in steam-boats and stage coaches,—anecdotes,—and so on. Then out comes a book. If it's a tory writes it, then the tory papers say it's the best pictur' they have seen;—lively, interestin, intelligent. If a radical, then radical papers says it's a very philosophical work (whenever a foller gets over his head in it, and cruel unintelligible, he's deep in philosophy, that chap), statesmanlike view, able work, throws great light on the politics of the day. I wouldn't give a chaw of tobackey for the books of all o' 'em tied up and put into a meal-bag together.

Our folks sarve 'em as the Endgians used to sarve the gulls down to Squantum in old pilgrim times. The cunnin critters used to make a sort o' fish flakes, and catch herrin and tom cods, and such sort o'

fish, and put 'em on the flakes, and then crawl under themselves, and as soon as the gulls lighted to eat the fish, catch hold o' their legs and pull 'em thro'. Arter that, whenever a feller was made a fool on and took in, they used to say he was gulled. Well, if our folks don't gull them British travellers, its a pity. They do make proper fools on 'em; that's a fact.

Year afore last, I met an English gall atravellin in a steam-boat; she had a French name that I can't recollect, tho' I got it on the tip o' my tongue too; you know who I mean—she wrote books on economy,—not domestic economy, as galls ought, but on political economy, as galls oughtn't for they don't know nothin about it. She had a trumpet in her hand,—thinks I, who on airth is she agoin to hail, or is she agoin to try echoes on the river? I watched her for some time, and I found it was an ear trumpet.

Well, well, says I, that's onlike most English travellers any way, for in a general way they wear magnifying glasses, and do enlarge things so, a body don't know 'em ag'in when he sees 'em. Now, this gall won't hear one half that's said, and will get that half wrong, and so it turned out. Says she to me, Beautiful country this, Mr. Slick; says she, I'm transported. Transported, said I, why, what onder the sun did you do to home to get transported?—but she larfed right out like any thing; delighted. I mean, said she, it's so beautiful. It is splendid, said I, no doubt; there ain't the beat of it to be found anywhere. Oh! said she, what views, what scenery, what woods, what a river! how I should like to soær away up with that are eagle into the blue sky, and see all its beauties spread out afore me like a map! How grand—every thing is on a grand scale! Have you seen the Kentuckians? said I. Not yet, said she. Stop then, said I, till you see *them*. They *are* on a scale that will please you, I guess; whopping big fellows them, I tell you; half horse, half alligator, with a touch of the airthquake. I wasn't atalkin of the men, said she, 'tis the beauties of natur' I was admirin. Well, said I, once on a time I used to admire the beauties of natur too, but I got cured of that. Sit down on this bench, said she, and tell me how it was;—these kind o' anecdotes serve to illustrate the 'moral of feelin.' Thinks I, this is philosophy now, 'moral of feelin!' Well, if the moschettoes don't illustrate your moral of feelin for you, some of these nights, I'm mistaken. Very immoral fellows those 'skeeters.

Well, said I, my first tower in the clock trade was up Canada way, and I was the first ever went up Huron with clocks. When I reached our fort, at Gratiot, who did I find there as commander of the party, but the son of an old American hero, a sargeant at Bunker's Hill. Well, bein the son of an old veteran hero myself, it made quite a fellowship atween us, like. He bought a clock o' me,

and invited me to stay with him till a vessel arrived for Michigan. Well, in the afternoon, we went for to take tea with a gentleman that had settled near the fort, and things were sot out in an arbor, surrounded with honeysuckle, and Isabella grape, and what not; there was a view of the fort from it, and that elegant lake and endless forest; it was lovely—that's a fact; and the birds flocked round the place, lighted on it, and sung so sweet,—I thought it was the most romantic thing I ever seed since I was a created sinner. So said I to his wife (a German lady from one of the emigrant ships), I prefer, said I, your band of birds to the Bowery band of New York, by a long chalk; it's natur's music, it's most delightful, it's splendid! Furder off, said she, I like 'em more better hash nearer; for the nasty, dirty tivils they dirt in the tay and de shuker; look there, said she, that's de tird cup now spilte. Lord, it make me sick! I never had any romance in me arter that.

Here the English gall turned round and looked at me for a space quite hard. Said she, you are a humorous people, Mr. Slick; you resemble the Irish very much,—you remind me greatly of that lively, light-hearted, agreeable people. Thank you, said I, marm, for that compliment; we are generally thought to resemble each other very much, both in looks and dress; there's often great mistakes made when they first land from the likeness.

Arter a considerable of a pause, she said, This must be a religious country, said she, ain't it? for religion is the 'highest fact in man's right, and the root of all democracy.' If religion is the root of democracy, said I, it bears some strange fruit sometimes, as the man said of the pine tree the five gamblers were lynched up to at Vixburg. I'm glad to see, said she, you have no establishment—it's an incubus—a dead weight—a nightmare. I ain't able, said I; I cant afford it no how; and besides, said I, I can't get no one to have me. Them that I would have won't have me, and them that would have me, the devil wouldn't have, so I don't see as I'm like to be troubled with a nightmare for one while. I dont mean that, said she, laughin; I mean an Established Church. Oh! an Established Church, said I; now I understand; but when I hear ladies talk of establishments, I always think they have matrimony in their heads. The truth is, squire, I don't like to hear English people come out here, and abuse their church; they've got a church and throve under it, and a national character under it, for honor and upright dealin, such as no other people in Europe have: indeed, I could tell you of some folks who have to call their goods English to get them off in a foreign land at all. *The name sells 'em.* You may boast of this tree or that tree, and call 'em this dictionary name, and that new-fangled name, *but give me the tree that bears the best fruit, I say.*

A church must be paid, and the mode don't much signify; at any

rate, it ain't for them to abuse it, tho' other folks may choose to copy it, or let it alone, as it convenes them. Your people, said she, are in advance of the clergy; your ministers are half men, half women, with a touch of the noodle. You'd be better without 'em; their parochial visits do more harm than good. In that last remark, said I, I concur; for if there's a gall in their vicinity, with a good fortin, they'll snap her up at once; a feller has no chance with 'em. One 'on them did brother Eldad out of one hundred thousand dollars that way. I don't speak o' that, said she, rather short like; but they hav'n't moral courage. They are not bold shepherds, but timid sheep; they don't preach abolition, they don't meddle with public rights. As to that, said I, they don't think it right to hasten on the crisis, to preach up a servile war, to encourage the blacks to cut their masters' throats; they think it a dangerous subject any way; and besides, said I, they have scruples o' conscience if they ought to stir in it at all. These matters are state rights, or state wrongs, if you please, and our Northern States have no more right to interfere in 'em than they have to interfere in the affairs of any other independent sovereign state in Europe. So I don't blame ministers much for that, arter all,—so come now. In England, says I, you maintain that they ought not to meddle with public rights, and call 'em political priests, and all that sort o' thing, and here you abuse 'em for not meddlin with 'em; call 'em cowards, dumb dogs, slaves to public opinion, and what not. There's no pleasin some folks.

As to religion, says I, bein the 'root of democracy,' it's the root of monarchy too, and all governments, or ought to be; and there ain't that wide difference arter all atween the two countries some folks think on. Government here, both in theory and practice, resides with the people; and religion is under the care of the rael government. With you, government is in the executive, and religion is in the hands of the government there. Church and state are to a sartain extent connected therefore in both. The difference with us is, we don't prefer one and establish it, and don't render its support compulsory. Better, perhaps, if we did, for it burns pretty near out sometimes here, and has to be brought to by revivals and camp-meetings, and all sorts of excitements; and when it does come to, it don't give a steady clear light for some time, but spits and sputters and cracks like a candle that's got a drop o' water on the wick. It don't seem kinder rational, neither, that screamin and screechin, and hoopin and hollerin, like possess, and tumblin into faintins, and fits, and swoons, and what not.

I don't like preachin to the narves instead of the judgment—I recollect a lady once, tho', converted by preachin to her narves, that was an altered woman all the rest o' her days. How was that? said she: these stories illustrate the 'science of religion.' I like to hear

them. There was a lady, said I (and I thought I'd give her a story for her book), that tried to rule her husband a little tighter than was agreeable,—meddlin with things she didn't onderstand, and dictatin in matters of politics and religion, and every thing a'most. So one day her husband had got up considerably airy in the mornin, and went out and got a tailor, and brought him into his wife's bedroom afore she was out o' bed:—'Measure that woman,' said he, 'for a pair of breeches; she's detarmined to wear 'em, and I'm resolved folks shall know it,' and he shook the cow-skin over the tailor's head to show him he intended to be obeyed. It cured her,—she begged and prayed, and cried, and promised obedience to her husband. He spared her, but it effectuated a cure. Now that's what I call *preachin to the nerves*: Lord, how she would have kicked and squeeled if the tailor had a——. A very good story, said she, abowin and amovin a little, so as not to hear about the measurin,—a very good story indeed.

If you was to revarse that maxim o' yourn, said I, and say democracy is too often found at the root of religion, you'd be nearer the mark, I reckon. I knew a case once exactly in point. Do tell it to me, said she; it will illustrate 'the spirit of religion.' Yes, said I, and illustrate your book too, if you are awritin one, as most English travellers do. Our congregation, said I, at Slickville, contained most of the wealthy and respectable folk there, and a most powerful and united body it was. Well, there came a split once on the election of an Elder, and a body of the upper-crust folks separated and went off in a huff. Like most folks that separate in temper, they laid it all to conscience; found out all at once they had been adrift afore all their lives, and joined another church as different from ourn in creed as chalk is from cheese; and to shew their humility, hooked on to the poorest congregation in the place. Well, the minister was quite lifted up in the stirrups when he saw these folks gine him; and to shew his zeal for them the next Sunday, he looked up at the gallery to the niggers, and, said he, my brether'n, I beg you won't spit down any more on the aisle seats, for there be gentlemen there now. Gist turn your heads, my sable friends, and let go over your shoulders. Manners, my brothers, manners before backey. Well, the niggers seceded; they said it was an infringement on their rights, on their privileq of spittin, as freemen, where they liked, how they liked, and when they liked, and they quit in a body. 'Democracy,' said they, 'is the root of religion.'

Is that a fact? said she. No mistake, said I; I seed it myself; I know 'em all. Well, it's a curious fact, said she, and very illustrative. It illustrates the universality of spittin, and the universality of democracy. It's characteristic. I have no fear of a people where the right of spittin is held sacred from the interminable as-

*Chiefly from
the same*

saults of priestcraft. She laid down her trumpet, and took out her pocket-book, and began to write it down. She swallar'd it all. I have seen her book since, it's gist what I expected from her. The chapter on religion strikes at the root of all religion; and the effect of such doctrines are exhibited in the gross slander she has written ag'in her own sex in the States, from whom she received nothin but kindness and hospitality. I don't call that pretty at all; it's enough to drive hospitality out of the land.

I know what you allude to, said I, and fully concur with you in opinion, that it is a gross abominable slander, adopted on insufficient authority, and the more abominable from coming from a woman. Our church may be aristocratic; but if it is, it teaches good manners, and a regard for the decencies of life. Had she listened more to the regular clergy, and less to the modern illuminati, she might have learned a little of that charity which induces us to think well of others, and to speak ill of none. It certainly was a great outrage, and I am sorry that outrage was perpetrated by an English woman. I am proper glad you agree with me, squire, said he; but come and see for yourself, and I will explain matters to you; for without some one to let you into things you won't understand us. I'll take great pleasure in bein your guide, for I must say I like your conversation. —How singular this is! to the natural reserve of my country, I add an uncommon taciturnity; but this peculiar adaptation to listening has everywhere established for me that rare, but most desirable reputation, of being a good companion. It is evident, therefore, that listeners are everywhere more scarce than talkers, and are valued accordingly. Indeed, without them, what would become of the talkers?

Yes, I like your conversation, said the clockmaker (who, the reader must have observed, has had all the talk to himself). We are like the Chinese; they have two languages, the written language and the spoken language. Strangers only get as far as the spoken one; but all secret affairs of religion and government are sealed up in the written one; they can't make nothin of it. That's gist the case with us; we have two languages, one for strangers, and one for ourselves. A stranger must know this, or he's all adrift. We've got our own difficulties, our own doubts, our own troubles, as well as other folks,—it would be strange if we hadn't; but we don't choose to blart 'em all out to the world.

Look at our President's Message last year; he said, we was the most prosperous nation on the face of the airth, peace and plenty spread in over the land, and more wealth than we know'd how to spend. At that very time we was on the point of national bankruptcy. He said, the great fire at New York didn't cause one failure; good reason why, the goods were all owned at London and Lyons, and the failures took place there, and not here. Our President said on that oc-

casion, our maxim is, 'do no wrong, and suffer no insult.' Well, at that very time our ginerall was marchin into the Mexican territory, and our people off South, boarded Texas, and took it,—and our folks down North-east were ready to do the same neighbourly act to Canada, only waitin for Papineau to say, 'All ready.' He boasted we had no national debt, but a large surplus revenue in the public chest, and yet, add up the public debt of each separate state, and see what a whappin large one that makes. We don't intertain strangers, as the English do, with the troubles of our household and the bother our sarvants give us; we think it ain't hospitable, nor polished, nor even good manners; we keep that for the written language among ourselves. If you don't believe my word, go and ask the Britisher that was at Mr. Madison's court when the last war broke out—he was the only man to Washington that know'd nothing about it—he didn't understand the language. I guess you may go and pack up your duds and go home, said Mr. Madison to him one day, when he called there to the levee. Go home! said he, and he wrinkled up his forehead, and drew up his eyelids, as much as to say, I estimate you are mad, ain't you? Go home! said he. What for? Why, said he, I reckon we are at war. At war! said the Englishman; why, you don't say so? there can't be a word of truth in the report: my dispatches say nothin of it. Perhaps not, said the President, quite cool (only a slight twitch of his mouth showed how he would like to haw, haw, right out, only it warn't decent), perhaps not, but I presume I declared war yesterday, when you was engaged a playin of a game at chess with Mrs. Madison. Folks said they raelly pitied him, he looked so taken aback, so streaked, so completely dumb-founded. No, when I say you can't make *us* out, you always laugh; but it's true you can't without an interpreter. *We speak the English language and the American language; you must larn the American language, if you want to understand the American people.*

CHAPTER XXXIX.

ELECTIVE COUNCILS.

WHAT would be the effect, Mr. Slick, said I, of elective councils in this country, if government would consent to make the experiment? Why, that's a thing, said he, you can't do in your form o' government, tryin an experiment, tho' we can; you can't give the word of command, if it turns out a bunglin piece of business, that they use in militia trainin,—'as you were.' It's different with us—we can,—our government is a democracy,—all power is in the people at

large; we can go on, and change from one thing to another, and try any experiment we choose, as often as we like, *for all changes have the like result, of leavin the power in the same place and the same hands.* But you must know beforehand how it will work in your mixed government, and shouldn't make no change you ain't sure about. What good would an elective council be? It is thought it would give the upper branches, said I, more community of feeling, more sympathy, and more weight with the country at large; that being elected by the people, the people would have more confidence in them, and that more efficient and more suitable men would be chosen by the freeholders than by the crown. You would gist get the identical same sort o' critters, said he, in the eend, as the members of Assembly, if they were elected, and no better; they would be selected by the same judges of horseflesh as t'other, and chose out o' the same flock. It would be the same breed o' cattle at last. But, said I, you forget that it is proposed to raise the qualifications of the voters from forty shillings to forty pounds per year; whereby you would have a better class of electors, and insure a better selection. Gist you try it, said he, and there never would be an eend to the popular motions in the House of Assembly to extend the suffrages—for every *thing that gives power to numbers will carry numbers*, and be popular, and every feller who lived on excitement, would be for everlastinly a agitatin of it, Candidate, Slangwhanger, and Member. You'd have no peace, you'd be for ever on the move as our citizens are to New York, and they move into a new house every first o' May-day. If there be any good in that are Council at all, it is in their bein placed above popular excitement, and subject to no influence but that of reason, and the fitness of things: chaps that have a considerable stake in the country, and don't buy their seats by pledges and promises, pledges that half the time ruin the country if they are kept, and always ruin the man that breaks 'em. It's better as it is, in the hands of the government. It's a safety valve now, to let off the fume, and steam, and vapour, generated by the heat of the lower House. *If you make that branch elective you put government right into the gap, and all difference of opinion, instead of bein between the two branches as it is now (that is, in fact, between the people themselves), would then occur in all cases between the people and the governor.* Afore long that would either seal up the voice of the executive, so that they darn't call their souls their own, or make 'em onpopular, and whenever the executive once fairly gets into that are pickle, there's an eend of the colony, and a declaration of independence would soon foller. Papinor knows that, and that' the reason he's so hot for it,—he knows what it would lead to in the eend. That critter may want ginger, for ought I know; but he don't want for gumption you may depend. *Elective councils are inconsistent*

Dawson

with colonial dependance. It's takin away the crane that holds up the pot from the fire, to keep it from boilin over, and clappin it right on the hot coals: what a gallopin boil it would soon come into, wouldn't it? In all mixed governments like yourn, the true rule is never to interfere with popl'ar rights established. Amend what is wrong, concede what is right, and do what is just always; but *pre-sarve the balance of the constitution* for your life. One pound weight only taken off the executive, and put on t'other eend, is like a shift of the weight on a well-balanced plank till it won't play true no more, but keeps aslidin and aslidin down by leetle and leetle to the heaviest eend, till it all stays down to one side, and won't work no longer. It's a system of checks now, but when all the checks run together, and make only one weight, they'll do as our senate did once (for that ain't no check no more)—it actilly passed that cussed embargo law of Jefferson's that ruined our trade, rotted our shippin', and bankrupted the whole nation, arter it come up from the House of Representatives thro' all its three readins in four hours; I hope I may be skinned if it didn't. It did, I snore. That's the beauty of havin two bodies to look at things thro' only one spyglass, and blow bubbles thro' one pipe. There's no appeal, no redress, in that case, and what's more, when one party gives riders to both horses, they ride over you like wink, and tread you right under foot, as arbitrary as old Scratch himself. There's *no tyranny or airth equal to the tyranny of a majority*; you can't form no notion of it unless you seed it. Just see how they sarved them chaps to Baltimore last war, General Lingan and thirty other fellers that had the impudence to say they didnt approve of the doin's of the administration; they gist lynched 'em and stoned 'em to death like dogs.

We find among us *the greatest democrats are the greatest tyrants.* No, squire; repair, amend, enlarge, ventilate, modernize a little too, if you like, your structure; put new roof, new porch, winders, and doors, fresh paint and shingle it, make it more attractive and pleasanter to inhabit, and of course it will be more valuable;—but do you leave the foundation alone—don't you meddle with the frame, the braces, and girts for your life, or it will spread, *bilge* out, leak like the divil, and come to pieces some o' these stormy nights about your ears as sure as you are born. *Make no organic changes.* There are quacks in politics, squire, as well as in med'cine,—critters who have unevarsal pills to cure all sorts o' diseases; and many's the constitution, human and politic, they've fixt atween them. There's no knowin the gripes and pains and cholicks they've caused; and the worst of it is, the poor devils that get in their hands, when they are on the broad of their backs, can't help themselves, but turn up the whites of their eyes, and say, Oh dear! I'm very bad: how will it go? Go, says they; why, like a house afire—full split,—goin

on grandly,—could'nt do no better,—gist what was expected. *You'll have a new constitution*, strong as a lion: oh! goin on grandly. Well, I don't know, says the misfortunate critter; but I feels a plaguy sight more like goin *off* than goin *on*, I tell *you*. Then comes apickin o' the bed-clothes, a clammy sweat, cold feet, the hiccup, rattles, and death. Sarve him right, says quack; the cussed fool has had doctors too long about him in former days, and they sapped his constitution, and fixt his flint for him: why didn't he call me in sooner? The consaited ass thought he knowed everything, and didn't foller out all *my* prescriptions;—one comfort, though—his estate shall pay for it, I vow. Yes, squire, and that is the pity, win or lose, live or die, the estate does pay for it—that's a fact; and what's worsen, too, many on 'em care more about dividin the spoil than effectin the cure, by a long chalk.

There's always some jugglery or quackery agoin on every-where a'most. It puts me in mind of the Wilmot springs.—One of the greatest flams I ever heerd tell of in this province, was brought out hereabouts in Wilmot, and succeeded for a space beyond all calculation. Our sea sarpant was no touch to it,—and that was a grand steam-boat spekilation too, for a nation sight of folks went from Boston down to Providence and back ag'in, on purpose to see the sarpant in the boat that first spoke it out to sea. But then they were all pleasurin partjes, young folks takin a trip by water, instead of a quitin frolic to shore. It gave the galls something to talk about and to do, to strain their little eyes through the captain's great big spy-glass to see their nateral enemy, the sarpant; and you may depend they had all the cur'osity of old Marm Eve too. It was all young hearts and young eyes, and pretty ones they were, I tell *you*. But this here Wilmot wonder was a sort of funeral affair, an old and ugly assortment, a kind of Irish wake, part dead and part alive, where one half groaned with sorrow and pain, and t'other half groaned to keep 'em company,—a rael, right down, genuine hysteric frolic, near about as much cryin as laughin—it beat all natur. I believe they actilly did good in sartain cases, in proper doses with proper diet; and at some future day, in more knowin hands, they will come into vogue ag'in, and make a good spekilation but I have always obsarved when an article is once run down, and folks find out that it has got more puffin than it desarnes, they don't give it no credit at all, and it is a long time afore it comes round ag'in. The Wilmot springs are situated on the right there, away up onder that mountain a-head on us. They sartainly did make a wonderful great noise three years ago. If the pool of Saloom had been there, it couldn't a' had a greater crowd o' clowns about it. The lame and maimed, the consumptive and dropsical, the cancerous and leprous, the old drunkard and the young rake, the barren

wife and sick maid, the larfin catholic and sour sectary, high and low, rich and poor, black and white, fools of all ages, sizes, and degrees, were assembled there adrinkin, bathin, and awashin in the waters, and carryin off the mud for poultrices and plaisters. It killed some, and cured some, and fool'd a nation sight of folks. Down at the mouth of the spring, where it discharges into a stream, there is a soft bottom, and there you'd see a feller standin with one leg stuck in the mud; another lyin on a plank, with an arm shoved into the ooze up to the shoulder; a third asittin down, with a mask o' mould like a gypsum cast on his head; others with naked feet spotted all over with the clay to cure corns; and these grouped ag'in *here* with an unfortunate feller with a stiff arm, who could only thrust in his elbow; and *there* with another sittin on a chair adanglin his feet in the mire to cure the rheumatis; while a third, sunk up to his ribs, had a man apourin water on his head for an eruption, as a gard'ner waters a transplanted cabbage-plant, all declarin they felt better, and wonderin it had'nt been found out afore. It was horrid, I tell you, to see folks makin such fools of themselves.

If that are spring had belonged to an American citizen, that had made such an everlastin touss about it, folks would have said they calkelated it was a Yankee trick; as it was, they set each other on, and every critter that came home from it sent a dozen neighbours off,—so none on 'em could larf at'each other. The road was actilly covered with people. I saw one old goney, seventy years of age, stuck in a gig atween two mattrasses, like a carcase of mutton atween two bales of wool in a countryman's cart. The old fool was agoin to be made young, and to be married when he returned to home. Folks believed everything they heerd of it. They actilly swallowed a story that a British officer that had a cork leg bathed there, and the flesh growed on it, so that no soul could tell the difference atween it and the nateral one. They believed the age of miracles had come; so a feller took a dead pig and throw'd it in, sayin who know'd as it cured the half dead, that it wouldn't go the whole hog. That joke fixt the Wilmot springs: it turned the larf against 'em; and it was lucky it did, for they were findin springs gist like 'em everywhere. Every pool the pigs had ryled was tasted, and if it was too bad for the stomach, it was pronounced medicinal. The nearest doctor wrote an account of it for the newspapers, and said it had sulphur and salt-petre in it, and that the mud when dried would make good powder, quite good enough to blow gypsum and shoot us Yankees. At last they exploded spontaneous, the sulphur, saltpetre, and burnt brans went off themselves, and nothin has ever been since heerd of the Wilmot springs.

It's pretty much the case in politics; folks have always some bubble or another,—some elective council,—private ballot,—short parlia-

ments,—or some pill or another to cure all political evils in natur'; with quacks enough to cry em up, and interested quacks also, who make their ned out of 'em, afore people get tired of them and their pills too. There was a time when there was too many public officers in your council here, but they've died off, or moved off, and too many of 'em lived to Halifax, and too few of 'em in the country, and folks thought a new deal would give 'em more fair play. Well, they've got a new deal now, and new cards. So far so good. A change of men is no great matter—natur' is a changin of 'em all the time if government don't. But the constitution is another thing. You can't take out the vitals and put in new ones, as you can in a watch-case, with any great chance of success, as ever I heerd tell of. I've seen some most beautiful operations performed, too, by brother Eldad, where the patients lived thro' 'em,—and he got a plaguy sight of credit for 'em,—but they all died a few days afterwards. Why, 'Dad, says I, what in natur' is the good o' them are operations, and puttin the poor critters to all that pain and misery, and their estate to so much expense, if it don't do 'em no good?—for it seems to me they all *do* go for it; that's sartain.

Well, it was a dreadful pretty operation tho', Sam, warn't it? he'd say; but the critter was desperate sick and peeowerfully weak; I raelly was e'en a'most afeerd I shouldn't carry him thro' it. But what's the use on it at last, when it kills 'em? said I; for you see they do slip thro' your fingers in the eend. A feller, says he, Sam, that's considerable slippery all his life, may be a little slippery towards the eend on't, and there is no help for it, as I see;—but, Sam, said he, with a jupe o' the head, and a wink quite knowin, you ain't up to snuff yet, I see. *It don't kill 'em if they don't die under the knife; if you can carry 'em thro' the operation, and they die next day, they always die of sun'thin else,* and the doctor is a made man for ever and a day arterwards too. Do you apprehend now, my boy? Yes, says I, I apprehend there are tricks in other trades, as well as the clock trade; only some on 'em ain't quite so innocent, and there's some I wouldn't like to play, I know. No, said he, I suppose not; and then, haw-hawin right out—how soft we are, Sam, ain't we? said he.

Yes, presarve the principle of the mechanism of your constitution, for it ain't a bad one, and presarve the balances, and the rest you can improve on without endangerin the whole engin. One thing too is sartain,—*a power imprudently given to the executive, or to the people, is seldom or never got back.* I ain't been to England since your Reform Bill passed, but some folks do say it works complete, that it goes as easy as a loaded waggon down hill, full chisel. Now suppose that bill was found to be alterin of the balances, so that the constitution couldn't work many years longer, without acomin to a

dead stand, could you repeal it? and say as 'you were?' Let a bird out o' your hand and try to catch it agin, will you? *No, squire, said the Clockmaker, you have laws areglatin of quack doctors, but none areglatin of quack politicians: now a quack doctor is bad enough, and dangerous enough, gracious knows, but a quack politician is a devil outlarwed,—that's a fact.*

CHAPTER XL.

SLAVERY.

THE road from Kentville to Wilmot passes over an extensive and dreary sand plain equally fatiguing to man and horse, and after three hours' hard dragging on this heavy road, we look'd out anxiously for an inn to rest and refresh our gallant 'Clay.'

There it is, said Mr. Slick; you'll know it by that high post, on which they have jibitted one of their governors ahorseback as a sign. The first night I stopt there, I vow I couldn't sleep a wink for the creakin of it, as it swung backwards and forwards in the wind. It sounded so nateral like, that I couldn't help thinkin it was a rael man hung in chains there. It put me in mind of the slave to Charleston, that was strung up for pysonin his master and mistress. When we drove up to the door, a black man came out of the stable, and took the horse by the head in a listless and reluctant manner, but his attention was shortly awakened by the animal, whom he soon began to examine attentively. Him don't look like blue nose, said blacky,—sartin him stranger. Fine critter, dat, by gosh,—no mistake.

From the horse his eye wandered to us; when, slowly quitting his hold of the bridlo, and stretching out his head, and stepping anxiously and cautiously round to where the Clockmaker was standing, he suddenly pulled off his hat, and throwing it up in the air, uttered one of the most piercing yells I think I ever heard, and throwing himself upon the ground, seized Mr. Slick round the legs with his arms. Oh, Massa Sammy! Massa Sammy! Oh, my Gor!—only think old Scippy see you once more? How you do, Massa Sammy? Gor Ormighty bless you! How you do? Why, who on airth are *you*? said the Clockmaker; what onder the sun do you mean by actin so like a ravin distracted fool? Get up this minnit, and let me see who you be, or I'll give you a slockdologer in the ear with my foot, as sure as you are born. Who be *you*, you nigger you? Oh Massa Sain, you no recollect Old Scip,—Massa 'Siah's nigger boy? How's Massa Sy, and Missey Sy, and all our children, and all our folks to our house

to home? De dear little lily, de sweet little booty, de little missy baby. Oh, how I do lub 'em all!

In this manner the creature ran on, incoherently asking questions, sobbing, and blaming himself for having left so good a master, and so comfortable a home. How is dat black villain, dat Cato? he continued;—Massa no hang him yet. He is sold, said Mr. Slick, and has gone to New Orleans, I guess. Oh, I grad, upon my soul, I very grad; then he catch it, de dam black nigger—it sarve him right. I hope dey cowskin him well—I grad of dat,—oh Gor! dat is good. I think I see him, da ugly brute. I hope dey lay it into him well, damn *him!* I guess you'd better onharness Old Clay, and not leave him standin all day in the sun, said Mr. Slick. O goody gracy, yes, said the overjoyed negro, dat-I will, and rub him down too till him all dry as bone,—debil a wet hair left. Oh, only think, Massa Sammy Slick,—Massa Sammy Slick,—Scip see you again!

The Clockmaker accompanied him to the stable, and there gratified the curiosity of the affectionate creature by answering all his inquiries after his master's family, and the state of the plantation and the slaves. It appears that he had been inveigled away by the mate of a Boston vessel that was loading at his master's estate; and notwithstanding all the sweets attending a state of liberty, was unhappy under the influence of a cold climate, hard labour, and the absence of all that real sympathy, which, notwithstanding the rod of the master, exists nowhere but where there is a community of interests. He entreated Mr. Slick to take him into his employment, and vowed eternal fidelity to him and his family if he would receive him as a servant, and procure his manumission from his master.

This arrangement having been effected to the satisfaction of both parties, we proceeded on our journey, leaving the poor negro happy in the assurance that he would be sent to Slickville in the autumn. I feel provoked with that black rascal, said Mr. Slick, for bein such a horn fool as to run away from so good a master as Josiah, for he is as kind-hearted a critter as ever lived,—that's a fact,—and a plaguy easy man to his niggers. I used to tell him, I guessed he was the only slave on his plantation, for he had to see arter everythin; he had a dreadful sight more to do than they had. It was all work and no play with *him*. You forget, said I, that his labour was voluntary and for his own benefit, while that of the negro is compulsory, and productive of no advantage to himself. What do you think of the abolition of slavery in the United States? said I: the interest of the subject appears to have increased very much of late. Well, I don't know, said he,—what is your opinion? I ask, I replied, for information. It's a considerable of a snarl, that question, said he; I don't know as I ever onraveled it altogether, and I ain't gist quite sartain I can—it's not so easy as it looks. I recollect the English

gall I met atravellin in the steamboat, axed me that same question. What do you think of slavery, said she, sir? Slavery marm, said I, is only fit for *white lovers* (and I made the old lady a scrapo of the leg),—only fit said I, for *white lovers* and *black niggers*. What an idea, said she, for a free man in a land of freedom to utter! How that dreadful political evil demoralizes a people! how it deadens our feelins how it hardens the heart! Have you no pity for the *blacks*? said she; for you treat the subject with as much levity as if, to use one of the elegant and fashionable phrases of this country, you thought it all '*in my eye*.' No, marm, said I, with a very grave face, I hav'n't no pity at all for 'em, not the least mite nor morsel in the world. How dreadful, said she and she looked ready to expire with sentiment. No feelin at all, said I, marm, for the *blacks*, but a great deal of feelin for the *whites*, for instead of bein all in *my eye*, it's all in *my nose*, to have them nasty, horrid, flagrant critters agoin thro' the house like scent bottles with the stoppers out, apar-fumin of it up, like skunks,—it's dreadful! Oh! said I, it's enough to kill the poor critters. Phew! it makes me sick, it does. No; I keeps my pity for the poor whites, for they have the worst of it by a long chalk.

The constant contemplation of this painful subject, said she, destroys the vision, and its deformities are divested of their horrors by their occurring so often as to become familiar. That, I said, Miss, is a just observation, and a profound and a 'cute one too—it is actilly founded in natur.' I know a case in p'int, I said. What is it? said she, for she seemed mighty fond of anecdotes (she wanted 'em for her book, I guess, for travels without anecdotes is like a puddin without plums—all dough). Why, said I, marm, father had an English cow, a pet cow too, and a beautiful critter she was, a brindled short-horn; he gave the matter of eighty dollars for her;—she was begot by—. Never mind her pedigree, said she. Well, says I, when the great eclipse was (you've heerd tell how it frightens cattle, hav'n't you?) brindle stared and stared at it so,—she lost her eyesight, and she was as blind as a bat ever afterwards. I hope I may be shot if she warn't. Now, I guess, we that see more of slavery than you do, are like brindle; we have stared at it so long we can't see it as other folks do. You are a droll man, said she, very droll; but seriously, now, Mr. Slick, do you not think these unfortunate fellow-critters, our sable brothers, if emancipated, educated, and civilized, are capable of as much refinement and as high a degree of polish as the whites? Well, said I, joking apart, miss,—there's no doubt on it. I've been considerable down South atradin among the whites,—and a kind-hearted, hospitable, liberal race o' men they be, as ever I was among—generous, frank, manly folks. Well, I seed a good deal of the—niggers too: it couldn't be otherwise.

I must say your conclusion is a just one,—I could give you several instances; but there is one in pitickelar that settles the question; I seed it myself with my own eyes to Charleston, South Car. Now, said she, that's what I like to hear; give me facts, said she, for I am no visionary, Mr. Slick; I don't build up a theory, and then go alookin for facts to support it; but gather facts candidly and impartially, and then coolly and logically draw the inferences. Now tell me this instance which you think conclusive, for nothin interests us English so much as what don't consarn us; our West Indgy emancipation has worked so well, and improved our islands so much, we are enchanted with the very word emancipation; it has a charm for English ears, beyond anything you can conceive.—*Them islands will have spontaneous production afore long.* But the refinement and polish of these interestin critters the blacks,—your story if you please, sir.

I have a younger brother, miss, said I, that lives down to Charleston;—he's a lawyer by trade—Squire Josiah Slick; he is a considerable of a literary character. He's well known in the great world as the author of the Historical, Statistical, and Topographical account of Cuttyhunk, in five volumes; a work that has raised the reputation of American genius among foreign nations amazin, I assure you. He's quite a self-taught author too. I'll give you a letter of introduction to him. Me! said she, adrawin up her neck like a swan. You needn't look so scared, said I, marm, for he is a married man, and has one white wife and four white children, fourteen black concu—
—I wanted to hear, sir, said she, quite snappishly, of the negroes, and not of your brother and his domestic arrangements. Well, marm, said I; one day there was a dinner-party to Josiah's, and he made the same remark you did, and instanced the rich black merchant of Philadelphia, which position was contradicted by some other gentleman there; so 'Siah offered to bet one thousand dollars he could produce ten black gentlemen, who should be allowed, by good judges, to be more polished than any like number of whites that could be selected in the town of Charleston. Well, the bet was taken, the money staked, and a note made of the tarms.

Next day at ten o'clock, the time fixed, Josiah had his ten niggers nicely dressed, paraded out in the streets afacin of the sun, and brought his friends and the umpires to decide the bet. Well, when they got near 'em, they put their hands to their eyes and looked down to the ground, and the tears ran down their cheeks like anything. Whose cheeks? said she; blacks or whites? this is very interestin. Oh, the whites to be sure, said I. Then, said she, I will record that mark of feelin with great pleasure—I'll let the world know it. It does honour to their heads and hearts. But not to their eyes, tho', said I: they swore they couldn't see a bit. What the devil have you

got there, Slick? says they; it has put our eyes out: damn them, how they shine! they look like black japanned tea-trays in the sun—it's blinding—it's the devil, that's a fact. Are you satisfied? said 'Sy. Satisfied of what? says they; satisfied with bein as blind as buzzards, eh? Satisfied of the high polish niggers are capable of, said Josiah: why shouldn't nigger hide, with lots of Day and Martin's blackin on it, take as good a polish as cow hide, eh? Oh lord! if you'd aheerd what a roar of larfter there was, for all Charleston', was there a' most; what a hurrain and shoutin: it was grand fun. I went up and shook hands with Josiah, for I always liked a joke from a boy. Well done, 'Sy, says I; you've put the leake into 'em this hitch rael complete; it's grand! But says he, don't look so pleased, Sam; they are cussed vexed, and if we crow I'll have to fight every one on 'em, that's sartain, for they are plaguy touchy them Southerners; fight for nothin a 'most. But, Sam, said he, Connecticut ain't a bad school for a boy arter all, is it? I could tell you fifty such stories miss, says I. She drew up rather stately. Thank you, sir, said she, that will do; I am not sure whether it is a joke of your brother's, or a hoax of yourn, but whosever it is, it has more practical wit than feelin in it.

The truth is, said the Clockmaker, nothin raises my dander more, than to hear English folks and our Eastern citizens atalkin about this subject that they don't onderstand, and have nothin to do with. If such critters will go down South ameddlin with things that don't consarn 'em, they deserve what they catch. I don't mean to say I approve of lynchin, because that's horrid; but when a feller gets himself kicked, or his nose pulled, and larns how the cowskin feels, I don't pity him one morsel. Our folks won't bear tamperin with, as you Colonists do; we won't stand no nonsense. The subject is gist a complete snarl; it's all tangled, and twisted, and knotted so, old Nick himself wouldn't unravel it. What with private rights, public rights, and state rights, feelin, expediency, and public safety, it's a considerable of a tough subject. The truth is, I ain't master of it myself. I'm no book man, I never was to college, and my time has been mostly spent in the clocktrade and tooth business, and all I know is just a little I've picked up by the way. The tooth business, I said; what is that? do you mean to say you are a dentist? No, said he, laughing; the tooth business is pickin up experience. Whenever a feller is considerable 'cute with us, we say he has cut his eye teeth, he's tolerable sharp; and the study of this I call the tooth business. Now I ain't able to lay it all down what I think as plain as brother Josiah can, but I have an idea there's a good deal in name, and that slavery is a word that frightens more than it hurts. It's some o' the branches or grafts of slavery that want cuttin off. Take away corporal punishment from the masters and give it to the law, forbid separatin families and the right to compel marriage and other connections, and

you leave slavery nothin more than sarvitude in name, and some-
thin quite as good in fact.

Every critter must work in this world, and a labourer is a slave; but the labourer only gets enough to live on from day to day, while the slave is tended in infancy, sickness, and old age, and has spare time enough given him to airn a good deal too. A married woman, if you come to that, is a slave, call her what you will, wife, woman, angel, termegant, or devil, she's a slave; and if she happens to get the upper hand, the husband is a slave, and if he don't lead a worse life than any black nigger, when he's under petticoat government, then my name is not Sam Slick. I'm no advocate of slavery, squire, nor are any of our folks; it's bad for the niggers, worse for the masters, and a cuss to any country; but we have got it, and the question is, what are we to do with it? Let them answer that know.—I don't pretend to be able to.

The subject was a disagreeable one, but it was a striking peculiarity of the Clockmaker's, that he never dwelt long upon anything that was not a subject of national boast; he therefore very dexterously shifted both the subject and the scene of it to England, so as to furnish himself with a retort, of which he was at all times exceedingly fond. I have heard tell, said he, that you British have 'man-cipated your niggers. Yes, said I, thank God! slavery exists not in the British empire. Well, I take some credit to myself for that, said the Clockmaker; it was me that sot that agoin any way. You! said I, with the most unfeigned astonishment;—*you!* how could *you*, by any possibility, be instrumental in that great national act? Well, I'll tell you, said he, tho' it's a considerable of a long story too. When I returned from Poland, via London, in the hair speckelation of Jabish Green, I went down to Sheffield to execute a commission; I had to bribe some Master Workmen to go out to America, and if I didn't fix 'em it's a pity. The critters wouldn't go at no rate, without the most extravagant onreasonable wages, that no business could afford no how. Well, there was nothin to be done but to agree to it; but things worked right in the long run: our folks soon larnt the business, and then they had to work for half nothin, or starve. It don't do to drive too hard a bargain always.

When I was down there a gentleman called on me one arternoon, one John Canter by name, and says he, Mr. Slick, I've called to see you, to make some enquiries about America; me and my friends think of emigratin there. Happy, says I, to give you any information in my power, sir, and a sociable dish o' chat is what I must say I do like most amazin,—it's kind o' nateral to me talkin is. So we sot down and chatted away about our great nation all the arternoon and evenin, and him and me got as thick as two thieves afore we parted.—If you will be to home to-morrow evenin, says he, I will

call again, if you will give me leave. Sartain, says I, most happy.

Well, next evenin he came ag'in; and in the course of talk, says he, I was born a quaker, Mr. Slick. Plenty of 'em with us, says I, and well to do in the world too,—considerable stiff folks in their way them quakers—you can't no more move 'em than a church steeple. I like the quakers too, says I, for there are worse folks than them agoin in the world by a long chalk. Well, lately I've dissented from 'em, says he.—Curious that too, says I. I was athinkin' the beaver didn't shade the inner man quite as much as I have seed it; but, says I, I like dissent; it shows a man has both a mind and a conscience too; if he hadn't a mind he couldn't dissent, and if he had'n't a conscience he wouldn't; a man therefore, who quits his church, always stands a notch higher with me than a stupid obstinate critter that sticks to it 'cause he was born and brought up in it, and his father belonged to it—there's no sense in that. A quaker is a very set man in his way; a dissenter therefore from a quaker must be what I call a considerable of a—obstinate man, says he, larfin. No, says I, not gist exactly that, but he must carry a pretty tolerable stiff upper lip, tho'—that's a fact.

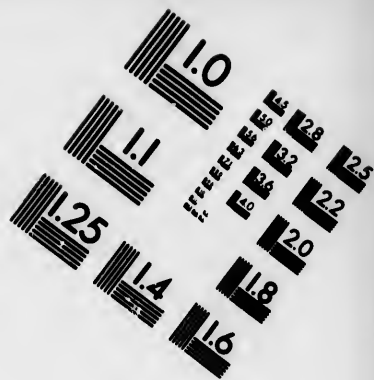
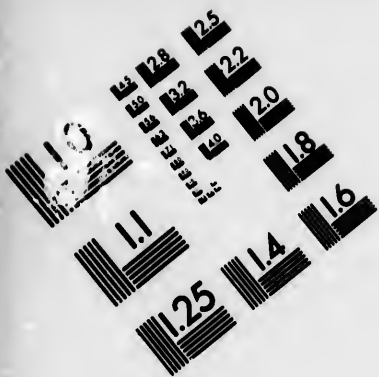
Well, says he, Mr. Slick, this country is an aristocratic country a very aristocratic country indeed, and it tante easy for a man to push himself when he has no great friends or family interest; and besides, if a man has some little talent—says he, (and he squeezed his chin between his forefinger and thumb, as much as to say, tho' I say it that shouldn't say it, I have a very tolerable share of it at any rate,) he has no opportunity of risin by bringin himself afore the public. Every avenue is filled. A man has no chance to come forward,—money won't do it, for that I have,—talent won't do it, for the opportunity is wantin. I believe I'll go to the States where all men are equal, and one has neither the trouble of risin nor the vexation of failin. Then you'd like to come forward in public life here, would you, said I, if you had a chance? I would, says he; that's the truth. Give me your hand then, says I, my friend, I've got an idea that it will make your fortin. I'll put you in a track that will make a man of you first, and a nobleman afterwards, as sure as *thou* says *thee*. *Walk into the niggers, says I, and they'll help you to walk into the whites, and they'll make you walk into parliament.* Walk into the niggers! said he; and he sot and stared liked a cat awatchin of a mouse-hole;—walk into the niggers!—what's that? I don't onderstand you.—Take up 'mancipation, says I, and work it up till it works you up; call meetins and make speeches to 'em, get up societies and make reports to 'em;—get up petitions to Parliament and get signers to 'em. Enlist the women on your side, of all ages, sects, and denominations. Excite 'em first tho', for women folks are poor tools till you get 'em up; but excite them, and they'll go the whole figur',—wake up the whole country. It's a grand subject for it,—broken-hearted slaves

killin themselves in despair or dyin a lingerin death,—task-master's whip acuttin into their flesh,—burnin suns,—days o' toil—nights o' grief—pestilential rice—grounds—chains—starvation—misery and death,—grand figur's them for oratory, and make splendid speeches, if well put together.

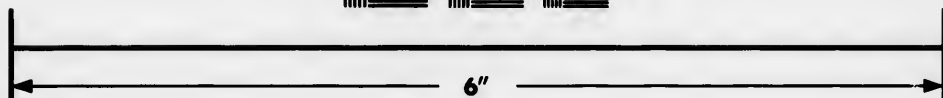
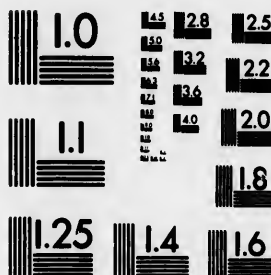
Says you, such is the spirit of British freedom, that the moment a slave touches our sea-girt shores, his spirit bursts its bonds; he stands emancipated, disentrall'd, and liberated; his chains fall right off, and he walks in all the naked majesty of a great big black he nigger! It sounds Irish that, and Josiah used to say they come up to the Americans a'most in pure eloquence. It's grand, it's sublime that, you may depend. When you get 'em up to the right pitch, then, says you, we have no power in parliament; we must have abolition members. Certainly, says they, and who so fit as the good, the pious, the Christian-like John Canter; up you are put then, and bundled free gratis, head over heels, into parliament. When you are in the House o' Commons, at it ag'in, blue-jacket, for life. Some good men, some weak men, and a'most a plaguy sight of hypocritical men will join you. Cant carries sway always now. A large party in the House, and a wappin large party out o' the house, must be kept quiet, conciliated, or whatever the right word is, and John Canter is made Lord Lavender.

I see, I see, said he; a glorious prospect of doin good, of aidin my fellow mortals, of bein useful in my generation. I hope for a more imperishable reward than a coronet,—the approbation of my own conscience. Well, well, says I to myself, if you ain't the most impudent as well as the most pharisaical villain that ever went onhung, then I never seed a finished rascal,—that's all. He took my advice, and went right at it, tooth and nail; worked day and night, and made a'most a deuce of a stir. His name was in every paper—a meetin held here to-day,—that great and good man John Canter in the chair;—a meetin held there to-morrow,—addressed most eloquently by that philanthropist, philosopher, and Christian, John Canter;—a society formed in one place, John Canter secretary;—a society formed in another place, John Canter president:—John Canter everywhere;—if you went to London, he handed you a subscription list,—if you went to Brighton, he met you with a petition,—if you went to Sheffield, he filled your pockets with tracts;—he was a complete jack-o'-lantern here and there, and everywhere. The last I heerd tell of him he was in Parliament, and agoin out governor-general of some of the colonies. I've seen a good many superfine saints in my time, squire, but this critter was the most uppercrust one I ever seed,—he did beat all.

Yes, the English deserve some credit, no doubt; but when you substract electioneerin party spirit, hipocracy, ambition, ministerial flourishes, and all the other oudertow causes that operated in this



**IMAGE EVALUATION
TEST TARGET (MT-3)**



**Photographic
Sciences
Corporation**

23 WEST MAIN STREET
WEBSTER, N.Y. 14580
(716) 872-4503

10
E 12.8
E 13.2
E 14
E 15
E 16
E 18
E 20
E 22
E 25

10
E 12.8
E 13.2
E 14
E 15
E 16
E 18
E 20
E 22
E 25

work, which at best was but clumsily contrived, and bunglinly executed, it don't leave so much to brag on arter all, does it now?

CHAPTER XLI.

TALKING LATIN.

Do you see them are country galls there, said Mr. Slick, how they are tricked out in silks, and touched off with lace and ribbon to the nine's, amincin along with parasols in their hands, as if they were afeard the sun would melt them like wax, or take the colour out of their face, like a printed cotton blind? Well, that's gist the ruin of this country. It ain't poverty the blue noses have to fear, for that they needn't know, without they choose to make acquaintance with it; but it's gentility. They go the whole hog in this country, you may depend. They ain't content to appear what they be, but want to be what they ain't; they live too extravagant, and dress too extravagant, and won't do what's the only thing that will supply this extravagance: that is, be industrious. Gist go into one of the meetin'-houses, back here in the woods, where there ought to be nothin but homespun cloth, and home-made stuffs and bonnets, and see the leghorns and palmettors, and silks and shalleys, morenos, gauzes, and blonds, assembled there, enough to buy the best farm in the settlement. There's somethin not altogether gist right in this; and the worst of these habits is, they ruinate the young folks, and they grow up as big goneys as the old ones, and eend in the same way, by bein half-starved at last; there's a false pride, false feelin, and false edication here. I mind once, I was down this way to New Canaan, avendin o' my clocks, and who should I overtake but Nabal Green, apokin along in his waggon, half-loaded with notions from the retail shops, at the cross roads. Why, Nabal, said I, are you agoin to set up for a marchant, for I see you've got a considerable of an assortment of goods there? you've got enough o' them to make a pedlar's fortin a'most. Who's dead, and what's to pay now?

Why, friend Slick, said he, how do you do? who'd a' thought of seein you here? You see my old lady, said he, is agoin for to give our Arabella, that's gist returned from boardin-school to Halifax, a let off to-night. Most all the bettermost folks in these parts are axed, and the doctor, the lawyer, and the minister is invited; it's no skim-milk story, I do assure you, but upper crust, real jam. Ruth intends to do the thing handsome. She says she don't do it often, but when she does, she likes to go the whole figur, and do it genteel. If she hasn't a show of dough-nuts and prasarves, and apple sarse and pun-

to "
prasarves for sarses

kin pies and sarsages, it's a pity; it's taken all hands of us, the old lady and her galls too, besides the helps, the best part of a week past preparin. I say nothin, but it's most turned the house inside out, a settin up things in this room, or toatin 'em out of that into t'other, and all in such a confustrigation, that I'm glad when they send me of an arrand to be out of the way. It's lucky them harrycanes don't come every day, for they do scatter things about at a great rate, all topsy-turvey like,—that's sartin. Won't you call in and see us to-night, Mr, Slick? folks will be amazin glad to see you, and I'll show you some as pritty-lookin galls, to my mind, in our settlement here, as you'll see in Connecticut, I know. Well, says I, I don't care if I do; there's nothin I like more nor a frolic, and the dear little critters I do like to be among 'em too,—that's sartin.

In the evenin I drives over to Nabal's, and arter puttin up my beast, old Clay, I goes into the house, and sure enough, there they was as big as life. The young ladies asittin on one side, and the men astandin up by the door, and achatterin away in great good humour. There was a young chap aholdin forth to the men about politics; he was a young trader, set up by some marchant in Halifax, to ruinate the settlement with good-for-nothin trumpery they hadn't no occasion for,—chock full of consait and affectation, and beginnin to feel his way with the yard stick to assembly already.

Great dandy was Mr. Bobbin; he looked gist as if he had come out of the tailor's hands, spic and span; put out his lips and drew down his brow, as if he had a trick of thinkin sometimes—nodded his head and winked, as if he knew more than he'd like to tell—talked of talent quite glib, but disdainful, as if he wouldn't touch some folks with a pair of tongs; a great scholar too was Mr. Bobbin, always spoke dictionary, and used heavy artillery words. I don't entertain no manner of doubt if government would take him at his own valuation, he'd be found to be a man o' great worth. I never liked the critter, and always gave him a poke when I got a chance. He was a town meetin orator; a grand school that to larn public speakin, squire; a nice muddy pool for young ducks to larn to swim in. He was a grand hand to read lectures in blacksmiths' shops at Vandues and the like, and talked politics over his counter at a great size. He looked big and talked big, and altogether was a considerable big man in his own consait. He dealt in reform. He had ballot tape, suffrage ribbon, radical lace, no tythe hats, and beautiful pipes with a democrat's head on 'em, and the maxim, 'No sinecure,' under it. Every thing had its motto. No, sir, said he, to some one he was atalkin to as I came in, this country is attenuated to pulverization by its aristocracy—a proud, a haughty aristocracy; a corrupt, a lignious and lapidinous aristocracy; put them into a parcel, envelop 'em with a panoply of paper, tie them up and put them into the scales, and they will be found

wantin. There is not a pound of honesty among 'em, nay not an ounce, nay not a pennyweight. The article is wantin—it is not in their catalogue. The word never occurs either in their order, or in their invoice. They won't bear the inspection,—they are not marchantable,—nothin but refuse.

If there is no honesty in market, says I, why don't you import some, and retail it out? you might make some considerable profit on it, and do good to the country too; it would be quite patriotic that. I'm glad to see, says I, one honest man atalkin politics any how, for there's one thing I've obsarved in the course of my experience, whenever a man suspects all the world that's above him of roguery, he must be a pretty considerable snperfine darned—(rogue himself, whispered some critter standin by, loud enough for all on 'em to hear, and to set the whole party achockin with larfter)—judge of the article himself, says I. Now, says I, if you do import it, gist let us know how you sell it,—by the yard, the quart, or the pound, will you? for it ain't set down in any tradin tables I've seen, whether it is for long measure, dry measure, or weight.

Well, says he, atryin to larf, as if he didn't take the hint, I'll let you know, for it might be of some use to you, perhaps, in the clock trade. May be, you'll be a customer, as well as the aristocrats. But how is clocks now? said he, and he gave his neighbour a nudge with his elbow, as much as to say, I guess it's my turn now,—how do clocks go? Like some young country traders I've seen in my time, says I; don't go long afore they run down, and have to be wound up again. They are considerable better too, like them, for bein kept in their own place, and plaguy apt to go wrong when moved out of it. Thinks I to myself, take your change out o' that, young man, will you? for I'd heerd tell the goney had said they had cheats enough in Nova Scotia, without havin Yankee clockmakers to put new wrinkles on their horns. Why, you are quite witty this evenin, said he; you've been masticatin mustard, I apprehend. I was always fond of it from a boy, said I, and it's a pity the blue noses didn't chew a little more of it, I tell you; it would help 'em, p'r'aps, to digest their jokes better, I estimate. Why, I didn't mean no offence, said he, I do assure you. Nor I neither, said I; I hope you don't take it in any way parsonal.

Says I, Friend Bobbin, you have talked a considerable hard o' me afore now, and made out the Yankees most as big rogues as your great men be; but I never thought anything hard of it: I only said, says I, he puts me in mind of Mrs. Squire Ichobad Birch. What's that? says the folks. Why, says I, Marm Birch was acomin down stairs one mornin airly, and what should she see but the stable help akissin of the cook in the corner of the entry, and she affendin off like a brave one. You good-for-nothin hussey, said Marm Birch, get out

o' my house this minit: I won't have no such ondecant carryins on here, on no account. You horrid critter, get out o' my sight; and as for you, said she to the Irishman, don't you never dare to shew your ugly face here again. I wonder you aint ashamed of yourselves,—both on you begone;—away with you, bag and baggage!

Hullo! said the squire as he foller'd down in his dressing gown and slippers; hullo! says he, what's all this touss about? Nothin, says Pat, ascratchin of his head, nothin, your honor, only the mistress says she'll have no kissin in the house but what she does herself. The cook had my jack knife in her pocket, your honor, and wouldn't give it to me, but sot off and ran here with it, and I arter her, and caught her. I gist put my hand in her pocket promisc'ously to sarch for it,—and when I found it, I was atryin to kiss her by way of forfeit like, and that's the long and the short of the matter. The mistress says she'll let no one but herself in the house do that same. Tut,—tut,—tut! says the squire, and larfed right out; both on you go and attend to your work then, and let's hear no more about it. Now, you are like Marm Birch, friend Bolbin, says I—you think nobody has a right to be honest but yourself; but there is more o' that arter all ago—in in the world than you have any notion of, I tell you.

Feelin a hand on my arm, I turns round, and who should I see but Marm Green. Dear me, says she, is that you, Mr Slick? I've been lookin all about for you for ever so long.—How do you do?—I hope I see you quite well. Hearty as brandy, marm, says I, tho' not quite as strong, and a great deal heartier for aseein of you.—How be you? Reasonable well and stirrin, says she: I try to keep amovin; but I shall give the charge of things soon to Arabella: have you seen her yet? No, says I, I havn't had the pleasure since her return; but I heard folks say she is a'most a splendid fine gall. Well, come, then, said she, atakin of my arm, let me introduce you to her. She is a fine gall, Mr. Slick, that's a fact; and though I say it that shouldn't say it, she's a considerable of an accomplished gall too. There is no touch to her in these parts: minister's daughter that was all one winter to St. John can't hold a candle to her. Can't she tho'? said I. No, said she, that she can't, the consaited minx, though she does carry her head so high. One of the gentlemen that played at the show of the wild beast, said to me, says he, I'll tell you what it is, Marm Green, said he, your darter has a beautiful touch—that's a fact: most galls can play a little, but your's does the thing complete. And so she ought, says she, takin her five quarters into view. Five quarters! said I; well, if that don't beat all! well, I never heard tell of a gall havin five quarters afore since I was raised! The skin, said I, I must say, is a most beautiful one; but as for the tallow, who ever heard of a gall's tallow? *Truly*

The fifth quarter!—Oh Lord! said I, marm, you'll kill me,—

and I haw-hawed right out. Why, Mr. Slick, says she, ain't you ashamed? do, for gracious sake, behave yourself; i meant five quarters' schoolin: what a droll man you be. Oh! five quarters' schoolin! says I; now I onderstand. And, said she, if she don't paint it's a pity? Paint! said I; why, you don't say so! I thought that are beautiful color was all nateral. Well, I never could kiss a gall that painted. Mother used to say it was sailin under false colors—I'm most wonder you could allow her to paint, for I'm sure there ain't the least morsel of occasion for it in the world: you may say *that*—it is a pity! Get out, said she, you imperance: you know'd better nor that; I meant her pictures. Oh! her pictures, said I, now I see;—does she tho'? Well, that is an accomplishment you don't often see, I tell you.—Let her alone for that, said her mother. Here, Arabella, dear, said she, come here, dear, and bring Mr. Slick your pictur' of the river that's got the two vessels in it,—Captain Noah Oak's sloop, and Peter Zinck's schooner. Why, my sakes, mamma, said Miss Arabella, with a toss of her pretty little saucy mug, do you expect me to show that to Mr. Slick? why, he'll only larf at it,—he larfs at everything that ain't Yankee. Larf! said I; now do tell: I guess I'd be very sorry to do such an ongenteel thing to any one—much less, miss, to a young lady like you. No, indeed, not I. Yes, said her mother; do, Bella dear; Mr. Slick will excuse any little defects, I'm sure; she's had only five quarters, you know, and you'll make allowances, won't you, Mr. Slick? I dare say, I said, they don't stand in need of no allowances at all, so don't be so backward, my dear. Arter a good deal of mock modesty, out skips Miss Arabella, and returns with a great large water color drawin as big as a winder shutter, and carried it up afore her face as a hookin cow does a board over her eyes to keep her from makin right at you. Now, said her mother, lookin as pleased as a peacock when it's in full fig with its head and tail up, now, says she, Mr. Slick, you are a considerable of a judge of paintin—secin that you do bronzin and gildin so beautiful,—now don't you call that splendid? Splendid! says I; I guess there ain't the beat of it to be found in this country, anyhow: I never seed anything like it: you couldn't ditto it in the province, I know. I guess not, said her mother. nor in the next province neither. It sartainly beats all, said I. And so it did, squire; you'd adied if you'd aseed it, for larfin. There was the two vessels one right above t'other, a great big black cloud on the top, and a church steeple standin under the bottom of the schooner. Well, says I, that is beautiful—that's a fact! but the water, said I, miss; you hav'n't done that yet; when you put that in, it will be complete. Not yet, said she; the greatest difficulty I have in paintin is in makin water. Have you, tho'? said I; well, that is a pity. Yes, said she; it's tho hardest thing in natur'—I can't do it straight, nor make it look of the

happy & gay
happy
Ladies & Gent
2d 1820

right color; and Mr. Acre, our master, said you must always make water in straight lines in painting, or it ain't nateral and ain't pleasin: vessels too are considerable hard; if you make 'em strait up and down ^{ways} they look stiff and ongraceful like, and if you put 'em onder sail then you should know all about fixin the sails the right way for the wind—if you don't, it's blundersome. I'm terribly troubled with the effect of wind. Oh! says I. Yes, I am, said she, and if I could only manage wind and water in paintin landscapes, why, it would be nothin—I'd do 'em in a jiffey; but to produce the right effect these things take a great deal of practice. I thought I should have snorted right out to hear the little critter run on with such a regular bam. ^{laugh} Oh dear! said I to myself, what pains some folks do take to make fools of their children: here's as nice a little heifer as ever was, alettin of her clapper run away with her like an onruly horse; she don't know where it will take her to yet, no more than the man in the moon.

As she carried it out again her mother said, Now, I take some credit to myself, Mr. Slick, for that;—she is thrown away here; but I was detarmined to have her educated, and so I sent her to boardin school, and you see the effect of her five quarters. Afore she went, she was three years to the combined school in this district, that includes both Dalhousie and Shanbrooke: you have combined schools in the States, hav'n't you, Mr. Slick? I guess we have, said I; boys and galls combined; I was to one on 'em, when I was considerable well grown up: Lord, what fun we had! It's a grand place to learn the multiplication table at, ain't it? I recollect once,—Oh fie! Mr. Slick, I mean a siminary for young gentlemen and ladies where they larn Latin and English combined. Oh latten! said I; they larn latten there, do they?—Well, come, there is some sense in that; I didn't know there was a factory of it in all Nova Scotia. I know how to make latten; father sent me clean away to New York to larn it. You mix up calamine and copper, and it makes a brass as near like gold as one pea is like another; and then there is another kind o' latten workin tin over iron,—it makes a most complete imitation of silver. Oh! a knowledge of latten has been of great sarvice to me in the clock trade, you may depend. It has helped me to a nation sight of the *genuine* metals—that's a fact. ^{thin lady}

Why, what on airth are you atalkin about? said Mrs. Green. I don't mean that latten at all; I mean the Latin they larn at schools. Well, I don't know, said I; I never seed any other kind o' latten, nor ever heerd tell of any.—What is it? Why, it's a——it's a——. Oh, you know well enough, said she; only you make as if you didn't, to poke fun at me. I believe, on my soul, you've been abammin of me the whole blessed time. I hope I be shot if I do, said I; so do tell me what it is. Is it anything in the silk factory line, or the straw-plat, or the cotton warp way? Your head, said she, consider-

able milfy, is always arunnin on a factory. Latin is a——. Nabal, said she, do tell me what Latin is. Latin, says he,—why, Latin is——ahem! it's——what they teach at the Combined School. Well, says she, we all know that as well as you do, Mr. Wisehead; but what is it? Come here, Arabella dear, and tell me what Latin is? Why, Latin, ma, said Arabella, is,—am-o, I love;—am-at, he loves; am-amus, we love;—that's Latin. Well, it does sound dreadful pretty, tho', don't it? says I; and yet, if Latin is love and love is Latin, you hadn't no occasion,—and I got up, and slipt my hand into her's—you hadn't no occasion to go to the Combined School to larn it; for natur', says I, teaches that a——and I was whisperin of the rest o' the sentence in her ear, when her mother said,—Come, come, Mr. Slick, what's that you are asaying of? Talkin Latin, says I,—awinkin to Arabella;—ain't we, miss? Oh yes, said she,—returnin the squeeze of my hand and larfin;—oh yes, mother, arter all, he understands it complete. Then take my seat here, says the old lady, and both on you sit down and talk it, for it will be a good practice for you;—and away she sailed to the eend of the room, and left us a—*talking Latin.*

I hadn't been asittin' there long afore doctor Ivory Hovey came up, asmirkin, and asmilin, and arubbin of his hands, as if he was agoin to say somethin very witty; and I observed, the moment he came, Arabella took herself off. She said, she couldn't 'bide him at all. Well, Mr. Slick, said he, how are you? how do you do, upon an average, eh? Pray, what's your opinion of matters and things in general, eh? Do you think you could exhibit such a show of fino bloomin galls in Slickville, eh? Not a bad chance for you, I *guess*, (and he gave that word guess a *tyang* that made the folks larf all round,)—said he, for you to speckilate for a wife, eh? Well, says I, there is a pretty show o' galls,—that's sartain,—but they wouldn't condescend to the like o' me. I was athinkin there was some on 'em that would gist suit you to a T. *Me*, says he, adrawin of himself up and looking big,—*me!* and he turned up his nose like a pointer dog when the birds flowed off. When I honour a lady with the offer of *my* hand, says he, it *will* be a *lady*. Well, thinks I, if you ain't a consaited critter it's a pity; most on 'em are a plaguy sight too good for you, so I will gist pay you off in your own coin. Says I, you put me in mind of Lawyer Endicot's dog. What's that? says the folks acrowdin round to hear it, for I seed plain enough that not one on 'em liked him one morsel. Says I, he had a great big black dog that he used to carry about with him everywhere he went, into the churches and into the court. The dog was always abotherin of the judges, agettin between their legs, and they used to order him to be turned out every day, and they always told the lawyer to keep his dog to home. At last, old Judge Porson said to the constable onc-

Amos

Amos

Amos

Amos

Amos

Amos

day, in a voice of thunder, Turn out that dog! and the judge gave him a kick that sent him half-way across the room, yelpin and howlin like anything. The lawyer was properly vexed at this, so says he to the dog, Pompey, says he, come here! and the dog came up to him. Didn't I always tell you, said he, to keep out o' bad company? Take that, said he, agivin of him a'most an awful kick,—take that!—and the next time only go among gentlemen; and away went the dog, lookin foolish enough, you may depend. What do you mean by that are story, sir? said he, abristlin up like a mastiff. Nothin, says I; only that a puppy sometimes gets into company that's too good for him, by mistake; and, if he forgets himself, is plaguy apt to get bundled out faster than he came in;—and I got up and walked away to the other side.

Folks gave him the nickname of Endicot's dog arter that, and I was glad on it; it sarved him right, the consaited ass. I heerd the critter amutterin sun'thin of the Clockmaker illustratin his own case, but, as I didn't want to be personal, I made as if I didn't want to be parsonal, I made as if I didn't hear him. As I went over towards the side table, who should I see aleanin up against it but Mr. Bobbin, pretty considerably well shaved, with a glass o' grog in his hand alookin as cross as you please, and so far gone, he was athinkin aloud, and atalkin to himself. There comes 'soft sawder,' says he, and 'human natur',—ameanin me,—a Yankey broom,—wooden nutmegs,—cussed sarcy,—great mind to kick him. Arabella's got her head turned,—consaited minx;—good exterior, but nothin in her,—like Slick's clocks, all gilded and varnished outside, and soft wood within. Gist do for Ivory Hovey,—same breed,—big head,—long ears,—a pair of donkeys! Shy old cock, that deacon,—joins Temperance Societies to get popular,—slips the gin in, pretends it's water;—I see him. But here goes, I believe I'll slip off. Thinks I, it's gettin on for mornin; I'll slip off too; so out I goes and harnesses up Old Clay, and drives home.

Gist as I came from the barn and got opposite to the house, I heerd some one acrackin of his whip, and abawlin out at a great size, and I looked up, and who should I see but Bobbin in his waggon ag'in the pole fence. Comin in the air had made him blind drunk. He was alickin away at the top pole of the fence, and afancyin his horse was there, and wouldn't go. Who comes there? said he. Clockmaker, said I. Gist take my horse by the head,—that's a good feller,—will you? said he, and lead him out as far as the road. Cuss him, he won't stir. Spiles a good horse to lead him, says I; he always looks for it again. Gist you lay it on to him well—his hams ain't made o' hickory like mine. Cut away at him; he'll go by and by;—and I drove away and left him acuttin and aslashin at the

fence for dear life. Thinks I, you are not the first ass that has been brought to a poll; anyhow.

Next day, I met Nabal. Well, said he, Mr. Slick, you hit our young trader rather hard last night; but I warn't sorry to hear you, tho', for the critter is so full of consait, it will do him good. He wants to pull every one down to his own level, as he can't rise to theirs, and is for everlastinly spoutin about House of Assembly business, officials, aristocrats, and such stuff; he'd be a plaguy sight better, in my mind, attendin to his own business, instead of talkin of other folks's; and usin his yardstick more, and his tongue less. And between you and me, Mr. Slick, said he,—tho' I hope you won't let on to any one that I said anything to you about it,—but atween ourselves, as we are alone here, I am athinkin my old woman is in a fair way to turn Arabella's head too. All this paintin, and singin, and talkin Latin is very well, I consait, for them who have time for it, and nothin better to do to home. It's better p'r'aps to be adoin of that than adoin of nothin; but for the like o' us, who have to live by farmin, and keep a considerable of a large dairy, and upwards of a hundred sheep, it does seem to me sometimes as if it were a little out of place. Be candid now, said he, for I should like to hear what your rael genuwine opinion is touchin this matter, seein that you know a good deal of the world.

Why, friend Nabal, says I, as you've asked my advice, I'll give it to you; tho' anythin partainin to the apron-string, is what I don't call myself a judge of, and feel delicate of meddlin with. Woman is woman, says I; that's a fact; and a feller that will go for to provoke hornets, is plaguy apt to get himself stung, and I don't know as it does not sarve him right too; but this I must say, friend, that you're just about half right,—that's a fact. The proper music for a farmer's house is the spinnin-wheel,—the true paintin the dye stuffs,—and the tambourin the loom. Teach Arabella to be useful and not showy, prudent and not extravagant. She is gist about as nice a gall as you'll see in a day's ride; now don't spoil her, and let her get her head turned, for it would be a rael right down pity. One thing you may depend on for sartain, as a maxim in the farmin line,—*a good darter and a good housekeeper, is plaguy apt to make a good wife and a good mother.*

CHAPTER XLII.

THE SNOW WREATH.

WHOEVER has read Haliburton's History of Nova Scotia (which, next to Mr. Josiah Slick's History of Cuttyhunk, in five volumes, is the most important account of unimportant things I have ever seen), will recollect that this good city of Annapolis is the most ancient one in North America; but there is one fact omitted by that author, which I trust he will not think an intrusion upon his province, if I take the liberty of recording, and that is, that in addition to its being the most ancient,—it is also the most loyal city of this Western Hemisphere. This character it has always sustained, and 'royal,' as a mark of peculiar favour, has ever been added to its cognomen by every government that has had dominion over it.

Under the French, with whom it was a great favourite, it was called Port Royal; and the good Queen Anne, who condescended to adopt it, permitted it to be called Annapolis Royal. A book issuing from Nova Scotia is, as Blackwood very justly observes, in his never-to-be-forgotten, nor ever-to-be-sufficiently-admired review of the first part of this work, one of those unexpected events that, from their great improbability, appear almost incredible. Entertaining no doubt, therefore, that every member of the cabinet will read this *lusus naturæ*, I take this opportunity of informing them that our most gracious Sovereign, Queen Victoria, has not in all her widespread dominions more devoted or more loyal subjects than the good people of Annapolis Royal.

Here it was, said I, Mr. Slick, that the egg was laid of that American bird, whose progeny have since spread over this immense continent. Well, it is a'most a beautiful bird too, ain't it? said he; what a plumage it has! what a size it is! It is a whopper,—that's sartin; it has the courage and the soarin of the eagle, and the colour of the peacock, and his majestic step and keen eye; the world never seed the beat of it; that's a fact. How streaked the English must feel when they think they once had it in the cage and couldn't keep it there; it is a pity they are so invyous tho' I declare. Not at all, I assure you, I replied: there is not a man among them who is not ready to admit all you have advanced in favour of your national emblem; the fantastic strut of the peacock, the melodious and attic tones, the gaudy apparel, the fondness for display which is perpetually exhibiting to the world the extended tail with painted stars, the amiable disposition of the bird towards the younger and feebler offspring of others, the unwieldy—I thought so, said he; I hadn't ought to have spoke of it afore you, for it does seem to ryle you;

that's sartain; and I don't know as it was gist altogether right to al-
lude to a thin that is so humblin to your national pride. But, squire,
ain't this been a hot day? I think it would pass muster among the
hot ones of the West Indgies a'most. I do wish I could gist slip off
my flesh and sit in my bones for a space, to cool myself, for I ain't
seed such thawy weather this many a year, I know. I calculate I
will brew a little lemonade, for Marm Bailey generally keeps the ma-
terials for that Temperance Society drink.

This climate o' Nova Scotia does run to extremes; it has the hottest
and the coldest days in it I ever seed. I shall never forget a night
I spent here three winters ago. I come very near freezin to death.
The very thought of that night will cool me the hottest day in sum-
mer. It was about the latter eend of February, as far as my memory
sarves me, I came down here to cross over the bay to St. John, and
it was considerable arter daylight down when I arrived. It was the
most violent slippery weather, and the most cruel cold, I think, I
ever mind seein since I was raised.

Says Marm Bailey to me, Mr. Slick, says she, I don't know what
under the sun I 'm agoin to do with you, or how I shall be able to
accommodate you, for there's a whole raft of folks from Halifax here,
and a batch of moose-hunting officers, and I don't know who all;
and the house is chock full, I declare. Well, says I, I'm no ways
particular—I can put up with most anything. I'll gist take a stretch
here, afore the fire on the floor;—for I'm e'en a'most chilled to death,
and awful sleepy too; first come, says I, first sarved, you know's an
old rule, and luck's the word now-a-days. Yes, I'll gist take the
hearth-rug for it, and a good warm berth it is too. Well, says she,
I can't think o' that at no rate: there's old Mrs. Fairns in the next
street but one; she's got a spare bed she lets out sometimes: I'll
send up to her to get it ready for you, and to-morrow these folks will
be off, and then you can have your old quarters again.

So arter supper, old Johnny Farquhar, the English help, showed
me up to the widder's. She was considerable in years, but a cheer-
fulsome old lady and very pleasant, but she had a darter, the pret-
tiest gall I ever seed since I was created. There was sunthin or
another about her that made a body feel melancholy too; she was a
lovely-lookin critter, but her countenance was sad; she was tall and
well made, had beautiful lookin long black hair and black eyes; but,
oh! how pale she was!—and the only colour she had, was a little
fever-like-lookin red about her lips. She was dressed in black,
which made her countenance look more marble like; and yet whate-
ver it was,—natur', or consumption, or desartion, or settin on the
anxious benches, or what not,—that made her look so, yet she hadn't
fallen away one morsel, but was full formed and well waisted. I
couldn't keep my eyes off of her.

I felt a kind o' interest in her ; I seemed as if I'd like to hear her story, for sunthin or another had gone wrong,—that was clear ; some little story of the heart, most like, for young galls are plaguy apt to have a tender spot thereabouts. She never smiled, and when she looked on me she looked so streaked and so sad, and cold withal, it made me kinder superstitious. Her voice, too, was so sweet, and yet so doleful, that I felt proper sorry and amazin curious too ; thinks I, I'll gist ax to-morrow all about her, for folks have pretty 'cute ears in Annapolis ; there ain't a smack of a kiss that ain't heard all over town in two twos, and sometimes they think they hear 'em even afore they happen. It's a'most a grand place for news, like all other small places I ever seed. Well, I tried jokin and funny stories, and every kind o' thing to raise a larf, but all wouldn't do ; she talked and listened and chatted away as if there was nothin above partikiler ; but still no smile ; her face was cold and clear and bright as the icy surface of a lake, and 'so transparent too, you could see the veins in it. Arter a while the old lady showed me to my chamber, and there was a fire in it ; but, oh ! my sake's, how cold ! it was like goin down into a well in summer—it made my blood fairly thicken ag'in. Your tumbler is out, squire ; try a little more of that lemonade ; that iced water is grand. Well, I sot over the fire a space, and gathered up the little bits o' brands and kindlin wood, (for the logs were green, and wouldn't burn up at no rate) ; and then I ondressed and made a desperate jump right into the cold bed, with only half clothes enough on it for such weather, and wrapped up all the clothes round me. Well, I thought I should have died. The frost was in the sheets,—and my breath looked like the steam from a boilin tea-kettle, and it settled right down on the quilt, and froze into white hoar. The nails in the house cracked like a gun with a wet wad,—they went off like thunder, and now and then you'd hear some one run along ever so fast, as if he couldn't shew his nose to it for one minit, and the snow crackin and crumplin onder his feet, like a new shoe with a stiff sole to it. The fire wouldn't blaze no longer, and only gave up a blue smoke, and the glass in the window looked all fuzzy with the frost. Thinks I, I'll freeze to death to a sartainty. If I go for to drop off asleep, as sure as the world I'll never wake up ag'in. I've heerd tell of folks afore now scelin dozy-like out in the cold, and layin down to sleep, and goin for it, and I don't half like to try it, I vow. Well, I got considerable narvous like, and I kept awake near about all night, tremblin and shakin like ague. My teeth fairly chattered ag'in ; first I rubbed one foot ag'in another,—then I doubled up all on a heap, and then rubbed all over with my hands. Oh ! it was dismal you may depend ;—at last I began to nod and doze, and fancy I seed a flock o' sheep atakin a split for it, over a wall, and tried to count 'em, one by one, and

G. B. B. B. B.
 1812. 12. 12.

1812. 6

21/12

1812

couldn't; and then I'd start up, and then nod ag'in. I felt it acomin all over, in spite of all I could do; and, thinks I, it ain't so everlastin long to day-light now; I'll try it anyhow—I'll be darn'd if I don't—so here goes.

Just as I shot my eyes, and made up my mind for a nap, ^{W. J. L. L. L.} I hears a low moan and a sob; well, I sits up, and listens, but all was silent agoin. Nothin but them eternal nails agoin off, one arter t'other, like anythin. Thinks I to myself, the winds agettin up, I estimate; it's as like as not we shall have a change o' weather. Presently I heerd a light step on the entry, and the door opens softly, and in walks the widdler's darter on tip toe, dressed in a long white wrapper; and after peerin all round to see if I was asleep, she goes and sits down in the chimby corner, and picks up the coals and fixes the fire, and sits alookin at it for ever so long. Oh! so sad, and so melancholy; it was dreadful to see her. Says I to myself, says I, what on airth brings the poor critter here, all alone, this time o' night; and the air so plaguy cold, too. I guess, she thinks I'll freeze to death; or, perhaps she's walkin in her sleep. But there she sot lookin more like a ghost than a human,—first she warmed one foot and then the other; and then held her hands over the coals, and moaned bitterly. Dear! dear! thinks I, that poor critter is afreezin to death as well as me; I do believe the world is acomin to an eend right off, and we shall all die of cold, and I shivered all over. Presently she got up, and I saw her face, part covered with her long black hair, and the other parts so white and so cold, it chilled me to look at it, and her footsteps I consaited sounded louder, and I cast my eyes down to her feet, and I actilly did fancy they looked froze. Well, she come near the bed, and lookin at me, stood for a space without stirrin, and then she cried bitterly, He, too, is doomed, said she; he is in the sleep of death, and so far from home, and all his friends too. Not yet, said I, you dear critter you, not yet, you may depend;—but you will be if you don't go to bed;—so says I, do for gracious sake return to your room, or you will perish. It's frozen, says she; it's deathy cold; the bed is a snow wreath, and the pillow is ice, and the coverlid is congealed; the chill has struck into my heart, and my blood has ceased to flow. I'm doomed, I'm doomed to die; and oh! how strange, how cold is death! Well, I was all struck up of a heap: I didn't know what on airth to do; says I to myself, says I, here's this poor gall in my room carryin on like ravin distracted mad in the middle of the night here: she's oneasy in her mind, and is awalkin as sure as the world, and how it's agoin to eend, I don't know,—that's a fact. Katey, says I, dear, I'll get up and give you my bed if you are cold, and I'll go and make up a great rousin big fire, and I'll call up the old lady, and she will see to you, and get you a hot drink; sunthin must be done, to a sartainty, for I can't bear

to hear you talk so. No, says she, not for the world; what will my mother say, Mr. Slick? and me here in your room, and nothin but this wrapper on; it's too late now; it's all over; and with that she fainted, and fell right across the bed. Oh, how cold she was! the chill struck into me; I feel it yet; the very thoughts is enough to give one the ague. Well, I'm a modest man, squire; I was always modest from a boy;—but there was no time for ceremony now, for there was a sufferin, dyin critter—so I drew her in, and folded her in my arms, in hopes she would come to, but death was there.

I breathed on her icy lips, but life seemed extinct, and every time I pressed her to me, I shrunk from her till my back touched the cold gypsum wall. It felt like a tomb, so chill, so damp, so cold—(you have no notion how cold them are kind o' walls are, they beat all natur')—squeezed between this frozen gall on one side, and the icy plaster on the other, I felt as if my own life was aebbin away fast. Poor critter! says I, has her care of me brought her to this pass? I'll press her to my heart once more; p'r'aps the little heat that's left there may revive her, and I can but die a few minutes sooner. It was a last effort, but it succeeded; she seemed to breathe again—I spoke to her, but she couldn't answer, tho' I felt her tears flow fast on my bosom; but I was actilly sinkin fast myself now,—I felt my eend approachin. Then came reflection, bitter and sad thoughts they were too, I tell you. Dear, dear! said I; here's a pretty kettle o' fish, ain't there? we shall be both found dead here in the mornin, and what will folks say of this beautiful gall, and of one of our free and enlightened citizens, found in such a scrape? Nothin will be too bad for 'em that they can lay their tongues to; that's a fact: the Yankee villain, the cheatin Clockmaker, the——: the thought gave my heart a jupe, so sharp, so deep, so painful, I awoke and found I was ahuggin a snow wreath, that had sifted thro' a hole ^{in the} in the roof on the bed; part had melted and trickel'd down my breast, and part had froze to the clothes, and chilled me through. I woke up, proper glad it was all a dream, you may depend—but amazin cold and dreadful stiff, and I was laid up at this place for three weeks with the 'cute rheumatis,—that's a fact.

But your pale young friend, said I; did you ever see her again? pray, what became of her? Would you believe it? said he; the next mornin, when I came down, there sot Katey by the fire, lookin as bloomin as a rose, and as chipper as a canary bird;—the fact is, I was so uncommon cold, and so sleepy too, the night afore, that I thought everybody and everything looked cold and dismal too. Mornin, sir, said she, as I entered the keepin room; mornin to you, Mr. Slick; how did you sleep last night? I'm most afeard you found that are room dreadful cold, for little Biney opened the window at the head of the bed to make the fire draw and start the smoke up,

and forgot to shut it again, and I guess it was wide open all night;— I minded it arter I got to bed, and I thought I should ha' died alarfin. Thank you, said I, for that; but you forget you come and shot it yourself. Me! said she; I never did no such a thing.—Catch me indeed agoin into a gentleman's chamber: no, indeed, not for the world! If I wasn't cold, said I, it's a pity,—that's all; I was een a'most frozen as stiff as a poker, and near about frightened to death too, for I seed you or your ghost last night, as plain as I see you now; that's a fact. A ghost! said she: how you talk I do tell. Why, how was that? Well, I told her the whole story from beginning to eend. First she larfed ready to split at my account of the cold room, and my bein afeard to go to sleep; but then she stopt pretty short, I guess, and blushed like anythin when I told her about her comin into the chamber, and looked proper frightened, not knowin what was to come next; but when she heerd of her turnin first into an icicle, and then into a snow-drift, she haw-hawed right out. I thought she actilly would have gone into hysterics. You might have frozen, said she, in rael right down earnest, afore I'd agone into your chamber at that time o' night to see arter you, or your fire either, said she, you may depend: I can't think what on airth could have put that are crotchet into your head. Nor I neither, said I; and besides, said I, aketchin hold of her hand, and drawin her close to me,—and besides, says I,—I shouldn't have felt so awful cold neither, if you——. Hold your tongue, said she, you goney you, this minit; I won't hear another word about it, and go right off and get your breakfast, for you was sent for half an hour ago. Arter bein mocked all night, says I, by them are icy lips of your ghost. Now I see them are pretty little sarcy ones of yourn, I think I must, and I'll be darned if I won't have a——. Well, I estimate you won't, then, said she, you impedence,—and she did fend off like a brave one—that's a fact; she made frill, shirt collar, and dickey fly like snow; she was as smart as a fox-trap, and as wicked as a meat-axe;—there was no gettin near her no how. At last, said she, if there ain't mother acomin, I do declare, and my hair is all spifficated, too, like a mop,—and my dress all rumfoozled, like anything,—do, for gracious sake, set things to rights a little afore mother comes in, and then cut and run: my heart is in my mouth, I declare. Then she sot down in a chair, and put both hands behind her head a puttin in her combs. Oh dear, said she, pretendin to try to get away; is that what you call puttin things to rights? Don't squeeze so hard; you'll choke me, I vow. It tante me that's achokin of you, says I, it's the heart that's in your mouth.—Oh, if it had only been them lips instead of the ghost! Quick, says she, a—openin of the door,—I hear mother on the steps;—quick, be off; but mind you don't tell any one that ghost story; people might think there was more in it

Self-sufficiency

Lawrence

than met the ear. Well, well, said I, to myself; for a pale face, sad, melancholy-lookin' gall, if you hav'n't turned out as rosy, a rompin' larkin, light-hearted a heifer as ever I seed afore, it's a pity.—There's another lemon left, squire, 'spose we mix a little more sourin' afore we turn in, and take another glass 'to the widders' darter.'

CHAPTER XLIII.

THE TALISMAN.

It was our intention to have left Annapolis this morning after breakfast, and proceeded to Digby, a small but beautiful village, situated at the entrance of that magnificent sheet of water, once known as Port Royal Basin, but lately by the more euphonious appellation of the 'Gut.' But Mr. Slick was missing, nor could any trace of him be found; I therefore ordered the horse again to the stable, and awaited his return with all due patience. It was five o'clock in the afternoon before he made his appearance. Sorry to keep you awaitin', said he, but I got completely let in for it this mornin'; I put my foot in it, you may depend. I've got a grand story to tell you, and one that will make you larf too, I know. Where do you think I've been of all places under the sun? Why, I've been to court; that's a fact. I seed a great crowd of folks about the door, and thinks I, who's dead, and what's to pay now? I think I'll just step in for a minit and see.

What's on the carpet to-day? says I to a blue nose; what's goin' on here? Why, said he, they are agoin' for to try a Yankee. What for? said I. Stealin', said he. A Yankee, says I to myself; well, that's strange too; that beats me any-how; I never heerd tell of a Yankee bein' such a born fool as to steal. If the feller has been such a ravin' distracted goney, I hope they will hang him, the varmint; that's a fact. It's mostly them thick-sculled, wrong-headed, cussed stupid fools the British that do that are; they ain't brought up well, and hav'n't got no edication; but our folks know better; they've been better larned than to do the like o' that—they can get most anything they want by gettin' hold on the right eend in a bargain; they do manage beautiful in a trade, a slight o' hand, a loan, a failin', a speckelation, swap, thimble-rig, or some how or another in the regular way within the law; but as for stealin'—never—I don't believe he's a Yankee. No, thinks I, he can't be American, bred and born, for we are too enlight'ned for that, by a long chalk. We have a great respect for the laws, squire; we've been bred to that, and always uphold the dignity of the law. I recollect once that some of our

young citizens away above Montgomery got into a flare-up with a party of boatmen that lives on the Mississippi; a desperate row it was too, and three of the Kentuckians were killed as dead as herrins. Well, they were had up for it afore Judge Cotton. He was one of our revolutionary heroes, a starn, hard-featured old man, quite a Cato,—and he did curry 'em down with a heavy hand, you may depend;—he had no marcy on 'em. There he sot with his hat on, a cigar in his mouth, his arms folded, and his feet over the rail, lookin as sour as an onripe lemon. Bring up them culprits, said he, and when they were brought up he told 'em it was scandalous, and only fit for English and ignorant foreigners that sit on the outer porch of darkness, and not high-minded, intelligent Americans. You are a disgrace, said he, to our great nation, and I hope I shall never hear the like of it ag'in. If I do, I'll put you on your trial as sure as you are born; I hope I may be skinned alive by wild cats, if I dont. Well, they didn't like this kind o' talk at all, so that night away they goes to the judge's house, to teach him a thing or two, with a cowskin, and kicked up a deuce of a row; and what do you think the neighbours did? Why, they gist walked in, seized the ringleaders and lynched them, in less than ten minits, on one of the linden trees afore the judge's door.

They said *the law must be vindicated*,—and that courts must be upheld by all quiet orderly people for a terror to evil-doers. The law must take its course. No, thinks I, he cant be a Yankee;—if he was, and had awanted the article, he would ha' done him out of it, p'r'aps in a trade, bein too experienced a man of business for him; but steal it, never, never—I don't believe it, I vow. Well, I walked into the court-house, and there was a great crowd of folks there, *ajabberin* and atalkin away like anything (for blue-nose needn't turn his back on any one for talkin—the critter is all tongue, like an old horse)—presently in come one or two young lawyers, in a dreadful hurry, with great piles of books under their arms with white leather covers, and great bundles of papers tied with red tape, and put 'em down on the table afore 'em, lookin very big with the quantity of larnin they carried; thinks I, young shavers, if you had more of that in your heads, and less under your arms, you would have the use of your hands to play with your thumbs when you had nothin to do. Then came in one or two old lawyers, and sot down and nodded here and there to some o' the upper-crust folks o' the county and then shock hands amazin hearty with the young lawyers, and the young lawyers larfed, and the old ones larfed, and they all nodded their heads together like a flock of geese agoin thro' a gate.

Presently the sheriff calls out at the tip eend of his voice, 'Clear the way for the judge;—and the judge walks up to the

banister
of the
court

Va. lot.

of the
court

bench, lookin down to his feet to see he didn't tread on other folks' toes, and put his arm behind his back, and twirls the tail of his gown over it so that other folks mightn't tread on hisn. Well, when he gets to the bench, he stands up as straight as a liberty pole, and the lawyers all stand up straight too, and clap their eyes on his till he winks, then both on 'em slowly bend their bodies forward till they nearly touch the tables with their noses, and then they sot down, and the judge took a look all round, as if he saw every thing in general and nothin in partikilar,—I never seed anything so queer afore, I vow. It puts me in mind o' the Chinese, but they bob their foreheads clean away down to the very floor.

Well, then, said the crier, 'Oh yes! Oh yes! His Majesty's (I mean her Majesty's) court is now opened. God save the King (I mean the Queen).' Oh! if folks didn't larf it's a pity,—for I've often observed it takes but a very small joke to make a crowd larf. They'll larf at nothin a'most. Silence, said the sheriff, and all was as still as moonlight. It looked strange to me, you may depend, for the lawyers looked like so many ministers all dressed in black gowns and white bands on, only they acted more like players than preachers, a plaguy sight. But, said I, is this not the case in your country; is there not some sort of professional garb worn by the bar of the United States, and do not the barristers and the court exchange those salutations which the common courtesies of life not only sanction, but imperatively require as essential to the preservation of mutual respect and general good breeding? What on airth, said the Clock-maker, can a black gound have to do with intelligence? Them sort of liveries may do in Europe, but they don't convene to our free and enlightened citizens. It's too foreign for us, too unphilosophical, too feudal, and a remnant o' the dark ages. No, sir; our lawyers do as they like. Some on 'em dress in black, and some in white; some carry walking-sticks, and some umbrellas, some whittle sticks with penknives, and some shave the table, and some put their legs under the desks, and some put 'em a top of them, just as it suits them. They sit as they please, dress as they please, and talk as they please; we are a free people. I guess if a judge in our country was to order the lawyers to appear all dressed in black, they'd soon ax him who elected him director-general of fashions, and where he found such arbitrary power in the constitution as that, committed to any man.

But I was agoin to tell you 'bout the trial.—Presently one o' the old lawyers got up, and said he, My lord, said he, I *move*, your lordship, that the prisoner may be brought up. And if it warn't a *move* it was a pity. The lawyer *moved* the judge, and the judge *moved* the sheriff, and the sheriff *moved* the crowd, for they all *moved* out together, leavin hardly any one on them but the judge and the lawyers; and in a few minits they all *moved* back ag'in with a prisoner.

They seemed as if they had never seen a prisoner before. When they came to call the jury they didn't all answer; so says the sheriff to me, walk in the box, sir,—you, sir, with the blue coat. Do you indicate me, sir? said I. Yes, says he, I do: walk in the box. I give you thanks, sir, says I, but I'd rather stand where I be; I've no occasion to sit; and besides, I guess, I must be amovin. Walk in the box, sir, said he, and he roared like thunder. And, says the judge, alookin up, and smilin and speakin 'as soft as if butter wouldn't melt in his mouth, you *must* walk in the box, sir. Well, says I, to oblige you, says I, my lord, I will; but there don't seem much room in it *to* walk, I vow. You are called upon, sir, says the judge, as a talisman; take your seat in the box, and be silent. If I must, says I, I do suppose I must; but I don't like the office, and I don't believe I've got a marker about me; but if you've are a piece of chalk about you, you could give me, or lend me an old pencil, I'll try to cypher it as well as I can, and do my possibles to give you satisfaction, my lord. What are you atalkin about, sir? said he;—what do you mean by such nonsense? Why, says I, my lord, I've been told that in this country, and indeed I know it is the *practice* almost all over ourn, for the jury to *chalk*, that is, every man chalks down on the wall his vote; one man ten pounds, one twenty, another thirty, and another five pounds, and so; and then they add them all up, and divide by twelve, and that makes the verdict. Now if I'm to be *talysman*, says I and keep *count*, I'll chalk it as straight as a boot-jack. The judge threwed himself back in his chair, and turning to the sheriff, says he, is it possible, Mr. Sheriff, that such an abominable practice as this exists in this country? or that people, under the solemn obligation of an oath, can conduct themselves with so much levity as to make their verdict depend upon chance, and not upon reason? If I was to know an instance of the kind, said he, —and he looked battle, murder, and sudden death,—I'd both fine and imprison the jury;—I would, by——(and he gave the corner of his mouth a twist just in time to keep in an oath that was on the tip of his tongue), and he hesitated a little to think how to get out of the scrape,—at least I consaited so,—by and with the full consent of my brethern on the bench.

I have my suspicions, said the Clockmaker, that the judge had heard tell of that *practice* afore, and was only waitin for a complaint to take notice of it regular-like, for them old judges are as cunnin as foxes; and if he had, I must say he did do the surprise very well, for he looked all struck up of a heap, like a vessel taken aback with a squall, agoin down starn foremost.

Who is that man? said he. I am a clockmaker, sir, said I. I didn't ask you what you were, sir, says he, acolorin up; I asked you who you were. I am Mr. Samuel Slick of Slickville, sir, says I; a

elockmaker from Onion County, State of Connecticut, in the United States of America. You are exempt, said he,—you may walk *out of the box*. Thinks I to myself, old chap, next time you want a talisman, take one of your own folks, will you? Well, when I looked up to the prisoner, sure enough I seed he was one of our citizens, one 'Expected Thorne,' of our town, an endless villain, that had been two or three times in the State's prison. The case was a very plain one. Captain Billy Slocum produced a watch, which he said was hisn; he said he went out arter dinner, leavin his watch ahingin up over the mantel piece, and when he returned to tea it was gone, and that it was found in Expected Thorne's possession. Long before the evidence was gone through, I seed he was guilty, the villain. There is a sort of freemasonry in hypocrisy, squire, you may depend. It has its signs and looks by which the brotherhood know each other; and as charity hopeth all things, and forgiveth all things, these appeals of the elect to each other from the lowest depths of woe, whether conveyed by the eye, the garb, or the tongue, are seldom made in vain.

Expected had seed too much of the world, I estimate, not to know that. If he hadn't his go-to-meetin dress and looks on this day to do the jury, it's a pity. He had his hairs combed down as straight as a horse's mane; a little thin white cravat, nicely plaited and tied plain, garnished his neck, as a white towel does a dish of calves' head,—a standin up collar to his coat gave it the true cut, and the gilt buttons covered with cloth eschewed the gaudy ornaments of sinful, carnal man. He looked as demure as a harlot at a christenin—drew down the corners of his mouth, so as to contract the trumpet of his nose, and give the right base twang to the voice, and turned up the whites of his eyes, as if they had been in the habit of lookin in upon the inner man for self-examination and reproach. Oh, he looked like a martyr; gist like a man who would suffer death for conscience sake, and forgive his enemies with his dyin breath.

Gentlemen of the jury, says Expected, I am a stranger and a sojourner in this land, but I have many friends and received much kindness, thanks be to divine Providence for all his goodness to me a sinner; and I don't make no doubt that tho' I be a stranger, his lordship's honor will, under Providence, see justice done to me. The last time I was to Captain Billy's house I seed his watch, and that it was out of order, and I offered to clean it and repair it for him for nothin, free gratis;—*that I can't prove*. But I'll tell you what I *can prove*, and it's a privilege for which I desire to render thanks; that when that gentleman, the constable, came to me, and said he came about the watch, I said to him, right out at once, 'She's cleaned, says I, but wants regulatin; if Captain Billy is in a hurry for her he can have her, but he had better leave her two

or three days to get the right beat.' And never did I deny havin it as a guilty man would have done. And, my lord, said he, and gentlemen of the jury (and he turned up his ugly cantin mug full round to the box)—I trust I know too well the awful account I must one day give of the deeds done in the flesh to peril my immortal soul for vain, idle, sinful toys; and he held up his hands together, and looked upwards till his eyes turned in like them are ones in a marble statue, and his lips kept amovin some time as if he was lost in inward prayer.

Well, the constable proved it word for word, and the judge said it *did* appear that there was some mistake; at all events it *did not* appear there was evidence of a felonious takin, and he was acquitted. As soon as it was over, Expected comes to me in the corner, and, says he, quite bold like, Mornin, Slick, how do you do? And then whisperin in my ear, says he, Didn't I do 'em pretty? cuss 'em,—that's all. Let old Connecticut alone yet—she's too much for any on 'em, I know. The truth is, the moment I seed that cussed critter, that constable acomin, I seed his arrand with half an eye, and had that are story ready-tongued and grooved for him, as quick as wink. Says I, I wish they had ahanged you, with all my heart; its such critters as you that lower the national character of our free and enlightened citizens, and degrade it in the eyes of foreigners. The eyes of foreigners be d——d! said he. Who cares what they think?—and as for these bluenoses, they ain't able to think. They ain't got two ideas to bless themselves with,—the stupid, punkin-headed, consaited blockheads!—cuss me if they have. Well, says I, they ain't such an enlightened people as we are, that's sartain, but that don't justify you a bit; you hadn't ought to have stolen that watch. That was wrong, very wrong indeed. You might have traded with him, and got it for half nothin; or bought and failed, as some of our importin marchants sew up the soft-horned British; or swapped it and forgot to give the exchange; or bought it and give your note, and cut stick afore the note became due. There's a thousand ways of doin it honestly and legally, without resortin, as foreigners do, to stealin. We are a moral people,—a religious, a high-minded, and a high-spirited people; and can do any and all the nations of the universal world out of anything, in the hundred of millions of clever shifts there are in trade; but as for stealin, I despise it; it's a low, blackguard, dirty, mean action; and I must say you're a disgrace to our great nation. *An American citizen never steals, he only gains the advantage!*

CHAPTER XLIV.

ITALIAN PAINTINGS.

THE next morning we resumed our journey, and travelling through the township of Clements, and crossing Moose and Bear rivers, reached Digby early in the afternoon. It was a most delightful drive. When we left Annapolis the fog was slowly rising from the low grounds and resting on the hills, to gather itself up for a flight into upper air, disclosing, as it departed, ridge after ridge off the Granville Mountain, which lay concealed in its folds, and gradually revealing the broad and beautiful basin that extends from the town to Digby.

I am too old now for romance, and, what is worse, I am corpulent. I find, as I grow stout, I grow less imaginative. One cannot serve two masters. I longed to climb the mountain peak, to stand where Champlain stood, and imagine the scene as it then was, when his prophetic eye caught revelations of the future; to visit the holy well where the rite of baptism was first performed in these provinces; to trace the first encampments,—the ruins of the rude fortifications,—the first battle-ground. But alas! the day is gone. I must leave the field to more youthful competitors. I can gratify my eye as I drive along the road, but I must not venture into the forest. The natural ice-house,—the cascade,—the mountain lake,—the beaver's dam,—the General's bridge,—the apocryphal Rossignol,—the iron mines,—and last, not least, the Indian antiquities,—in short, each and all of the lions of this interesting place, that require bodily exertion to be seen,—I leave to succeeding travellers. I visit men, and not places. Alas! has it come to this at *last*,—to gout and port wine? Be it so:—I will assume the privilege of old age, and talk.

At a short distance from the town of Annapolis, we passed the Court House, the scene of Mr. Slick's adventures the preceding day, and found a crowd of country people assembled about the door. More than a hundred horses were tied to the fences on either side of the road, and groups of idlers were seen scattered about on the lawn, either discussing the last verdict, or anticipating the jury in the next.

I think, said Mr. Slick, we have a right to boast of the justiciary of our two great nations; for yourn is a great nation,—that *is* a fact; and if all your colonies were joined together, and added on to Old England, she would be most as great a nation as ourn. You have good reason to be proud of your judiciary, said I; if profound learning, exalted talent, and inflexible integrity can make an establishment respectable, the Supreme Court of the United States is pre-eminently

so; and I have heard, from those who have the honour of their acquaintance, that the judges are no less distinguished for their private worth than their public virtues. I rejoice that it is so, for I consider the justiciary of America as its sheet-anchor. Amidst the incessant change of men and institutions so conspicuous there, this forms a solitary exception. To the permanency and extensive power of this court you are indebted for the only check you possess, either to popular tumult or arbitrary power, affording, as it does, the only effectual means of controlling the conflicts of the local and general governments, and rendering their movements regular and harmonious.

It is so, said he; but your courts and ourn are both tarred with the same stick,—*they move too slow*. I recollect, once I was in old Kentuck, and a judge was sentencing a man to death for murder: says he, 'Sooner or later punishment is sure to overtake the guilty man. The law moves slow, but it is sure and sartain. Justice has been represented with a heel of lead, from its slow and measured pace, but its hand is a hand of iron, and its blow is death.' Folks said it was a beautiful idea that, and every chap that you met said, Ain't that splendid?—did ever old Mansfield or Ellen Borough come up to that?

Well, says I, they might come up to that, and not go very far neither. A funny sort o' figure of justice that; when it's so plaguy heavy-heeled, most any one can outrun it; and when its great iron fist strikes so uncommon slow, a chap that's any way spry is e'en a'most sure to give it the dodge. No; they ought to clap on more steam. The French courts are the courts for me. I had a case once in Marsailles, and if the judge didn't turn it out of hand ready hooped and headed in less than no time, it's a pity. But I believe I must first tell you how I came for to go there.

In the latter eend of the year twenty-eight, I think it was, if my memory sarves me, I was in my little back studio to Slickville, with off coat, apron on, and sleeves up, as busy as a bee, abronzin and gildin of a clock case, when old Snow, the nigger-help, popped in his head in a most a terrible of a conflustringation, and says he, master, says he, if there ain't Massa Governor and the Ginerat at the door, as I'm alive! what on airth shall I say? Well, says I, they have caught me at a nonplush, that's sartain; but there's no help for it as I see,—shew 'em in. Mornin, says I, gentlemen, how do you do? I am sorry, says I, I didn't know of this pleasure in time to have received you respectfully. You have taken me at short, that's a fact; and the worst of it is,—I can't shake hands along with you neither, for one hand, you see, is all covered with isle, and t'other with copper bronze. Don't mention it, Mr. Slick, said his excellency, I beg of you; the fine arts do sometimes require detergants, and there is no help for it. But that's a most a beautiful thing, said he, you

Christy's journal

are adoin of; may I presume to chatichise what it is? Why, said I, governor, that landscape on the right, with the great white two-story house in it, havin a washin tub of apple sarce on one side, and a cart chockfull of punkin pies on t'other, with the gold letters A. P. over it, is intended to represent this land of promise, our great country Amerika; and the gold letters A. P. initialise it Airthly Paradise. Well, says he, who is that *he* one on the left?—I didn't intend them letters H and E to indicate he at all, said I, tho' I see now they do; I guess I must alter that. That tall graceful figur', says I, with wings, carryin a long Bowie knife in his right hand, and them small winged figures in the rear, with little rifles, are angels emigratin from heaven to this country. H and E means heavenly emigrants.

Its alle—*go*—ry.—And a beautiful alle—*go*—ry it is, said he, and well calculated to give foreigners a correct notion of our young growin and great Republic. It is a fine conception that. It is worthy of West. How true to life—how much it conveys—how many chords it strikes. It addresses the heart—it's splendid.

Hallo! says I to myself, what's all this? It made me look up at him. Thinks I to myself, you laid that soft sawder on pretty thick anyhow. I wonder whether you are in rael right down airnest, or whether you are only arter a vote. Says he, Mr. Slick, it was on the subject of pictur's we called. It's a thing Im' enthusiastic upon myself; but my official duties leave me no time to fraternise with the brush. I 've been actilly six weeks adoin of a bunch of grapes on a chair, and it's not yet done. The department of paintin in our Atheneum,—in this risin and flourishin town of Slickville—is placed under the direction of the general and myself, and we propose detailing you to Italy to purchase some originals for our gallery, seein that you are a *native* artist yourself, and have more practical experience than most of our citizens. There is a great aspiration among our free and enlightened youth for perfection, whether in the arts or sciences. Your expenses will be paid, and eight dollars a day while absent on this diplomacy. One thing, however, do pray remember, don't bring any pictures that will evoke a blush on female cheeks, or cause vartue to stand afore 'em with averted eyes or indignant looks. The statues imported last year we had to clothe, both male and female, from head to foot, for they actilly came stark naked, and were right down ondecient. One of my factory ladies went into fits on seein 'em, that lasted her a good hour; she took Jupiter for a rael human, and said she thought she had got into a bathin room, among the men by mistake. Her narves received a heavy shock, poor critter; she said she never would forget what she seed there thelongest day she lived. So none o' your Potiphar's wives, or Susannahs, or sleepin Venuses; such picturs are repugnant to the high tone o'moral feelin in this country.

Oh Lord! I thought I should have split; I darsn't look up, for fear I should abust out alarfin in his face, to hear him talk so spooney about that are factory gall. Thinks I to myself, how delicate she is, ain't she! If a common marble statue threw her into fits, what would——. And here he laughed so immoderately it was some time before he resumed intelligibly his story.

Well, says he at last, if there is one thing I hate more nor another it is that cussed mock modesty some galls have, pretendin they don't know nothin. It always shows they know too much. Now, says his excellency, a pictur', Mr. Slick, may exhibit great skill and great beauty, and yet display very little flesh beyond the face and the hands. You apprehend me, don't you? A nod's as good as a wink, says I, to a blind horse; if I can't see thro' a ladder, I reckon I'm not fit for that mission; and, says I, tho' I say it myself, that shouldn't say it, I must say, I do account myself a considerable of a judge of these matters,—I won't turn my back on any one in my line in the Union. I think so, said he; the alle—go—ry you gist show'd mo displays taste, tact, and a copsummate knowledge of the art. Without genius there can be no invention,—no plot without skill; and no character without the power of discrimination. I should like to associate with you Ebenezer Peck, the Slickville Poet, in this diplomatic mission, if our funds authorise the exercise of this constitutional power of the executive committee, for the fine arts are closely allied, Mr. Slick. Poetry is the music of words, music is the poetry of sounds, and paintin is the poetry of colors;—what a sweet, interestin family they be, ain't they? We must locate, domesticate, acclimate, and fraternate them among us. Conceivin an elective governor of a free and enlightened people to rank afore an hereditary prince, I have given you letters of introduction to the *Eyetalian* princes and the Pope, and have offered to reciprocate their attentions should they visit Slickville. Farewell, my friend, farewell, and fail not to sustain the dignity of this great and enlightened nation abroad—farewell!

A very good man, the governor, and a genuwine patriot too, said Mr. Slick. He knowed a good deal about paintin, for he was a sign-painter by trade; but he often used to wade out too deep, and got over his head now and then afore he knowed it. He war'nt the best o' swimmers neither, and sometimes I used to be scared to death for fear he'd go for it afore he'd touch bottom ag'in. Well, off I sot in a vessel to Leghorn, and I laid out there three thousand dollars in pictur's. Rum-lookin old cocks them saints, some on 'em too, with their long beards, bald heads, and hard featur's, bean't they? but I got a lot of 'em of all sizes. I bought two madonnas, I think they call them—beautiful little picturs they were too,—but the child's legs were so naked and ondecnt, that to please the governor and his factory galls,

I had an artist to paint trousers, and a pair of lace boots on him, and they look quite genteel now. It improved 'em amazinly; but the best o' the joke was those Macaroni rascals seein me a stranger, thought to do me nicely (most infarnal cheats them dealers too,—walk right into you afore you know where you be). The older a pictur was and the more it was blacked, so you couldn't see the figurs, the more they axed for it; and they'd talk and jabber away about their Titty-tints and Guido airs by the hour. How soft we are, ain't we? said I, Catch a weasel asleep, will you? Second-hand farniture don't suit our market. We want picturs, and not things that look a plaguy sight more like the shutters of an old smoke-house than paintins, and I hope I may be shot if I didn't get bran new ones for half the price they axed for them rusty old vetrans. Our folks were well pleased with the shipment, and I ought to be too, for I made a trifle in the discount of fifteen per cent. for comin down handsome with the cash on the spot. Our Athencum is worth seein, I tell you; you won't ditto it easy, I know; it's actilly a sight to behold.

But I was agoin to tell you about the French court. Arter I closed the consarn about the picturs, and shipped 'em off in a Cape coddor that was there, I fell in with some of our folks on their way to London, where I had to go to afore I returned home; so, says I, s'pose we hire a vessel in Co. and go by water to Marsailles; we'll get on faster and considerable cheaper too, I calculate, than agoin by land. Well, we hired an *Eyetaliano* to take us, and he was to find us in bed, board, and liquor, and we paid him one-third in advance, to enable him to do it genteel; but the everlastin villain, as soon as he got us out to sea, gave us no bed-clothes and nothin to eat, and we almost perished with hunger and damp; so when we got to Marsailles, Meo friendo, says I, for I had picked up a little *Eyetaliano*, meo friendo, cumma longo alla courto, will you? and I took him by the scruff of the neck and toated him into court. Where is de pappia? says a little skip-jack of a French judge, that was chock full of grins and grimaces like a monkey arter a pinch of snuff,—where is de pappia? So I handed him up the pappia signed by the master, and then proved how he cheated us. No sooner said than done, Mount Shear Bullfrog gave the case in our favour in two twos, said *Eyetaliano* had got too much already, cut him off the other two thirds, and made him pay all costs. If he didn't look bumsquabbled it's a pity. It took the rust off of him pretty slick, you may depend.

Begar, he says to the skipper, you keep de bargain next time; you von very grand damne rogue, and he shook his head and grinned like a crocodile, from ear to ear, all mouth and teeth. You may depend, I warn't long at Marsailles arter that. I cut stick and off, hot foot for the channel, without stopping to water the horses or liquor the drivers, for fear *Eyetaliano* would walk into my ribs with his stiletto

for he was as savage as a white bear afore breakfast. Yes, our courts move too slow. It was that ruined Expected Thorne. The first time he was taken up and sent to jail, he was as innocent as a child, but they kept him there so long afore his trial, it broke his spirits, and broke his pride,—and he came out as wicked as a devil. *The great secret is speedy justice.* We have too much machinery in our courts, and I don't see but what we prize juries beyond their rael vally. One half the time with us they don't onderstand a thing, and the other half they are prejudiced. True, said I, but they are a great safeguard to liberty, and indeed the only one in all cases between the government and the people. The executive can never tyrannise where they cannot convict; and juries never lend themselves to oppression. Tho' a corrupt minister may appoint corrupt judges, he can never corrupt a whole people. Well, said he, far be it from me to say they are no use, because I know and feel that they be in sertain cases most invaluable, but I mean to say that they are only a drag on business, and an expensive one too, one half the time. I want no better tribunal to try me or my cases than our supreme judges to Washington, and all I would ax is a resarved right to have a jury when I call for one. That right I never would yield, but that is all I would ax. You can see how the lawyers vally each by the way they talk to 'em. To the court they are as cool as cucumbers,—dry argument, sound reasonin, an application to judgment. To the jury, all fire and tow and declamations,—all to the passions, prejudices, and feel-ins. The one they try to convince, they try to *do* the other. I never heerd tell of judges chalkin. I know brother Josiah the lawyer thinks so too. Says he to me once, Sam, says he, they ain't suited to the times now in all cases, and are only needed occasionally. *When juries first came into vogue* there were no judges, but the devil of it is when public opinion runs all one way, in this country you might just as well try to swim up Niagara as to go for to stem it,—it will roll you over and over, and squash you to death at last. You may *say* what you like here, Sam, but other folks may *do* what they like here too. Many a man has had a goose's jacket lined with tar here, that he never bought at the tailor's, and a tight fit it is too, considerin its made without measurin. So as I'm for Congress some day or another, why, I gist fall to and flatter the people by chimin in with them. I get up on a stump, or the top of a whiskey barrel, and talk as big as any on 'em about that birth-right—that sheet anchor, that mainstay, that blessed shield, that glorious institution—the rich man's terror, the poor man's hope, the people's pride, the nation's glory—
Trial by Jury.

CHAPTER XLV.

SHAMPOOING THE ENGLISH.

DIGBY is a charming little town. It is the Brighton of Nova Scotia, the resort of the valetudinarians of New Brunswick, who take refuge here from the unrelenting fogs, hopeless sterility, and calcareous waters of St. John. About as pretty a location this for business, said the Clockmaker, as I know on in this country. Digby is the only safe harbour from Blowmedown to Briar Island. Then there is that everlastin long river runnin away up from the wharfs here almost across to Minas Basin, bordered with dikes and interval, and backed up by good upland. A nice, dry, pleasant place for a town, with good water, good air, and the best herrin fishery in America, but it wants one thing to make it go ahead. And pray what is that? said I, for it appears to me to have every natural advantage that can be desired. It wants to be made a free port, said he. They ought to send a delegate to England about it; but the fact is, they don't understand diplomacy here, nor the English either. They hav'n't got no talents that way.

I guess we may stump the univarse in that line. Our statesmen, I consait, *do* understand it. They go about so beautiful, tack so well, sail so close by the wind, make so little lee-way, shoot ahead so fast, draw so little water, keep the lead agoin constant, and a bright look-out a-head always; it's very seldom you hear o' them runnin aground, I tell *you*. Hardly any thing they take in hand they don't succeed in. How glib they are in the tongue too! how they *do* lay in the soft sawder! They *do* rub John Bull down so pretty, it does one good to see 'em: they pat him on the back, and stroke him on the cheek, and coax and wheedle and flatter, till they gist get what they like out of him; not a word of a threat to *him* tho', for they know it won't do. He'd as soon fight as eat his dinner, and sooner too, but they tickle him, as the boys at Cape Ann sarve the bladder fish. There's a fish comes ashore there at ebb tide, that the boys catch and tickle, and the more they tickle him the more he fills with wind. Well, he gets blowed up as full as he can hold, and then they just turn him up and give him a crack across the belly with a stick, and off he goes like a pop-gun, and then all the little critters run hoopin and hallowin like ravin distracted mad,—so pleased with foolin the old fish.

There are no people in the univarsal world so eloquent as the Americans; they beat the ancients all hollar; and when our diplomatists go for to talk it into the British, they do it so pretty, it's a sight to

behold. Descended, they say, from a common stock, havin one common language, and a *community of interests*, they cannot but hope for justice from a power distinguished alike for its honour and its generosity. Indebted to them for the spirit of liberty they enjoy,—for their laws, literature, and religion,—they feel more like allies than aliens, and more like relatives than either. Though unfortunate occurrences may have drawn them asunder, with that frankness and generosity peculiar to a brave and generous people, both nations have now forgotten and forgiven the past, and it is the duty and the interest of each to cultivate these amicable relations, now so happily existing, and to draw closer those bonds which unite two people essentially the same in habits and feelings. Though years have rolled by since they left the paternal roof, and the ocean divides them, yet they cannot but look back at the home beyond the waters with a grateful remembrance,—with veneration and respect.

Now that's what I call dictionary, said the Clockmaker. It's splendid penmanship, aint it? When John Adams was minister at the Court of St. James's, how his weak eye would have sarved him a'utterin of this galbanum, wouldn't it? He'd turn round to hide emotion, draw forth his handkerchief and wipe off a manly tear of genuine feelin. It is easy enough to stand a woman's tears, for they weep like children, everlastin sun showers: they cry as bad as if they used a chestnut burr for an eyestone; but to see the tear drawn from the starn natur of man, star!in at the biddin of generous feelin, there's no standin that. Oh dear! how John Bull swallows this soft sawder, don't he? I think I see him astandin with his hands in his trousers-pockets, alookin as big as all outdoors, and as sour as cider sot out in the sun for vinegar. At first he looks suspicious and sulky, and then one haughty frown relaxes, and then another, and so on, till all starnness is gone, and his whole face wears one great benevolent expression, like a full moon, till you can eye him without winkin, and lookin about as intelligent all the time as a skim milk cheese. Arter his stare is gone, a kind o' look comes over his face as if he thought, Well, now, this d——d Yankey sees his error at last, and no mistake; that comes o' that good liekin I gave him last war: there's nothin like fightin things out. The critter seems humble enough now tho'; give me your fist, Jonathan, my boy, says he; don't look so cussed dismal: what is it?

Oh, nothin, says our diplomatist; a mere trifle, and he tries to look as onconsarned as possible all the time; nothin but what your sense of justice, for which you are always distinguished, will grant; a little strip of land, half fog half bog, atween the State of Maine and New Brunswick; it's nothin but wood, water, and snakes, and no bigger than Scotland. Take it, and say no more about it, says John; I hope it will be accepted as a proof of my regard. I don't think

nothin of half a colony. And then when our chap gets home to the President, don't he say, as Expected Thorne did of the Blue-nose jury, ' *Didn't I do him pretty? cuss him, that's all.*'

Then he takes Mount-Sheer on another tack. He desires to express the gratitude of a free and enlightened people to the French,—their first ally, their dearest friend,—for enablin them, under Providence, to lay the foundation-stone of their country. They never can forget how kindly, how *disinterestedly*, they stept in to aid their infant struggles,—to assist them to resist the unnatural tyranny of England, who, while affectin to protect liberty abroad, was enslavin her children to home. Nothin but the purest feelin, unalloyed by any jealousy of England, dictated that step; it emanated from a virtuous indignation at seein the strong oppress the weak,—from a love of constitutional freedom,—from pure philanthropy. How deeply is scated in American breasts a veneration of the French character! how they admire their sincerity,—their good faith,—their stability! Well may they be called the Grand Nation! Religious, not bigoted—brave, not rash—dignified, not volatile—great, yet not vain! Magnanimous in success,—cheerful and resolved under reverses,—they form the beau-ideal to American youth, who are taught, in their first lessons, to emulate, and imitate, and venerate the virtues of their character! Don't it run off the tongue like oil? Soft and slick, ain't it pretty talk?

Lord! how Mount-Sheer skips, and hops, and bows, and smirks when he hears that are, don't he? How he claps his hand upon his heart, and makes faces like a monkey that's got a pain in his side from swallowin a nut without crackin it. With all other folks, but these great powers, it's a very different tune they sing. They make short metre with them little powers; they never take the trouble to talk much; they gist make their demands, and ax them for their answer, right off the reel. If they say, let us hear your reasons? Oh! by all means, says our diplomatist, just come along with me; and he takes the minister under his arm, walks lock and lock with him down to the harbour, claps him aboard a barge, and rows him off to one of our little hundred gun sloops of war. Pretty little sloop o' war, that of ourn, I reckon, ain't it? says he. Oh! very pretty, very pretty, indeed, says foreigner; but if that be your *little* sloop, what must be your *great big* man'-o'-war? That's just what I was agoin for to say, says Jonathan,—a Leviathan, a Mammoth, blow all creation to atoms a'most, like a hurricane tipt with lightning, and then he looks up to the captain and nods. Says he, captain, I guess you may run out your guns, and he runs them out as quick as wink. These are my reasons, says Jonathan, and pretty strong arguments too, I guess; that's what I call shewin our teeth; and now you, mister, with a d——n hard name, your answer, if you please.

You don't understand us, I see, foreigner; we got chaps in our country, that can stand on one side of the Mississippi, and kill a racoon on t'other side, with a sneeze,—rigular ring-tail roarers: don't provoke us; it wouldn't be over safe, I assure you. We can out-talk thunder, out-run a flash of lightnin, and out-reach all the world—we can whip our weight of wild cats. The British can lick all the world, and we can lick the British. I believe, says he, and he claps his name to the treaty in no time. We made these second-class gentry shell out a considerable of cash, these few years past, on one excuse or another, and frightened some on them, as the naked statue did the factory gill, into fits a'most. But the English we have to soft sawder, for they've got little sloops of war, too, as well as we have; and not only shew their teeth, but bite like bull-dogs. We shampoo them,—you know what shampooing is, squire, dont you? It is an Eastern custom, I think, said I: I have heard of it, but I do not retain a very distinct recollection of the practice. Well, said the Clockmaker, I estimate I ought to know what it means any how? for I came plaguy nigh losin my life by it once. When I was gist twenty years old, I took it into my head I'd like to go to sea, *so father got me a berth of supercargo of a whaler at New Bedford,* and away we went arter sperm; an amazin long voyage we had of it too—gone nearly three years. Well, we put into Sandwich Island for refreshments; and says the captain, 'Spouse we go and call on the queen! So all us cabin party went, and dressed ourselves up full fig, and were introduced in due form to the young queen. Well, she was a rael, right-down, pretty lookin heifer, and no mistake; well-dressed and well demeaned, and a plaguy sight clearer skin'd than some white folks—for they bathe every day a'most. Where you'd see one piece of furniture better than her, you'll see fifty worsor ones, I know.

What is your father, Mr Shleek? says she. A prince, marm, said I. And his'n ugly man's? says she, p'intin to the captain. A prince too, said I, and all his party are princes; fathers all sovereigns to home,—no bigger men than them, neither there nor any where else in the univarsal world. Then, said she, you all dine wid me to-day; me proud to have de prinches to my table.

If she didn't give us a rigular blow-out, it's a pity, and the whole on us were more than half-seas over; for my part, the hot mulled wine actilly made me feel like a prince, and what put me in tip-top spirits was the idea of the hoax I played off on her about our bein princes; and then my rosy cheeks and youth pleased her fancy, so that she was uncommon civil to me—talked to no one else a'most. Well, when we rose from table (for she stayed there till the wine made her eyes twinkle ag'in), prince Shleek, said she, atakin o' my hand, and puttin her saucy little mug close up to me (and she raelly did look pretty,

all smiles and sweetness), Prince Shleek, will you have one shampoo? said she. A shampoo? said I; to be sure I will, and thank you too; you are gist the girl I'd like to shampoo, and I clapt my arms round her neck, and gave her a buss that made all ring again. What the devil are you at? said the captain, and he seized me round the waist and lugged me off. Do you want to lose your head, you fool, you? said he: you've carried this joke too far already, without this rompin—go aboard. It was lucky for me she had a veg drop in her eye herself—for arter the first scream she larfed ready to split; says she, No kissy, no kissy—shampoo is shampoo, but kissy is anoder ting. The noise brought the sarvants in, and says the queen, p'intin to me, 'shampoo him'—and they up with me, and into another room, and before I could say Jack Robinson, off went my clothes, and I was getting shampoo'd in airnest. It is done by a gentle pressure, and rubbin all over the body with the hand; it is delightful—that's a fact, and I was soon asleep.

I was pretty well corned that arternoon, but still I knew what I was about; and recollected when I awoke the whisper of the captain at partin—'Mind your eye, Slick, if ever you want to see Cape Cod ag'in.' So, airly next mornin, while it was quite moony yet, I went aboard, and the captain soon put to sea, but not before there came a boat-load of pigs and two bullocks off to 'Prince Shleek.' So our diplomatists shampoo the English, and put 'em to sleep. How beautiful they shampoo'd them in the fishery story. It was agreed we was to fish within three leagues of the coast; but then, says Jonathan, wood and water, you know, and shelter, when it blows like great guns, are rights of hospitality. You wouldn't refuse us a port in a storm, would you? so noble, so humane, so liberal, so confidin as you be. Certainly not, says John Bull; it would be inhuman to refuse either shelter, wood, or water. Well, then, if there was are a snug little cove not settled, disarted like, would you have any objection to our dryin our fish there?—they might spile, you know, so far from home;—a little act of kindness like, that would bind us to you for ever and ever, and amen. Certainly, says John, it's very reasonable that—you are perfectly welcome—happy to oblige you. It was all we wanted, an excuse for enterin, and now we are in and out when we please and smuggle like all vengeance: got the whole trade and the whole fishery. It was splendidly done, warn't it?

Well, then, we did manage the boundary line capitally too. We know we haven't got no title to that land—*it wasn't given to us by the treaty, and it warn't in our possession when we declared independence or made peace.* But our maxim is, it is better to get things by treaty than by war; it is more Christian-like, and more intellectual. To gain that land, we asked the navigation of the St. Lawrence and the St. John, which we knew would never be granted; but then it

gave us somethin to concede on our part, and brag on as liberal, and it is nateral and right for the English to concede on their side somethin too,—so they will concede the disputed territory.

Ah, squire, said he, your countrymen may have a good heart, and I believe they have; indeed, it would be strange if a full puss didn't make a full heart; but they have a most plaguy poor head, that's a fact.—This was rather too bad. To be first imposed upon and then ridiculed, was paying rather too heavy a penalty for either negligence or ignorance. There was unhappily too much truth in the remark for me to join in the laugh. If your diplomatists, said I, have in one or two instances been successful by departing from the plain intelligible path, and resorting to flattery and cunning (arts in which I regret to say diplomatists of all nations are too apt to indulge), it is a course which carries its own cure; and, by raising suspicion and distrust, will hereafter impose difficulties in their way even when their objects are legitimate and just. I should have thought that the lesson read on a celebrated occasion (which you doubtless remember) by Mr. Canning, would have dictated the necessity of caution for the future. Recollect that confidence once withdrawn is seldom restored again. You have, however, omitted to state your policy with Russia.—Oh! said he, Old Nick in the North is sarved in the same way.

Excuse me, said I (for I felt piqued), but if you will permit me I will suggest some observations to you relative to Russia that may not have occurred to you. Your diplomatists might address the Emperor thus: May it please your Majesty, there is an astonishing resemblance between our two countries; in fact there is little or no difference except in name,—the same cast of countenance, same family likeness, same Tartar propensity to change abode. All extremes meet. You take off folk's heads without law, so do our mobs. You send fellows to Siberia, our mobs send them to the devil. No power on airth can restrain you, no power on airth can restrain our mobs. You make laws and break 'em as suits your convenience, so do our lynchers. You don't allow any one to sport opinions you don't hold, or you stifle them and their opinions too. It's just so with us; our folks forbid all talkin about niggers; and if a man forgets himself, he is reminded of it by his head supportin his body instead of his heels. You have got a liquorish mouth for fertile lands beyond your borders, so have we; and yet both have got more land than tenants. You foment troubles among your neighbours, and then step in to keep the peace, and hold possession when you get there, so do we. You are a great slave holder, so are we. Folks accuse you of stealin Poland, the same libellin villains accuse us of stealin Texas, and a desire to have Canada too; and yet the one is as much without foundation as the other. You plant colonies in Tartar lands, and then drive out the

owners : we sarve the Indians the same way. You have extarminated some of your enemies, we've extarminated some of ourn. Some folks say your empire will split to pieces—it's too big ; the identical same prophecy they make of us, and one is just about as likely as the other. Every man in Russia must bow to the pictur of his Emperor ; every man must bow to the pictur ef our great nation, and swear through thick and thin he admirès it more nor any thing on the face of the airth. Every man in Russia may say what he likes *if he dare*, so he may in the U-nited States. If foreign newspapers abusin Polish matters get into the Russian mail, the mail is broken open and they are taken out : if abolition papers get into the Southern mail, our folks break open the bags and burn 'em, as they did at Charleston. The Law institutes no enquiries in your dominions as to your acts of execution, spoliation, and exile ; neither is there any inquest with us on similar acts of our mobs. There is no freedom of the press with you, neither is there with us. If a paper offends you, you stop it : if it offends our sovereigns, they break the machinery, gut the house, and throw the types into the street ; and if the printer escapes, he may thank God for giving him a good pair of legs. In short, they may say to him—it's generally allowed the freedom of one country is as like the despotism of the other as two peas—no soul could tell the difference ; and therefore there ought to be an actual as there is a natural alliance between us. And then the cunnin critters, if they catch him alone where they won't be overheard, they may soft sawder him, by tellin him they never knew before the blessin of havin only one tyrant instead of a thousand, and that it is an amendment they intended to propose to the constitution when they return home, and hope they'll yet live to see it. From this specimen, you may easily perceive that it requires no great penetration or ability to deceive even an acute observer whenever recourse is had to imagination for the facts. How far this parallel holds good I leave you to judge ; I desire to offer you no offence, but I wish you to understand that all the world are not in love with your republican institutions or your people, and that both are better understood than you seem to suppose. Well, well, says he, I didn't mean to ryle you, I do assure you ; but if you hav'n't made a good story out of a Southern mob or two, neither of which are half as bad as your Bristol riot or Irish frays, it's a pity. Arter all, said he, I don't know whether it wouldn't comport more with our dignity to go strait ahead. I believe it's in politics as in other matters, *honesty is the best policy*.

Smithfield

Smithfield

Smithfield

CHAPTER XLVI.

PUTTING A FOOT IN IT.

ONE amusing trait in the Clockmaker's character was his love of contradiction. If you suggested any objection to the American government he immediately put himself on the defensive; and if hard pressed, extricated himself by changing the topic. At the same time he would seldom allow me to pass a eulogy upon it without affecting to consider the praise as misapplied, and as another instance of 'our not understanding them.' In the course of our conversation I happened to observe that the American government was certainly a very cheap one; and that the economy practised in the expenditure of the public revenue, tho' in some instances carried so far as to border on meanness, was certainly a very just subject of national pride. Ah, said he, I always said, 'you don't understand us.' Now it happens that this is one of the few things, if you were only availed of it, that you could fault us in. It is about the most costly government in the world, considering our means. We are actilly eat up by it—it is a most plaguy sore, and has spread so like statice that it has got its root into the very core. Cheap government!—well, come, that beats all!!

I should like to know, said I, how you can make that appear, for the salaries paid to your public officers are not only small, but absolutely mean; and, in my opinion, wholly inadequate to procure the services of the best and most efficient men. Well, said he, which costs most, to keep one good horse well, or half a dozen poor ones ill, or to keep ten rael complete good servants, or fifty lazy, idle, do-nothin critters? because that's gist our case,—we have too many of 'em all together. We have twenty-four independent states, beside the general government; we have therefore twenty-five presidents, twenty-five secretaries of state, twenty-five treasurers, twenty-five senates, twenty-five houses of representatives, and fifty attorney generals, and all our legislators are paid, every soul of 'em; and so are our magistrates, for they all take fees and seek the office for pay, so that we have as many paid legislators as soldiers, and as many judges of all sorts and sizes as sailors in our navy. Put all these expenses together, of state government, and general government, and see what an awful sum it comes to, and then tell me it's a cheap government. True, said I, but you have not that enormous item of expenditure known in England under the name of half pay. We have more officers of the navy on half pay than you have in your navy al-

together. So much the better for you, says he, for ourn are all on full pay, and when they ain't employed we set 'em down as absent on leave. Which costs the most, do you suppose? That comes of not callin things by their right names, you see. Our folks know this, but our popularity seekin patriots have all their own interest in multiplyin these offices; yes, our folks have put their foot in it; that's a fact. They cling to it as the bear did to Jack Fogler's mill-saw, and I guess it will sarve them the same way. Did I never tell you that are story? for I'm most afeard sometimes I've got father's fashion of tellin my stories over twice. No, said I, it is new to me; I have never heard it. Well says he, I will tell you how it was.

Jack Fogler lives to Nictau-road, and he keeps a saw-mill and tavern; he's a sneezer that feller; he's near hand to seven feet high, with shoulders as broad as a barn-door; he is a giant, that's a fact, and can twitch a mill-log as easy as a yoke of oxen can—nothin never stops him. But that's not all, for I've seen a man as big as all out doors afore him; but he has a foot that beats all—folks call him the man with the foot. The first time I seed him I could not keep my eyes off of it. I actilly could not think of any thing else. Well, says I, Jack, your foot is a whopper, that's a fact; I never seed the beat of that in all my born days,—it beats Gasper Zwicher's all holler, and his is so big, folks say he has to haul his trousers on over his head. Yes, says he, lawyer Yule says it passes *all under-standin*. Well, he has a darter most as big as he is, but for all that she is near about as pretty a gall as I ever laid eyes on, but she has her father's foot; and, poor thing, she can't bear to hear tell of it. I mind once when I came there, there was no one to home, and I had to see to old Clay myself; and arter I had done, I went in and sot down by the fire and lighted a cigar. Arter a while in come Lucy, looking pretty tired. Why, said I, Lucy, dear, where on airth have you been? you look pretty well beat out. Why, says she, the bears are plaguy thick this while past, and have killed some of our sheep, so I went to the woods to drive the flock home ag'in night-fall, and, fogs! I lost my way. I've been gone ever so long, and I don't know as I'd even afound my way out ag'in, if I hadn't a met Bill Zink alookin up his sheep, and he shewed me the way out.

Thinks I to myself, let the galls alone for an excuse; I see how the cat jumps. Well, says I, Lucy, you are about the luckiest gall I ever seed. Possible, says she;—how's that? Why, says I, many's the gall I've known that's lost her way with a sweetheart afore now, and got on the wrong track; but you're the first one ever I seed that got put on the right way by one, any how. Well, she larfed, and says she, you men always suspect evil; it shows how bad you must be yourselves. Perhaps it may be so, says I, but mind your eye, and take care you *don't put your foot in it*. She looked at me the

matter of a minute or so without sayin a word, and then burst out acry'n. She said, if she had such an awful big foot, it warn't her fault, and it was very onkind to larf at it to her face—that way. Well, I felt proper sorry too, you may depend, for I vow she was so oncommon handsom, I had never noticed that big foot of hern till then. I had hardly got her pacified when in come Jack, with two halves of a bear, and threw 'em down on the floor, and larfed ready to kill himself. I never see the beat o' that, said he, since I was raised from a seedlin. I never see a feller so taken in in all *my* life—that's a fact. Why, says I, what is it? It was some time afore he could speak ag'in for larfin—for Jack was considerable in the wind, pretty nearly half shaved. At last, says he, you know my failin, Mr. Slick: I like a drop of grog better than it likes me. Well, when the last rain came, and the brook was pretty considerable full, I kag'd for a month (that is, said the Clockmaker, he had taken an oath to abstain from drawing liquor from the keg—they calls it kaggin), and my kag was out to-day at twelve o'clock. Well, I had just got a log on the ways when the sun was on the twelve o'clock line, so I stops the mill and takes out my dinner, and sets it down on the log, and then runs up to the house to draw off a bottle of rum. When I returned, and was just about to enter the mill, what should I see but that are bear asittin on the pine stick in the mill acatin of my dinner, so I gist backs out, takes a good swig out of the bottle, and lays it down, to run off home for the gun, when, says I to myself, says I, he'll make a plaguy sight shorter work of that are dinner than I would, and when he's done he'll not wait to wipe his mouth with the towel neither. May be he'll be gone afore I gets back, so I gist crawls under the mill—pokes up a stiek thro' the j'ice, and starts the plug, and sets the mill agoin. Well, the motion was so easy, and he was so busy, he never moves, and arter a little the saw just gives him a scratch on the back; well, he growls and shoves forward a bit on his rump; presently it gives him another scratch, with that he wheels short round and lays right hold of it, and gives it a most devil of a hug with his paws, and afore he knowed what he was about it pinned him down and sawed him right in two, he squelin and kickin and singin out like a good feller the whole blessed time. Thinks I, *he put his foot in it*, that feller, any how.

Yes, our folks have put their foot in it; a cheap article ain't always the best; if you want a rael right down first chop, *genuine* thing, you must pay for it. Talent and integrity ain't such common things anywhere, that they are to be had for half nothin. A man that has them two things can go a-head anywhere, and if you want him to give up his own consarns to see arter those of the public, and don't give him the fair market price for 'em, he is plaguy apt to put his integrity in his pocket, and put his talents to usury. What he

o' log / spec.

Joe said

from said

omong
giggle

loses one way he makes up another; if he can't get it out of his pay, he takes it out of parquisesites, jobs, patronage, or somethin or another. Folks won't sarve the public for nothin, no more than they will each other free-gratis. An honest man won't take office, if it won't support him properly, but a dishonest one will, 'cause he won't stand about trifles, but goes the whole figur—and where you have a good many such critters as public sarvants—why, a little slip of the pen or trip of the foot, ain't thought nothin of, and the tone of public feelin is lowered, till at last folks judge of a man's dishonesty by the 'cuteness of it. If the slight-o'-hand ain't well done, they say, when he is detected, he is a fool—cuss him it sarves him right; but if it is done so slick that you can't hardly see it even when it's done afore your eyes, people say, a fine bold stroke that—splendid business talent—that man—considerable powers—a risin character,—eend by bein a great man in the long un.

You recollect the story of the quaker and his insurance, don't you? He had a vessel to sea that he hadn't heerd of for a considerable time, and he was most plaguily afeerd she had gone for it; so he sent an order to his broker to insure her. Well, next day he larnt *the vessel* for sertain that she was lost, so what does he do but writes to his broker, as if he meant to save the premium by recallin the order: If thee hast not insured, thee need'st not do it, esteemed friend, for I have heerd of the vessel. The broker, thinkin it would be all clear gain, falls right into the trap; tells him his letter came too late, for he had effected the insurance half an hour afore it arrived. Verily, I am sorry for thee, friend, said the quaker, if that be the case, for a heavy loss will fall on thee; of a sertainity I have heerd of the vessel, but she is lost. Now that was what I call handsom; it showed great talents that, and a knowledge of human natur and soft sawder.

I thought, said I, that your annual parliaments, universal suffrage, and system of rotation of office, had a tendency to prevent corruption, by removing the means and the opportunity to any extent. Well, it would, perhaps, to a certain point, said the Clockmaker, if you knew where that point was, and could stop there; but wherever it is, I am afeerd we have passed it. Annual parliaments bring in so many raw hands every year, that they are gist like pawns in the game of chess, only fit for tools to move about and count while the game is played by the bigger ones. They get so puzzled—the critters, with the forms o' the house, that they put me in mind of a feller standin up for the first time in a quadrille. One tells him to cross over here, and afore he gets there another calls him back ag'in; one pushes him to the right, and another to the left; he runs ag'in every body, and every body runs ag'in him; he treads on the heels of the galls, and takes their skin and their shoes off, and they tread on his toes, and

return the compliment to his corns ; he is no good in natur, except to bother folks and put them out. The old hands that have been there afore, and cut their eye-teeth, know how to bam these critters, and make 'em believe the moon is made of green cheese. That gives great power to the master movers, and they are enabled to spikelate handsom in land stock, bank stock, or any other corporate stock, for they can raise or depress the article gist as they please by legislative action.

There was a grand legislative speck made not long since, called the pre-emption speck. A law was passed, that all who had settled on government lands without title, should have a right of pre-emption at a very reduced price, below common upset sum, if application was made on a particular day. The jobbers watched the law very sharp, and the moment it passed, off they sot with their gangs of men and a magistrate, camped out all night on the wild land, made the affidavits of settlement, and run on till they went over a most—a deuce of a tract of country, that was all picked out afore-hand for them ; then returned their affidavits to the office, got the land at pre-emption rate, and turned right round and sold it at market price—pocketed the difference—and netted a most handsom thing by the spec.

Them pet banks was another splendid affair ; it deluged the land with corruption that,—it was too bad to think on. When the government is in the many, as with us, and rotation of office is the order of the day, there is a nateral tendency to multiply offices, so that every one can get his share of 'em, and it increases expenses, breeds office-seekers, and corrupts the whole mass. It is in politics as in farmin,—one large farm is worked at much less expense and much greater profit, and is better in many ways, than half a dozen small ones ; and the head farmer is a more 'sponsible man, and better to do in the world, and more influence than the small fry. Things are letter done too on *his* farm—the tools are better : the teams are better, and the crops are better : it's better altogether. Our first-rate men ain't in politics with us. It don't pay 'em, and they won't go thro' the mill for it. Our principle is to consider all public men rogues, and to watch 'em well that they keep straight. Well, I ain't jist altogether certified that this don't help to make 'em rogues ; where *there is no confidence, there can be no honesty* ; locks and keys are good things, but if you can't never trust a sarvant with a key he don't think the better of his master for all his suspicions, and is plaguy apt to get a key of his own. Then they do get such a drill thro' the press, that no man that thinks any great shakes of himself can stand it. A feller must have a hide as thick as a bull's to bear all the lashing our public men get the whole blessed time, and if he can bear it without winkin, it's more perhaps than his family can.

And he's
 a most—

And he's

There's nothin in office that's worth it. So our best men ain't in office—they can't submit to it.

I knew a judge of the state court of New York, a first chop man too, give it up, and take the office of clerk in the identical same court. He said he couldn't afford to be a judge; it was only them who couldn't make a livin by their practice that it would suit. No, squire, it would be a long story to go through the whole thing; but we ain't the cheapest government in the world,—that's a fact. When you come to visit us and go deep into the matter, and see general government and state government, and local taxes and general taxes, although the items are small, the sum total is a'most a swingin large one, I tell you. You take a shop account, and read it over. Well, the thing appears reasonable enough, and cheap enough; but if you have been arunnin in and out pretty often, and goin the whole figur, add it up to the bottom, and if it don't make you stare and look corner ways, it's a pity.

What made me first of all think o' these things, was seein how they got on in the colonies: why, the critters don't pay no taxes at all a'most—they actilly don't deserve the name o' taxes. They don't know how well they're off—that's sartin. I mind when I used to be agrumblin to home when I was a body about knee high to a goose or so, father used to say, Sam, if you want to know how to valy home, you should go abroad for a while among strangers. It ain't all gold that glitters, my boy. You'd soon find out what a nice home you've got; for mind what I tell you, home is home, however homely,—that's a fact. These Blue-noses ought to be jist sent away from home a little while; if they were, when they returned, I guess, they'd larn how to valy their location. It's a lawful colony this,—things do go on rig'lar,—a feller can rely on law here to defend his property,—he needn't do as I seed a squatter to Ohio do once. I had stopt at his house one day to bait my horse; and in the course of conversation about matters and things in general, says I, What's your title? is it from government or purchased from settlers?—I'll tell you, Mr. Slick, he says, what my title is,—and he went in and took his rifle down and brought it to the door. Do you see that are hen, said he, with the topknot on, afeedin by the fence there?—Yes, says I, I do.—Well, says he, see that; and he put a ball right through the head of it. *That*, said he, I reckon is my title; and that's the way I'll sarve any tarnation scoundrel that goes for to meddle with it. Says I, if that's your title, depend on it you won't have many fellers troublin you with claims.—I rather guess not, said he, larfin; and the lawyers won't be over farrard to buy such claims on spekilation,—and he wiped his rifle, reloaded her, and hung her up ag'in. There's nothin of that kind here.

But as touchin the matter o' cheap government, why, it's as well

as not for our folks to hold out that ourn is so; but the truth is, atween you and me, though I wouldn't like you to let on to any one I said so, the truth is, somehow or another, *we've put our foot in it*—that's a fact.

CHAPTER XLVII.

ENGLISH ARISTOCRACY AND YANKEE MOBOCRACY.

WHEN we have taken our tower, said the Clockmaker, I estimate I will return to the U-nited States for good and all. You had ought to visit our great nation, you may depend: it's the most splendid location atween the poles. History can't show nothin like it: you might bile all creation down to an essence, and not get such a concrete as New England. It's a sight to behold twelve millions of free and enlightened citizens, and I guess we shall have all these provinces, and all South America. There is no eend to us; old Rome, that folks made such a touss about, was nothin to us—it warn't fit to hold a candle to our federal government,—that's a fact. I intend, said I, to do so before I go to Europe, and may perhaps avail myself of your kind offer to accompany me. Js an Englishman well received in your country now? Well, he is now, said Mr. Slick; the last war did that; we licked the British into a respect for us: and if it warn't that they are so plaguy jealous of our factories, and so invyus of our freedom, I guess we should be considerable sociable, but they can't stomach our glorious institutions no how. *They don't understand us.* Father and our minister used to have great arguments about the British. Father hated them like pyson, as most of our revolutionary heroes did: but minister used to stand up for 'em considerable stiff.

I mind one evenin arter hay harvest, father said to me, Sam, said he, 'spose we go down and see minister; I guess he's a little miffey with me, for I brought him up all standin t'other night by sayin the English were a damned overbearin tyrannical race, and he hadn't another word to say. When you make use of such language as that are, Colonel Slick, said he, there's an eend of all conversation.—I allow it is very disrespectful to swear afore a minister, and very unhandsum to do so at all, and I don't approbate such talk at no rate. So we will drop the subject if you please. Well, I got pretty grumpy and we parted in a huff. I think myself, says father, it warn't pretty to swear afore him; for Sam, if there is a good man agoin it is minister,—that's a fact. But, Sam, says he, we military men,—and he straightened himself up considerable stiff, and pulled up his

collar, and looked as fierce as a lion,—we military men, says he, have a habit of rappin out an oath now and then. Very few of our heroes didn't swear; I recollect that tarnation fire-eater, General Gates, when he was in our sarvice, ordered me once to attack a British outpost, and I didn't much more than half like it. General, says I, there's a plaguy stone wall there, and the British have lined it, I guess; and I 'm athinkin it ain't altogether gist safe to go too near it. D—m—n,—Captain Slick, says he,—(I was gist made a Captain then)—d—m—n,—Captain Slick, says he, ain't there two sides to a stone wall? Don't let me hear the like ag'in from you, said he, Captain, or I hope I may be tetotally and effectually d—d if I don't break you—! I will, by gosh! He warn't a man to be trifled with, you may depend; so I drew up my company, and made at the wall double quick, expectin every minit would be our last.

Gist as we got near the fence, I heerd a ^{scramblin} and a scuddin behind it, and I said, now, says I, for'ard, my boys, for your lives! hot foot, and down onder the fence on your bellies! and then we shall be as safe as they be, and p'rhaps we can loophole 'em. Well, we gist hit it, and got there without a shot, and down on our faces as flat as flounders. Presently we heerd the British run for dear life, and take right back across the road, full split. Now, says I, my hearties, up and let drive at 'em, right over the wall! Well, we got on our knees, and cocked our guns, so as to have all ready, and then we jump'd up an eend; and seein nothin but a great cloud o' dust, we fired right into it, and down we heerd 'em tumble; and when the dust clear'd off, we saw the matter o' twenty white breeches turned up to us sprawlin on the ground. Gist at that moment we heerd three cheers from the inemy at the fort, and a great shout of larfin from our army too; they haw-hawed like thunder. Well, says I, as soon as I could see, if that don't bang the bush. I'll be darn'd if it ain't a flock of sheep belongin to Elder Solomon Longstaff, arter all,—and if we ain't killed the matter of a score of 'em too, so dead as mutton; that's a fact. Well, we returned considerable down in the mouth, and says the general, captain, says he, I guess you made the enemy look pretty sheepish, didn't you? Well, if the officers didn't larf, it's a pity; and says a Varginy officer that was there, in a sort of half-whisper, that wall was well lined, you may depend—sheep on one side and asses on the other! Says I, stranger, you had better not say that are ag'in, or I'll—Gintlemen, says the general, resarve your heat for the inemy; no quarrels among ourselves—and he rode off, havin first whispered in my ear, Do you hear, captain, d—d you! there are two sides to a wall. Yes, says I general, and two sides to a story too. And don't, for gracious' sake, say any more about it. Yes, we military men all swears a few,—it's the practice

of the camp, and seems kinder nateral. But I'll go and make friends with minister.

Well, we walked down to Mr. Hopewell's, and we found him in a little summer house, all covered over with honeysuckle, as busy as you please with a book he was astudyin, and as soon as he seed us he laid it down and came out to meet us. Colonel Slick, says he, I owe you an apology, I believe; I consait I spoke too abrupt to you t'other evenin. I ought to have made some allowance for the ardour of one of our military heroes. Well, it took father all aback that, for he know'd it was him that was to blame, and not minister, so he began to say that it was him that ought to ax pardon; but minister wouldn't hear a word,—(he was all humility was minister—he had no more pride than a babe)—and says he, Come, colonel, walk in and sit down here, and we will see if we cannot muster a bottle of cider for you, for I take this visit very kind of you. Well, he brought out the cider, and we sot down quite sociable like. Now, says he, colonel, what news have you?

Well, says father, neighbour Dearbourn tells me that he heerd from excellent authority that he can't doubt, when he was to England, that King George the Third has been dead these two years: but his ministers darsen't let the people know it, for fear of a revolution; so they have given out that he took the loss of these States so much to heart, and fretted and carried on so about it, that he ain't able to do business no more, and that they are obliged to keep him included. They say the people want to have a government gist like ourn, but the lords and great folks won't let 'em,—and that if a poor man lays by a few dollars, the nobles send and take it right away, for fear they should buy powder and shot with it. It's awful to think on, ain't it? I allow the British are about the most enslaved, oppressed, ignorant, and miserable folks on the face of creation.

You mustn't believe all you hear, said minister; depend upon it, there ain't a word of truth in it. I have been a good deal in England, and I do assure you, they are as free as we be, and a most a plaguy sight richer, stronger, and wiser. Their government convenes them better than ourn would, and I must say there be some things in it I like better than ourn too. Now, says he, colonel, I'll p'int out to you where they have a'most an amazin advantage over us here in America. First of all, there is the King on his throne, an hereditary King,—a born King,—the head of his people, and not the head of a party; not supported, right or wrong, by one side because they chose him,—nor hated and oppressed, right or wrong, by t'other because they don't vote for him; but loved and supported by all because he is their King; and regarded by all with a feelin who don't know nothin of in our country,—a feelin of loyalty. Yes, says

father, and they don't care whether it's a man, woman, or child;—the ignorant, benighted critters. They are considerable sure, says minister, he ain't a rogue at any rate.

Well, the next link in the chain——(Chains enough, poor wretches! says father; but it's good enough for 'em tho', I guess)—Well, the next link in the chain is the nobility, independent of the crown on one side, and the people on the other; a body distinguished for its wealth,—its learnin,—its munificence,—its high honour,—and all the great and good qualities that ennoble the human heart. Yes, says father, and yet they can sally out o' their castles, seize travellers, and rob 'em of all they have; hav'n't they got the whole country enslaved?—the debauched, profligate, *effeminate*, tyrannical gang as they be; and see what mean offices they do fill about the King's parson. They put me in mind of my son Eldad when he went to learn the doctors' trade,—they took him the first winter to the dissectin room. So in the spring, says I, Eldad, says I, how do you get on? Why, says he, father, I've only had my first lesson yet. What is that? says I. Why, says he, when the doctors are dissectin of a carcass of cold meat (for that's the name a subject goes by), I have to stand by 'em and keep my hands clean, to wipe their noses, give 'em snuff, and light cigars for 'em;—and the snuff sets 'em asneezin so, I have to be awipin of their noses everlastinly. It's a dirty business, that's a fact;—but dissectin is a dirty affair, I guess, altogether. Well, by all accounts the nobility fill offices as mean as the doctors' apprentices do the first winter.

I tell you, these are mere lies, says minister, got up here by a party to influence us ag'in the British. Well, well! said father, go on, and he threw one leg over the other, tilted back in his chair, folded his arms over his breast, and looked as defarmined as if he thought—now you may gist talk till you are hoarse, if you like, but you won't convince me, I can tell you. Then there is an Established Church, containin a body o' men distinguished for their piety and larnin, uniform practice, Christian lives, and consistent conduct: gist a beach that keeps off the assaults of the waves o' infidelity and enthusiasm from the Christian harbour within—the great bulwark and breakwater that protects and shelters Protestantism in the world. Oh dear! Oh dear! said father, and he looked over to me, quite streaked, as much as to say, Now, Sam, do only hear the nonsense that are old critter is atalkin of: ain't it horrid? Then there is the gentry, and a fine, honorable, manly, hospitable, independent race they be; all on 'em suns in their little spheres, illuminatin, warmin, and cheerin all within their reach. Old families, attached to all around them, and all attached to thom, both them and the people recollectin that there have been twenty generations of 'em kind landlords, good neighbours, liberal patrons, indulgent masters; or if any

of 'em went abroad, heroes by field and by flood. Yes, says father, and they carried back somethin to brag on from Bunker's Hill, I guess, didn't they? We spoilt the pretty faces of some of their landlords, that hitch, any how,—ay, and their tenants too; hang me if we didn't. When I was at Bun—

Then there is the professional men, rich marchants, and opulent factorists, all so many out-works to the king, and all to be beat down afore you can get at the throne. Well, all these blend and mix, and are entwined and interwoven together, and make that great, harmonious, beautiful, social, and political machine, the British constitution. The children of nobles ain't nobles—(I guess not, says father,—why should they be? ain't all men free and equal? read Jefferson's declara—) —but they have to mix with the commons, and become commoners themselves, and part of the great general mass—(and enough to pyson the whole mass too, said father, gist yeast enough to farment it, and spile the whole batch).—Quite the revarse, says minister; to use a homely simile, it's like a piece of fat pork thrown into a boilin kettle of maple syrup: it checks the bubblin and makes the boilin subside, and not run over. Well, you see, by the House o' Lords gettin recruits from able commoners, and the commoners gettin recruits from the young nobility, by intermarriage—and by the gradual branchin off of the young people of both sexes, it becomes the *people's nobility*, and not the *king's nobility*, sympathisin with both, but independent of either. That's gist the difference 'atween them and foreigners on the Continent; that's the secret of their power, popularity, and strength. The king leans on 'em, and the people leans on 'em—they are the key-stone of the arch. They don't stand alone, a high cold snowy peak, a' overlookin of the world beneath, and athrowin a dark deep shadow o'er the rich and fertile regions below it. They ain't like the cornish of a room, pretty to look at, but of no airthly use whatever; a thing you could pull away, and leave the room standin, gist as well with-out, but they are the pillars of the state—the floated, and grooved, and earved, and ornamental, but solid pillars—you can't take away the pillars, or the state comes down—you can't cut out the floatin, or groovin, or carvin, for it's in so deep you'd have to cut the pillars away to nothin a'most to get it out. Well, says father, araisin of his voice till he screamed, have you nothin, sir, to praise to home, sir? I think you whitewashed that British sepulchre of rottenness and corruption, that House o' Lords, pretty well, and painted the harlot's eldest darter, till she looks as flarnty as the old one of Babylon herself; let's have a touch o' your brush to home now, will you? You don't onderstand me yet, Colonel Slick, said he; I want to show you somethin in the workin o' the machinery you ain't thought of, I know. Now, you see, colonel, all these parts I described are

checks we ain't got—(and I trust in God we never shall, says father—we want no check—nothin can never stop us, but the limits o' creation)—and we ain't provised any in their place, and I don't see what on airth we shall do for these drag-chains on popular opinion. There's nothin here to make it of,—nothin in the natur of things to substitute,—nothin invented, or capable of the wear-and-tear, if invented, that will be the least morsel of use in the world. Explain what you mean, for gracious sake, says father, for I don't understand one word of what you are asayin of: who dares talk of chains to popular opinion of twelve million of free and enlightened citizens? Well, says miuister, gist see here, colonel, instead of all these gradations and circles, and what not, they've got in England—each havin its own principle of action, harmonizin with one another, yet essentially independant—we got but one class, one mass, one people. Some natur' has made a little smarter than others, and some education has distinguished; some are a little richer, some a little poorer—but still we have nothin but a mass, a populace, a people; all alike in great essentials, all havin the same power, same rights, same privileges, and of course same feelins:—*call it what you will, it's a populace, in fact.*

Our name is Legion, says father, ajumpin up in a great rage. Yes, sir, legion is our name—we have twelve millions of freemen, ready to march to the utmost limits o' creation, and fight the devil himself if he was there, with all his hosts; and I'm the man to lead 'em, sir; I'm the boy that gist will do it. Rear rank, take open order, right shoulders for'ard,—march! And the old man begun to step out as if he was aleadin of 'em on their way ag'in old Nick,—whistling Yankee-doodle all the time, and lookin as fierce as if he could whip his weight in wild cats. Well, says minister, I guess you won't have to go quite so far to find the devils to fight with as the eend of creation neither; you'll find them nearer to home than you're athinkin on some o' these days, you may depend. But, colonel, our people present one smooth, unbroken surface—do you see?—of the same uniform materials, which is *acted on all over alike by one impulse.* It's like a lake. Well, one gust o' wind sweeps all over it, and puts all in agitation, and makes the waters look angry and dangerous—(and shaller waters makes the ugliest seas always). Well, as soon as the squall is over, what a'most a beautiful pitchin and heavin there is for a while, and then down it all comes as calm and as stagnant and tiresome as you please. That's our case.

There is nothin to check popular commotion here, nothin to influence it for good, but much to influence it for evil. There is one tone and one key here; strike the octaves where you like, and when you like, and they all accord.

The press can lash us up to a fury here in two twos any day, be-

cause a chord struck at Maine vibrates in Florida, and when once roused, and our dander fairly up, where are the bodies above all this commotion, that can soften, moderate, control, or even influence it? The law, we see, is too feeble; people disregard it; the clergy can't, for if they dare to disagree with their flocks, their flocks drive 'em out of the pastur' in little less than half no time; the legislators can't, for they are parts of the same turbid water themselves; the president can't, for he is nothin but a heap of froth thrown up by conflictin eddies at the central point, and floats with the stream that generated him. He has no motion of himself, no locomotive power. It ain't the drift-log that directs the river to the sea, but the river that carries the drift-log on its back. Now in England, a lyin, agitatin, wicked press, demagogues and political jugglers, and them sort o' cattle, finds a check in the Executive, the great, the larned, the virtuous, the prudent, and the well-established nobility, church, and gentry. It can't deceive them, they are too well informed;—it can't agitate them, for they don't act from impuise, but from reason. It can't overturn 'em, for they are too strong. Nothin can move so many different bodies but somethin genuwine and good, somethin that comes recommended by common sense for the public weal by its intrinsic excellence. Then the clergy bless it, the nobles sanction it, and the king executes it. It's a well-constructed piece o' machinery that, colonel, and I hope they won't go adabblin too much with it,—*there's nothin like leavin all's well alone.*

I'll suppose a case now:—If the French in Canada were to rebel—as they will, like that priest that walked on crutches till they elected him Pope, and when he got into the chair he up crutches and let 'em fly at the heads of the cardinals, and told 'em to clear out, or he'd kick 'em out,—they'll rebel as soon as they can walk alone, for the British have made 'em a French colony instead of an English one, and then they'll throw away their crutches. If they do rebel, see if our people don't go to war, tho' the government is to peace. They'll do gist as they please, and nothin can stop 'em. What do they care for a President's proclamation, or a marshal's advertisements? they'd lynch one, or tar and feather the other of those chaps as quick as wink, if they dared to stand in the way one minit. No; we want the influence of an independant united clergy—of a gentry, of an upper class, of a permanent one too,—of a somethin or another, in short, we hav'n't got, and I fear never will get. What little check we had in Washington's time is now lost; our senate has degenerated into a mere second house of representatives; our legislators are nothin but speakin trumpets for the mobs outside to yell and howl thro. The British Government is like its oak; it has its roots spread out far and wide, and is supported and nourished on all sides, besides its tap-roots that run right straight down into the ground—(fer all

hard-wood trees have tap-roots, you know). Well, when a popular storm comes, it bends to the blast, do you see? till its fury is spent;—it gets a few leaves shook down, and perhaps a rotten branch or two twisted off; but when the storm is o'er there it is ag'in bolt upright—as straight and as stiff as a poker. But our government is like one of our forest trees,—all top and no branches, or downward roots, but a long, slim stalk, with a broom-head, fed by a few superficial fibres, the air and the rain; and when the popular gust comes it blows it right over,—a great, onwieldy windfall, smashin all afore it, and breakin itself all up to pieces. It's too holler and knotty to saw or to split, or to rip, and too shaky to plane, or to do anythin with—all its strength lies in growin close alongside of others; but it grows too quick, and too thick, to be strong. *It has no intrinsic strength*;—some folks to England ain't up to this themselves, and raelly talk like fools. They talk as if they were in a republic instead of a limited monarchy. If ever they get upsot, mark my words, colonel, the squall won't come out of royalty, aristocracy, or prelacy, but out o' democracy,—and a plaguy squally sea democracy is, I tell you: wind gets up in a minit; you can't show a rag of sail to it, and if you don't keep a bright look-out, and shorten sail in time, you're wrecked or swamped afore you know where you be. I'd rather live onder an absolute monarch any day than in a democracy, for one tyrant is better nor a thousand; oppression is better nor anarchy, and hard law better nor no law at all. Minister, says father (and he put his hands on his knees, and rose up slowly, till he stretched himself all out), I have sot here and heerd more abuse of our great nation, and our free and enlightened citizens, from you this ev'nin, than I ever thought I could have taken from any livin soul breathin; it's more than I can cleverly swallow, or digest either, I tell you.

Now, sir, says he, and he brought his two heels close together, and taking hold of his coat-tail with his left hand, brought his right hand slowly round to it, and then lifted it gradually up as if he was drawin out a sword,—and now, sir, said he, makin a lounge into the air with his arm,—now, sir, if you were not a clergyman, you should answer it to me with your life—you should, I snore. Its nothin but your cloth protects you, and an old friendship that has subsisted atween us for many years. You revolutionary heroes, colonel, says minister, smilin, are covered with too much glory to require any aid from private quarrels: put up your sword, colonel, put it up, my good friend, and let us see how the cyder is. I have talked so much my mouth feels considerably rusty about the hinges, I vow. I guess we had, says father, quite mollified by that are little revolutionary hero,—and I will sheathe it; and he went thro the form of putting a sword into the scabbard, and fetched his two hands together with a click that sounded amazinly like the rael thing. Fill your glass,

colonel, says minister, fill your glass, and I will give you a toast:—
*(May our government never degenerate into a mob, nor our mobs
 grow strong enough to become our government.)*

CHAPTER XLVIII.

THE CONFESSIONS OF A DEPOSED MINISTER.

SINCE I parted with you, squire, at Windsor, last fall, I've been to home. There's been an awful smash among the banks in the States, —they've been blown over, and snapped off, and torn up by the roots like the pines to the southward in a tornado:—awful work, you may depend. Everything prostrated as flat as if it had been chopped with an axe for the fire; it's the most dismal sight I ever beheld. Shortly after I left you I got a letter from Mr. Hopewell, atellin of me there was a storm abrewin, and advisin of me to come to home as soon as possible, to see arter my stock in the Slickville bank, for they were carryin too much sail, and he was e'en a'most certain it would capsize when the squall struck it. Well, I rode night and day; I nearly killed old Clay and myself too (I left the old horse to St. John's); but I got there in time, sold out my shares, and gist secured myself, when it failed tetotally,—it won't pay five cents to the dollar; a total wrack, stock and fluke. Poor old minister, he is nearly used up; he is small potatoes now, and few in a hill. It made me feel quite streaked to see him, for he is a rael good man, a genuine primitive Christian, and one of the old school. Why, Sam, said he, how do you do, my boy? The sight of you is actilly good for sore eyes. Oh! I am glad to see you once more afore I go; it does me good—it happifies me, it does, I vow—for you always seemed kind o' nateral to me. I didn't think I should ever take any interest in anything ag'in;—but I must have a talk with you—it will do me good—it revives me. And now, Sam, said he, open that are cupboard there, and take that big key off the nail on the right hand side —it's the key of the cellar; and go to the north bin, and bring up a bottle of the old genuine cider—it will refresh you arter your fatigue; and give me my pipe and tobacco, and we will have a talk, as we used to do in old times.

Well, says I, when I returned and uncorked the bottle,—minister, says I, it's no use in atalkin,—and I took a heavy pull at the cider—it's no use atalkin, but there's nothin like that among the Blue-noses, anyhow. I believe you might stump the univarse for cider—that caps all—it's super-excellent—that's a fact.

I shall stump out of the univarse soon, Sam, said he; I'm e'en

to see him
 or him

o' genuine
 - kind o' boy

o' genuine

o' genuine
 o' genuine
 o' genuine

o' genuine

a'most done; my body is worn out, and my spirits are none of the best now,—I'm a lone man. The old men are droppin off fast 'into the grave, and the young men are troopin off fast to the far West; and Slickville don't seem the same place to me it used to do no more. I'm well stricken in years now; my life stretches over a considerable space of the colony time, and over all our republic: my race is run, my lamp is out, and I am ready to go. I often say, Lord, now lettest thou thy sarvant depart in peace. Next birthday, if the Lord spares me to see it, I shall be ninety-five years old. Well, says I, minister, you've seen great changes in your time, that's sartain; haven't we grown cruel fast? There ain't such a nation as ourn p'rhaps atween the poles, gist at this present time. We are a'most through to the Pacific, and spreadin all over this great Continent; and our flag floats over every part of the world. Our free and enlightened people do present a'most a glorious spectacle—that's a fact. Well, he sot still and said nothin; but takin the pipe out of his mouth, he let go a great long puff of smoke, and then replaced his pipe ag'in, and arter a space, says he, Well, Sam, what of all that? Why, said I, minister, you remind me of Joab Hunter; he whipped every one that darst try him, both in Slickville and its vicinity; and then he sot down and cried like a child, 'cause folks were afeerd of him, and none on 'em would fight him.

It's a law o' natur', Sam, said he, that things that grow too fast, and grow too big, go to decay soon. I am afeerd we shall be rotten afore we are ripe. Precosity ain't a good sign in anything. A boy that outgrows his strength, is seldom healthy: an old head on young shoulders is plaguy apt to find afore long the shoulders too old and weak for the head. I am too aged a man to be led away by names—too old a bird to be caught by chaff. Tinsel and glitter don't deceive me into a belief that they are solid, genuwine metals. Our eagle that we chose for our emblem, is a fine bird, and an aspirin bird; but *he is a bird of prey, Sam,—too fond of blood,—too prone to pounce on the weak and unwary.* I don't like to see him hoverin over Texas and Canada so much. Our flag that you talk of is a good flag; but them stripes, are they prophetic or accidental? Are they the stripes of the slaves risin up to humble our pride by exhibitin our shame on our banner? Or what do they mean? Freedom, what is it? We boast of freedom; tell me what freedom is? Is it havin no king and no nobles? Then we are sartainly free. But is that freedom? Is it in havin no established religion? Then we are free enough, gracious knows. Is it in havin no hereditary government, or vigorous executive? Then we are free, beyond all doubt.

Yes, we know what we are atalkin about; we are wise in our generation, wiser than the children of light—we are as free as the air of heaven. What that air is, p'raps they know who talk of it so

young in face

*By your
Lovingly
Slave*

*said of freedom
free*

slippantly and so glibly; but it may not be so free to all comers as our country is. But what is freedom? My little grandson, little Sammy (I had him named arter you, Sam), told me yesterday I was behind the enlightenment of the age; perhaps you, who are ahead of it, will answer me. What is freedom? A colt is free,—he is unrestrained,—he acknowledges no master,—no law, but the law of natur'. A man may get his brains kicked out among wild horses, but still they are free. Is our freedom like that of the wild horse or the wild ass?—If not, what is it? Is it in the right of openly preaching infidelity? Is it in a licentious press? Is it in the outpourings of popular spirits? Is it in the absence of all subordination, or the insufficiency of all legal or moral restraint? I will define it. It is that happy condition of mankind where people are assembled in a community; where there is no government, no law, and no religion, but such as are imposed from day to day by a mob of freemen. *That is freedom.*

Why, minister, said I, what on airth ails you, to make you talk arter that fashion? If you had abin drinkin any of that are old cider, I do think I should have believed it had got into your brain, for it's pretty considerable stiff that, and tarnation heady. How can you go for to say we have no government, no law, and no religion, when it's generally allowed we are the most free and enlightened people on the face of the airth?—I didn't say *that*, Sam; I was definin freedom in its general acceptation. We have got a government somewhere, if folks could only find it. When they sarched for it at Texas, they said it was to Canady lines; and when they got to Canady lines to seek it, they say it is gone to the Seminole war; and when they get there, they'll tell 'em they've been lookin for it; but it hasn't arrived yet, and they wish to gracious it would make haste and come, for if it wor there, three thousand Injians couldn't beat us three years runnin, and defy us yet. We've got law too; and when the judges go on the circuit, the mob holds its courts, and keeps the peace.—Whose commission does the mob hold?—The people's commission. And whose commission does the supreme judge hold?—The President's. Which is at the top of the pot then? Can the judges punish the mob?—No; but the mob can punish the judges. Which is the supreme court, then? No; we have law. Yes, said I, and the prophets too; for if you ain't a prophet of evil, it's a pity. I fairly felt ryled, for if there is a thing that raises my dander, and puts my Ebenezer up, it is to hear a man say anything ag'in the glorious institutions of our great, splendid country.

There you go ag'in, said he; you don't know what you are atalkin about; a prophet *used* to be a person who foretold future events to come. What they be now in Webster's new dictionary, I don't know; but I guess they now be those who foretell things arter they happen. I warn't aprophesyin—I was speakin of things afore my

eyes. Your ideas of prophets are about as clear as your ideas of freedom. Yes, we've got law, and written law too, as well as written constitutions—(for we despise that unwritten law, the common law of the ignorant British; we despise it as a relic of barbarism, of the age of darkness and fable)—and as soon as our cases that are tried afore the mob courts are collected and reported by some of our eminent mob orators, these state trials will have great authority. They'll be quoted to England with great respect, I know; for they've got orators of the same breed there too,—the same gentle, mild, Christian-like philanthropists. Pity you hadn't sported that kind of doctrine, says I, minister, afore our glorious revolution. The British would have made a bishop of you, or a Canter Berry, or whatever they call their Protestant pope. Yes, you might have had the canon law and the tythe law enforced with the baggonet law. Abusin the British don't help us, Sam. I am not *their* advocate, but the advocate for law, just and equal law, impartially administered, voluntarily obeyed, and, when infringed, duly enforced. Yes, we have religion, too, from the strict good old platform, through every variety and shade of tinker, mormonite, and mountebank, down to the infidel,—men who preach peace and good will, but who fight and hate each other like the devil. Idolatry like ourn you won't find even among the heathen. We are image worshippers: we have two images. There's the golden image, which all men worship here, and the American image. The American image! said I; do tell: what on airth is that? I do believe in my heart, minister, that you have taken leave of your senses. What onder the sun is the American image? An image of perfection, Sam, said he; fine phrenological head—high forehead—noble countenance—intelligent face—limbs Hereulean, but well proportioned—graceful attitude—a figure of great elegance and beauty,—the personification of everything that is great and good,—*that* is the American image;—*that* we set up and admire, and everybody thinks it is an image of himself. Oh! it is humiliatin, it is degradin; but we are all brought up to this idolatry from our cradle: we are taught first to worship gold, and then to idolize ourselves.

Yes, we have a government, have a law, and have a religion,—and a precious government, law, and religion it is. I was once led to believe we had made a great discovery, and were tryin a great experiment in the art of self-government, for the benefit of mankind, as well as ourselves. Oh, delusion of delusions!—It had been tried before and signally failed, and tried on our own ground too, and under our own eyes. We are copies and not originals—base imitators. When he got this far, I seed how it was—he was delirious, poor old gentleman; the sight of me was too much for him; his narves was excited, and he was aravin; his face was flushed, his eye glared, and looked quite wild-like. It touched me to the heart, for I loved him

like a father, and his intellects were of the first order afore old age, like a cloud, had overshadowed 'em. I thought I should have boo-hooded right out. So, instead of contradictin him, I humoured him. Where was it tried, minister? said I; who had the honour afore us? for let us give the credit where it is due. The North American Indians, said he, had tried it afore in all its parts. They had no king, no nobles, no privileged class, no established religion. Their mobs made laws, Lynch law too, for they had burned people before the citizens at Mobile were ever born, or were even thought on, and invaded also other folk's territory by stealth, and then kept possession. They, too, elected their presidents, and other officers, and did all and everything we do. They, too, had their federal government of independent states, and their congress and solemn-lookin boatin orators. They, too, had their long knives as well as Arkansa's folks have, and were as fond of blood. And where are they now? Where is their great experiment?—their great spectacle of a people governin themselves? Gone! where ourn will go; gone with the years that are fled, never to return! Oh, Sam, Sam! my heart is sick within me. Where now is our beautiful republic bequeathed to us by Washington, and the sages and heroes of the revolution? Overwhelmed and destroyed by the mighty waters of democracy. Nothing is now left but a dreary waste of angry waters, moved and excited by every wind that blows, and agitated by every conflictin current, onsafe to navigate, fearful even to look upon.

This is too excitin a subject, said I, minister, and admits of a great deal bein said on both sides. It ain't worth our while to get warm on it. As for an established church, said I, you know what a hubbub they make in England to get clear of that are. I don't think we need envy 'em, unless they'll establish our platform. If they did *that*, said I, and I looked up and winked, I don't know as I wouldn't vote for it myself. Sam, said he, we are agoin to have an established church; it may be a very good church, and is a great deal better than many we have; but still it ain't the church of the Pilgrims. What church, said I, minister? Why, said he, the Catholic Church; before long it will be the established Church of the United States. Poor old man, only think of his getting such a freak as that are in his head; it was melancholy to hear him talk such nonsense, warn't it? What makes you think so? said I. Why, said he, Sam, the majority here do everything. The majority voted at first against an establishment; a majority may at last vote for it; the voice of the majority is law. Now the Catholics are fast gaining a numerical majority. Don't you believe census or other tables? I know it, and I could easily correct the errors of the census.

They gain constantly,—they gain more by emigration, more by natural increase in proportion to their numbers, more by intermar-

riages, adoption, and conversion, than the Protestants. With their exclusive views of salvation, and peculiar tenets,—as soon as they have the majority this becomes a Catholic country, with a Catholic government, with the Catholic religion established by law. Is this a great change? A greater change has taken place among the British, the Medes and Persians of Europe, the *nolumus leges mutari* people. What thou wilt the natural order and progress of events now in train here not produce? I only speak of this;—I don't dread it; I hope, and trust, and pray that it may be so; not because I think them right, for I don't, but because they are a Christian church, an old church, a consistent church, and because it is a church, and any sect is better than the substitution of a cold speculative philosophy for religion, as we too frequently see among us. We are too greedy to be moral, too self-sufficient to be pious, and too independent to be religious. United under one head, and obedient to that head, with the countenance and aid of the whole catholic world, what can they not achieve? Yes, it is the only cure that time and a kind and merciful Providence has in store for us. *We shall be a Catholic country.*

Sam, my heart is broken!—my last tie is severed, and I am now descendin to the grave full of years and full of sorrows! I have received my dismissal; my elders have waited upon me with the appalling information that they have given a call to a Unitarian, and have no further need of my services. My labours, Sam, were not worth having,—that's a fact: I am now old, gray-headed, and infirm, and worn out in the service of my Master. It was time for me to retire. *Tempus abire tibi est.* (I hope you hav'n't forgot what little Latin you had, Sam.) I do not blame them for *that*:—but a Unitarian in my pulpit! It has killed me—I *cannot* survive it; and he cried like a child. I looked ou 'em, said he, as *my* children—I loved 'em as my own—taught 'em their infant prayers,—I led 'em to the altar of the Lord, I fed 'em with the bread of life, encouraged them when they was right, reproved 'em when they was wrong, and watched over 'em always. Where is now my flock? and what account shall I give of the shepherd? Oh, Sam, willingly would I offer up my life for 'em as a sacrifice, but it may not be. My poor flock, my dear children, my lost sheep, that I should have lived to have seen this day!—and he hid his face in his hands, and moaned bitterly.

Poor old gentleman, it had been too much for him; it was evident that it had affected his head as well as his heart. And this I will say, that a better head and a better heart there ain't this day in the United States of America than minister Joshua Hopewell's, of Slickville. I am glad to hear you speak so affectionately of him, said I. It shows there are good and warm hearts in Slickville besides his; but do you really think he was delirious? No doubt in the world on it, said he. If you had ascen him and heard him, you

would have felt that his troubles had swomified him. It was gone goose with him,—that's a fact. That he spoke under the influence of excited feelings, I replied, and with a heart filled with grief and indignation, there can be no doubt; but I see no evidence of delirium; on the contrary, his remarks strike me as most eloquent and original. They have made a great impression upon me, and I shall long remember the *confessions of a deposed minister*.

CHAPTER XLIX.

CANADIAN POLITICS.

The next day we reached Clare, a township wholly settled by descendants of the Arcadian French. The moment you pass the bridge at Scissiboo, you become sensible that you are in a foreign country. And here I must enter my protest against that American custom of changing the old and appropriate names of places, for the new and inappropriate ones of Europe. Scissiboo is the Indian name of this long and beautiful river, and signifies the great deep, and should have been retained, not merely because it was its proper name; but on account of its antiquity, its legends, and, above all, because the river had a name, which the minor streams of the province have not. A country, in my opinion, is robbed of half of its charms when its streams, like those of Nova Scotia, have no other names than those of the proprietors of the lands thro' which they pass, and change them as often as the soil changes owners. Scissiboo sounded too savage and uncouth in the ears of the inhabitants, and they changed it to Weymouth, but they must excuse me for adopting the old reading.

I am no democrat; I like old names and the traditions belonging to them. I am no friend to novelties. There has been a re-action in Upper Canada. The movement party in that colony, with great form and ceremony, conferred the name of Little York upon the capital of the colony; but the Conservatives have adopted the ancient order of things, and with equal taste and good feeling have restored the name of Toronto. I hope to see the same restoration at Scissiboo, at Tatam-agouche, and other places where the spoiler has been.

There is something very interesting in these Arcadians. They are the lineal descendants of those who made the first effective settlement in North America, in 1606, under De Monts, and have retained to this day the dress, customs, language, and religion of their ancestors. They are a peaceable, contented, and happy people; and

have escaped the temptations of English agitators, French atheists, and domestic demagogues.

I have often been amazed, said the Clockmaker, when travelling among the Canadians, to see what curious critters they be. They leave the market to the women, and their business to their notaries, the care of their souls to their priests, and of their bodies to their doctors, and reserve only frolickin, dancin, singin, fidlin, and gasconadin to themselves. They are as merry as crickets, and as happy as the day is long. They don't care a straw how the world jogs—who's up or who's down, who reigns or who is deposed. Ask 'em who is King, and they believe Papinor is; who is Pope, and they believe their bishop is; who is the best off in the world, and they believe Mount-sheer Chatter-box Habitan is. How is it then, said I, they are just on the eve of rebellion? If they are so contented and happy as you represent them, what can induce them to involve the country in all the horrors of a civil war, and voluntarily incur the penalties of treason and the miseries of a revolution?

Because, said he, they are just what I have described them to be—because they don't know nothin. They are as weak as Taunton water, and all the world knows that that won't even run down hill. They won't do nothin but just as they are bid. Their notaries and doctors tell 'em,—them sacra diabola foutera English are agoin, by and bye, to ship 'em out o' the country; and in the mean time rob 'em, plunder 'em, and tax 'em;—hang their priests, seize their galls, and play hell and Tommy with them, and all because they speak French. Hay beang, says Habitan, up and at them then, and let 'em have it! But how can we manage all them redcoats? Oh! says their leaders, old France will send a fleet and sodgers, and Yankies will send an army. Yankies very fond of us,—all larnin French apurpose;—very fond of Catholics too, all thro' New England;—great friend of ourn,—hate English like the diable. Allong dong, then, they say; up and cut their throats! and when winter comes, burn 'em up,—hang 'em up,—use 'em up! One grand French nation we shall have here then; all French, and no sacra English.

But do they really talk such nonsense to them as that, or are they such fools to believe it? Fact, I assure you; they are so ignorant they believe it all, and will believe anything they tell 'em. It is a comfortable ignorance they are in too, for they are actilly the happiest critters on the face of the airth,—but then it is a dangerous ignorance, for it is so easily imposed upon. I had been always led to believe, I said, that it was a great constitutional question that was at stake,—the right to stop the supplies; and from hearing there were so many speculative and theoretical points of dispute between them and the English, as to the machinery of the local government, I thought they were at least an enlightened people, and one that, feeling they had

rights, were determined to maintain those rights at all hazards. Oh, dear, said the Clockmaker, where have you been all your born days, not to know better nor that? They don't know nothin about the matter, nor don't want to. Even them that talk about those things in the assembly, don't know much more; but they gist know enough to ax for what they know they can't get, then call it a grievance, and pick a quarrel about it. Why, they've got all they want, and more nor they could have under us, or any other power on the face of the airth than the English,—ay, more than they could have if they were on their own hook. They have thei own laws,—and plaguy queer, old-fashioned laws they are too,—Old Scratch himself couldn't understand 'em; their parly-voov language, religion, old customs and usages, and everything else, and no taxes at all.

If such is the case, what makes their leaders discontented? There must be something wrong somewhere, when there is so much disaffection? All that is the matter may be summed up in one word, said the Clockmaker, *French*,—devil a thing else but that—*French*. You can't make an Englishman out of a Frenchman, any more than you can a white man out of a nigger; if the skin ain't different, the tongue is. But, said I, though you cannot make the Ethiopian change his skin, you can make the Frenchman change his language. Ay, now you have it, I guess, said he; you've struck the right nail on the head this time. The reform they want in Canada is to give 'em English laws and English language. Make 'em use it in courts and public matters, and make an English and not a French colony of it; and you take the sting out o' the snake,—the critter becomes harmless. Them doctors pyson 'em. Them chaps go to France, get inoculated there with infidelity, treason, and republicanism, and come out and spread it over the country like small-pox. They got a bad set o' doctors in a general way, I tell you; and when rebellion breaks out there, as you'll see it will to a sartainty by and by, you'll find them doctors leading them on everywhere,—the very worst fellers among 'em,—boys of the glorious July days to Paris. Well, it is no use atalkin, squire, about it; it is a pity, too, to see the poor simple critters so imposed upon as they be, for they'll catch it, if they do rebel, to a sartainty. Gist as sure as Papinor takes that step he is done for,—he's a refugee in six weeks in the States, with a price set on his head, for the critter won't fight. The English all say he wants the clear grit—aint got the stuff—no ginger in him—it's all talk.

The last time I was to Montreal, I seed a good deal of the leaders of the French; they were very civil to me, and bought ever so many of my clocks,—they said they liked to trade with their American friends, it was proper to keep up a good feelin among neighbours. There was one Doctor Jodrie there, a'most everlastinly at my heels a introducin of me to his countrymen, and recommendin them to

trade with me. Well, I went to his shop one night, and when he heerd my voice, he come out of a back room, and, said he, walk in here, Mount-sheer Slick, I want you for one particular use; come along with me, my good feller, there are some friends here atakin of a glass o' grog along with me and a pipe;—won't you join us? Well, said I, I don't care if I do; I won't be starched. A pipe wouldn't be amiss gist now, says I, nor a glass of grog neither; so in I went: but my mind misgived me there was some mischief abrewin in there, as I seed he bolted the door arter him, and so it turned out.

The room was full of chaps, all doctors, and notaries, and members of assembly, with little short pipes in their mouths, achattin away like so many monkeys, and each man had his tumbler o' hot rum and water afore him on the table. Sons o' liberty, says he, here's a brother, Mount-sheer Slick, a haul o' jaw clockmaker. Well, they all called out, Five Clockmaker! No, says I, not five clock-makers, but only one; and hardly trade enough for him neither, I guess. Well, they hawhawed like any thing, for they beat all natur for larfin, them French. Five is same as hurrah, says he,—long life to you! Oh! says I, I onderstand now. No fear of that any how, when I am in the hands of a doctor. Yankee hit him hard that time, be gar! said a little under-sized parchment-skinned lookin lawyer. May be so, said the doctor; but a feller would stand as good a chance for his life in my hands, I guess, as he would in yourn, if he was to be defended in court by you. The critters all yelled right out at this joke, and struck the table with their fists till the glasses all rang ag'in. Bon, bon, says they. Says the doctor, Don't you understand French, Mr. Slick? No, says I, not one word; I wish to goodness I did though, for I find it very awkward sometimes a tradin without it. (I always said so when I was axed that are question, so as to hear what was agoin on: it helped me in my business considerable. I could always tell whether they actilly wanted a clock or not, or whether they had the money to pay for it: they let out all their secrets). Would you like to see a bull-bait? said he; we are goin to bait a bull winter arter next,—grand fun, said he; we'll put fire to his tail,—stick squibs and matches into his hide,—make him kick, and roar, and toss, like the diable: then we'll put the dogs on, worry him so long as he can stand,—then, tamn him, kill him, skin him, and throw his stinkin carcass to the dogs and de crows. Yes, said the other fellers, kill him, damn him,—kill him! and they got up and waved their glasses over their heads;—death to the beast 'à la lanterne!"

Says one of them in French to the doctor, Prenny garde,—are you sure, are you clear he is not English? Oh, sartain, said he in the same lingo; he is a Yankee clockmakin, cheatin vagabond from Boston, or thereabouts; but we must court him, we must be civil to

them if we expect their aid. If we once get clear o' the English we will soon rid ourselves of them too. They are chips of the old block, them Yankees; a bad breed on both sides o' the water. Then turnin to me, says he, I was just desirin these gentlemen, Mr. Slick, to drink your health, and that of the United States. Thank you, says I, I believe our people and the French onderstand each other very well; a very *disinterested* friendship on both sides. Oh, sartain, says he, aputtin of his hand on his heart, and lookin spooney. One sentiment, one grand sympathy of feelin, one real amitty yea. Your health, sir, said he; and they all stood up agin and made a deuce of a roar over it. Five Americanes!

I hope you have good dogs, said I, for your bull-bait? Oh, true breed and no mistake, said he. It takes a considerable of a stiff dog, says I, and one of the real grit to face a bull. Them fellers, when they get their danders up, are plaguy onsafe critters; they'll toss and gore the common kind like nothin,—make all fly ag'in: it ain't oversafe to come too near 'em when they are once fairly raised. If there is anythin in natur' I'm afeerd on, it's a bull when he is ryled. Oh yes, said he, we got the dogs, plenty of 'em too,—genuine breed from old France, kept pure ever since it came here, except a slight touch of the fox and the wolf; the one makes 'em run faster, and t'other bite sharper. It's a grand breed. Thinks I to myself; I onderstand you, my hearties. I see your drift; go the whole figur', and do the thing genteel. Try your hand at it, will you; and if John Bull don't send you allyin into the air sky-high, in little less than half no time, it's a pity. A pretty set o' yelpin curs you be to face such a critter as he is, ain't you? Why, the very moment he begins to paw and to roar, you'll run sneakin off with your tails atween your legs, ayelpin and asqueelin as if Old Nick himself was arter you.

Great man, your Washington, says the doctor. Very, says I; no greater ever lived—p'r'aps the world never seed his ditto. And Papinor is a great man, too, said he. Very, said I, especially in the talking line—he'd beat Washington at that game, I guess, by a long chalk. I hope, says he, some day or another, Mr. Slick, and not far off neither, we shall be a free and independent people, like you. We shall be the France of America afore long—the grand nation—the great empire. It's our distiny—everything foretells it,—I can see it as plain as can be. Thinks I to myself, this is a good time to broach our interests; and if there is to be a break-up here, to put in a spoke in the wheel for our folks—a stitch in time saves nine. So, says I, you needn't flatter yourselves, doctor; you can't be a distinct nation; it ain't possible, in the natur' o' things. You may jine us, if you like, and there would be some sense in that move,—that's a fact; but you never can stand alone here—no more than a lame man.

Albin the
of you

Ashton
win of boy
van

nick

Albin

very
very

So, *Albin*

can without crutches, or a child of six-days old. No, not if all the colonies were to unite, you couldn't do it. Why, says I, gist see here, doctor; you couldn't shew your noses on the fishin ground for one minit—you can hardly do it now, even tho' the British have you under their wing. Our folks would drive you off the banks, seize your fish, tear your nets, and lick you like a sack—and then go home and swear you attacked them first, and our government would seize the fisheries as an indemnification. How could you support an army and a navy, and a diplomacy, and make fortifications. Why, you couldn't build and support one frigate, nor maintain one regiment, nor garrison Quebec itself, let alone the out-posts. Our folks would navigate the St. Lawrence in spite of your teeth, and the St. John River too, and how could you help yourselves? They'd smuggle you out of your eye-teeth, and swear you never had any. Our fur traders would attack your fur traders, and drive 'em all in. Our people would enter here and settle—then kick up a row, call for American volunteers, declare themselves independent, and ask admission into the Union; and afore you know'd where you were, you'd find yourselves one of our states. Gist look at what is goin on to Texas, and what has gone on to Florida, and then see what will go on here. We shall own clean away up to the North and South Pole, afore we're done.

Says the doctor, in French, to the other chaps, that would be worse than bein a colony to the English. Them Yankee villains would break up our laws, language, and customs; that cat wouldn't jump at all, would it? *Jamais, Jamais!* says the company. We must have aid from old France; we must be the grand nation, and the great empire, ourselves;—and he stop't, went to the door, unbolted it, looked round the shop, and then turned the bolt ag'in. Would your folks, says he, help us, if we was to revolt, Mr. Slick? Certainly, said I; they'd help you all they could, and not go to war with the British. They'd leave all the armories on the line unguarded, so you could run over and pretend to rob 'em, and leave all the cannon in the forts without anybody to see arter them, so you might have them if you wanted them. Lots o' chaps would volunteer in your ranks, and our citizens would subscribe handsum. They'd set up a claim pretty fierce, at the same time, about the New Brunswick boundary line, so as to make a devarision in your favour in that quarter. We can't go to war gist now; it would ruin us; stock and fluke. We should lose our trade and shippin, and our niggers and Indgians are ugly customers, and would take a whole army to watch them in case of a war. We'd do all we could to help you as a *people*, but not as a *government*. We'd furnish you with arms, ammunition, provision, money, and volunteers. We'd let you into our country, but not the British. We'd help you to *arrange* your plans and to

derange them. But we'd have to respect our treaties, for we are a high-minded, right-minded, sound-minded, and religious people. We scrupulously fulfil our engagements. What we undertake we perform—there's no mistake in us,—you always know where to find us. We are under great obligations to the British—they saved us from the expense and miseries of a war with France—they have built us with their capital and their credit, and are our best customers. We could not, consistently with our treaties or our conscience, send an army or a navy to help you; but we will hire you our steam-boats, and other craft; send you men to make an army, and the stuff to feed, clothe, arm, and pay them. In short, the nations of the airth will look on with admiration at the justice and integrity of our doings. We shall respect the treaty with the British on the one side, and prove ourselves a kind, a liberal, and most obliging neighbour to you on the other. Government will issue proclamations against interference. The press of the country will encourage it. The nation will be neutral, but every soul in it will aid you. Yes, we are as straight as a shingle in our dealings, and do things above board handsum. We do love a fair deal above all things—that's a fact. *Bon, bon!* says they, *Les aristocrats à la lanterne!* and they broke out a singin à la lanterne!

It was now twelve o'clock at night when we quit, and gist as we got into the street I heerd the word Doric, Doric,—and, says I, what on airth is that?—what sort o' a critter is a Doric? A Doric is a loyalist, says they,—a diable bull,—*sacre futre*,—kill him,—and they arter him, full split like the wind, caught him, knocked him down, and a'most finished him—they e'en a'most beat him to a jelly, and left him for dead. That's the way, says they, we'll sarve every Englishman in Canada,—extarminate 'em, damn 'em. Time for me to be off, says I, a'most, I'm athinkin; it's considerable well on towards mornin. Good night, Mount-sheer. *Bon swore, bon swore!* says they, singin—

“ Oh! ça ira, ça ira, ça ira,
Les aristocrats a la lanterne!”

And the last I heerd of them, at the end of the street, was an ever-lastin almighty shout, Five Papinor—five Papinor!

Yes, I pity them poor Canadians, said the Clockmaker. They are a loyal, contented, happy people, if the sarpents of doctors and lawyers would leave 'em alone, and let 'em be, and not pyson their minds with all sorts of lies and locrums about their government. They will spunk' em up to rebellion at last, and when it does come to the scratch, they will desart 'em as sure as eggs is eggs, and leave 'em to be shot down by the sodgers; they ain't able of themselves to do nothin, them Canadians; they ain't got the means, nor the energy

nor the knowledge for it; they ain't like the descendants of the Pilgrim—that's a fact. The worst of it is, too, the punishment won't fall on the right heads neither, for them critters will cut and run to a sartainty;—I know it, I'm e'en a'most sure of it,—if they'd ahad the true blue in 'em, they wouldn't have half murdered and maimed that poor defenceless Doric, as they did. None but cowards do 'em are things;—a brave man fights, a coward sticks a bowie knife into your ribs; but p'r'aps it will all turn out for the best yet in the eend, said he; for if there is a blow up, Papinor will off to the States full chisel with the other leaders,—the first shot, and them that they don't catch and hang can never show their faces in Canada ag'in. It will clear the country of them, as they clear a house of rats,—frighten 'em out of their seven senses by firin off a gun.

A thunderstorm, squire, said the Clockmaker, most always cools the air, clears the sky, lays the dust, and makes all look about right ag'in.

Every thing will depend on how the English work it arterwards; if they blunder ag'in, they'll never be able to set it to rights. What course ought they to adopt? said I, for the subject is one in which I feel great interest. I'll tell you, said he. First, they should——, and he suddenly checked himself, as if doubtful of the propriety of answering the question;—and then smiling, as if he had discovered a mode of escaping the difficulty, he continued,—They should make you plenipo, and appoint me your secretary.

CHAPTER L.

A CURE FOR SMUGGLING.

Wherever natur does least man does most, said the Clockmaker. Gist see the difference atween these folks here to Liverpool and them up the bay of Fundy. There natur has given them the finest country in the world,—she has taken away all the soil from this place, and chucked it out there, and left nothin but rocks and stones here. There they gist vegetate, and here they go a-head like anything. I was credibly informed, when Liverpool was first settled, folks had to carry little light ladders on their shoulders to climb over the rocks, and now they've got better streets, better houses, better gardens, and a better town than any of the baymen. They carry on a considerable of a fishery here, and do a great stroke in the timber business.

I shall never forget a talk I had with Ichabod Gates here, and a frolic him and me had with a tide-waiter. Ichabod had a large store o' goods, and I was in there one evenin adrinkin tea along with him,

and we got atalkin about smugglin. Says he Mr. Slick, your people ruin the trade here, they *do* smuggle so; I don't know as I ever shall be able to get rid of my stock of goods, and it cost me a considerable of a sum too. What a pity it is them navy people, instead of carryin freights of money from the West Indgies, warrn't employed more aprotectin of our fisheries and our trade. Why don't you smuggle then too, says I, and meet 'em in their own way?—tit for tat—diamond cut diamond—smuggle yourselves and seize *them*;—free trade and sailors' rights is our maxim. Why, says he, I ain't gist altogether certified that it's right; it goes ag'in my conscience to do the like o' that are, and I must say I like a fair deal. In a ginerall way a'most, I've observed what's got over the devil's back is commonly lost under his belly. It don't seem to wear well. Well, that's inconvenient, too, to be so thin skinned, said I; for conscience most commonly has a hide as thick as the sole of one's foot; you may cover it with leather to make it look decent-like, but it will bear a considerable hard scrubbin without anything over it. Now, says I, I will put you on a track that will sarve you without bringin corns on your conscience either. Do you gist pretend to smuggle and make believe as if you were agoin the whole hog in it. It's safer and full out as profitable as the rael thing, and besides there's no sort o' risk in it in the world. When folks hear a thing is smuggled they always think it's cheap, and never look into the price; they bite directly—it's a grand bait that. Now always onload your vessels at night, and let folks hear a cart agoin into your place atween two and three o'clock in the mornin; fix one o' the axles so it will squeak like a pig, and do you look suspicious, mysterious, and oneasy. Says you (when a chap says, I guess you were up late last night), ax me no questions and I'll tell you no lies. There are so many pimpin eyes about now, a body has to be cautious if he don't want to get into the centre of a hobble. If I'm up late I guess it's nobody's business but my own I'm about any how; but I hope you won't make no remarks about what you see or heard.

Well, when a feller axes arter a thing, do you gist stand and look at him for a space without sayin a word, enquirin like with a dubiousum look, as if you didn't know as you could trust him or no; then gist wink, put your finger on your nose, and say mum is the word. Take a candle and light it, and say, foller me now, and take him into the cellar. Now, says you, friend, don't betray me, I beseech you, for your life; don't let on to any one about this place;—people will never think o' suspectin me if you only keep dark about it. I'll let you see some things, says you, that will please you, I know; but don't blow me—that's a good soul. This article, says you, ataking up one that cost three pounds, I can afford to let you have as low as five pounds, and that one as cheap as six pounds, on one condition, but—

mind you it's on them terms only,—and that is that you don't tell any one, not even your wife, where you got it; but you must promise me on the word and honour of a man. The critter will fall right into the trap, and swear by all that's good he'll never breathe it to a livin soul, and then go right off and tell his wife, and you might as well pour a thing into a filterin stone as into a woman's ear; it will run right thro', and she'll go abraggin to her neighbours of the bargain they got, and swear them to secrecy, and they'll tell the whole country in the same way, as a secret of the cheap things Ichabod Gates has. Well, the excise folk will soon hear o' this, and come and sarch your house from top to bottom, and the sarch will make your fortin, for, as they can't find nothin, you will get the credit of doin the officers in great style.

Well, well, said Ichabod, if you Yankees don't beat all natur'. I don't believe in my soul there's a critter in all Nova Scotia would a' thought o' such a scheme as that, but it's a grand joke, and comports with conscience, for it parallels pretty close with the truth: I'll try it. Try it, says I, to be sure; let's go right off this blessed night, and hide away a parcel of your goods in the cellar,—put some in the garret and some in the gig-house. Begin and sell to-morrow, and all the time I'm to Liverpool I'll keep arunnin in and out o' your house; sometimes I'll gist come to the corner of the fence, put my head over and draw it back ag'in, as if I didn't want folks to see me, and sometimes I'll make as if I was agoin out, and if I see any one acomin I'll spring back and hide behind the door: it will set the whole town on the look-out,—and they'll say it's me that's asmugglin either on my own hook or yourn. In three days he had a great run o' custom, particularly arter night-fall. It was fun alive to see how the critters were bammed by that hoax.

On the fifth day the tide-waiter came. Mr. Slick, says he, I've got information th—Glad to hear it, says I: an officer without information would be a poor tool—that's a fact. Well, it brought him up all standin. Says he, Do you know who you are atalkin to? Yes, says I, I guess I do: I'm talkin to a man of information, and that bein the case I'll be so bold as to ax you one question,—have you any thing to say to me, for I'm in a considerable of a hurry? Yes, said he, I have. I'm informed you have smuggled goods in the house. Well, then, says I, you can say what many galls can't boast on at any rate. What's that? says he. Why, says I, that you are *missinformed*.

Mr. Gates, said he, give me a candle—I must go to the cellar. Sartainly, sir, said Ichabod, you may sarch where you please: I've never smuggled yet, and I am not agoin now to commence at my time of life. As soon as he got the candle, and was agoin down to the cellar with Gates, I called out to Ichabod. Here, says I, Ich, run quick, for your life—now's your time; and off we ran up stairs as fast as we could leg it, and locked the door; the sarcher heerin

that, up too and arter us hot foot, and bust open the door. As soon as we heerd him adoin of that wo out o' the other door and locked that also, and down the back stairs to where we started from. It was some time afore he broke in the second door, and then he fol-lered us down, lookin like a proper spool. I'll pay you up for this, said he to me. I hope so, said I, and Ichabod too. A pretty time o' day this when folks cant are and race over a decent man's house, and smash all afore him this way for nothin, ain't it? Them doors you broke all to pieces will come to somethin, you may depend;—a joke is a joke, but that's no joke. Arter that he took his time, sarched the cellar, upper rooms, lower rooms, and garret, and found nothin to seize; he was all cut up, and amazin vexed, and put out. Says I, Friend, if you want to catch a weasel you must catch him asleep; now if you want to catch me asmugglin, rise considerably airy in the mornin, will you? This story made Ichabod's fortin a'most: he had smuggled goods to sell for three years, and yet no one could find him in the act, or tell where onder the sun he hid 'em away to. At last the secret leaked out, and it fairly broke up smugglin on the whole shore. That story has done more nor twenty officers—that's a fact.

There's nothin a'most, said the Clockmaker, I like so much as to see folks cheat themselves. I don't know as I ever cheated a man myself in my life: I like to do things above board handsum, and go strait ahead; but if a chap seems bent on cheatin himself, I like to be neighbourly and help him to do it. I mind once, when I was to the eastward of Halifax atradin, I bought a young horse to use while I gave old Clay a run to grass. I do that most every fall, and it does the poor old critter a deal of good. He kinder seems to take a new lease every time, it sets him up so. Well, he was a most aspecial horse, but he had an infarnal temper, and it required all my know-ledge of horse flesh to manage him. He'd kick, sulk, back, bite, refuse to draw, or run away, gist as he took the notion. I mastered him, but it was gist as much as a bargain too; and I don't believe, tho' I say it myself, there is any other gentleman in the province could have managed him but me. Well, there was a parson livin down there that took a great fancy to that horse. Whenever he seed me adrivin by he always stopt to look at his action and gait, and admired him amazinly. Thinks I to myself, that man is inokilated—it'll break out soon—he is detarmined to cheat himself, and if he is, there is no help for it, as I see, but to let him. One day I was adrivin out at a most a deuce of a size, and he stopped me. Hallo! says he, Mr. Slick, where are you agoin in such a desperate hurry? I want to speak a word to you. So I pulls up short. Mornin, says I, parson, how do you do to-day? That's a very clever horse of yourn, says he. Middlin, says I; he does my work, but he's nothin to brag on; he ain't gist equal to old Clay, and I doubt if there's are a blue-nose horse

that is neither. Fine action that horse, said he. Well, says I, people do say he has considerable fine action, but that's better for himself than me, for it makes him travel easier.

How many miles will he trot in the hour? said he. Well, says I, if he has a mind to and is well managed, he can do fifteen handsom'. Will you sell him? said he. Well, said I, parson, I would sell him, but not to you; the truth is, said I, smilin, I have a regard for ministers; the best friend I ever had was one, the Reverend Joshua Hopewell, of Slickville, and I wouldn't sell a horse to one I didn't think would suit him. Oh! said he, the horse would suit me exactly; I like him amazingly: what's your price? Fifty pounds to anybody else, said I, but fifty-five to you, parson, for I don't want you to have him at no price. If he didn't suit you, people would say I cheated you, and cheatin a parson is, in my mind, pretty much of a piece with robbin of a church. Folks would think considerable hard of me sellin you a horse that warn't quite the thing, and I shouldn't blame them one morsel if they did. Why, what's the matter of him? said he. Well, says I minister, says I, alarfin right out, everything is the matter of him. Oh! said he, that's all nonsense; I've seen the horse in your hands often, and desire no better. Well, says I, he will run away with you if he gets a chance to a sartainty. I will drive him with a curb, said he. He will kick, says I. I'll put a back strap on him, said he. He will go backwards faster than forward, said I. I will give him the whip and teach him better, says he. Well, says I, larfin like anything, he won't go at all sometimes. I'll take my chance of that, said he; but must take off that five pounds. Well, says I, parson, I don't want to sell you the horse—that's a fact; but if you must have him I suppose you must, and I will subtract the five pounds on one condition, and that is, if you don't like the beast, you tell folks that you would have him, tho' I tried to set him out as bad as I could, and said everything of him I could lay my tongue to. Well, says he, the horse is mine, and if he don't suit me, I acquit you of all blame.

Well, he took the horse, and cracked and boasted most prodigiously of him; he said he wouldn't like to take a hundred pounds for him; that he liked to buy a horse of a Yankee, for they were such capital judges of horse flesh they hardly ever a'most had a bad one, and that he knew he was agoin to get a first-chop one, the moment he found I didn't want to sell him, and that he never saw a man so loath to part with a beast. Oh dear! how I larfed in my sleeve when I heerd tell of the goneey talkin such nonsense: thinks I, he'll live to larn yet some things that ain't writ down in Latin afore he dies, or I'm mistakened—that's all. In the course of a few days the horse began to find he'd changed hands, and he thought he'd try what sort o' stuff his new master was made on; so he gist took the bit in his mouth one fine mornin and ran off with

him, and kicked his gig all to slinders, and nearly broke the parson's neck; and findin that answer, he took to all his old tricks ag'in and got worse than ever. He couldn't do nothin with him,—even the helps were frightened out of their lives to go into the stable to him.

So he come to me one day lookin quite streaked, and says he, Mr. Slick, that horse I bought of you is a perfect divil; I never saw such a critter in my life; I can neither ride him nor drive him. He gist does what he pleases with us, and we can't help ourselves nohow. He actilly beats all the ourly animals I ever seed in my life. Well, says I, I told you so, minister—I didn't want to sell him to you at all; but you would have him. I know you did, said he; but you larfed so all the time I thought you was in jeest. I thought you didn't care to sell him, and gist said so to put me off, jokin like: I had no idee you were in airnest: I wouldn't give ten pounds for him. Nor I neither, said I; I wouldn't take him as a gift, and be bound to keep him. How could you then, said he, have the conscience to ax me fifty pounds for him, and pocket it so coolly? To prevent you from buyin him, parson, said I, that was my reason. I did all I could for you, I axed you five times as much as he was worth, and said all I could think on to run him down too? but *you took yourself in*. There's two ways of tellin a thing, said he, Mr. Slick,—in airnest and in jeest. You told it as if you were in jeest, and I took it so; you may call it what you like, but I call it a deception still. Parson, says I, how many ways you may have of tellin a thing I don't know; but I have only one, and that's the true way: I told you the truth, but you didn't choose to believe it. Now, says I, I feel kinder sorry for you too; but I'll tell you how to get out o' the scrape. I can't take him back, or folks would say it was me and not you that cheated yourself. Do you ship him. You can't sell him here without doin the fair thing, as I did, tellin all his faults; and if you do no soul would take him as a present, for people will believe you, tho' it seems they won't always believe a Clockmaker. Gist send him off to the West Indgies, and sell him at auction there for what he will fetch. He'll bring a good price, and if he gets into a rael right down genuine horseman's hands, there's no better horse. He said nothin, but shook his head, as if that cat wouldn't jump.

Now, says I, there's another bit of advice I'll give you free gratis for nothin,—*never buy a horse on the dealer's judgment, or he will cheat you if he can; never buy him on your own, or you will cheat yourself as sure as you are born*. In that case, said he, larfin, a man will be sure to be cheated either way: how is he to guard ag'in bein taken in then? Well, says I, he stands a fair chance any way of havin the leake put into him—that's sartain, for next to woman kind there is nothin so deceitful as horse-flesh that ever I seed yet. Both on e'm are apt to be spoiled in the breakin; both on 'em puzzle

the best judges sometimes to tell their age when well vamped up, and it takes some time afore you find out all their tricks. Pedigree must be attended to in both cases, particularly on the mother's side, and both require good trainin, a steady hand, and careful usage. Yes; both branches require great experience, and the most knowin ones do get bit sometimes most beautifully. Well, says he, as touchin horses, how is a man to avoid bein deceived? Well, says I, I'll tell you—never buy a horse of a total stranger on no account,—never buy a horse of a gentleman, for——Why, said he, he's the very man I should like to buy of, above all others. Well, then, says I, he's not the man for my money anyhow! you think you are safe with him, and don't inquire enough, and take too much for granted: you are apt to cheat yourself in that case. Never buy a crack horse; he's done too much. Never buy a colt; he's done too little; you can't tell how he'll turn out. In short; says I, it's a considerable of a long story to go all through with it; it would take me less time to teach you how to make a cloek, I calculate. If you buy from a man who ain't a dealer, he actilly don't know whether his horse is a good one or not; you must get advice from a friend who does know. If you buy from a dealer, he is too much for you or your friend either. If he has no honour don't trade with him. If he has, put yourself wholly and entirely on it, and he'll not deceive you, there's no mistake—he'll do the thing genteel. If you'd a' axed me candidly now about that are horse, says I—At that he looked up at me quite hard for a space, without sayin a word, but pressed his lips together quite miffy like, as if he was astrivin for to keep old Adam down, and turned short off and walked away. I felt kinder pity for him too; but if a man will cheat himself in spite of all you can do, why there is no help for it, as I see, but to let him. Do you, squire?

CHAPTER LI.

TAKING OFF THE FACTORY LADIES.

THERE are few countries in the world, squire, said the Clockmaker, got such fine water powers as these provinces; but the folks don't make no use of 'em, tho' the materials for factories are spread about in abundance everywhere. Perhaps the whole world might be stumped to produce such a factory stand as Niagara Falls; what a 'nation sight of machinery that would carry, wouldn't it?—supply all Birmingham a'most.

The first time I returned from there, minister said, Sam, said he, have you seen the falls of Niagara? Yes, sir, said I, I guess I have,

Well, said he, ain't it a'most a grand *sight* that? I guess it is a *scite*, says I, and it would be a grand speck to get up a joint stock company for factory purposes. for such another place for mills ain't to be found atween the poles. Oh dear! said I, only think of the cardin mills, fullin mills, cotton mills, grain mills, saw mills, plaister mills, and gracious knows what sort o' mills might be put up there, and never fail for water; any fall you like, and any power you want, and yet them goneys the British let all run away to waste. It's a dreadful pity, ain't it? Oh Sam! said he,—and he jumped as if he was bit by a sarpent right up on eend,—now don't talk so profane, my sakes!—don't talk so sacrilegious. How that dreadful thirst o' gain has absorbed all other feelins in our people, when such an idea could be entertained for a moment. It's a grand spectacle,—it's the voice of natur in the wilderness, proclaimin to the untutored tribes thereof the power and majesty and glory of God. It is consecrated by the visible impress of the great invisible architect. It is sacred ground—a temple not made by hands. It cannot be viewed without fear and tremblin, nor contemplated without wonder and awe. It proclaims to man, as to Moses of old, 'Draw not nigh hither, put off thy shoes from off thy feet, for the place where thou standest is holy ground.' He who appeared in flame of fire in the bush, and the bush was not consumed, appears also in the rush of water, and the water diminishes not. Talk not to me of mills, factories, and machinery, sir, nor of introducin the money-changers into the temple of the Lord. Talk not.—You needn't go, said I, minister, for to work yourself up that way ag'in me, I do assure you, for I didn't mean to say anything out o' the way at all, so come now. And now you do mention it, says I, it does seem kinder grand-like—that are great big lake does seem like an everlastin large milk pan with a lip for pourin at the falls, and when it does fall head over heels, all white froth and spray like Phœbe's syllabub, it does look grand, no doubt, and it's nateral for a minister to think on it as you do; but still for all that, for them that ain't preachers, I defy most any man to see it, without thinkin of a cotton mill.

Well, well, said he, awavin of his hand, say no more about it, and he walked into his study and shut to the door. He warn't like other men, minister. He was full of crotchets that way, and the sight of the sea, a great storm, a starry sky, or even a mere flower, would make him fly right off at the handle that way when you warn't athinkin on it at all; and yet for all that he was the most cheerful critter I ever seed, and nothin a'most pleased him so much as to see young folks enjoyin themselves as merry as crickets. He used to say that youth, innocence, and cheerfulness was what was meant by the three graces. It was a curious kink, too, he took about them falls, warn't it? for, arter all, atween you and me, it's nothin

but a river taken over a cliff full split, instead of runnin down hill the old way;—I never hear tell of 'em I don't think of that tantrum of hisn.

Our factories in New England are one of the best fruits of the last war, squire, said he; they are actilly worth seein. I know I have reason to speak well of 'em any how, for it was them gave me my first start in life, and a pleasant start it was too, as well as a profitable one. I spent upwards of a year there among the galls, atakin of them off in the portrait line, and in that time I cleared three hundred pounds of your money good: it warn't so bad that, was it?

When I was down to Rhode Island larnin bronzin, gildin, and sketchin for the clock business, I worked at odd times for the Honourable Eli Wad, a foundationalist—a painting for him. A foundationalist, said I; what is that?—is it a religious sect? No, said he; it's a bottom maker. He only made bottoms, he didn't make arms and legs, and he sold these wooden bottoms to the chair-makers. He did 'em by a sarcular saw and a turnin lathe, and he turned 'em off amazin' quick; he made a fortin out of the invention, for he shipped 'em to every part of the Union. The select men objected to his sign of bottom maker; they said it didn't sound pretty, and he altered it to foundationalist. That was one cause the speck turned out so well, for every one that seed it a'most stopt to inquire what it meant, and it brought his patent into great vogue; many's the larf folks had over that sign, I tell you.

So, said he, when I had done, Slick, said he, you've a considerable of a knack with the brush, it would be a grand speck for you to go to Lowell and take off the factory ladies: you know what the women are,—most all on 'em will want to have their likeness taken. The whole art of portrait paintin, says he, as far as my observation goes, lies in a free sketch of the leadin featur. Give it good measure: do you take? No, says I, I don't onderstand one word of it. Well, says he, what I mean is this; see what the leadin featur is, and exaggerate that, and you have a striking likeness. If the nose is large, gist make it a little more so; if there is a slight cast o' the eye, give it a squint; a strong line in the face, deepen it; a big mouth, enlarge it; a set smile, make it a smirk; a high cheek bone, square it out well. Reciprocate this by paintin the rest o' the face a little handsomer, and you have it complete; you'll never fail—there's no mistake. Dead colorin, with lots of varnish, will do for that market, and six dollars apiece for the pictur's is about the fair deal for the price. If you don't succeed, I will give my head for a foot-ball. You'll hear 'em all say, Oh! that's her nose to a hair,—that's her eye exactly; you could tell that mouth anywhere, that smile you could swear to as far as you can see it,—it's a most a beautiful likeness. She's taken off complete—it's as natural as life. You could

do one at a sittin, or six a week, as easy as kiss my hand, and I'm athinkin you'd find it answer a good eend, and put you in funds for a start in the clock line.

But, Sam, says he, aputtin of his hand on my shoulder, and lookin me strong in the face, mind your eye, my boy; mind you don't get tangled in the deep sea grass, so you can't clear hand or foot. There are some plaguy pretty galls there, and some on 'em have saved a considerable round sum too; don't let 'em walk into you now afore you know where you be. Young gentlemen are scarce in New England, sweethearts ain't to be had for love nor money, and a good-lookin fellow like you, with five hundred pair of pretty little good-natured longin eyes on him, is in a fair way o' gettin his flint fixed, I tell you. Marriage won't do for you, my hearty, till you've seed the world 'and made somethin handsom. To marry for money is mean, to marry without it is folly, and to marry both young and poor is downright madness; so hands off, says you; love to all, but none in partiklar. If you find yourself agettin spooney, throw brush, palette, and paint over the falls, and off full split; change of air and scene to cure love, consumption, or the blues, must be taken airy in the disease, or it's no good. An ounce o' prevention is worth a pound o' cure. Recollect, too, when you are married, you are tied by the leg, Sam; like one of our sodger disarters, you have a chain adanglin to your foot, with a plaguy heavy shot to the eend of it. It keeps you to one place most all the time, for you can't carry it with you, and you can't leave it behind you, and you can't do nothin with it.

If you think you can trust yourself, go; if not, stay where you be. It's a grand school, tho', Sam; you'll know somethin of human natur when you leave Lowell, I estimate, for they'll larn you how to cut your eye-teeth them galls; you'll see how wonderful the ways of womankind is, for they do beat all—that's sartin. Well, down I went to Lowell, and arter a day or two spent a visitin the factories, and gettin introduced to the ladies, I took a room and sot up my easel, and I had as much work as ever I could cleverly turn my hand to. Most every gall in the place had her likeness taken; some wanted 'em to send to home, some to give to a sweetheart to admire, and some to hang up to admire themselves. The best of the joke was, every gall had an excuse for bein there. They all seemed as if they thought it warn't quite genteel, a little too much in the help style. One said she came for the benefit of the lecturs at the Lyceum, another to carry a little sister to dancin school, and a third to assist the fund for foreign missions, and so on, but none on 'em to work. Some on 'em lived in large buildings belongin to the factory, and others in little cottages—three or four in a house.

I recollect two or three days arter I arrived, I went to call on Miss

Naylor, I knew down to Squantum, and she axed me to come and drink tea with her and the two ladies that lived with her. So in the evenin I put on my bettermost clothes and went down to tea. This, says she, introducin of me to the ladies, is Mr. Slick, a natize artist of great promise, and one that is self-taught too, that is come to take us off; and this is Miss Jemima Potts of Milldam, in Umbagog; and this is Miss Binah Dooly, a lady from Indgian Scalp Vermont. Your sarvant, ladies, says I; I hope I see you well. Beautiful factory this, it whips English all holler; our free and enlightened citizens have exhibited so much skill, and our intelligent and enterprisin ladies, says I (with a smile and a bow to each), so much science and taste, that I reckon we might stump the univarsal world to ditto Lowell. It sartainly is one of the wonders of the world, says Miss Jemima Potts; it is astonishing how jealous the English are, it makes 'em so ryled they can't bear to praise it at all. There was one on 'em agoin thro' the large cotton factory to-day with Judge Beler, and says the Judge to him, now don't this astonish you? said he; don't it exceed any idea you could have formed of it? you must allow there is nothin like it in Europe, and yet this is only in its infancy—it's only gist begun. Come now, confess the fact, don't you feel that the sun of England is set for ever—her glory departed to set up its standard in the new world? Speak candidly now, for I should like to hear what you think. It certainly is a respectable effort for a young country with a thin population, said he, and a limited capital, and is creditable to the skill and enterprise of New England; but as for rivalry, it's wholly out of the question, and he looked as mad as if he could aswallered a wild cat alive. Well, well, said the Judge, larfin, for he is a sweet-tempered, dear man, and the politest one too I ever knew, I don't altogether know as it is gist fair to ask you to admit a fact so humblin to your national pride, and so mortifyin to your feelins as an Englishman; but I can easily conceive how thunderstruck you must have been on enterin this town at its prodigious power, its great capacity, its wonderful promise. It's generally allowed to be the first thing of the kind in the world. But what are you alookin at, Mr. Slick? said she; is there anything on my check? I was only athinkin, says I, how difficult it would be to paint such a'most a beautiful complexion, to infuse into it the softness and richness of natur's colorin; I'm most afeerd and it would be beyond my art—that's a fact.

Oh, you artists do flatter so, said she; tho' flattery is a part of your profession I do believe; but I'm e'en a'most sure there is somethin or another on my face,—and she got up and looked into the glass to satisfy herself. It would a'done you good, squire, too see how it did satisfy her too. How many of the ladies have you taken off? said Miss Dooly. I have only painted three, said I, yet; but I have thirty

bespoke. How would you like to be painted, said I, miss? On a white horse, said she, accompanying of my father, the general, to the review. And you, said I, Miss Naylor? Astudyin Judge Naylor, my uncle's specimens, said she, in the library. Says Miss Jemima, I should like to be taken off in my brother's barge. What is he? said I, for he would have to have his uniform on. He? said she;—why, he is a—and she looked away and coloured up like anything—he's an officer, sir, said she, in one of our national ships. Yes, miss, said I, I know that; but officers are dressed accordin to their grade, you know, in our sarvice. We must give him the right dress. What is his grade? The other two ladies turned round and giggled, and Miss Jemima hung down her head and looked foolish. Says Miss Naylor, why don't you tell him, dear? No, says she, I won't; do you tell him. No, indeed, said Miss Naylor; he is not my brother; you ought to know best what he is;—do you tell him yourself. Oh, you know very well, Mr. Slick, said she, only you make as if you didn't, to poke fun at me and make me say it. I hope I may be shot if I do, says I, miss; I never heerd tell of him afore, and if he is an officer in our navy, there is one thing I can tell you, says I, you needn't be ashamed to call one of our naval heroes your brother, nor to tell his grade neither, for there ain't an office in the sarvice that ain't one of honour and glory. The British can whip all the world, and we can whip the British.

Well, says she, alookin down and takin up her handkerchief, and turnin it eend for eend to read the marks in the corner of it, to see if it was hern or not,—if I must, then I suppose I must; he is a rooster swain then, but it's a shame to make me. A rooster swain! says I; well, I vow I never heerd that grade afore in all my horn days; I hope I may die if I did. What sort of a swain is a rooster swain? How you do act, Mr. Slick, said she; ain't you ashamed of yourself? Do, for gracious sake, behave, and not carry on so like Old Scratch. You are goin too far now; ain't he, Miss Naylor? Upon my word I don't know what you mean, said Miss Naylor, affectin to look as innocent as a female fox; I'm not used to sea-tarms, and I don't onderstand it no more than he does; and Miss Dooly got up a book, and began to read and rock herself backward and forward in a chair, as regular as a Mississippi sawyer, and as demure as you please. Well, thinks I, what onder the sun can she mean? for I can't make head or tail of it. A rooster swain!—a rooster swain! says I; do tell—Well, says she, you make me feel quite spunky, and if you don't stop this minuit, I'll go right out of the room; it ain't fair to make game of me so, and I don't thank you for it one mite or morsel. Says I, miss, I beg your pardon; I'll take my davy I didn't mean no offence at all; but, upon my word and honour, I never heerd the word rooster swain afore, and I don't

mean to larf at your brother or tease you neither. Well, says she, I suppose you never will ha' done, so turn away your face and I will tell you. And she got up and turned my head round with her hands to the wall, and the other two ladies started out, and said they'd go and see arter the tea.

Well, says I, are you ready now, miss? Yes, said she;—a rooster swain, if you must know, you wicked critter you, is a cockswain; a word you know'd well enough warn't fit for a lady to speak; so take that to remember it by,—and she fetched me a deuce of a clip on the side of the face, and ran out of the room. Well, I swear I could hardly keep from larfin right out, to find out arter all it was nothin but a coxswain she made such a touss about; but I felt kinder sorry, too, to have bothered her so, for I recollect there was the same difficulty among our ladies last war about the name of the English officer that took Washington; they called him always the 'British Admiral,' and there warn't a lady in the Union would call him by name. I'm a great friend to decency,—a very great friend indeed, squire,—for decency is a manly vartue; and to delicacy, for delicacy is a feminine vartue; but as for squeamishness, rat me if it don't make me sick.

There was two little rooms behind the keepin room; one was a pantry, and t'other a kitchen. It was into the fardest one the ladies went to get tea ready, and presently they brought in the things and sot them down on the table, and we all got sociable once more. Gist as we began conversation ag'in, Miss Jemima Potts said she must go and bring in the cream jug. Well, up I jumps, and follers her out, and says I, pray let me, miss, wait upon you; it ain't fair for the ladies to do this when the gentlemen are by,—is it? Why didn't you call on me? I overtook her gist at the kitchen door. But this door-way, said I, is so plaguy narrer,—ain't it? There's hardly room for two to pass without their lips atouchin, is there? Ain't you ashamed? said she, I believe you have broke my comb in two,—that's a fact;—but don't do that ag'in, said she, awhisperin,—that's a dear man; Miss Dooly will hear you, and tell every lady in the factory, for she's plaguy jealous;—so let me pass now. One more to make friends, said I, miss. Hush! said she,—there—let me go; and she put the jug in my hand, and then whipped up a plate herself, and back into the parlour in no time.

A curtain, says I, ladies (as I sot down ag'in), or a book-shelf, I could introduce into the pictur, but it would make it a work o' great time and expense, to do it the way you speak of; and besides, said I, who would look at the rest if the face was well done? for one thing, I will say, three prettier farces never *was* seen painted on canvass. Oh, Mr. Slick, says they, how you bam!—ain't you ashamed? Fact, says I, ladies, upon my honour:—a fact, and no mistake. If you

would allow me, ladies, said I, to suggest, I think hair done up high, long tortoise-shell comb, with flowers on the top, would become you, Miss Naylor, and set off your fine Grecian face grand. A fashionable mornin cap, lined with pink and trimmed with blue bows, would set off your portrait, Miss Dooly, and become your splendid Roman profile complete. And what for me? said Jemima. If I might be so bold, said I, I would advise leavin out the comb in your case, miss, said I, as you are tall, and it might perhaps be in the way, and be broke in two (and I pressed her foot onder the table with mine); and I would throw the hair into long loose nateral curls, and let the neck and shoulders be considerable bare, to give room for a pearl necklace, or coral beads, or any little splendid ornament of that kind. Miss Jemima looked quite delighted at this idea, and, jumpin up, exclaimed, Dear me, said she, I forgot the sugar-tongs! I'll gist go and fetch 'em. Allow me, says I, miss, follerin her; but ain't it funny, tho', says I, too, that we should gist get scrouged ag'in in this very identical little narrer door-way,—ain't it? How you act, said she; now this is too bad; that curl is all squashed, I declare; I won't come out ag'in to-night, I now. Nor I neither then, said I, larfin; let them that wants things go for 'em. Then you couldn't introduce the specimens, could you? said Miss Naylor. The judge, my uncle, has a beautiful collection. When he was in business as a master mason, he built the great independent Democratic Sovereignty Hall at Sam Patchville (a noble buildin that, Mr. Slick,—it's generally allowed to be the first piece of architecture in the world). He always broke off a piece of every kind of stone used in the building, and it makes a'most a complete collection. If I could be taken off at a table astudyin and asortin 'em into primary formations, secondary formations, and trap, I should like it amazinly.

Well, says I, I'll do the best I can to please you, miss, for I never hear of secondary formations without pleasure,—that's a fact. The ladies, you know, are the secondary formation, for they were formed arter man, and as for trap, says I, if they ain't up to that, it's a pity. Why, as I'm alive, said I, if that ain't the nine o'clock bell: well, how time has flow'd, hasn't it? I suppose I must be amovin, as it is gettin on considerable late, but I must say I've had a most delightful evenin as ever I spent in my life. When a body, says I, finds himself in a circle of literary and scientific ladies, he takes no note of time, it passes so smooth and quick. Now, says I, ladies, excuse me for mentionin a little bit of business, but it is usual in my profession to be paid one half in advance; but with the ladies I dispense with that rule, says I, on one condition,—I receive a kiss as airnest. Oh, Mr. Slick, said they, how can you? No kiss, no pictur, says I. Is that an invariable rule? says they. I never deviated from it in my life, said I, especially where the ladies are so beautiful as my kind.

friends here to-night are. Thank you, my sweet Miss Naylor, said I. Oh, did you ever —? said she. And you also, dear Miss Dooly. Oh, my sakes, said she, how ondecient! I wish I could take my pay altogether in that coin, said I. Well, you'll get no such airnest from me, I can tell you, said Miss Jemima, and off she sot and darted out o' the room like a kitten, and I arter her. Oh! that dear little narrer door-way seems made on purpose, said I, don't it? Well, I hope you are satisfied now, said she, you forward, impudent critter; you've taken away my breath a'most. Good night, ladies, said I. Good night, Mr. Slick, says they; don't forget to call and take us off to-morrow at intermission. And, says Miss Jemima, walkin out as far as the gate with me, when not better engaged, we shall be happy to see you sociably to tea. Most happy, Miss, said I; only I fear I shall call oftener than will be agreceable; but, dear me! says I, I've forgot somethin I declare, and I turned right-about. Perhaps you have forgot it, in the little narrer door-way, said she, alarfin and asteppin backwards, and holdin up both hands to fend off. What is it? said she, and she looked up as saucy and as rompy as you please. Why, said I, that dreadful, horrid name you called your brother. What was it? for I've forgot it, I vow. Look about and find out, said she; it's what you ain't, and never was, and never will be, and that's a gentleman. You are a nasty, dirty, ondecient man,—that's flat, and if you don't like it you may lump it, so there now for you—good night. But stop—shake hands afore you go, said she; let's part friends, and she held out her hand. Gist as I was agoin to take it, it slipt up like flash by my face, and tipt my hat off over my shoulder, and as I turned and stooped to pick it up, she up with her little foot and let me have it, and pitched me right over on my knees. It was done as quick as wink. Even and quit now, said she, as good friends as ever. Done, said I. But hush, said she; that critter has the ears of a mole, and the eyes of a lynx. What critter? said I. Why, that frightful, ugly varment witch, Binah Dooly, if she ain't acomin out here, as I'm a livin sinner. Come again soon—that's a dear—good night!—and she sailed back as demure as if nothin had ahappened. Yes, squire, the Honourable Eli Wad, the foundationalist, was right when he said I'd see sunthin of human natur among the factory galls. The ways of woman kind are wonderful indeed. This was my first lesson, that *squeamishness and indelicacy are often found united; in short, that in manners, as in other things, extremes meet.*

CHAPTER LII.

THE SCHOOLMASTER ABROAD.

THE road from Chester to Halifax is one of the worst in the province; and daylight failing us before we made the half of our journey, we were compelled to spend the night at a small unlicensed house, the occasional resort of fishermen and coasters. There was but one room in the shanty, besides the kitchen and bed-room; and that one, though perfectly clean, smelt intolerably of smoked salmon that garnished its rafters. A musket, a light-fowling piece, and a heavy American rifle, were slung on the beams that supported the floor of the garret; and snow-shoes, fishing-rods, and small dip-nets with long ash handles, were secured to the wall by iron hooks. Altogether it had a sporting appearance, that indicated the owner to be one of those amphibious animals to whom land or water is equally natural, and who prefer the pleasures of the chase and the fishery to the severer labour but more profitable employment of tilling the soil. A few fancy articles of costly materials and superior workmanship that ornamented the mantel-piece and open closet (probably presents from the gentlemen of the garrison at Halifax), shewed that there were sometimes visitors of a different description from the ordinary customers. As the house was a solitary one, and situated at the head of a deep, well-sheltered inlet, it is probable that smuggling may have added to the profits, and diversified the pursuits of the owner. He did not, however, make his appearance. He had gone, his wife said, in his boat that afternoon to Margaret's bay, a distance of eight miles, to procure some salt to cure his fish, and would probably not return before the morning.

I've been here before, you see, squire, said Mr. Slick, pointing to a wooden clock in the corner of the room; folks that have nothin' to do like to see how the time goes,—and a man who takes a glass of grog at twelve o'clock is the most punctual feller in the world. The draft is always honoured when it falls due. But who have we here? As he said this, a man entered the room, carrying a small bundle in his hand, tied up in a dirty silk pocket-handkerchief. He was dressed in an old suit of rusty black, much the worse for wear. His face bore the marks of intemperance, and he appeared much fatigued with his journey, which he had performed alone and on foot. I hope I don't intrude, gentlemen, said he; but you see Dulhanty, poor fellow, has but one room, and poverty makes us acquainted with strange bed-fellows sometimes. Brandy, my little girl, and some cold

water; take it out of the north side of the well, my dear,—and,—do you hear,—be quick, for I'm choked with the dust. Gentlemen, will you take some brandy and water? said he. Dulhanty always keeps some good brandy,—none o' your wretched Yankee peach brandy, that's enough to pyson a horse, but real Cogniak. Well, I don't care if I do, said Mr. Slick. Arter you, sir. By your leave, the water, sir. Gentlemen, all your healths, said the stranger. Good brandy that, sir; you had better take another glass before the water gets warm,—and he helped himself again most liberally. Then, taking a survey of the Clockmaker and myself, observed to Mr. Slick, that he thought he had seen him before. Well, it's not unlikely;—where?

Ah, that's the question, sir; I cannot exactly say where.

Nor I neither.

Which way may you be travellin? Down east, I expect?

Which way are you from then? Somewhere down south?

The traveller again applied himself to brandy and water.

Ahem! then you are from Lunenburg?

Well, I wont say I warn't at Lunenburg?

Ahem! pretty place that Lunenburg; but they speak Dutch. D—n the Dutch; I hate Dutch: there's no language like English.

Then I suppose you are going to Halifax?

Well, I won't say I wont go to Halifax afore I return, neither.

A nice town that Halifax—good fish market there; but they are not like the English fish a'ter all. Halibut is a poor substitute for the good old English turbot. Where did you say you were from, sir?

I don't gist altogether mind that I said I was from any place in partikilar, but from down south last.

Ahem! your health, sir; perhaps you are like myself, sir, a stranger, and have no home: and, after all, there is no home like England. Pray what part of England are you from?

I estimate I'm not from England at all.

I'm sorry for you, then: but where the devil are you from?

In a general way folks say I'm from the States.

Knock them down then, d—n them. If any man was to insult me by calling me a Yankee, I'd kick him; but the Yankees have no seat of honour to kick. If I hadn't been thinkin more of my brandy and water than your answers, I might have known you were a Yankee by your miserable evasions. They never give a straight answer—there's nothing straight about them, but their long backs,—and he was asleep in his chair, overcome by the united effects of the heat, the brandy, and fatigue.

That's one o' their schoolmasters, said Mr. Slick; and it's no wonder the Blue-noses are such 'cute chaps when they got such

masters as that are to teach the young idea how to shoot. The critter has axed more questions in ten minutes than if he was a full-blooded Yankee, tho' he does hate them so *peevishly*. He's an Englishman, and, I guess, has seen better days; but he is ruined by drink now. When he is about half shaved he is an everlastin quarrelsom critter, and carries a most plaguy oncivil tongue in his head: that's the reason I didn't let on where I came from, for he hates us like pyson. But there ain't many such critters here; the English don't emigrate here much,—they go to Canada or the States: and it's strange too, for, squire, this is the best location in all America, is Nova Scotia, if the British did but know it.

It will have the greatest trade, the greatest population, the most manufacturs, and the most wealth of any state this side of the water. The resources, nateral advantages, and political position of this place beat all. Take it all together, I don't know gist such a country in the univarsal world a'most. What! Nova Scotia? said I; this poor little colony, this Ultima Thule of America,—what is ever to make *it* a place of any consequence? Everything, squire, said he, everything that constitutes greatness. I wish we had it,—that's all; and we will have it too some o' these days, if they don't look sharp. In the first place it has more nor twice as many great men-o'-war harbours in it, capable of holdin' the whole navy in it, stock, lock, and barrel, than we have from Maine to Mexico, besides innumerable small harbours, island lees, and other shelters, and it's gist all but an island itself; and most all the best o' their harbours don't freeze up at no time. It ain't shut up like Canada and our back country all winter, but you can in and out as you please; and it's so intersected with rivers and lakes, most no part of it is twenty miles from navigable water to the sea,—and then it is the nearest point of our continent to Europe. All that, said I, is very true; but good harbours, though necessary for trade, are not the only things requisite in commerce. But it's in the midst of the fisheries, squire,—all sorts of fisheries toe River fisheries of shad, salmon, gasperaux, and herring—shove fishery of mackerel and cod—bank fishery, and Labrador fishery. Oh dear! it beats all, and they don't do nothin with 'em, but leave 'em to us. They don't seem to think 'em worth havin or keepin, for government don't protect 'em. See what a school for seamen that is, to man the ships to fill the harbours.

Then look at the beeowels of the airth: only think of the coal; and it's no use atalkin, that's the only coal to supply us that we can rely on. Why, there ain't nothin like it. It extends all the way from Bay of Fundy right out to Pictou, thro' the province, and then under all the island of Cape Breton; and some o' them seams are the biggest, and thickest, and deepest ever yet discovered since the world began. Beautiful coal it is too. Then natur has given 'em most

By the way
angelina

grand abundant iron-ore, here and there and everywhere, and wood and coal to work it. Only think o' them two things in such abundance, and a country possessed of first chop-water powers everywhere, and then tell me Providence hasn't laid the foundation of a manufactorin nation here. But that ain't all. Gist see the plaster of Paris, what almighty big heaps of it there is here. We use already more nor a hundred and fifty thousand tons of it a-year for manure, and we shall want ten times that quantity yet,—we can't do without it: it has done more for us than steam; it has made our barren lands fertile, and whole tracts habitable, that never would have been worth a cent an acre without it. It will go to South America and the West Indgies yet—it is the magic wand—it's the philosopher's stone; I hope I may be shot if it ain't: it turns all it touches into gold. See what a sight of vessels it takes to carry a great bulky article like that,—what a sight of men it employs, what a host of folks it feeds, what a batch of sailors it bakes, what hardy tars for the wooden walls of Old England. But Old England is as blind as a bat, and Blue-nose is a puppy only nine days old; he can't see yet. If the critter was well trained, had his ears cropped and tongue wormed, he might turn out a decent-lookin whelp yet, for the old one is a good nurse and feeds well. Well, then, look at the lead, copper, slate (and as for slate, they may stump Wales, I know, to produce the like), granite, grindstone, freestone, lime, manganese, salt, sulphur. Why, they've got everything but enterprise, and that I *do* believe in my soul they expect to find a mine of, and dig up out of the ground as they do coal. But the soil, squire, where will you find the like o' that? A considerable part of it along the coast is poor, no doubt; but it's the fishin side o' the province, and therefore it's all right; but the bay side is a tearin, rippin fine country. Them dyke mashes have raised hay and grain year arter year now for a whole centery without manure, and I guess will continue to do so from July to etarnity. Then natur has given them that sea-mud, salt sand, seaweed, and river sludge for dressin their upland, so that it could be made to carry wheat till all's blue again.

If it possesses all these advantages you speak of, said I, it will doubtless be some day or another both a populous and rich country; but still it does not appear to me that it can be compared to the country of the Mississippi. Why, squire, said he, if you was once to New Orleans I think you wouldn't say so. That is a great country, no doubt, too great to compare to a small province like this; great resources, great river, fertile land, great trade; but the climate is awful, and the emigrant people ain't much better than the climate. The folks at New Orleans put me in mind of children playin in a churchyard, jumpin over the graves, hidin behind the tombs, alarfin at the emblems of mortality and the queer old rhymes under 'em, all

full of life, and glee, and fun above ground, while onderneath it is a great charnel-house, full of winding sheets, skeletons, and generations of departed citizens. That are place is built in a bar in the harbour, made of snags, driftwood, and chokes, heaped up by the river, and then filled and covered with the sediment and alluvial of the rich bottoms above, brought down by the freshets. It's peopled in the same way. The eddies and tides of business of all that country centre there, and the froth and scum are washed up and settle at New Orleans. It's filled with all sorts of people, black, white, and Indians, and their different shades, French, Spanish, Portuguese, and Dutch; English, Irish, and Scotch, and then people from every state in the Union. These last have all nicknames. There's the hoosiers of Indiana, the suckers of Illinoy, the pukes of Missouri, the buckeys of Ohio, the red horses of Kentucky, the mudheads of Tennessee, the wolverines of Michigan, the eels of New England, and the corn-crackers of Virginia. All these, with many others, make up the population, which is mottled with black and all its shades; 'most all too is supplied by emigration. It is a great caravansary filled with strangers, dissolute enough to make your hair stand an eend, drinkin all day, gamblin all night, and fightin all the time. Death pervades all natur there; it breathes in the air, and it floats on the water, and rises in the vapours and exhalations, and rides on the whirlwind and tempest: it dwells on the drought, and also in the inundation. Above, below, within, around, everywhere is death; but who knows, or misses, or mourns the stranger? Dig a grave for him, and you plunge him into the water,—the worms eat the coffin, and the crocodiles have the body. We have mills to Rhode Island with sarcular saws, and apparatus for makin packin-boxes. At one of these factories they used to make 'em in the shape of coffins, and then they sarved a double purpose; they carried out inions to New Orleans, and then carried out the dead to their graves.

That are city was made by the freshets. It's a chance if it ain't carried away by them. It may yet be its fate to be swept clean off by 'em, to mingle once more with the stream that deposited it, and form new land further down the river. It may chance to be a spot to be pointed out from the steam-boats as the place where a great city once stood, and a great battle was once fought, in which the genius and valour of the new world triumphed over the best troops and best ginerals of Europe. That place is gist like a hot-bed, and the folks like the plants in it. People do grow rich fast; but they look kinder spindlin and weak, and they are c'en a'most choked with weeds and toad-stools, that grow every bit and grain as fast,—and twice as nateral. The Blue-noses don't know how to valy this location, squire, that's a fact, for it's a'most a grand one.

What's a grand location? said the school-master, waking up.

Nova Scotia, said Mr. Slick. I was just atellin of the squire, it's a grand location. D—n the location, said he; I hate the word; it ain't English; there are no words like the English words.—Here, my little girl, more brandy, my dear, and some fresh water; mind it's fresh,—take it out of the bottom of the well—do you hear?—the coldest spot in the well; and be quick, for I'm burnt up with the heat to-day. Who's for a pull of grog? suppose we have a pull, gentlemen—a good pull, and a strong pull, and a pull altogether, eh! Here's to you, gentlemen!—ah, that's good! you are sure of good brandy here. I say, Mister Location, won't you moisten the clay, eh?—Come, my honest fellow! I'll take another glass with you to our better acquaintance:—you won't, eh? well, then, I'll supply your deficiency myself; here's luck! Where did you say you were from, sir? I don't mind that I indicated where I was from gist in pitikilar. No, you didn't; but I twig you now, my boy, Sam Slick, the clockmaker! And so you say this is a nice location, do you? Yes, it is a nice location for pride and poverty, for ignorance and assumption, for folly and vice. Curse the location! I say; there's no location like Old England. This is a poor man's country, sir; but not a rich man's, or a gentleman's. There's nothing this side of the water, sir, approaching to the class of gentry. They have neither the feelings, the sentiments, nor the breeding. They know nothing about it. What little they have here, sir, are second-hand airs copied from poor models that necessity forces out here. It is the farce of high life below stairs, sir, played in a poor theatre to a provincial audience. Poor as I am, humble as I am, and degraded as I am,—for I am now all three,—I have seen better days, and was not always the houseless wanderer you now see me. I know what I am talking about. There is nothing beyond respectable mediocrity here; there never can be, there is no material for it, there is nothing to support it. Some fresh water, my dear; that horrid water is hot enough to scald one's throat. The worst of a colony is, sir, there is no field for ambition, no room for talents, no reward for distinguished exertions. It is a rich country for a poor man, and a poor country for a rich one. There is no permanent upper class of society here, or any where else in America. There are rich men, learned men, agreeable men, liberal men, and good men, but very few gentlemen. The breed ain't pure; it is not kept long enough distinct to refine, to obtain the distinctive marks, to become generic. Dry work this talking;—your health, gentlemen! a good fellow that Dulhanty,—suppose we drink his health? he always keeps good brandy,—there's not a headache in a gallon of it.

What was I talking about?—Oh! I have it—the location, as those drawling Yankees call it. Yes, instead of importing horses here from England to improve the breed, they should import gentlemen;

they want the true breed, they want blood. Yes, said the Clockmaker (whom I had never known to remain silent so long before), I guess. Yes, d—n you! said the stranger, what do you know about it?—you know as much about a gentleman as a cat does of music. If you interrupt me again, I'll knock your two eyes into one, you clock-making, pumpkin-headed, peddling, cheating, Yankee vagabond. The sickly waxwork imitation of gentility here, the faded artificial flower of fashion, the vulgar pretension, the contemptible struggle for precedence, make one look across the Atlantic with a longing after the freshness of nature, for life and its realities. All North America is a poor country, with a poor climate. I would not give Ireland for the whole of it. This Nova Scotia is the best part of it, and has the greatest resources; but still there is no field in a colony for a man of talent and education. Little ponds never hold big fish, there is nothing but pollywogs, tadpoles, and minims in them. Look at them as they swim thro' the shallow water of the margins of their little muddy pool, following some small fellow an inch long, the leader of the shoal, that thinks himself a whale, and if you do not despise their pretensions, you will, at least, be compelled to laugh at their absurdities. Go to every legislature this side of the water from Congress to Halifax, and hear the stuff that is talked. Go to every press, and see the stuff that is printed; go to the people, and see the stuff that is uttered or swallowed, and then tell me this is a location for anything above mediocrity. What keeps you here, then? said Mr. Slick, if it is such an everlastin miserable country as you lay it out to be. I'll tell you, sir, said he, and he drained off the whole of the brandy, as if to prepare for the effort—I will tell you what keeps me, and he placed his hands on his knees, and looking the Clockmaker steadily in the face until every muscle worked with emotion—I'll tell you, sir, if you must know—my misfortune. The effort and the brandy overpowered him; he fell from his chair, and we removed him to a bed, loosened his cravat, and left him to his repose.

It's a considerable of a trial, said the Clockmaker, to sit still and listen to that cussed old critter, I tell you. If you hadn't abeen here I'd agiv'n him a rael good quiltin. I'd atanned his jacket for him; I'd alarned him to carry a civil tongue in his head, the nasty, drunken, onmannerly, good-for-nothin beast; more nor once, I felt my fingers itch to give him a slockdolager under the ear; but he ain't worth mindin, I guess. Yes, squire, I won't deny but New Orleans is a great place, a wonderful place; but there are resources here beyond all conception, and its climate is as pleasant as any we have, and a plaguy sight more healthy. I don't know what more you'd ask, almost an island indented everywhere with harbours surrounded with fisheries. The key of the St. Lawrence, the Bay of Fundy, and the West Indgies;—prime land above, one vast mineral

bed beneath, and a climate, over all, temperate, pleasant, and healthy. If that ain't enough for one place, it's a pity—that's all.

CHAPTER LIII.

THE WRONG ROOM.

THE next morning, the rain poured down in torrents, and it was ten o'clock before we were able to resume our journey. I am glad, said Mr. Slick, that cussed critter that schoolmaster hasn't yet woke up. I'm most afeerd if he had aturned out afore we started, I should have quilted him, for that talk of his last night sticks in my crop considerable hard. It ain't over easy to digest, I tell you; for nothin a'most raises my dander so much as to hear a benighted, ignorant, and enslaved foreigner, belittle our free and enlightened citizens. But, see there, squire, said he, that's the first Indgian campment we've fell in with on our journey. Happy fellers, them Indgians, ben't they?—they have no wants and no cares but food and cloathin, and fishin and huntin supply them things easy. That tall one you see spearin fish down in that are creek there, is Peter Paul, a most aplaguy 'cute chap. I mind the last time I was to Lunenberg, I seed him to the magistrate's, John Robar's: he laid down the law to the justice better than are a lawyer I have met with in the province yet: he talked as clever a'most as Mr. Clay. I'll tell you what it was:—Peter Paul had made his wigwam one winter near a brook on the farm of James M'Nutt, and employed his time in coopering, and used M'Nutt's timber, when he wanted any. Well, M'Nutt threatened to send him to jail if he didn't move away, and Paul came to Robar' to ax him whether it could be done. Says he, squire,—M'Nutt, he came to me, and says he, Peter, what adevil you do here, d—n you? I say, I make 'em bucket, make 'em tub, may be basket, or axe handle, to buy me some blanket and powder and shot with—you no want some? Well, he say, this my land, Peter, and my wood; I bought 'em, and pay money for 'em; I won't let you stay here and cut my wood; if you cut anoder stick, I send you to jail. Then I tell him I see what governor say to that: what you plant, that yours; what you sow, that yours too; but you no plant 'em woods; God—he plant 'em dat; he mak 'em river, too, for all mens, white man and Indgian man—all same. God—he no give 'em river to one man,—he make him run thro' all the woods. When you drink, he run on and I drink, and then when all drink he run on to de sea. He no stand still—you no catch him—you no have him. If I cut down your apple-trec, then send me to jail, cause you plant 'em;

but if I cut down ash-tree, oak-tree, or pine-tree, in woods, I say it's mine. If I cut 'em first—for tree in big woods like river—first cut him first have him. If God give 'em all to you, where is your writin, or bring somebody say he hear him say so, then I stop. I never kill your hog, and say I thought him one bear, nor your hen, and say him one partridge; but you go kill my stock, my cariboo, and my moose. I never frighten away your sheep; but you go chop wood, and make one d—d noise and frighten away bear; so when I go to my trap I no find him there, and I lose him, and de skin and de meat too. No two laws for you and me, but all same. You know Jeffery—him big man to Halifax?—well, him very good man that; very kind to poor Indgian (when that man go to heaven, God will give him plenty backy to smoke, for that I know). Well, he say, Peter Paul, when you want asa-tree, you go cut 'em down on my land when you like; I give you leave. He very good man dat, but God give 'em afore Jeffery was born. And by and by, I say, M'Nutt, you have 'em all. Indgian all die soon; no more wood left—no more hunt left; he starve, and then you take all. Till then I take 'em wood that God plant for us, where I find 'em, and no thanks to you. It would puzzle a Philadelphia lawyer, to answer that, I guess, said Mr. Slick. That feller cyphered that out of human natur—the best book a man can study arter all, and the only true one;—there's no two ways about it—there's never no mistake there. Queer critter, that Peter; he has an answer for every one; nothin ever da'nts or poses him; but here we are at the end of our journey, and I must say I am sorry for it too, for tho' it's been a considerable of a long one, it's been a very pleasant one.

When we returned to Halifax we drove to Mrs. Spicer's boarding-house, where I had bespoken lodgings previously to my departure from town. While the servants were preparing my room, we were shown into the parlour of Mrs. Spicer. She was young, pretty, and a widow. She had but one child, a daughter of six years of age, which, like all only children, was petted and spoiled. She was first shy, then familiar, and ended by being troublesome and rude. She amused her mother by imitating Mr. Slick's pronunciation, and herself by using his hat for a foot-ball.

Entertainin that, ain't it? said the Clockmaker, as we entored our own apartments. The worst of women is, said he, they are for everlastinly atasin folks with their children, and take more pains to spoil 'em and make 'em disagreeable than any thin else. Who the plague wants to hear 'em repeat a yard o' poetry like that are little sarpeant?—I am sure I don't. The Hon. Eli Wad was right when he said the ways o' womenkind are wonderful. I've been asered to venture on matrimony myself, and I don't altogether think I shall spikilate in that line for one while. It don't gist suit a rovin man

like me. It's a considerable of a tic, and then it ain't like a horse deal, where, if you don't like the beast, you can put it off in a raffle; or a trade, or swop and suit yourself better; but you must make the best of a bad bargain, and put up with it. It ain't often you meet a critter of the right mettle; spirited, yet gentle; easy on the bit, sure-footed and spry; no bitin, or kickin, or sulkin, or racin off, or refusin to go, or runnin back, and then cleanlimbed and good carriage. It's about the difficultest piece of business I know on.

Our great cities are most the only places in our Union where a man can marry with comfort, rael right down genuine comfort, and no drawback. No farnishin a house; and if you go for to please a woman in that line, there's no eend o' the expense they'll go to, and no trouble about helps; a considerable of a plague them in the states, you may depend; then you got nothin to provide, and nothin to see arter, and it ain't so plaguy lonely as a private house neither. The ladies, too, have nothin to do all day, but dress themselves, gossip, walk out, or go ashoppin, or receive visits to home. They have a'most a grand time of it, you may depend. If there be any children, why, they can be sent up garret with the helps, out o' the way and out o' hearin, till they are big enough to go to school. They ain't half the plague they be in a private home. But one o' the best things about it is, a man needn't stay at home to entertain his wife a-evenins, for she can find company enough in the public rooms, if she has a mind to, and he can go to the political clubs and coffee-houses, and see arter politics, and inquire how the nation's agoin on, and watch over the doins of Congress. It takes a great deal of time that, and a man can't discharge his duties right to the State or the Union either, if he is for everlastinly tied to his wife's apron-strings. You may talk about the domestic hearth, and the pleasures of home, and the family circle, and all that are sort o' thing, squire: it sounds very clever, and reads dreadful pretty; but what does it eend in at last? why, a scoldin wife with her shoes down to heel, a - see - sawin in a rockin chair; her hair either not done up at all, or all stuck chock full of paper and pins, like porcupine quills; a smoky chimblly aputtin of your eyes out; cryin children ascreamin of your ears out; extravagant, wasteful helps, a emptyin of your pockets out, and the whole thing awearin of your patience out. No, there's nothin like a great boardin house for married folks; it don't cost nothin like keepin house, and there's plenty o' company all the time, and the women folk never feel lonely like, when their husbands are not to home. The only thing is to larn the geography of the house well, and know their own number. If they don't do that they may get into a most adeuce of a scrape, that it ain't so easy to back out of. I recollect a'most a curious accident that happened that way once, a gettin into *the wrong room.*

I had gone down to Boston to keep 4th of July, our great Anniversary-day. A great day that, squire; a great national festival; a splendid spectacle; fifteen millions of free men and three millions of slaves acelebratin the birth-day of liberty; rejoicin in their strength, their freedom and enlightenment. Perhaps the sun never shone on such a sight afore, nor the moon, nor the stars, for their planetary system ain't more perfect than our political system. The sun typifies our splendor; the moon in its changes figures our rotation of office, and eclipses of Presidents,—and the stars are emblems of our states, as painted on our flags. If the British don't catch it that day, it's a pity. All over our Union, in every town and village, there are orations made, *like* gist about as beautiful pieces of workmanship, and as nicely dovetailed and mortised, and as prettily put together as well can be, and the English catch it everywhere. All our battles are fought over ag'in, and you can e'en a'most see the British aslyin afore them like the wind, full split, or layin down their arms as humble as you please, or marchin off as prisoners tied two and two, like runaway niggers, as plain as if you was in the engagements, and Washington on his great big war-horse aridin over them, and our free and enlightened citizens askiverin of them; or the proud impudent officers akneelin down to him, givin up their swords, and abeggin for dear life for quarter. Then you think you can e'en a'most see that infarnal spy André nabbed and sarched, and the scorn that sot on the brows of our heroes as they threw into the dirt the money he offered to be released, and hear him beg like an Indgian to be shot like a gentleman, and not hanged like a thief, and Washington's noble and magnanimous answer,—'I guess they'll think we are afeerd if we don't;'—so simple, so sublime. The hammerin of the carpenters seem to strike your ears as they erect the gallus; and then his struggles, like a dog tucked up for sheep-stealin, are as nateral as life. I must say I do like to hear them orations, —to hear of the deeds of our heroes by land and by sea. It's a bright page of history that. It exasperates the young—it makes their blood boil at the wrongs of their forefathers; it makes them clean their rifles, and run their bullets. It prepares them for that great day, that comin day, that no distant day neither, that must come and will come, and can't help acomin, when Britain will be a colony to our great nation, and when her colonies will be states in our Union.

Many's the disputes, and pretty hot disputes too, I've had with minister about these orations. He never would go near one on 'em; he said they were in bad taste—(a great phrase of hisn that, poor dear good old man; I believe his heart yarns arter old times, and I must think sometimes he ought to have joined the refugees)—bad taste, Sam. It smells o' braggin, its ongentlemanly; and, what's worse—it's onchristian.

But ministers don't know much of this world; they may know

the road to the next; but they don't know the cross-roads and by-paths of this one—that's a fact. But I was agoin to tell you, what happened that day—I was stayin to General Peep's boardin house to Boston, to enjoy, as I was asayin, the anniversary. There was an amazin crowd of folks there: the house was choek full of strangers. Well, there was a gentleman and a lady, one Major Ebenezer Sproul and his wife, aboardin there, that had one child, the most cryenest critter I ever seed; it boohood all night a'most, and the boarders said it must be sent up to the garret to the helps, for no soul could sleep a'most for it. Well, most every night Mrs. Sproul had to go up there to quiet the little varmint,—for it wouldn't give over yellin for no one but her. That night, in partikilar, the critter screeched and screamed like Old Scratch; and at last Mrs. Sproul slipped on her dressin gownd, and went up stairs to it,—and left her door ajar, so as not to disturb her husband acomin back; and when she returned, she pushed the door open softly, and shot it to, and got into bed. He's asleep, now, says she; I hope he won't disturb me ag'in. No, I ain't asleep, mynheer stranger, says Old Zwicker, a Dutch marchant from Albany (for she had got into the wrong room, and got into his bed by mistake), nor I don't dank you, nor Ginerall Beep needer, for puddin you into my bed mid me, widout my leave nor lichense, nor approbation, needer. I liksh your place more better as your company. Oh, I got no gimblet! Het is jammer, it is a pity! Oh! dear, if she didn't let go, it's a pity; she kicked and screamed, and carried on like a ravin distracted bed-bug. Tousand teyvvels, said he, what ails te man? I pelieve he is pewitched. Murder! murder! said she, and she cried out at the very tip eend of her voice, murder! murder! Well, Zwicker, he jumped out o' bed in an all-fired hurry, most properly frightened, you may depend; and seezin her dressin gownd, instead of his trousers, he put his legs into the arms of it, and was arunnin out of the room aholdin up of the skirts with his hands, as I came in with the candle. De ferry teyvvil hissself is in te man, and in te trousher too, said he; for I pelieve te coat has grow'd to it in de night, it is so tam long. Oh, tear! what a pity. Stop, says I, Mister Zwicker, and I pulled him back by the gownd (I thought I should adied larfin to see him in his red night-cap, his eyes starin out o' his head, and those short-legged trousers on, for the sleeves of the dressin gownd didn't come further than his knees, with a great long tail to 'em). Stop, says I, and tell us what all this everlastin hubbub is about: who's dead, and what's to pay now?

All this time Mrs. Sproul lay curled up like a cat, covered all over in the bed clothes, ayellin and ascreamin like mad; a 'most all the house was gathered there, some ondressed, and some half-dressed—some had sticks and pokers, and some had swords. Hullo! says

I, who on airth is makin all this touss? Goten Hymel, said he, old Saydon himself, I do peleve; he came tru de door and jumped right into ped, and yelled so loud in mine ear as to deefen my head a'most: pull him out by the cloven foot, and kill him, tam him! I had no gimblet no more, and he know'd it, and dat is te cause, and notin else. Well, the folks got hold of the clothes, and pulled and hauled away till her head showed above the sheet. Dear, Dear, said Major Ebenezer Sproul;—if it ain't Miss Sproul, my wife, as I am alive! Why, Mary dear, what brought you here?—what on airth are you adoin of in Mr. Zwicker's room here? I take my oat' she prought herself here, said Zwicker, and I peg she take herself away ag'in so fast as she came, and more faster too. What will Vrou Zwicker say to this woman's tale—was te likesesh ever heerd afore? Tear, tear, but 'tis too pad! Well, well, says the folks, who'd athought it?—such a steady old gentleman as Mr. Zwicker,—and young Marm Sproul, says they,—only think of her!—ain't it horrid? The hussy! says the women house—helps: she's nicely caught, ain't she? She's no great things, anyhow, to take up with that nasty smoky old Dutchman; it sarves her right,—it does, the good-for-nothin jade; I wouldn't ahad it happen, says the Major, for fifty dollars, I vow; and he walked up and down, and wrung his hands, and looked streaked enough, you may depend:—no, nor I don't know, said he, as I would for a hundred dollars a'most. Have what happened, says Zwicker; upon my vort and honor and sole, notin happened, only I had no gimblet. Het is jammer; it is a pity. I went to see the baby, said Mrs. Sproul,—asobbin ready to kill herself, poor thing!—and — Well, I don't want, nor have occasion, nor require a nurse, said Zwicker.—And I mistook the room, said she, and came here athinkin it was ourn. Couldn't pe possible, said he, to take me for te papy, dat has papys hissself,—but it was to ruin my character, and name, and reputation. Oh, Goten Hymel! what will Vrou Zwicker say to dis wooman's tale? but then she knowd I had no gimblet, she did. Folks snickered and larfed a gool deal, I tell you; but they soon cleared out and went to bed ag'in. The story ran all over Boston like wild fire; nothin else a'most was talked of; and like most stories, it grew worse and worse every day. Zwicker returned next mornin to Albany, and has never been to Boston since; and the Sprouls kept close for some time, and then moved away to the western territory: I actilly believe they changed their name, for I never heerd tell of any one that ever seed them since.

Mr. Slick, says Zwicker, the mornin he started, I have one leetle gimblet; I always travel with my leetle gimblet; take it mid me wherever I go; and when I goes to ped, I takes my leetle gimblet out and bores wid it over de latch of de toor, and dat fastens it, and keeps out de tief and de villain and the womans. I left it to home

dat time mid de old vrou, and it was all because I had no gimblet, de row and te noise and the rumpush wash made. Tam it! said he, Mr. Slick, 'tis no use talkin, but tere is always de teyvil to pay when there is a woman and no gimblet.

Yes, said the Clockmaker, if they don't mind the number of the room, they'd better stay away,—but a little attention that way cures all. We are all in a hurry in the States; we eat in a hurry, drink in a hurry, and sleep in a hurry. We all go ahead so fast it keeps one full spring to keep up with others; and one must go it hot foot, if he wants to pass his neighbours. Now, it is a great comfort to have your dinner to the minute, as you do at a boardin house, when you are in a hurry—only you must look out sharp arter the dishes, or you won't get nothin. Things vanish like wink. I recollect once when quails first came in that season: there was an old chap at Peep's boardin-house, that used to take the whole dish of 'em, empty it on his plate, and gobble 'em up like a turkeycock,—no one else ever got none. We were all a good deal ryled at it, seein that he didn't pay no more for his dinner than us, so I nick-named him 'Old Quail,' and it cured him; he always left haf arter that, for a scamb. No system is quite perfect, squire; accidents will happen in the best regulated places, like that of Marm Sproul's and Old Quail's; but still there is nothin arter all like a boardin-house,—the only thing is, keep out of the *wrong room*.

CHAPTER LIV.

FINDING A MARE'S NEST.

HALIFAX, like London, has its tower also, but there is this remarkable difference between these two national structures, that the one is designed for the *defenders* of the country, and the other for its *offenders* and that the former is as difficult to be broken *into* as the latter (notwithstanding all the ingenious devices of successive generations from the days of Julius Cæsar to the time of the schoolmaster) is to be broken *out of*. A critical eye might perhaps detect some other, though lesser points of distinction. This cis-Atlantic martello tower has a more aristocratic and exclusive air than its city brother, and its portals are open to none but those who are attired in the uniform of the guard, or that of the royal staff; while the other receives the lowest, the most depraved, and vulgar of mankind. It is true it has not *the lions* and other adventitious attractions of the elder one; but the original and noble park in which it is stands plentifully stocked *with carriboos*, while the *horn* work of the latter is at least equal to that

of its ancient rival; and although it cannot exhibit a display of *the armour of the country*, its very existence there is conclusive evidence of the *amor patriæ*. It stands on an eminence that protects the harbour of Halifax, and commands that of the North-west Arm, and is situated at the termination of a fashionable promenade, which is skirted on one side by a thick shrubbery, and on the other by the waters of the harbour; the former being the resort of those of both sexes who delight in the impervious shade of the spruce, and the latter of those who prefer swimming, and other aquatic exercises. With these attractions to the lovers of *nature*, and a pure air, it is thronged at all hours, but more especially at day-dawn, by the valetudinarian, the aged, and infirm, and at the witching hour of moonlight by those who are young enough to defy the dew and damp air of night.

To the latter class I have long since ceased to belong. Old, corpulent, and rheumatic, I am compelled to be careful of a body that is not worth the trouble that it gives me. I no longer indulge in the dreamy visions of the second nap, for, alas! *non sum qualis eram*. I rise early, and take my constitutional walk to that tower. I had not proceeded more than half-way this morning before I met the Clockmaker returning to town.

Mornin, squire, said he; I suppose you didn't hear the news, did you? the British packet's in. Which packet? said I; for there are two due, and great apprehensions are entertained that one of them is lost. More promotion, then, said he, for them navals that's left; it's an ill wind that blows nobody any good. Good God! said I, Mr. Slick, how can you talk so unfeelingly of such an awful catastrophe? Only think of the misery entailed by such an event upon Falmouth, where most of the officers and crew have left destitute and distressed families. Poor creatures, what dreadful tidings await them! Well, well, said he, I didn't gist altogether mean to make a joke of it neither; but your folks know what they are about; them coffin ships ain't sent out for nothin. Ten of them gun-brigs have been lost already; and, depend on it, the English have their reasons for it—there's no mistake about it: considerable 'cute chaps them, they can see as far into a millstone as them that picks the hole in it; if they throw a sprat it's to catch a mackerel, or my name is not Sam Slick. Reason, I replied,—what reason can there be for consigning so many gallant fellows to a violent death and a watery grave? What could justify such a ———? I'll tell you, said the Clockmaker; it keeps the natives to home by frightenin 'em out of their seven senses. Now, if they had a good set of liners, them blue-nose Tories and radicals would be for everlastinly abotherin of government with their requests and complaints. Hungry as hawks them fellers; they'd fairly eat the minister up without salt, they would. It compels 'em to stay at home, it does. Your folks desearve credit for that trick,

Yours &c
 J. S. Slick
 Halifax
 1792

for it answers the purpose rael compiste. Yes, you English are pretty considerable tarnation sharp. You warn't born yesterday, I tell you. You are always afindin out some mare's nest or another. Didn't you send out water-casks and filterin-stones last war to the *fresh water* lakes to Canada? Didn't you send out a frigate there ready built, in pieces ready numbered and marked, to put together, 'cause there's no timber in America, nor carpenters neither? Didn't you order the Yankee prisoners to be kept at the fortress of Louisburg, which was so levelled to the ground fifty years before that folks can hardly tell where it stood? Han't you squandered more money to Bermuda than would make a military road from Halifax to Quebec, make the Windsor railroad, and complete the great canal? Han't you built a dockyard there that rots all the cordage and stores as fast as you send them out there? and han't you to send these things every year to sell to Halifax, 'cause there ain't folks enough to Bermuda to make an auction? Don't you send out a squadron every year of seventy-fours, frigates, and sloops of war, and most work 'em to death, sendin 'em to Bermuda to winter, 'cause its warm, and to Halifax to summer, cause its cool; and to carry freights of doubloons and dollars from the West Indies to England, 'cause it pays well; while the fisheries, coastin trade, and revenue are left to look out for themselves? Oh, if you don't beat all, it's a pity!

Now, what in natur is the use of them are great seventy-fours in peace time on that station? Half the sum of money one of them are everlastin almighty monsters costs would equip a dozen spankin cutters, commanded by leftenants in the navy (and this I will say, tho' they be Britishers, a smarter set o' men than they be never stept in shoe-leather), and they'd soon set these matters right in two twos. Them seventy-fours put me in mind of Black Hawk, the great Indian chief that was to Washinton lately; he had an alligator tattooed on the back part of one thigh, and a racoon on t'other, touched off to the very nines, and as nateral as anything you ever seed in your life; and well he know'd it too, for he was as proud of it as anything. Well, the president, and a whole raft of senators, and a considerable of an assortment of most beautiful ladies, went all over the capital with him, shewin him the great buildins, and public halls, and curiosities, patents, presents, and what not; but Black Hawk, he took no notice of nothin a'most till he came to the picturs of our great naval and military heroes, and splendid national victories of our free and enlightened citizens, and *them* he *did* stare at; they posed him considerable—that's a fact.

Well, warrior, said the president, arubbin of his hands, and asmilin, what do you think of them? Broder, said Black Hawk, them grand, them live, and breathe, and speak—them great pictures, I tell *you*, very great indeed; but I got better ones, said he, and he turned

round, and stooped down, and drew up his mantle over his head. Look at that alligator, broder, said he, and he struck it with his hand till he made all ring again; and that racoon behind there; bean't they splendid? Oh Lord! if there warn't a shout, it's a pity! The men haw-hawed right out like thunder, and the women ran off, and screamed like mad. Did you ever! said they. How ondecent! ain't it shocking? and then they screamed out ag'in louder than afore. Oh, dear! said they, if that nasty, horrid thing ain't in all the mirrors in the room! and they put their pretty little hands up to their dear little eyes, and raced right out into the street. The president he stamped, and bit his lip, and looked as mad as if he could have swallowed a wild cat alive. Cuss him! said he, I've half a mind to kick him into the Potomac, the savage brute! I shall never hear the last of this joko. I fairly thought I should have split to see the confustrigation it put 'em all into. Now, that's gist the way with your seventy-fours. When the Blue-noses grumbled that we Yankees smuggle like all vengeance, and have all the fisheries on the coast to ourselves, you send 'em out a great seventy-four with a painted starn for 'em to look at, and it is gist about as much use as the tattoed starn of Black Hawk. I hope I may be shot if it ain't. Well, then gist see how you——

Truc, said I, glad to put a stop to the enumeration of our blunders, but government have added some new vessels to the packet line of a very superior description, and will withdraw the old ones as soon as possible. These changes are very expensive, and cannot be effected in a moment. Yes, said he, so I have heerd tell; and I have heerd, too, that the new ones won't lay to, and the old ones won't scud; grand chance in a gale for a feller that, ain't it? One tumbles over in the trough of the sea, and the other has such great solid bulwarks, if she ships a sea she never gets rid of it but by going down. Oh, you British are up to everything! it wouldn't be easy to put a wrinkle on your horns, I know. They will at least, said I, with more pique than prudence, last as long as the colonies. It is admitted on all hands now, by Tories, Whigs, and Radicals, that the time is not far distant when the provinces will be old enough for independence, and strong enough to demand it. I am also happy to say that there is every disposition to yield to their wishes whenever a majority shall concur in applying for a separation. It is very questionable whether the expense of their protection is not greater than any advantage we derive from them.

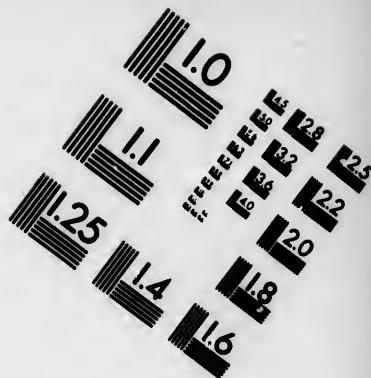
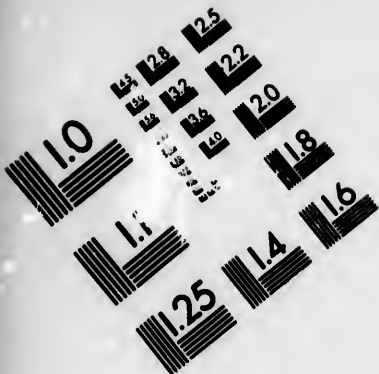
That, said the Clockmaker, is what I call, now, good sound sense. I like to hear you talk that way, for it shews you participate in the enlightenment of the age. After all the expense you have been to in conquerin, clearin, settlin, fortifyin, governin, and protectin these colonies from the time they were little miserable spindlin seedlin up

John Jay's Scribble

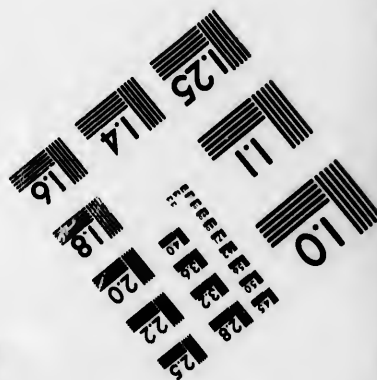
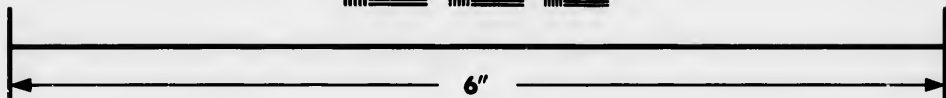
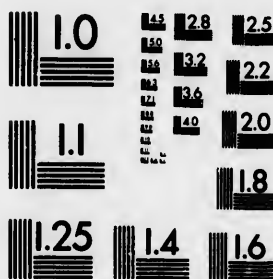
to now, when they have grow'd to be considerable stiff and strong, and of some use, to give 'em up, and encourage 'em to ax for 'mancipation, is, I estimate, the part of wise men. Yes, I see you are wide awake. Let 'em go. They are no use to you. But, I say, squire, —and he tapped me on the shoulder and winked,—let 'em look out the next mornin arter they are free for a visit from us. If we don't put 'em thro' their facins it's a pity. Tho' they are no good to you, they are worth a Jew's eye to us, and have 'em we will, by gum!

You put me in mind of a British parliament-man that was travellin in the States once. I seed him in a steam-boat on the Ohio (a most a grand river that, squire; if you were to put all the English rivers into one you couldn't make its ditto), and we went the matter of seven hundred miles on it till it jined the Mississippi. As soon as we turned to go down that river he stood, and stared, and scratched his head, like bewildered. Says he, this is very strange—very strange indeed, says he. What's strange? said I; but he went on without hearin. It's the greatest curiosity, said he, I ever seed, a nateral phenomenon, one of the wonders of the world; and he jumped right up and down like a ravin distracted fool. Where is it? said he. What the devil has become of it? If it's your wit, said I, you are alookin for, it's gone a wool-gatherin more nor half an hour ago. What on airth ails you, says I, to make you act so like Old Scratch that way? Do, for goodness sake, look here, Mr. Slick! said he. That immense river the Ohio, that we have been sailin upon so many days, where is it? Where is it? said I. Why, it's run into the Mississippi here to be sure; where else should it be? or did you think it was like a snake, that it curled its head under its own belly, and run back again? But, said he, the Mississippi arn't made one inch higher or one inch wider by it; it don't swell it one mite or morsel; it's marvellous, ain't it? Well, gist afore that, we had been talking about the colonies; so, says I, I can tell you a more marvellous thing than that by a long chalk.

There is Upper Canada, and Lower Canada, and New Brunswick, and Nova Scotia, and Cape Breton, and Prince Edward's Island, and Newfoundland,—they all belong to the English. Well, said he, I know that as well as you do. Don't be so plaguy touchy! said I, but hear me out. They all belong to the English, and there's no two ways about it; it's the best part of America too; better land and better climate than ourn, and free from yaller fevers, and agues, and nigger slaves, and hostile Indgians, and Lynchers, and alligators, and such like varmint, and all the trade and commerce of them colonies, and the supply of 'factured goods belong to the English too, and yet I defy any livin soul to say he can see that it swells their trade to be one inch wider, or one inch higher; it's gist a drop in the bucket. Well, *that is* strange, said he; but it only shews the magnitude of



**IMAGE EVALUATION
TEST TARGET (MT-3)**



**Photographic
Sciences
Corporation**

23 WEST MAIN STREET
WEBSTER, N.Y. 14590
(716) 872-4503

0
1.6
1.8
2.0
2.2
2.5
2.8
3.2
3.6
4.0
4.5
5.0
5.6
6.3
7.1
8.0
9.0
10.0
11.2
12.5
14.0
16.0
18.0
20.0
22.5
25.0
28.0
31.5
36.0
40.0
45.0
50.0
56.0
63.0
71.0
80.0
90.0
100.0

10
11
12.5
14
16
18
20
22.5
25
28
31.5
36
40
45
50
56
63
71
80
90
100

British commerce. Yes, says I, it does; it shews another thing too. What's that? said he. Why, says I, that their commerce is a plaguy sight deeper than the shaller-pated noodles that it belongs to. Do you, said I, gist take the lead-line, and sound the river gist below where the Ohio comes into it, and you will find that, though it tante broader or higher, it's an everlastin sight *deeper* than it is above the jinin place. It can't be otherwise in natur.

Now, turn the Ohio, and let it run down to Baltimore, and you'd find the Mississippi, mammoth as it is, a different guess river from what you now see it. It wouldn't overrun its banks no more, nor break the dykes at New Orleans, nor leave the great Cyprus swamps under water any longer. It would look pretty streaked in dry weather, I know. Gist so with the colony trade; though you can't see it in the ocean of English trade, yet it is there. Cut it off, and see the raft of ships you'd have to spare, and the thousands of seamen you'd have to emigrate to us; and see how white about the gills Glasgow, and Greenock, and Liverpool, and Manchester, and Birmingham would look. Cuttin off the colonies is like cuttin off the roots of a tree; it's an even chance if it don't blow right slap over the very first sneeze of wind that comes; and if it don't, the leaves curl up, turn yaller, and fall off afore their time. Well, the next spring follerin there is about six feet of the top dead, and the tips of the branches withered, and the leaves only half size; and the year after, unless it sends out new roots, it's a great leafless trunk, a sight to behold; and, if it is strong enough to push out new roots, it may revive, but it never looks like itself again. *The luxuriance is gone, and gone for ever.*

You got chaps in your parliament that never seed a colony, and yet get up and talk about 'em by the hour, and look as wise about 'em as the monkey that had seen the world.

In America all our farms a'most have what we call the rough pastur—that is, a great rough field of a hundred acres or so, near the woods, where we turn in our young cattle, and breedin mares, and colts, and dry cows, and what not, where they take care of themselves, and the young stock grow up, and the old stock grow fat. *It's a grand outlet that to the farm, that would be overstocked without it.* We could not do without it nohow. *Now, your colonies are the great field for a redundant population, a grand outlet.* Ask the *Eye-talians* what fixed their flint? Losin the overland trade to India. Ask the folks to Cadiz what put them up a tree? Losin the trade to South America. If that's too far off, ask the people of Bristol and Chester what sewed them up? and they will tell you, while they was asleep, Liverpool ran off with their trade. And if you havn't time to go there, ax the first coachman you get alongside of, what he thinks of the rail-roads? and gist listen to the funeral

hymn he'll sing over the turnpikes. When I was to England last, I always did that when I was in a hurry, and it put coachee into such a passion, he'd turn to and lick his horses out o' spite into a full gallop. D—n 'em, he'd say, them that sanctioned them railroads, to ruin the 'pikes (get along you lazy willain, Charley, and he'd lay it into the wheeler), they ought to be hanged, sir, (that's the ticket, and he'd whop the leader),—yes, sir, to be hanged, for what is to become of them as lent their money on the 'pikes? (wh—ist, crack, crack goes the whip)—hanged and quartered they ought to be. These men ought to be relunegrated as well as the slave-holders; I wonder, sir, what we shall all come to yet? Come to, says I; why, to be a stoker to be sure; that's what all you coachmen will eend in at last, as sure as you are born. A stoker, sir, said he (lookin as bothi'ed as if it wor a French furriner that word), what the devil is that? Why, a stoker, says I, is a critter that draws, and stirs, and pokes the fire of a steam-engin. I'd sooner die first, sir, said he; I would, d—n me, if I wouldn't! Only think of a man of my age and size bein a stoker, sir; I wouldn't be in the fellow's skin that would propose it to me, for the best shilling as ever came out o' the mint. Take *that*, and *that*, and *that*, he'd say to the off for'ard horse (alayin it into him like mad), and do your own work, you dishonest rascal. It is fun alive you may depend.

No, sir, lose your colonies, and you'd have *Eye*-talian cities without their climate, *Eye*-talian lazaroni without their light hearts to sing over their poverty, (for the English can't sing a bit better nor bull-frogs), and worse than *Eye*-talian eruptions and volcanoes in politics, without the grandeur and sublimity of those in natur'. Deceive not yourselves; if you lop off the branches, the tree perishes, for the leaves elaborate the sap that vivifies, nourishes, and supports the trunk. There's no two ways about it, squire: '*them who say colonies are no good, are either fools or knaves; if they be fools they ain't worth ansnerin, and if they are knaves, send them to the treadmill, till they larn to speak the truth.*'

CHAPTER LV.

KEEPING UP THE STEAM.

IT is painful to think of the blunders that have been committed from time to time in the management of our colonies, and of the gross ignorance, or utter disregard of their interests, that has been displayed in the treaties with foreign powers. Fortunately for the mother country the colonists are warmly attached to her and her in-

stitutions, and deplore a separation too much to agitate questions, however important, that may have a tendency to weaken their affections by arousing their passions. The time, however, has now arrived when the treatment of adults should supersede that of children. Other and nearer, and, for the time, more important interests, have occupied her attention, and diverted her thoughts from those distant portions of the empire. Much, therefore, that has been done may be attributed to want of accurate information, while it is to be feared much also has arisen from not duly appreciating their importance. The government of the provinces has been but too often entrusted to persons who have been selected, not so much from their peculiar fitness for the situation, as with reference to their interest, or their claims for reward for past services in other departments. From persons thus chosen, no very accurate or useful information can be expected. This is the more to be regretted as the resolutions of the dominant party, either in the House of Assembly or Council, are not always to be received as conclusive evidence of public opinion. They are sometimes produced by accidental causes, often by temporary excitement, and frequently by the intrigue or talents of one man. In the colonies, the legislature is more often in advance of public opinion, than coerced by it, and the *pressure from without* is sometimes caused by the excitement *previously existing within*, while in many cases the people do not participate in the views of their representatives. Hence the resolutions of one day are sometimes rescinded the next, and a subsequent session, or a new house, is found to hold opinions opposed to those of its predecessor. To these difficulties in obtaining accurate information, may be added the uncertain character of that arising from private sources. Individuals having access to the Colonial Office, are not always the best qualified for consultation, and interest or prejudice is but too often found to operate insensibly even upon those whose sincerity and integrity are undoubted. As a remedy for these evils it has been proposed to give the colonies a representation in parliament, but the measure is attended with so many objections, and such inherent difficulties, that it may be considered almost impracticable. The only satisfactory and efficient prescription that political quackery has hitherto suggested, appears to be that of a Colonial Council-board, composed principally, if not wholly, of persons from the respective provinces; who, while the minister changes with the cabinet of the day, shall remain as permanent members, to inform, advise, and assist his successor. *None but natives can fully understand the peculiar feelings of the colonists.* The advantages to be derived from such a board, are too obvious to be enlarged upon, and will readily occur to any one at all conversant with these subjects; for it is a matter of notoriety, that a correspondence may be commenced by one minister, continued by a second,

and terminated by a third, so rapid have sometimes been the changes in this department. It is not my business, however, to suggest (and I heartily rejoice that it is not, for I am no projector), but simply to record the sayings and doings of that eccentric personage, Mr. Samuel Slick, to whom it is now high time to return.

You object, said I, to the present line of government packets running between Falmouth and Halifax (and I must say not without reason): pray what do you propose to substitute in their places? Well, I don't know, said he, as I gist altogether ought to blart out all I think about it. Our folks mightn't be over half pleased with me for the hint, for our New York liners have the whole run of the passengers now, and plaguy proud our folks be of it, too, I tell you. Lord! if it was to leake out it was me that put you up to it, I should have to gallop through the country when I returned home, as Head did—you know Head the author, don't you? There are several gentlemen of that name, I replied, who have distinguished themselves as authors; pray which do you mean? Well, I don't know, said he, as I can gist altogether indicate the identical man I mean, but I calculate it's him that galloped the wild horses in the Pampa's a hundred miles a day hand runnin, day in and day out, on beef tea made of hung beef and cold water;—it's the gallopin one I mean; he is Governor to Canada now, I believe. You know in that are book he wrote on gallopin, he says, 'The greatest luxury in all natur' is to ride without trousers on a horse without a saddle,'—what we call bare-breeched and bare-backed. (Oh Lord! I wonder he didn't die alarfin, I do, I vow. Them great thistles that he says grow in the Pampa's as high as a human head, must have tickled a man a'most to death that rode that way). Well, now, if I was to tell you how to work it, I should have to ride armed, as he was in his travels, with two pair of detonatin pistols and a double-barrelled gun, and when I seed a guacho of a New Yorker a-comin, clap the reins in my mouth, set off at full gallop, and pint a pistol at him with each hand; or else I'd have to lasso him,—that's sartin,—for they'd make travellin in that state too hot for me to wear breeches I know, I'd have to off with them full chisel, and go it bare-backed,—that's as clear as mud. I believe Sir Francis Head is no great favourite, I replied, with your countrymen, but he is very popular with the colonists, and very deservedly so. He is an able and efficient governor, and possesses the entire confidence of the provinces. He is placed in a very difficult situation, and appears to display great tact and great talent. Well, well, said he, let that pass; I won't say he don't, though I wish he wouldn't talk so much ag'in us as he does anyhow, but will you promise you won't let on it was me now if I tell you? Certainly, said I, your name shall be concealed. Well, then, I'll tell you, said he; turn your attention to steam navigation to Halifax. Steam will half

ruin England yet, if they don't mind. It will drain it of its money, drain it of its population, and—what's more than all—what it can spare least of all, and what it will feel more nor ail, its artisans, its skillful workmen, and its honest, intelligent, and respectable middle classes. It will leave you nothin in time but your aristocracy and your poor. A trip to America is goin to be nothin more than a trip to France, and folks will go where land is cheap and labour high. It will build the new world up, but it will drain the old one out in a way no one thinks on. Turn this tide of emigration to your own provinces, or as sure as eggs is eggs we will get it all. You han't no notion what steam is destined to do for America. It will make it look as bright as a pewter button yet, I know.

The distance, as I make it, from Bristol to New York Light-house, is 3037 miles; from Bristol to Halifax Light-house is 2479; from Halifax Light to New York Light is 522 miles,—in all, 3001 miles; 558 miles shorter than New York line; and even going to New York, 36 miles shorter to stop to Halifax than go to New York direct. I fix on Bristol 'cause it's a better port for the purpose than Liverpool, and the new railroad will be gist the dandy for you. But them great, fat, porter-drinkin critturs of Bristol have been asnorin fast asleep for half a century, and only gist got one eye open now. I'm most afeerd they will turn over, and take the second nap, and if they do they are done for—that's a fact. Now you take the chart and work it yourself, squire, for I'm no great hand at navigation. I've been a whaling voyage, and a few other sea-trips, and I know a little about it, but not much, and yet, if I ain't pretty considerably near the mark, I'll give them leave to guess that knows better—that's all. Get your legislatur' to persuade government to contract with the Great Western folks to carry the mail, and drop it in their way to New York; for you got as much and as good coal to Nova Scotia as England has, and the steam-boats would have to carry a supply for 550 miles less, and could take in a stock at Halifax for the return voyage to Europe. If ministers won't do that, get 'em to send steam-packets of their own, and you wouldn't be no longer an everlastin outlandish country no more as you be now. And, more nor that, you wouldn't lose all the best emigrants and all their capital, who now go to the States 'cause the voyage is safer, and remain there 'cause they are tired of travellin, and can't get down here without risk of their precious necks and ugly mugs.

But John Bull is like all other sponsible folks; he thinks 'cause he is rich he is wise too, and knows everything, when in fact he knows plaguy little outside of his own location. Like all other consaited folks, too, he don't allow nobody else to know nothin neither but himself. The *Eyetalian* is too lazy, the French too smirky, the Spaniard too banditti, the Dutch too smoky, the German too dreamy,

the Scotch too itchy, the Irish too popey, and the Yankee too tricky; all low, all ignorant, all poor. He thinks the noblest work of God an *Englishman*. He is on considerable good terms with himself, too, is John Bull, when he has his go-to-meetin clothes on, his gold-headed cane in his hand, and his puss buttoned up tight in his trousers' pocket. He wears his hat a little a one side, rakish-like, whaps his cane down ag'in the pavement hard, as if he intended to keep things in their place, swaggers a few, as if he thought he had a right to look big, and stares at you full and hard in the face, with a knowin toss of his head, as much as to say, '*That's me, damn you,*' and who you be I don't know, and what's more I don't want to know; so clear the road double quick, will you? Yes, take John at his own valiation, and I guess you'd get a considerable hard bargain of him, for he is old, thick in the wind, tender in the foot, weak in the knees, too cussed fat to travel, and plaguy cross-grained and ill-tempered. If you go for to raise your voice at him, or even so much as lay the weight of your finger on him, his Ebenezer is up in a minit. I don't like him one bit, and I don't know who the plague does: but that's neither here nor there.

Do you get your legislature to interfere in this matter, for steam navigation will be the makin of you if you work it right. It is easy, I replied, to suggest, but not quite so easy, Mr. Slick, as you suppose, to have these projects carried into execution. Government may not be willing to permit the mail to be carried by contract. Permit it! said he, with great animation; to be sure it will permit it. Don't they grant everything you ask? don't they concede one thing arter another to you to keep you quiet, till they han't got much left to concede? It puts me ih mind of a missionary I once seed down to Bows and Arrows (Buenos Ayres). He went out to convert the people from bein Roman Catholics, and to persuade the Spaniards to pray in English instead of Latin, and to get dipt anew by him, and he carried sway there like a house a fire, till the sharks one day made a tarnation sly dash among his convarts that was awadin out in the water, and gist walked off with three on 'em by the legs, screamin and yelpin like mad. Arter that he took to a pond outside the town, and one day as he was awalkin out with his hands behind him, ameditatin on that are profane trick the sharks played him, and what a slippery world this was, and what not, who should he meet but a party of them Guachos, that galloped up to him as quick as wink, and made him prisoner. Well, they gist fell to, and not only robbed him of all he had, but stripped him of all his clothes but his breeches, and them they left him for decency sake to get back to town in. Poor crittur! he felt streaked enough, I do assure you; he was near about frightened out of his seven senses; he didn't know whether he was standin on his head or his heels, and was o'en a'most

sure they were agoin to murder him. So, said he, my beloved friends, said he, I beseech you, is there anything more you want of me? Do we want anything more of you? says they; why, you han't got nothin left but your breeches, you nasty, dirty, blackguard heretic you, and do you want to part with them too? and they gist fell to and welted him all the way into the town with the tip eend of their lassos, larfin and hoopin, and hollerin at the joke like so many ravin distracted devils.

Well, now, your government is near about as well off as the missionary was; they've granted everything they had a'most, till they han't got much more than the breeches left,—the mere sovereignty, and that's all. No, no; gist you ax for steam-packets, and you'll get 'em—that's a fact. Oh, squire, if John Bull only knew the valy of these colonies, he would be a great man, I tell *you*; but he don't. You can't make an account of 'em in dollars and cents, the cost on one side, and the profit on t'other, and strike the balance of the '*tottle of the hull,*' as that are crittur' Hume calls it. You can't put into figur's a nursery for seamen; a resource for timber if the Baltic is shot ag'in you, or a population of brave and loyal people, a growing and sure market, an outlet for emigration, the first fishery in the world, their political and relative importance, the power they would give a rival, converting a friend into a foe, or a customer into a rival, or a shop full of goods, and no sale for 'em—*Figures are the representatives of numbers, and not things.* Molesworth may talk, and Hume may cypher, till one on 'em is as hoarse as a crow, and t'other as blind as a bat, and they won't make that table out, I know.

That's all very true, I said, but you forget that the latter gentleman says that America is now a better customer than when she was a colony, and maintains her own government at her own expense, and therefore he infers that the remaining dependencies are useless incumbrances. And he forgets too, he replied, that he made his fortin himself in a colony, and therefore it don't become him to say so, and that America is larning to sell as well as to buy, and to manufactur as well as to import, and to hate as much, and a little grain more, than she loved, and that you are weaker by all her strength. He forgets, too, that them that separate from a government, or secede from a church, always hate those they leave much worse than those who are born in different states or different sects. It's a fact, I assure you, those critters that deserted our church to Slickville in temper that time about the choice of an elder, were the only ones that hated, and reviled, and parsecuted us in all Connecticut, for we were on friendly or neutral terms with all the rest. Keep a sharp look-out always for disarters, for when they jine the enemy they fight like the devil. *(No one hates like him that has once been a friend.)*

He forgets that a—but it's no use atalkin; you might as well whistle jigs to a mile-stone as talk to a goney that says fifteen millions of inimies are as good as fifteen millions of friends, unless indeed it is with the nations as with individuals, that it is better to have some folks ag'in you than for you, for I vow there are chaps in your parliament that ain't no credit to no party.

But this folly of John Bull ain't the worst of it, squire; it's considerable more silly; *he invites the colonists to fight his own troops, and then pays all the expense of the entertainment.* If that don't beat cock-fightin, it's a pity: it fairly bangs the bush, that. If there's a rebellion to Canada, squire (and there will be as sure as there are snakes in Varginny), it will be planned, advised, and sot on foot in London, you may depend, for them simple critturs, the French, would never think of it, if they were not put up to it. Them that advise Papinor to rebel, and set his folks to murder Englishmen, and promise to back them in England, are for everlastinly atalkin of economy, and yet instigate them parley-vous to put the nation to more expense than they and their party ever saved by all their barking in their life, or ever could, if they were to live as long as Merusalem. If them poor Frenchmen rebel, gist pardon them right off the reel without sayin a word, for they don't know nothin, but rig up a gallus in London as high as a church steeple, and I'll give you the names of a few villains there, the cause of all the murders, and arsons, and robberies, and miseries, and sufferins that 'ill foller. Gist take 'em and string 'em up like onsafe dogs. A crittur that throws a firebrand among combustibles, must answer for the fire; and when he throws it into his neighbour's house, and not his own, he is both a coward and a villain. Cuss 'em! hanging is too good for 'em, I say; don't you, squire?

This was the last conversation I had with the Clockmaker on politics. I have endeavoured to give his remarks in his own language, and as nearly verbatim as I could; but they were so desultory and discursive, that they rather resembled thinking aloud than a connected conversation, and his illustrations often led him into such long episodes, that he sometimes wandered into new topics before he had closed his remarks upon the subject he was discoursing on. It is, I believe, not an uncommon mode with Americans, when they talk, to amuse rather than convince. Although there is evidently some exaggeration, there is also a great deal of truth in his observations. They are the result of long experience, and a thorough and intimate knowledge of the provinces, and I confess I think they are entitled to great weight.

The bane of the colonies, as of England, it appears to me, is ultra opinions. The cis-Atlantic ultra tory is a non-descript animal, as well as the ultra radical. Neither have the same objects or the same

principles with those in the mother country, whose names they assume. It is difficult to say which does most injury. The violence of the radical defeats his own views; the violence of his opponent defeats those of the government, while both incite each other to greater extremes. It is not easy to define the principles of either of these ultra political parties in the colonies. An unnatural, and, it would appear, a personal, and therefore a contemptible jealousy, influences the one, and a ridiculous assumption the other, the smallest possible amount of salary being held as sufficient for a public officer by the former, and the greater part of the revenues inadequate for the purpose by the latter, while patriotism and loyalty are severally claimed as the exclusive attributes of each. As usual, extremes meet; the same emptiness distinguishes both, the same loud professions, the same violent invectives, and the same selfishness. They are carnivorous animals, having a strong appetite to devour their enemies, and occasionally showing no repugnance to sacrifice a friend. Amidst the clamours of these noisy disputants, the voice of the thinking and moderate portion of the community is drowned, and government but too often seems to forget the existence of this more numerous, more respectable, and more valuable class. He who adopts extreme radical doctrines in order to carry numbers by flattering their prejudices, or he who assumes the tone of the ultra tory of England, because he imagines it to be that of the aristocracy of that country, and more current among those of the little colonial courts, betrays at once a want of sense and a want of integrity, and should be treated accordingly by those who are sent to administer the government. There is as little safety in the councils of those who, seeing no defect in the institutions of their country, or desiring no change beyond an extension of patronage and salary, stigmatize all who differ from them as discontented and disloyal, as there is in a party that call for organic changes in the constitution, for the mere purpose of supplanting their rivals, by opening new sources of preferment for themselves. Instead of committing himself into the hands of either of these factions, as is often the case, and thereby at once inviting and defying the opposition of the other, a governor should be instructed to avoid them both, and to assemble around him for council those only who partake not of the selfishness of the one or the violence of the other, but who, uniting firmness with moderation, are not afraid to redress a grievance because it involves a change, or to uphold the established institutions of the country, because it exposes them to the charge of corrupt motives. Such men exist in every colony; and though a governor may not find them the most prominent, he will at least find them the surest and safest guides in the end. Such a course of policy will soften the asperities of party, by stripping it of success, will rally round the local

governments men of property, integrity, and talent; and inspire, by its impartiality, moderation, and consistency, a feeling of satisfaction and confidence through the whole population.

CHAPTER LVI.

THE CLOCKMAKER'S PARTING ADVICE.

HAVING now fulfilled his engagement with me, Mr. Slick informed me that business required his presence at the river Philip, and that, as he could delay his departure no longer, he had called for the purpose of taking leave. I am plaguy loth to part with you, said he, you may depend; it makes me feel quite lonesum' like: but I ain't quite certified we shan't have a tower in Europe yet afore we've done. You have a pair of pistols, squire,—as neat a little pair of sneezers as I e'en a'most ever seed, and—They are yours, I said; I am glad you like them, and I assure you you could not gratify me more than by doing me the favour to accept them. That's gist what I was agoin to say, said he, and I brought my rifle here to ax you to exchange for 'em; it will sometimes put you in mind of Sam Slick the Clockmaker, and them are little pistols are such grand pocket companions, there won't be a day a'most I won't think of the squire. He then examined the lock of the rifle, turned it over, and looked at the stock, and, bringing it to his shoulder, run his eye along the barrel, as if in the act of discharging it. True as a hair, squire, there can't be no better; and there's the mould for the balls that gist fit her; you may depend on her to a sartainty; she'll never deceive you; there's no mistake in a rael right down genuine good Kentuck, I tell you; but as you ain't much used to 'em, always bring her slowly up to the line of sight, and then let go as soon as you have the range. If you bring her *down* to the sight instead of *up*, she'll be apt to settle a little below it in your hands, and carry low. That wrinkle is worth havin, I tell you; that's a fact. Take time, elevate her slowly, so as to catch the range to a hair, and you'll hit a dollar at seventy yards hand runnin. I can take the eye of a squirrel out with her as easy as kiss my hand. A fair exchange is no robbery anyhow, and I shall set great store by them are pistols, you may depend.

Having finished that are little trade, squire, there is another small matter I want to talk over with you afore I quit, that perhaps it would be as well you and I onderstood each other upon. What is that? said I. Why, the last time, squire, said he, I travelled with you, you published our tower in a book, and there were some notions in it gave me a plaguy sight of oneasiness; that's a fact. Some things

you coloured so, I didn't know 'em when I seed 'em again; some things you left out holus bolus, and there were some small matters I never heard tell of afore till I seed them writ down; you must have made them out of whole cloth. When I went home to see about the stock I had in the Slickville bank, folks scolded a good deal about it. They said it warn't the part of a good citizen for to go to publish anything to lessen our great nation in the eyes of foreigners, or to lower the exalted station we had among the nations of the airth. They said the dignity of the American people was at stake, and they were determined some o' these days to go to war with the English if they didn't give up some o' their writers to be punished by our laws; and that if any of our citizens was accessory to such practices, and they cotched him, they'd give him an American jacket, that is, a warp of tar, and a nap wove of feathers. I don't feel therefore altogether easy 'bout your new book; I should like to see it afore we part, to soften down things a little, and to have matters sot to rights, afore the slangwhangers get hold of it.

I think, too, atween you and me, you had ought to let me gosheers in the speek, for I have suffered considerable by it. The clock trade is done now in this province; there's an eend to that; you've put a toggle into that chain; you couldn't give 'em away now a'most. Our folks are not over and above well pleased with me I do assure you; and the Blue-noses say I have dealt considerable hard with them. They are plagny ryled, you may depend; and the English have come in for their share of the curryin too. I han't made many friends by it, I know; and if there is anything to be made out of the consarn, I think it no more than fair I should have my share of it. One thing, however, I hope you will promise me, and that is to show me the manuscript afore you let it go out of your hands. Certainly, said I, Mr. Slick, I shall have great pleasure in reading it over to you before it goes to the press; and if there is anything in it that will compromise you with your countrymen, or injure your feelings, I will strike out the objectionable passage, or soften it down to meet your wishes. Well, said he, that's pretty; now I like that; and if you take a fancy to travel in the States, or to take a tower in Europe, I'm your man. Send me a line to Slickville, and I'll jine you where you like and when you like. I shall be in Halifax in a month from the present time, and will call and see you; p'r'aps you will have the book ready then:—and presenting me with his rifle, and putting the pistols in his pocket, he took leave of me and drove into the country.

Fortunately, when he arrived I had the manuscript completed; and when I had finished reading it to him, he deliberately lit his cigar, and folding his arms, and throwing himself back in his chair, which he balanced on two legs, he said, I presume I may ask what is your object in writing that book? You don't like republics, that's

sartin, for you have coloured matters so it's easy to see which way the cat jumps. Do you mean to write a satire on our great nation, and our free and enlightened citizens?—because if you do, gist rub my name out of it, if you please. I'll have neither art nor part in it; I won't have nothin to do with it on no account. It's a dirty bird that fouls its own nest. I'm not agoin for to wake up a swarm o' hornets about my ears, I tell you; I know a trick worth two o' that, I reckon. Is it to sarve a particular purpose, or is it a mere tradin speck? I will tell you candidly, sir, what my object is, I replied. In the Canadas there is a party advocating republican institutions, and hostility to everything British. In doing so, they exaggerate all the advantages of such a form of government, and depreciate the blessings of a limited monarchy. In England this party unfortunately finds too many supporters, either from a misapprehension of the true state of the case, or from a participation in their treasonable views. The sketches contained in the present and preceding chapters of the Clockmaker, it is hoped, will throw some light on the topics of the day, as connected with the designs of the anti-English party. The object is purely patriotic. I beg of you to be assured that I have no intention whatever to ridicule your institutions or your countrymen; nothing can be further from my thoughts; and it would give me great pain if I could suppose for a moment that any person could put such an interpretation upon my conduct. I like your country, and am proud to number many citizens of the United States among those whom I honour and love. It is contentment with our own, and not disparagement of your institutions, that I am desirous of impressing upon the minds of my countrymen. Right, said he; I see it as plain as a boot-jack; it's no more than your duty. But the book does beat all—that's a fact. There's more fiction in this than in t'other one, and there are many things in it that I don't know exactly what to say to. I guess you had better add the words to the title-page, 'a work of fiction,' and that will clear me, or you must put your name to it. You needn't be ashamed of it, I tell you. It's a better book than t'other one; it ain't just altogether so local, and it goes a little grain deeper into things. If you work it right, you will make your fortin out of it; it will make a man of you, you may depend. How so? said I; for the last volume, all the remuneration I had was the satisfaction of finding it had done some good among those for whose benefit it was designed, and I have no other expectation from this work. More fool you, then, said he; but I'll tell you how to work it. Do you get a copy of it done off on most beautiful paper, with a most an elegant bindin, all covered over the back with gildin (I'll gild it for you myself complete, and charge you nothin but the price of the gold leaf, and that's a mere trifle; it only costs the matter of two shillings and sixpence a paper, or there-

abouts), and send it to the head minister of the Colonies, with a letter. Says you, minister, says you. here's a work that will open your eyes a bit; it will give you considerable information on American matters, and that's a thing, I guess, none on you know a bit too much on. You han't heerd so much truth, nor seen so pretty a book, this one while, I know. It gives the Yankees a considerable of a hacklin, and that ought to please *you*; it shampoos the English, and that ought to please the *Yankees*; and it does make a proper fool of Blue-nose, and that ought to please you *both*, because it shows it's a considerable of an impartial work. Now, says you, minister, it's not altogether considered a very profitable trade to work for nothin and find thread. An author can't live upon nothin but air, like a cameleon, though he can change colour as often as that little crittur does. This work has done a good deal of good. It has made more people hear of Nova Scotia than ever heerd tell of it afore by a long chalk; it has given it a character in the world it never had before, and raised the valy of rael property there considerable; it has shown the world that all the Blue-noses there ain't fools, at any rate; and, though I say it that shouldn't say it, that there is one gentleman there that shall be nameless that's cut his eye-teeth, anyhow. The natives are considerable proud of him: and if you want to make an impartial deal, to tie the Nova Scotians to you for ever, to make your own name descend to posterity with honour, and to prevent the inhabitants from ever thinking of Yankee connection (mind that hint, say a good deal about that; for it's a tender point that, ajoinin of our union, and fear is plaguy sight stronger than love any time), you'll gist sarve him as you sarved Earl Mulgrave (though his writin's ain't to be compared to the Clockmaker no more than chalk is to cheese); you gave him the governorship of Jamaica, and arterwards of Ireland. John Russell's writins got him the birth of the leader in the House of Commons. Well, Francis Head, for his writins you made him Governor of Canada, and Walter Scott you made a baronet of, and Bulwer you did for too, and a great many others you have got the other side of the water you sarved the same way. Now, minister, fair play is a jewel, says you; if you can reward your writers to home with governorships and baronetcies, and all sorts o' snug things, let's have a taste o' the good things this side o' the water too. You needn't be afraid o' bein too often troubled that way by authors from this country. (It will make him larf that, and there's many a true word said in joke); but we've got a sweet tooth here as well as you have. Poor pickins in this country, and colonists are as hungry as hawks. The Yankee made Washington Irvin a minister plenipo', to honour him; and Blackwood last November, in his magazine, says that are Yankee's books ain't fit to be named in the same day with the Clockmaker—that they're nothin but Jeremiads. Now, though Black-

wood deserves to be well kicked for his politics (mind and say that, for he abuses the ministry sky-high that feller—I wouldn't take that crittur's sarse, if I was them, for nothin a'most—he really does blow them up in great style), he ain't a bad judge of books—at least it don't become me to say so; and if he don't know much about 'em, I do; I won't turn my back on any one in that line. So, minister, says you, gist tip a stave to the Governor of Nova Scotia, order him to inquire out the author, and to tell that man, that distinguished man, that her Majesty delights to reward merit, and honour talent, and that if he will come home, she'll make a man of him for ever, for the sake of her royal father, who lived so long among the Blue-noses, who can't forget him very soon. Don't threaten him; for I've often observed, if you go for to threaten John Bull, he gist squares off to fight without sayin of a word; but give him a hint. Says you, I had a peacock, and a dreadful pretty bird he was, and a most a beautiful splendid long tail he had too; well, whenever I took the pan o' crumbs out into the poultry yard to feed the fowls, the nasty stingy crittur never would let any of 'em have a crumb till he sarved himself and his sweetheart first. Our old Muscovy drake, he didn't think this a fair deal at all, and he used to go walkin round and round the pan ever so often, alongin to get a dip into it; but peacock he always flew at him and drove him off. Well, what does drake do (for he thought he wouldn't threaten him, for fear of gettin a thrashin), but he goes round and seizes him by the tail, and pulls him head over heels, and drags him all over the yard till he pulls every one of his great, long, beautiful feathers out, and made a most proper lookin fool of him—that's a fact. It made peacock as civil as you please for ever after. Now, says you, Mr. Slick and I talk of going to England next year, and writin a book about the British: if I ain't allowed to get at the pan of crumbs, along with some o' them big birds with the long tails, and get my share of 'em, some folks had better look out for squalls: if Clockmaker gets hold of 'em by the tail, if he don't make the feathers fly, it's a pity. A joke is a joke, but I guess they'll find that no joke. A nod is as good as a wink to a blind horse; so come down handsum, minister, or look to your tails, I tell you, for there's a keel-hauling in store for some of you that shall be nameless, as sure as you are born.

Now, squire, do that, and see if they don't send you out governor of some colony or another; and if they do, gist make me your deputy secretary,—that's a good man—and we'll write books till we write ourselves up to the very tip-top of the ladder—we will, by gum! Ah, my friend, said I, writing a book is no such great rarity in England as it is in America, I assure you; and colonies would soon be wanting, if every author were to be made a governor. It's a rarity in the colonies, though, said he; and I should like to know

how many governors there have been who could write the Clock-maker. Why, they never had one that could do it to save his soul alive. Come, come, Mr. Slick, said I, no *soft sander*, if you please, to me. I have no objections to record your jokes upon others, but I do not desire to be made the subject of one myself. I am not quite such a simpleton as not to know that a man may write a book, and yet not be fit for a governor. Some books, said he, such as I could name; but this I will say and maintain to my dyin day, that a man that knows all that's set down in the Clockmaker's (and it ain't probable he emptied the whole bag out—there must be considerable siftins left in it yet), is fit for governor of any place in the univarsal world. I doubt if even Mr. Van Buren himself (the prettiest penman atween the poles) could do it. Let 'em gist take you up by the heels and shake you, and see if as much more don't come out.

If you really are in earnest, I said, all I can say is, that you very much over-rate it. You think favourably of the work, because you are kind enough to think favourably of the author. All this is very well as a joke; but I assure you they would not even condescend to answer such a communication at the Colonial Office; they would set such a letter down as the ravings of insanity—as one of the innumerable instances that are constantly occurring of the vanity and folly of authors. Don't you believe it, said he; and if you don't send it, I hope I may be shot if I don't. I'll send it through our minister at the Court of St. James's. He'll do it with pleasure; he'll feel proud of it as an American production—as a rival to *Pickwick Papers*, as the American *Boz*; he will, I vow. That's gist exactly what you are fit for—I've got it—I've got it now; you shall be ambassador to our court to Washington. The knowledge I have given you of America, American politics, American character, and American feelin, has gist fitted you for it. It's a grand berth that, and private secretary will suit me to a notch. I can do your writin, and plenty o' time to spare to spekilate in cotton, niggers, and tobacco too. That's it—that's the dandy! And he jumped up, snapped his fingers, and skipped about the floor in a most extraordinary manner. Here, waiter, d—n your eyes! (for I must larn to swear—the English all swear like troopers; the French call'em Mountshear G—d d—ns;) here, waiter, tell his Excellency the British minister to the court of the American people (that's you, squire, said he, and he made a scrape of his leg), that Mr. Secretary Slick is waitin. Come, bear a hand, rat you, and stir your stumps, and mind the title, do you hear,—Mr. Secretary Slick. I have the honour to wish your Excellency, said he, with the only bow I ever saw him perpetrate, and a very hearty shake of the hands—I have the honour to wish your Excellency good night and good b'ye.

END OF THE CLOCKMAKER.

the Clock-
ve his soul
you please,
ers, but I
n not quite
book, and
as I could
at a man
t ain't pro-
nsiderable
e univarsal
st penman
y the heels
t.

t you very
ecause you
his is very
lescend to
hey would
the innu-
y and folly
n't send it,
minister at
feel proud
ers, as the
you are fit
dor to our
America,
n, has gist
etary will
e to spare
-that's the
ped about
l—n your
troopers;
, tell his
nn people
leg), that
a, and stir
ary Slick.
the only
the hands
goodb'ye.

THE
BUBBLES
OF
CANADA.

BY THE AUTHOR OF

'THE CLOCKMAKER.'

'I say, Jack, I'm blow'd if he didn't call it a shap-po! Why the [devil couldn't he call
it a hat at once—that comes now of his not speaking English.'

e
r
P
i
r
r
C
e
a
d

c
I
th
e

London, 24th Dec. 1838.

MY DEAR HALIBURTON,

I shall offer no apology to you for the manner in which I have executed this work, as you are well aware that I could command neither the time nor the materials that were necessary to do it properly: even the small portion of time I have been able to devote to it, out of a hasty visit to London, has been subject to constant interruptions; and many important documents which ought to have been referred to, have, I find (from the little interest hitherto taken in Canadian affairs), not found their way to England. Wherever I could obtain authentic works and official papers, I have used them as freely as I could, that as little as possible might rest on individual assertion.

Such as it is, I beg of you to accept it, as a proof of my desire to comply with your wishes, as far as it has been in my power to do so. If you are satisfied with it, I am content. As respects the rest of the world, we know too little of each other to require that I should explain or they should listen.

Yours always,
S. S.

To JAMES HALIBURTON, Esq.,
&c. &c. &c.

I

C

E

C

A

S

N

R

A

A

CONTENTS.

	PAGE
LETTER I.	
Introductory remarks.	293
LETTER II.	
Charge of misgovernment, advanced by Lords Durham and Brougham, controverted—Evidence of the Duke de la Rochefoucault Liancourt and Professor Silliman.	296
LETTER III.	
Extent, population and trade of British America—Contradictory opinions of Lord Brougham—Establishment of English laws in Canada—Impolitic and unjust abrogation of them by Quebec Act.	300
LETTER IV.	
Constitutional act—Form of government—Feudal laws—Present state of the law in Canada—People unfit for constitutional government.	307
LETTER V.	
A review of the proceedings of the legislature of Canada from 1792, when it first assembled, to 1819, when a demand was made for a provision for the civil list.	315
LETTER VI.	
Sources of revenue in Canada—Reference to committee of Parliament of alleged grievances—Unjust electoral division of Canada—Unconstitutional proceedings of Assembly—Fresh grievances—Lord Goderich's review of proceedings.	328
LETTER VII.	
Ninety-two resolutions of Canadian Assembly—Reference of the same to committee of 1834—Report of committee.	343
LETTER VIII.	
Review by Lord Aberdeen of the steps taken by government to carry out the recommendation of committee of 1828.	367
LETTER IX.	
Appointment of commission of inquiry—Their instructions—Lord Glenelg's reply to the demands of the Assembly.	377
LETTER X.	
Abandonment of grievances and demand of constitutional changes—Specification of changes required, and separate consideration of each—	

1st. That the **Legislative Council** should be elective.—2d. That the **Executive Council** should be responsible to the House of Assembly.—3d. That the **Tenures Act** and **Land Company Act** should be repealed.—4th. That the **crown revenues** should be surrendered unconditionally.—5th. That the **management of the waste lands** should be given up to them. 388

LETTER XI.

Resolutions introduced by Lord John Russell—Right of Parliament to interfere considered—Conduct of Assembly—Revolt—Conduct of Catholic clergy, and reflections thereon—Mitigating circumstances attending the rebellion—Mission of **Lord Durham**, dangerous schemes proposed by him, bad effect of his proceedings on the other colonies—General review of the topics embraced in this work—Importance of the crisis, and effect of **Canadian independence** on the colonial possessions of Great Britain. 407

Ca
si
a
L
in
ar
Br
th
no
Er
so
to
jec
th
an
th
co
mo
ar
wa
ter
hin
th
an
ne
to
in
oth
Lo
un
he

THE

BUBBLES OF CANADA.

LETTER I.**MY DEAR HALIBURTON,**

407

As the people of this country know but little of the dissensions in Canada, they very wisely confine their observations to the dissensions of those who govern it. This is a more intelligible as well as a more amusing subject. Every body talks of Lord Brougham and Lord Durham, but nobody speaks of Canada. Instead, therefore, of inquiring what is to become of that valuable colony, what measures are, or ought, to be adopted, to ensure its tranquillity, and to protect British subjects and British property there, people very properly limit their attention to the more interesting question what will the Governor-General do when Parliament meets? To inquire whether the English or the French population of Canada is in the right, requires some investigation to ascertain facts, and some constitutional knowledge to judge of those facts when collected. It is, at best, but a dry subject. But to decide whether Lord Brougham or Lord Durham has the best of the dispute is a matter so well suited for easy conversation and humorous argument, that it is no wonder it has more attractions than the other. Such, however, is the acerbity of politics in this country, that even this affair is made a party question, and the worst motives are imputed for everything that is said or done by either. There are not wanting those who gravely assert, that while Lord Brougham was affecting to brush off the flies from the heels of an old rival, he intentionally switched him so hard as to arouse his temper and induce him to kick. They maintain that there are two sorts of tickling, one that is so delicate as to produce laughter and pleasurable sensations, and another that irritates both the skin and the temper by the coarseness of its application. They say that his lordship is much addicted to the latter species, and applies it equally to both friends and foes; in short, that his play is too rough to be agreeable. While, on the other hand, there are some who are so unkind as to insinuate that Lord Durham was very willing to take offence, and to shelter himself under it. That he felt he had voluntarily undertaken a load which he was unable to draw, and that knowing greater expectations had

been formed of him than he could ever realise, had no objection to kick himself out of harness, and extricate himself by overthrowing friend or foe, so long as the public were willing to believe the fault to be that of the teemster, and not of the steed.

Be that as it may, the exhibition has been an entertaining one, and they deserve some credit for having afforded amusement and occupation to the public at this dull season of the year. There they are, the crowd has gathered round them, the idle and the vulgar stand gaping, and each one looks anxiously for what is to follow. What can be more agreeable to a British mob, a people essentially fond of the prize fight, than the contest of these two champions, men who have always courted their applause, and valued their noisy demonstrations of pleasure higher than the quiet respect of those of more taste and more refinement? It affords, however, no pleasure to the colonist. He regards one as a man of splendid talents and no conduct, and the other as a man who, without the possession of either, has advanced to his present high station merely by the force of extreme opinions. He has no sympathy with either. The one is too much actuated by his implacable hatred, the other by his inordinate pride. The former is dangerous from his disposition to do mischief, and the latter unsafe, from his utter inability to effect any good.

After all the addresses that have been presented by the Canadians, this language may possibly appear strange and strong; but addresses afford no proof. They are cheap commodities everywhere. Place-hunters may flatter, and vulgar men may fawn, and office-holders tremble and obey, but the truth must still be told. A governor is the representative of royalty, and colonists have been taught to venerate the office, whatever they may think of the man. At the present crisis it is the test of loyalty. You will search in vain among those addresses for the names of the disaffected; and if those who signed them have expressed themselves strongly, they felt it was no time to measure words, when hesitation bears so strong a resemblance to a repugnance springing from a different cause. But even among these customary offerings of official respect, you will find several exhibiting a choice of expression that bespeak a desire to separate the approbation of measures from the usual deference to rank and station, and others marking the distinction in explicit terms. The colonist by no means regrets his resignation, because he has shewn from his irritable temper, inconsiderate conduct, and crude and dangerous schemes, that, of all men, he was the most unfit depository for the extraordinary powers that were entrusted to him; but he does regret that public attention should be diverted from so important a subject as our Canadian affairs, to so unimportant a matter as my Lord Durham's private quarrels.

He is desirous that the questions at issue between the people of

Canada and Great Britain should be understood, and he doubts not that the good sense and good feeling of this country will apply the proper remedies. In compiling a statement of these grievances, pretensions, or claims (or by whatever other name you may choose to designate them), I shall hope to contribute towards this desirable object. I feel, however, my dear friend, that before I enter upon the subject, I ought to apologise to you for the bulk of this work. Indeed, when you told me at Melrose that you had been in Egypt during nearly the whole period of these Canadian disputes, and therefore wished to have a history of them, I had not the slightest idea that in undertaking to give you one, I was going to write a book. But, though I will fulfil my promise, I will not exceed it. I shall confine myself to a sketch of the origin, progress, and present state of agitation in Lower Canada. I will shew you the pretensions that have been put forth, the concessions that have been made, and the open questions that now remain; you will then be able to judge whether these grievances have led to disaffection, or disaffection has given rise to grievances, and in either case will be able to perceive what ought to be the remedy. Facts and not theories are wanted; you must know the cause and nature of a disease before you can prescribe for it.

If ever you had the misfortune to have had the tooth-ache, you have doubtless found that every one of your friends had an infallible remedy, each of which eventually proved, upon trial, to be nothing more than a palliative, a nostrum that soothed the anguish for a time, by conciliating the nerve; but that the pain returned, with every change of atmosphere, with increased power, while the sedative application became less and less efficacious the oftener it was repeated. You have also found, as others have experienced before you, that while you were thus temporising with an evil which required more prompt and skilful treatment, you had lost the opportunity of filling the cavity and preserving the tooth, by suffering decay to proceed too far to admit of the operation, and, after years of suffering, had to submit at last to cold iron, the ultima ratio of dentists. Whether the system of palliatives and concessions, that has been resorted to in Canada, is a wise and proper one, I shall not presume to say; but all men must agree that it at least has the merit of displaying an amiable inclination to avoid giving pain. Whatever doubts may arise as to the conciliatory measures of past years, there can be none whatever entertained that they cannot be persisted in any longer with advantage. I shall content myself, however, with merely presenting you with a statement of the case, and you shall decide for yourself whether *stopping*, or *forcible extraction*, be now the proper remedy.

LETTER II.

AFTER the late unhappy and wicked rebellion in Canada was suppressed, it was found necessary to punish with death a few of the most conspicuous traitors, for the atrocious murders they had committed. In the colonies, although the justice of this act was fully admitted, the necessity that existed for it was generally deplored. So much blood had been shed in the field, and so much misery entailed upon the country, by that rash and unprovoked revolt, that the people would gladly have been spared the spectacle of a further sacrifice of human life, if the outraged laws of the country had not imperatively called for retribution. They felt, too, that although nothing could justify their having desolated the country with fire and sword, in support of mere speculative points of government, some pity was due to deluded men, who had been seduced from their allegiance by promises of support, and direct encouragement to revolt by people of influence and standing in the mother country; but although they knew that mischievous counsels had been given, they certainly were not prepared to hear similar sentiments publicly avowed in the parliament of the nation. It was, therefore, not without mingled feelings of surprise and sorrow that they heard one honourable member invoke defeat and disgrace upon Her Majesty's troops, whose service was already sufficiently painful without this aggravation; and a noble lord, in another branch of the legislature, denounce, with indignant eloquence, the juries who had tried and the judges that had sentenced these convicted criminals. They ought, however, to have known, and certainly a little reflection would have suggested, that the instinctive horror of those distinguished men at such an event was quite natural, and that they who advocate revolutionary doctrines must necessarily shudder at the untimely fate of those who have dared to act upon them. It was a warning not to be disregarded, a consummation that might be their own, and a lesson fraught with a most salutary moral. As their perceptions were acute enough to make the application, it is to be hoped their prudence will be sufficient to avoid a similar result. Nor is the language held by my Lord Durham, in his recent valedictory proclamation, less surprising. He has thought proper, in that extraordinary document, to give the sanction of his high station to the popular error that the Canadas have been *misgoverned*, and thereby expressed a deliberate censure upon the conduct of abler and better men than himself who have preceded him. Now, there are various kinds of misgovernment, which may be effected by acts of commission or omission, or of both, for a defective form of go-

vernment and misgovernment are widely different. If his lordship meant to use the word in either of those senses, and considered the French Canadians as the subjects of it, then I beg leave most respectfully to state, that he was not warranted by facts in saying so, and that it is an additional proof, if any were wanting, that he knew as little of the affairs of the colony at his departure from thence, as he admits that he did on his arrival there. If, on the other hand, he used it as a cant term to adorn a rhetorical flourish, we shall accept the explanation, and consider it as such, classing it with promises profusely made on his acceptance of office which he has not performed, and similar ones ostentatiously offered on his resignation which he is equally unable to fulfil.

My Lord Brougham has expressed more fully and intelligibly the same opinion in the House of Lords, and has since been at great pains to republish it, first, in the pamphlet form, to circulate as a cheap commodity; and, secondly, in a collection of his speeches, to be impressed by his friend the schoolmaster, as a specimen of eloquence, on the minds of village Hampdens. Although this statesman is followed by few, and attached to none, he is too eloquent and too powerful not to command the attention of all, and presents the singular anomaly of being unable to add weight or influence to any party to which he may lend his support, and yet being the most fearful opponent in the House to those whom it may be his pleasure to attack. With respect to Canada, he was pleased to say, 'Another rule prevails—Refuse all they ask; turn a deaf ear to every complaint; mock them with hopes never to be realized; insult them with rights which when they dare to use shall be rudely torn from them; and for abiding by the law, in seeking redress of their wrongs, punish them by the infliction of a dictator and a despotism.' Truisms are seldom repeated; they require but to be enounced, to be assented to. Paradoxes are more fortunate; they startle and perplex, and he who cannot originate can at least copy. I was, therefore, not surprised at hearing an humble imitation of this diatribe at a meeting of the lower orders of Edinburgh at Carlton Hill. That the audience might find time to attend, the assembly was held by torchlight, a fitting emblem for incendiary doctrines. Tories and Whigs were alike reprobated by an orator, who, when he had exhausted the topics of domestic misrule, deplored in most pathetic terms the lot 'of our oppressed and enslaved brethren in Canada.' If this be true of them, it is an appeal to humanity, and when in Britain was that appeal made in vain? It is, however, the character of humanity to be credulous. The mendicant impostor, aware of the fact, profits by the knowledge of it, and weaves a tale of misfortune or oppression to excite pity and extort money; the political juggler, in like manner, draws upon his

imagination for facts, and having established a grievance, makes a tender of his services as a reformer.

As this charge of misgovernment has been often made of late, it is probable it will be repeated, and as it must materially modify the opinion we are to form, both of the revolt, and of the measures to be adopted hereafter in consequence thereof, I shall now proceed to controvert this assertion; but before I enter upon it, permit me to say, that I shall not treat this as a party question. As a colonist, at once a native and a resident of a distant part of the empire, I am not only unconnected with, but perfectly independent of either of the great parties of this country, of Tories or Whigs or Radicals; nor do I consider this as a subject at all involving the principles for which they severally contend. The question is one wholly between the people of this country and the colonists, and must be considered as such; and so far from my Lord Durham's assertion being true, that there has been misgovernment, I am prepared to show, that every administration in this country, without exception, from the conquest of Canada to the present time, whether Tory or Whig, or mixed, or by whatever name they may be designated, have been actuated but by one feeling, an earnest desire to cultivate a good understanding with their new subjects of French extraction, and on one principle, a principle of concession. Canada has had more privileges and indulgences granted to it than any other of our American colonies: unpopular officers have been removed; obnoxious governors have been recalled; constitutional points abandoned to them; all reasonable changes made (or, as they would express it, grievances redressed); and the interests of commerce and of persons of British origin postponed to suit their convenience, or accommodate their prejudices; in short, everything has been done, and everything conceded to conciliate them, that ingenuity could devise or unbounded liberality grant, and no sacrifice has been considered too great to purchase their affections, short of yielding up the colony to their entire control; and for all this forbearance and liberality they have been met with ingratitude, abuse, and rebellion. For the truth of this assertion, I call upon France and the United States to bear me testimony. Hear the Duke de la Rochefoucault Liancourt:

'No Canadian has just grounds of complaint against the British Government; the inhabitants of Canada acknowledge unanimously that they are better treated than under the ancient French government; but they love the French, forget them not, long after them, hope for their arrival, will always love them, and betray these feelings too frequently, and in too frank a manner, not to incur the displeasure of the English, who, even in Europe, have not made an equal progress with us in discarding the absurd prejudices of one people against another.

'They pay no taxes, live well, at an easy rate, and in plenty; within the compass of their comprehensions they cannot wish for any other good. They are

so little acquainted with the principles of liberty, that it has cost a great deal of trouble to establish juries in their country; they oppose the introduction of the trial by jury; in civil cases these are not yet in use. But they love France, this beloved country engages still their affections. In their estimation a Frenchman is a being far superior to an Englishman.

'The farmers are a frugal set of people, but ignorant and lazy. In order to succeed in enlarging and improving agriculture in this province, the English Government must proceed with great prudence and perseverance; for in addition to the unhappy prejudices which the inhabitants of Canada entertain in common with the farmers of all other countries, they also foster a strong mistrust against every thing which they receive from the English; and this mistrust is grounded on the idea that the English are their conquerors, and the French their brethren. There are some exceptions from this bad agricultural system, but they are few. The best cultivators are always landholders arrived from England.

'Upon the whole, the work of education in Lower Canada is greatly neglected. At Sorel and Three Rivers are a few schools, kept by the nuns; in other places men or women instruct children. But the number of schools is, upon the whole, so very small, and the mode of instruction so defective, that a Canadian who can read is a sort of phenomenon. From the major part of these schools being governed by nuns and other women, the number of the latter who can read is, contrary to the custom of other countries, much greater in Lower Canada than that of men.

'The English Government is charged with designedly keeping the people of Lower Canada in ignorance; but were it sincerely desirous of producing an advantageous change in this respect, it would have as great obstacles to surmount on this head as in regard to agricultural improvements.'

Hear also Professor Silliman, a distinguished American scholar :

'It is questionable whether any conquered country was ever better treated by its conquerors than Canada; the people were left in complete possession of their religion, and revenues to support it—of their property, laws, customs, and manners; and even the defence of their country is without expense to them; and it is a curious fact, that (unless by the great counterbalancing advantages it produces), so far from being a source of revenue, it is a charge on the treasury of the empire. It would seem as if the trouble and expense of government was taken off their hands, and as if they were left to enjoy their own domestic comforts without a drawback. Such is certainly the appearance of the population; and it is doubtful whether our own favoured communities are politically more happy;—they are not exposed in a similar manner to poverty and the danger of starvation, which so often invade the English manufacturer, and which, aided by their demagogues, goad them on to every thing but open rebellion. Lower Canada is a fine country, and will hereafter become populous and powerful, especially as the British and Anglo-American population shall flow in more extensively, and impart more vigour and activity to the community. The climate, notwithstanding its severity, is a good one, and very healthy and favourable to the freshness and beauty of the human constitution. All the most important comforts of life are easily and abundantly obtained.'

This, you will observe, is but the evidence of opinion; produce your facts. Agreed. To the facts then let us proceed.

LETTER III.

By the treaty of peace in the year 1763, Canada, the conquest of which had been achieved on the plains of Abraham, by General Wolfe, was ceded, in full sovereignty and right, to his Britannic Majesty by the King of France, and the French inhabitants who chose to remain in the country became subjects of Great Britain, and were secured in the enjoyment of their property and possessions, and the free exercise of their religion. Thus terminated the power of France in that portion of North America; and here it may be useful to pause and consider, with this vast addition of territory, how extensive and important are our transatlantic possessions.

They may be computed, in round numbers, to comprise upwards of four millions of geographical square miles, extending across the whole Continent, from the Atlantic on the east, to the shores of the North Pacific Ocean on the west; on the parallel of the 49° of north latitude their extreme breadth is about 3,066 geographical miles, and their greatest depth from the most southern point of Upper Canada in Lake Erie, to Smith's Sound in the Polar regions, rather more than 2,150, thus embracing a large portion of the Arctic Seas, and of the Atlantic and Pacific.

The population of this country may be estimated at little short of two millions; while the 'export trade to it exceeds that to Russia, Prussia, Denmark, Sweden, Norway, and France collectively, and nearly equals that to the United States, the most commercial country in the world next to Great Britain. These exports have increased 40 per cent. in three years.

In carrying on this trade, about seven thousand British vessels are employed; the tonnage of those inwards and outwards being each way nearly 1,000,000 tons annually, either to Great Britain or her other colonies, all of them, be it remembered, navigated by her own seamen, and employing British capital; and seven-eighths of the whole produce so transported being paid for in labour to her own people, and all the profits, agencies, and brokerages of this enormous trade divided among her own subjects. Can the possible loss of such a trade be contemplated, without apprehending consequences serious to the manufacturing interests, and prejudicial to national prosperity?

In four years not less than 300,000*l.* has been paid by emigrants as passage-money to her ship-owners; and if out of the number of 170,000 who emigrated during that period, only 20,000* had become

* See Letter to E. Baines, Esq., M.P.

burdensome at home, and had cost their parishes only 4*l.* per head per annum, the expenses to the community (which have been saved) would have been 320,000*l.*

Such are the interests now at stake, and which you are called upon to surrender. My Lord Brougham, the advocate 'for the diffusion of useful knowledge,' thus sanctions the doctrine that colonies though large are unwieldy, and though possessing intrinsic value, cost more for their support and protection, than counterbalances any advantage to be derived from them. 'I have always held (he observed on the 2d of February last, when speaking on the Canada question), the severance of a colony to be a benefit and no loss, provided it can be effected in peace, and leave only feelings of kindness on either side.' At the same time he 'hurled defiance (I use his own words) at the head of the premier,' to point out where he had ever changed his principles. The noble viscount was silent, the challenge was not accepted, and his consistency remained unimpeached. I am more interested in colonial prosperity than either of them, having no desire to be handed over to the tender mercies of republicans, and will take the liberty to refer to that instance that was so triumphantly demanded. I allude to a more deliberate opinion, the result of study and reflection, emanating not from the excitement of debate and the conflict of party spirit, but from the retirement of his closet. On a former occasion he thus expressed himself on this subject:—

'Each nation derives greater benefit from having an increasing market in one of its own provinces, than in a foreign country.

'The colonial trade is always increasing and capable of indefinite augmentation; every operation of colonial traffic replaces two capitals, the employment and distribution of which puts in motion and supports the labour of the different members of the same state.

'The increasing wealth of Russia, Prussia, or Denmark, can never benefit Great Britain unless by the increasing demand for British produce which it may occasion. It may, and often is, on the contrary, turned against her wealth and power; whilst the riches of colonies have a certain tendency to widen the market for British produce, and can never injure the wealth or power of the mother country.

'The possession of remote territories, is the only thing which can secure to the population of a country those advantages derived from an easy outlet, or prospect of outlet, to those persons who may be ill provided for at home.

'It is absurd to represent the defences and government of colonies as a burden. It is ridiculous for the United Kingdom to complain, that she is at the expense of governing and defending her colonial territories.'

Among the benefits to be derived from the 'diffusion of useful knowledge,' it is certainly not the least that we are enabled to compare the professions of public men with their acts, and the actors with each other. My Lords Brougham and Durham have both travelled the same road—selected similar topics—supported them by the same arguments—and aimed at one conclusion; and yet, strange to say, they stand opposed to each other. Coming from a small province,

and a very limited sphere of action, I may be allowed the privilege of a stranger, and be permitted to express my surprise. I had read in the speech to which I have referred, of certain commissioners of inquiry who were placed in an extraordinary situation, 'where each one generally differed from his colleague in the views he took of the argument, and frequently also from himself; but both agreeing in the conclusions at which they arrived, by the course of reasoning one way and deciding another.' It is an awkward position for men to be found in; but little did I anticipate finding the noble author illustrating, in his own person, the case he has described with such pointed and bitter irony. But this is a digression, and I must return to my subject.

Whether a country extending over such an immense space, containing such a great and growing population, and affording such an extensive and profitable trade, has been misgoverned, is therefore a question of the first importance. The affirmative of this proposition which the governor-general has advanced, has inspired the rebels with new hopes; and forms, no doubt, a principal ingredient of that satisfaction which he says his administration has given to the inhabitants of the neighbouring republic. It is a charge, however, in which the honour of the nation is deeply concerned, and should neither be flippantly made nor easily credited.

In the month of October following the treaty, His Majesty published his proclamation, under the great seal of Great Britain, for erecting four new civil governments, to wit, those of Quebec, East Florida, West Florida, and Granada, in the countries and islands in America, which had been ceded to the Crown by the definitive treaty. In this proclamation the King exhorted his subjects as well of his kingdoms of Great Britain and Ireland, as of his colonies in America, to avail themselves, with all convenient speed, of the great benefits and advantages that would accrue, from the great and valuable acquisitions ceded to his Majesty in America, to their commerce, manufactures, and navigation. As an encouragement to them to do so, he informed them that in the commissions he had given to the civil governors of the said four new provinces, he had given express power and directions that, so soon as the state and circumstances of the said colonies would admit thereof, they should, with the advice and consent of the members of his Majesty's councils in the said provinces, summon and call general assemblies of the people within the said governments, in such manner as was used in those colonies and provinces in America which were under his Majesty's immediate government; and that in the meantime, and until such assemblies could be called, all persons inhabiting, in, or resorting to his Majesty's said colonies, might confide in his Majesty's royal protection for the enjoyment of the benefit of the laws of his realm of England; that for that

purpose his Majesty had given power, under the great seal, to the governors of his Majesty's said new colonies, to erect and constitute, with the advice of his Majesty's said councils respectively, courts of judicature and public justice, within the said colonies, for the hearing and determining all causes, as well criminal as civil, according to law and equity, and as near as may be, agreeably to the laws of England; with liberty to all persons who might think themselves aggrieved by the sentence of such courts, in all civil cases, to appeal, under the usual limitations and restrictions, to his Majesty in his Privy Council.

On the 21st day of November 1763,* about six weeks after the publication of the aforesaid proclamation, his Majesty issued his commission of captain-general and governor-in-chief of the province of Quebec, to Major-general Murray, which was received by him, and published in the province in the month of August 1764. This commission, and the insurrection that accompanied it everywhere, presupposed that the laws of England were in force in the province, being full of allusions and references to those laws on a variety of different subjects, and did not contain the least intimation of a saving of any part of the laws and customs that prevailed there, in the time of the French government.

It appears, therefore, upon the whole, from the proclamation and commission, to have been his Majesty's intention, with respect to the said province of Quebec, to assimilate the laws and government of it to those of the other American colonies and provinces which were under his Majesty's immediate government, and not to continue the municipal laws and customs by which the conquered people had heretofore been governed, any farther than as those laws might be necessary to the preservation of their property. And his Majesty's ministers, at the time of passing those instruments, were evidently of opinion that, by the refusal of General Amherst to grant to the Canadians the continuance of their ancient laws and usages; and by the reference made in the fourth article of the definitive treaty of peace to the laws of Great Britain, as the measure of the indulgence intended to be shown them with respect to the exercise of their religion, sufficient notice had been given to the conquered inhabitants of that province, that it was his Majesty's pleasure that they should be governed for the future according to the laws of England. It is evident also, that the inhabitants, after being thus apprised of his Majesty's intention, had consented to be so governed, and had testified their said consent, by continuing to reside in the country, and taking the oath of allegiance to his Majesty, when they might have withdrawn themselves from the province, with all their effects, and the produce of the sale

* See Smith's History of Canada.

of their estates, within the eighteen months allowed by his Majesty in the treaty of peace, for that purpose.

In consequence of this introduction of the laws of England into the province, by the aforesaid proclamation and commission, Governor Murray and his Council, in the great ordinance dated on the 17th day of September 1764 (passed at the commencement of the civil government of the province, for the establishment of courts of justice in it), directed the chief justice of the province (who was to hold the superior court or Court of King's Bench, established by that ordinance), to determine all criminal and civil causes *agreeable to the laws of England*, and the ordinances of the province; and the judges of the inferior court, established by the said ordinance (which was called the Court of Common Pleas), to determine the matters before them agreeably to equity, having regard, nevertheless to *the laws of England*, as far as the circumstances and situation of things would permit, until such time as proper ordinances for the information of the people could be established by the governor and council, agreeable to the laws of England; with this just and prudent proviso, 'that the French laws and customs should be allowed and admitted in all causes in the said court between the natives of the said province, in which the cause of action arose, before the 1st day of October 1764.'

In consequence of these instruments of government, the laws of England were generally introduced into it, and consequently became the rule and measure of all contracts and other civil engagements entered into by the inhabitants after the introduction of them, that is, after the establishment of the civil government of the province, or after the said 1st day of October 1764.

At this time the population of Canada amounted to 65,000 souls, and was confined to the banks of the St. Lawrence and its tributary streams. As the people had now become British subjects, it was deemed expedient to introduce, as soon as possible, emigrants of English extraction, as well for the purpose of creating a defensive power within the province, as to induce the French to acquire the language, and adopt the habits of their conquerors. The officers and soldiers of the army that had served in America were rewarded with grants of land in the country which they had conquered, and liberal offers were made to people in the other provinces, and to emigrants from Europe to remove thither. The facilities of internal transport, the fertility of the soil, and salubrity of the climate, operated so powerfully, that in a short time the influx of strangers was so great as to induce the hope that it would speedily rival the New England states in population and wealth; and no doubt can now be entertained that if the terms of the proclamation had been honestly adhered to, these expectations would have been fully realised. As a

matter of policy nothing could have been more wise, than since it had now become a British colony, to endeavour, as soon as possible, to make it so in fact as well as in name. The introduction of English laws had a natural tendency to disseminate the language, by rendering the study of it necessary to the Canadian French, and a constant intercourse with the emigrants could not fail, by rendering their customs familiar, to have gradually led to their adoption. This change, though great in the first instance, and no doubt repugnant to their feelings, would have gradually recommended itself to the French, and by the time a new generation had sprung up, all inconvenience would have ceased to be felt any longer. The first fatal error that was committed was ordering a code of laws to be prepared for the province, with such modifications as would secure to the French the system of tenure and inheritance, to which they had been accustomed. This occasioned much delay, and enabled their leaders to represent that any change would alienate the affections of the inhabitants, who would naturally extend to the government the dislike that they felt to their institutions. Unfortunately, while this was under consideration, the time had arrived when they could enforce their demands with a threat, and the rebellion which shortly afterwards broke out in the English colonies (now constituting the United States), made their conciliation become a matter of state policy. It was therefore determined at once to restore the French laws as they existed at the conquest, and the celebrated Quebec Act, 14 Geo. 3, c. 83, was passed for that purpose. This statute enacted, 'that his Majesty's subjects professing the religion of the Church of Rome, in the said province of Quebec, may have, hold and enjoy, the free exercise of their religion, subject to the King's supremacy, and that the clergy of the said church may hold, receive, and enjoy their accustomed dues and rights, with respect to such persons only as shall profess the said religion; and that it shall be lawful for his Majesty, his heirs or successors, to make such provision for the support of the Protestant clergy within the said province, as he or they shall from time to time think necessary and expedient.' *But by far the most important clause was that which, after reciting that the English laws which had prevailed there for ten years, administered and regulated under commissions to governors, had been found inapplicable to the state and circumstances of the country, enacted that from and after the 1st of May, 1775, the said English laws and practice of courts should be annulled.* It is true that the criminal law of England was excepted, and that the system of torture which had been in previous existence was abolished for ever. During the time they were under French domination a person suspected of crime was seized, thrown into prison, and interrogated, without knowing the charge brought against him, and without being confronted with his accuser. He

was deprived of the assistance either of his friends, relations, or counsel. He was sworn to tell the truth, or rather to accuse himself, without any value being attached to his testimony. Questions were then artfully put, which are described as more difficult for innocence to unravel than vice to deny. The prisoner was never confronted with the person who had deposed against him, except at the moment before judgment was pronounced, or when the torture was applied, or at his execution, which judgment in capital cases was invariably followed by confiscation of property. This act also constituted a council with the power to make ordinances, conjointly with the governor, but not to impose taxes except for making roads. The ordinances were to be laid before his Majesty for allowance, and those touching religion not to be in force until formally approved of by the King.

This flagrant violation of the promises held out in the proclamation, and of the terms upon which the people of British origin had settled in the provinces, filled them with dismay. They felt that they had the wretched choice presented to them of abandoning their property and removing from the colony, or of remaining a miserable minority, to be ruled and governed by foreigners, whose favour could only be conciliated by their forgetting their country, their language, and religion, as soon as possible, and becoming Frenchmen. They accordingly lost no time in forwarding petitions, in which they were joined by the merchants of London, interested in the North American trade, to the king and the two houses of parliament, expressive of their sense of the injury they had sustained, and of the misery likely to be entailed by this act upon the province, but no repeal was effected, and the act remained as it was passed.

Importunity often prevails against conviction, and the most noisy applicant is generally the first relieved, not because he is the most deserving, but because he is the most troublesome. The French Canadians appear to have been fully aware of this fact, and to have acted upon it; and the English finding their opponents first in the field, have been put on the defensive, and instead of seeking what was due to themselves, have been compelled to expostulate that too great a share has been given to their rivals. The advantage gained by this position, the former have constantly maintained; and, it is a singular fact, that while the latter are the *only aggrieved party in the country*, the former have forestalled the attention of the public, and engrossed the whole of its sympathy. Every page of this work will confirm and illustrate this extraordinary fact. The Quebec Act was obnoxious, not merely to the British party in Canada, but to the inhabitants of those colonies whose gallantry so materially contributed to its conquest. It has been the singular fate of this unfortunate bill to have excited two rebellions. It caused the cup of American

grievance, which was already filled to the brim, to overflow into revolt, and has subsequently given rise to a train of events that have induced the very men that it was designed to conciliate, to follow the fatal example that had been set to them by their republican neighbours.

LETTER IV.

As soon as the struggle had ended in the old colonies, by their successful assertion of independence, a vast emigration of the loyalists took place into Canada, comprising a great number of persons of character and property; and these people, who had been accustomed to the exercise of the electoral privilege, united with those of their countrymen who had previously settled there in demanding a modification of the Quebec Act, and the establishment of a local legislature. The petitions of these people gave rise to the Act of the 31st Geo. 3, c. 31, commonly called the Constitutional Act, to which and to the Quebec Act, of the 14th of the same reign, c. 83, alluded to in my former letter, is to be attributed all the trouble experienced in governing Canada. In the fatal concessions to the Canadians contained in these Acts, is to be found the origin of that anti-British feeling which, engendered by the powers conferred by those Acts, has increased with every exercise of those powers, until it has assumed the shape of concentrated hatred and open rebellion. By this Act Canada was divided into two provinces, respectively called Upper and Lower Canada. The latter, to which all my remarks will hereafter be confined, lies between the parallels of the 45° and 52° of North latitude, and the meridian of 57° 50' and 80° 6' West longitude from Greenwich. It is bounded on the north by the territory of the Hudson's Bay Company, on the east by the Gulph of St. Lawrence, on the south by New Brunswick and part of the United States, and on the west by a line that separates it from Upper Canada, and contains more than 250,000 square miles.

To this country this celebrated Act gave a constitution, consisting of a Governor and Executive Council of eleven members, appointed by the Crown; a Legislative Council, forming the second estate, appointed in like manner by the Crown, consisting of fifteen members (but subsequently, as we shall see, increased to forty); and a Representative Assembly, or House of Commons, composed of fifty members (afterwards increased to eighty-eight), each having powers as nearly analogous to those of King, Lords, and Commons, as the varied circumstances of the two countries and the dependence of the colony would admit.

The enacting power they bestowed upon the colony, introduced from year to year another set of statutes, in addition to what they were subject to already, so that they now have a union of French, English, and provincial law. Such a confusion, you may easily imagine, imposed great difficulties, as well upon those who had to administer, as those who were bound to obey those laws; but of the extent of those difficulties, of the impediments they offered to the transfer of real estate, of the frauds to which they gave rise, and the obstacles they presented to the settlement and prosperity of the country, it is impossible for an Englishman to form any idea without first inquiring into the structure of this singular code. The subject, however, is too important to be disposed of in this cursory manner, and I shall, therefore, even at the hazard of being thought tedious, endeavour to give you some general account of the situation of the country in this particular. I am the more induced to do so, because, independent of the explanation which it will give of much that I have to say to you, it appears to be indispensable to the full understanding of the Tenures' Act, which is now one of the great complaints of the disaffected.

There exists in Lower Canada no regular code in which the laws of the land are systematically incorporated, nor would it indeed be a task of ordinary difficulty to collect and condense them, so diverse are their elements, and so complex their character.* The jurisprudence of the country may be said to embrace the French, the English, and the Roman or civil laws, and these are all so blended in practice, that it is often doubtful whence the rule of decision will be drawn, although the line of distinction is better defined in theory. The statute law of the province may be stated under five heads:—1st, The articles of capitulation, that form part of the guaranteed rights of the inhabitants; 2d, The 31st Geo. III. cap. 31, or the constitutional act, and all other British statutes expressly extending to the colonies; 3d, The edicts, declarations, and ordinances of the Kings of France officially registered in the province; 4th, The ordinances of the governor and council anterior to 1792; and 5th, The acts of the provincial legislature subsequent to 1792. The common law is the custom of Paris as modified by the customs of the country, and this law was co-extensive with the whole province until the passing of the Canada tenures' bill in 1825, which restricted the application of the French law to the feudal section of the colony, and introduced bodily the English laws to the remainder of the province. The criminal law of the province is the English code as it stood in 1774, and the statutes of a declaratory or modifying nature that have since passed the local legislature.

* See Bouchette.

When the country was first settled by the French, the feudal tenure was in full vigour on the continent of Europe, and naturally transplanted by the colonizers to the new world. The King of France, as feudal lord, granted to nobles and respectable families, or to officers of the army, large tracts of land, termed seigniories, the proprietors of which were termed seigniors; and held immediately from the King *en fief*, or *en roture*, on condition of rendering fealty and homage on accession to seigniorial property; and in the event of a transfer, by sale, or gift, or otherwise (except in hereditary succession), the seignior was subject to the payment of a *quint*, or fifth part of the whole purchase-money; and which, if paid by the purchaser immediately, entitled him to the *rabat*, or a reduction of two-thirds of the *quint*. The custom still prevails, the King of Great Britain having succeeded to the claims of the King of France.*

The position and extent of these seigniorial grants are :—

Territorial Division.	Number of Seigniories.	Extent of Seigniorial Grants.		Almost unfit for cultivation in the Seigniories and Fiefs.
		Arpents.	Acres.	
Quebec, including Anticosti and other Isles.	79	5,030,319	5,656,699	2,600,000
Montreal and Islands.	63	3,269,966	2,786,011	500,000
Three Rivers and St. Francis, &c.	25	1,220,308	1,039,707	400,000
Gaspé and Isles.	1	1,547,086	1,318,117	600,000
	168	12,676,679	10,800,534	4,100,000

Estimating the number of acres of land in Lower Canada under cultivation, at 4,000,000, it will be perceived what a large portion of territory is embraced under the seigniories.

Quints is a fifth-part of the purchase-money of an estate held *en fief* which must be paid by the purchaser to the feudal lord, that is, to the King. If the feudal lord believes the *fief* to be sold under value, he can take the estate to himself by paying the purchaser the price he gave for it, with all reasonable expenses. *Relief* is the rent or revenue of one year for mutation fine, when an estate is inherited only by collateral descent. *Lods et ventes*, are fines of alienation of one-twelfth part of the purchase-money, paid to the seigneur by the purchaser, on the transfer of property, in the same manner as *quints* are paid to the King on the mutation of *fief*; and are held *en roture*, which is an estate to which heirs succeed equally. *Franc alevu noble* is a *fief*, or freehold estate, held subject to no seigniorial

* See Martin's 'Canada,' and House of Commons Report.

rights or duties, and acknowledging no lord but the King. The succession to *fiefs* is different from that of property held *en roture* or by *villainage*. The eldest son, by right, takes the chateau, and the yard adjoining it; also an *arpent* of the garden joining the manor house, and the mills, ovens, or presses within the seigniorly, belong to him; but the profit arising from these is to be divided among the other heirs. Females have no precedence of right, and when there are only daughters, the *fief* is equally divided among them. When there are only two sons, the eldest takes two-thirds of the lands, besides the chateau, mill, etc., and the younger, one-third. When there are several sons, the elder claims half the lands, and the rest have the other half divided among them. *Censive* is an estate held in the feudal manner, subject to the seigniorial fines or dues. All the Canadian *habitans*, small farmers, are *censitaires*. Property, according to the laws of Canada, is either *propre*, that is held by descent, or *acquits*, which expresses being acquired by industry or other means. *Communauté de bien* is partnership in property by marriage; for the wife, by this law, becomes an equal partner in whatever the husband possessed before and acquires after marriage, and the husband is placed in the same position in respect to the wife's dowry property. This law might operate as well as most general laws, if both *husband* and *femme* came to the *finale* of life on the same day; but very unhappy consequences have arisen when the one died before the other. For instance, when the wife dies before the husband, the children may claim half of the father's property, as heirs to the mother; and the mother's relations have often persuaded and sometimes compelled them so to do.

The dot or dowry, is the property which the wife puts into the *communauté de bien*: moveable or immoveable property, falling to her by descent, is a *propre*, and does not merge in the *communauté*. Dower in Canada, is either customary or stipulate. The first consists of half the property which the husband was possessed of at the time of marriage, and half of all the property which he may inherit or acquire—of this the wife has the use for life, and the children may claim it at her death. If they be not of age, the wife's relations can take it out of the father's hands for them, and may compel him to sell his property to make a division. Stipulated dower is a portion which the husband gives instead of the customary dower.

Those farmers who hold land from the seigneur *en roture*, and who are termed tenanciers or censitaires, do so subject to certain conditions, viz.: a small annual rent from 2s. 6d. to 5s. (or perhaps more of late years) for each arpent in front, to this is added some articles of provision annually, according to the means of the farmer, who is also bound to grind his corn at the *moulin banal*, or the seigneur's mill, when one-fourteenth is taken for the lord's use as a

mouture or payment for grinding. The *lods et ventes* form another part of the seigneur's revenue: it consists of a right to one-twelfth part of the purchase money of every estate within his seigniority that changes its owner by sale or other means equivalent to sale: this twelfth to be paid by the purchaser, and is exclusive of the sum agreed on between the latter and the seller, and if promptly paid, a reduction of one-fourth is usually made (in the same manner as two-thirds of the *quint* due to the Crown is made). On such an occasion a privilege remains with the seigneur but seldom exercised, called the *droit de retrait*, which confers the right of pre-emption at the highest bidden price within forty days after the sale has taken place.

All the fisheries within the seigniorities contribute also to the lord's income, as he receives of the fish caught, or an equivalent in money for the same: the seigneur is also privileged to fell timber any where within his seigniority for the purpose of erecting mills, constructing new or repairing old roads, or for other works of public and general utility. In addition to the foregoing obligations on the farmer, he is, if a Roman Catholic, bound to pay to his curate one twenty-sixth part of all grain produced, and to have occasional assessments levied on him for building and repairing churches, parsonage houses, etc.

The duties of the seigneur to his tenants are also strictly defined, —he is bound in some instances to open roads to the remote parts of his fief, and to provide mills for the grinding of the feudal tenants' corn;—he cannot dispose by sale of forest lands, but is bound to concede them, and upon his refusal to do so, the applicant may obtain from the Crown the concession he requires, under the usual seigniorial stipulations, in which case the rents and dues appertain to the King.

The *socage* tenure, like the *franc aleu roturier*, leaves the farmer or landholder wholly unshackled by any conditions whatsoever as to rents, *corvées*, mutation fines, *vanaleté* (corn grinding obligation) without in fact any other obligation than allegiance to the King, and obedience to the laws. The quantity of land thus granted in Lower Canada amounts to upwards of 7,000,000 acres—while under the seigniorial grants there are nearly 11,000,000 acres held by a vast number of small proprietors.

It is very difficult to conceive how the statesman who sanctioned the act that substituted this extraordinary code for that of England, could have imagined it could ever be productive of anything but discord in a country inhabited by two races of different origin and different language. Any person at all acquainted with the prejudices and passions that operate on man, will easily understand that the French, jealous of any innovation, are constantly suspicious of an intention on the part of the English to infringe upon their rights, and introduce their own system of jurisprudence, to which they are accustomed and

attached, instead of that which they neither understand nor approve; and, on the other hand, that the English, naturally an enterprising and commercial people, find the feudal tenure an intolerable burden, and spurn with indignation the idea of being subjected to the government of a race whom they have conquered, and to the operation of laws, which even the people with whom they originated, have rejected as unsuited to the exigencies of the times. In addition to this grievous error of establishing a code of laws that exists nowhere else, three others were committed of equal magnitude : first, in dividing Canada into two provinces, and thus separating the French from the majority of the English ; secondly, in permitting the language of the courts, and the records of the legislature, to be French ; and, thirdly, in giving at so early a period, and before the people were fitted to receive it, a constitutional government.

The concentrated settlement of the French along the shores of the St. Lawrence necessarily excluded the English emigrants from that fertile territory, and compelled them to remove to the borders of the lakes. In addition to this obvious cause of their not settling in the immediate neighbourhood of the Canadians, it is evident that the nature of the feudal tenure to which those lands were subject, and the introduction of French laws in direct contravention of the proclamation, rendered such a separation of the two races inevitable. Under these circumstances one would naturally have supposed that a wise government would have endeavoured, as far as possible, to counteract the tendency of these causes, to alienate, as well as separate, these people of different origin. But, alas, the fatal principle of conciliation had now been adopted as the rule of action, and the favourable opportunity of Anglifying the colony, and amalgamating the population, by identifying the interests of both, was not only neglected, but the most effectual mode was adopted to make the distinction as marked and as permanent as possible. Not content with this act of folly and injustice, the French were entrusted with an almost exclusive possession of the popular branch of the legislature, and even constituted, at the same time, toll-keepers to the adjoining province. Both the ports of Quebec and Montreal were assigned to the French, and the inhabitants of Upper Canada were thus cut off from all communication with the mother country, but such as might be granted by the Americans or their Gallic neighbours. If the persons who framed that act had compared the state of the revolted colonies with that of Canada, and reflected that they were settled nearly a century later than the other, they certainly never would have attempted to do such injustice as to subject the trade of another colony to the exactions of an illiterate and prejudiced people. If, however, the necessities of the times demanded a sacrifice on this important point, surely they should have paused before

they gave them a constitutional government, and enquired whether they were sufficiently intelligent to receive the institutions of a free and enlightened people. The experiment of constitutional government was never tried by a people less qualified for the task than the Canadians.

Until the conquest they may be said to have known no other form of government than a despotic one; few of them could read or write, and the habits of implicit obedience in which they had been trained to their superiors rendered them unable to comprehend the nature of their own rights, or those of the other branches of the legislature. The powers exercised by the several French governors and intendants knew no bounds; and, unrestrained by law, their decisions were dictated by the caprice of the moment. The inhabitants were compelled to serve as soldiers without pay, in the frequent wars with the English, and were treated with the greatest severity by their superiors. The exactions of the military, instead of being restrained were encouraged, and on all occasions the protection of the governor or intendant was necessary to insure success, while merit in every instance was overlooked. Remonstrances against oppression had frequently been transmitted to the government in France, but were always either suppressed or disregarded. Their character at this period is thus drawn by the Abbé Raynal, whose account, as his partiality must have been all in their favour, I prefer as the most unobjectionable. He observes :

‘ That those whom rural labour fixed in the country, allowed only a few moments to the care of their flocks and to other indispensable occupations during winter. The rest of the time was passed in idleness at public-houses, or in running along the snow and ice in sledges, in imitation of the most distinguished citizens. When the return of spring called them out to the necessary labours of the field, they ploughed the ground superficially, without ever manuring it, sowed it carelessly, and then returned to their former indolent manner of life till harvest time.

‘ This amazing negligence might be owing to several causes. They contracted such a habit of idleness during the continuance of the severe weather, that labour appeared insupportable to them even in the finest weather. The numerous festivals prescribed by their religion, which owed its increase to their establishment, prevented the first exertion, as well as interrupted the progress of industry. Men are ready enough to comply with that species of devotion that flatters their indolence. Lastly, a passion for war, which had been purposely encouraged among these bold and courageous men, made them averse from the labours of husbandry. Their minds were so entirely captivated with military glory that they thought only of war, though they engaged in it without pay.

‘ The inhabitants of the towns, especially of the capital, spent the winter as well as the summer in a constant scene of dissipation. They were alike insensible of the beauties of nature or of the pleasures of the imagination. They had no taste for arts or science, for reading or instruction. Their only passion was amusement.

‘ There appeared in both sexes a greater degree of devotion than virtue, more religion than probity; a higher sense of honour than real honesty. Superstition took place of morality, which will always be the case whenever men are taught

to believe that ceremonies will compensate for good works, and that crimes are expiated by prayers.'

A greater folly can hardly be conceived than conferring a constitutional government upon a people so situated. Wherever the experiment has been tried, whether in France, in the republic of South America, in Spain, in Portugal, Greece, Newfoundland, or Lower Canada, it has invariably failed. The constitution of England, as it now exists, is the growth of ages, and would have been as unsuitable to our ancestors five hundred years ago as it is to the Lower Canadians of the present day. Regard must be had to the character and condition of the people to whom such a form of government is offered. What may suit the inhabitants of England, may be, and is, very unsuitable to those of any other country. It is not sufficient that the machinery be good, but, if we desire to avoid accidents and insure success, we must place skillful people in the management of it, who are thoroughly acquainted with its power, and have a perfect knowledge of its principle of action. The limited monarchy of England was found unsuited to America, although the people were of British extraction, accustomed to free institutions, and perfectly instructed in its practical operation. They were so unfortunate as not to possess any materials out of which to construct a House of Lords, and therefore so modified their constitution as to meet the altered circumstances of the country. This humble imitation is a cheap article, and good of its kind, though badly put together; but a better and more costly one would not have corresponded with the limited means and humble station of a poor people. Their choice is a proof of their wisdom, and their having the opportunity to choose, at a time of life when they were able to make a judicious selection, is also a proof of their good fortune. Had the Canadians been called upon, at the time of the conquest, to point out what government they would have preferred, they would unquestionably have solicited that of a single intendant; they had never known any other, and it was the only one for which they were fitted. So strong, indeed, is the force of habit, that rejecting the constitution, which they cannot understand, and do not appreciate, they have, after a vain attempt to accommodate themselves to it, resorted to the usage of former days, and (however unfortunate they may have been in the character and conduct of the person they selected as their leader) have adopted the usage of their forefathers, and implicitly yielded their confidence and obedience to *one man*.

LETTER V.

HAVING thus traced historically the measures of government, from the conquest of the country to the time when the Constitutional Act went into operation in the province (26th December 1791), which forms the first important epoch in the history of the Colony, I shall divide the time that intervened between that period and the present into four other portions: The second extends from the meeting of the first provincial House of Assembly in December 1792 to 1818, when a demand was made for a civil list; the third from thence to 1828, when the pretensions of the Assembly had assumed a distinct and definite form, and were referred to a committee of Parliament; the fourth from thence to 1834, when a further reference of additional grievances, was made to another parliamentary committee; and the fifth from 1834 to the present period. Such a division will elucidate the growth and increase of those revolutionary principles (the natural and obvious result of such a form of government) which first appeared in an insidious attempt to monopolise the whole civil power by such a complete control in matters of legislation and finance as would render her Majesty's representative, and the Legislative Council, subservient to the interests, prejudices, and passions of the French Canadian majority, and finally terminated in open rebellion. I do not mean by this to affirm that all that has since transpired was the result of a preconceived design, systematically acted upon; but as uncontrolled power was given by the constitution to the French party, that those pretensions were the natural result of such a power, and that they were unhesitatingly put forward as soon as their leaders had become acquainted with the working of the constitution, and aware that they were invested with the means of imposing their own terms upon government.

The first assembly met on the 17th of December 1792, and as the representation had been most injudiciously based on the principle of population, thirty-five out of the fifty members of this first house were French, and fifteen only English, a minority too large and respectable to be suffered to continue longer than to teach the majority the forms of business, and we accordingly find, at a subsequent period, that it was *reduced to three*. The change from arbitrary to constitutional government was so great, that the French were for some time under the influence of those grateful feelings which such a state of things so naturally engendered. In one of their addresses to his Majesty, soliciting the establishment of a legislature, they thus express their sense of his mild and paternal government:

' Sir, — Your most obedient and faithful new subjects in the province of Canada take the liberty to prostrate themselves at the foot of your throne, in order to lay before you the sentiments of respect, affection, and obedience towards your august person, with which their hearts overflow, and to return to your Majesty their most humble thanks for your paternal care of their welfare.

' Our gratitude obliges us to acknowledge, that the faithful appearances of conquest by your Majesty's victorious arms did not long continue to excite our lamentations and tears. They grew every day less and less, as we gradually became more acquainted with the happiness of living under the wise regulations of the British empire. And even in the very moment of the conquest we were far from feeling the melancholy effects of restraint and captivity; for the wise and virtuous general who conquered us, being a worthy representative of the glorious sovereign who entrusted him with the command of his armies, left us in possession of our laws and customs; the free exercise of our religion was preserved to us, and afterwards was confirmed by the treaty of peace; and our own former countrymen were appointed judges of our disputes concerning civil matters. This excess of kindness towards us we shall never forget. These generous proofs of the clemency of our benign conqueror shall be carefully preserved in the annals of our history; and we shall transmit them from generation to generation to our remotest posterity. These, Sir, are the pleasing ties by which, in the beginning of our subjection to your Majesty's government, our hearts were so strongly bound in your Majesty; ties which can never be dissolved, but which time will only strengthen and draw closer.'

Impressed with a sense of the benefits conferred upon them by this great change, trammelled by parliamentary forms with which they were wholly unacquainted, and not yet aware of the unlimited means of annoyance, if not of controul, with which they were invested, we find them for some time proceeding with decorum and moderation. But there were not wanting those in the colony who were filled with alarm at the sight of the first Canadian assembly, which, even with the largest minority ever known, contained a majority of more than twice as many Frenchmen as Englishmen, and possessed the power to increase that majority at its pleasure. Even those whose faith in the operation of British institutions, had led them to hold a different opinion as to the result, were constrained to admit their error, when they found the house proceeding to choose a speaker, who admitted his inability to express himself in English (a precedent of choosing that officer from the majority, which has ever since been followed), and also resorting to the expensive mode of recording their proceedings in their own language. They perceived with grief that the natural tendency of those things, instead of stimulating the new subjects to the study of constitutional law in its original sources, was to force Englishmen to study French, and in no small degree to become Frenchmen, and coalesce with the Nation Canadienne, to give a complete ascendancy to those of foreign origin, their laws, language, and characteristics, in the popular branch of the legislature, and to encourage in the leaders, at a future day, that exclusive ambition that now distinguishes them. They could not fail, also, to draw an unfavourable contrast between this extraordinary

concession, and the more provident conduct of the American Congress, which, while admitting the territory of Louisiana, inhabited by Frenchmen, as one of the states of the confederation, enacted that all minutes of proceedings in the court and legislature of their sister state should be exclusively recorded in the language of the constituency of the United States. This judicious enactment has naturally made the study of the English tongue a primary object with the Louisianians, and, though in numbers, at the time of admission, they were about half the amount of the Canadians in 1791, they now generally speak or understand English, and have changed their old laws for a new code, while the legislature and people of Canada remain as much French as the inhabitants of Normandy.

It was felt that, as far as Englishmen and their descendants were concerned, this constitution was a mere delusion. At a very early period we find them putting in practice that manœuvre, which became so common afterwards, of absenting themselves from the house, when measures were to be considered to which they were averse, and thereby compelling the speaker to adjourn the debate for want of a quorum. This first House of Assembly, after four sessions, terminated on the 4th of May, 1796. The conduct of the members, though respectful both to the governor and the other branch of the legislature, gave evident proof that they would afford no encouragement to English commerce or English settlers. The principle adopted and acted upon most pertinaciously was to avoid direct assessment, and throw all public burthens, as well as local charges, upon the revenue, to be derived from duties levied off of trade. It was in some measure owing to chance, but mainly to the influence of the governor, that a road act, so important to the country, which imposed a moderate contribution of money or labour on the people, for the improvement of their property, was carried through the Assembly. But an appeal to the passions and prejudices of the people by their embryo demagogues was so successful on this occasion, in representing this necessary act as the commencement of foreign taxation and English oppression, that they attempted to starve out the inhabitants of Quebec and Montreal, by withholding all the usual supplies of food. A bankrupt law was refused to the request of the merchants, and they also declined to sanction 'An Act to Amend the Laws, Customs, and Usages in force in the Province, relative to the Tenure of Lands, and the rights derived therefrom,' refusing to make the smallest sacrifice to what they called the avarice of English landholders, and the prejudices of American settlers. So peremptory, indeed, was the refusal, that the faction was considered decisive as to any innovation upon the French laws, which, with the feudal tenures of lands, were cherished as the means of deterring emigrants from seeking an asylum in the province; thus rendered French in fact, though Bri-

tish in name. During the existence of this house, also, is to be found the first pretension to encroach on the right of the Crown, in an enquiry into the forfeited lands of the Jesuits, and a claim for their restoration to French controul. It is, however, worthy of remark, as forming a complete contrast with recent conduct, that of eleven acts sanctioned at the end of the session, all were permanent but one.

Thus, my dear friend, do you see that the causes of the present posture of affairs are to be traced back to a very early period, not as my Lord Durham has asserted, to misgovernment of the Canadians, but to inconsiderate concessions, which though designed to conciliate them, have not only signally failed of their object, but been productive of mischief to themselves, and incalculable injury to the colony. That this is the view that impartial men take of the subject, appears from the following extract from the work of a distinguished foreigner, the author of the *Resources of America* :*

‘ The unwise act of Lord Grenville, passed through Parliament in the year 1794, permitting the people of Lower Canada to conduct their pleadings and promulgate their laws in the French language, has prevented them from ever becoming British, and so far weakened the colony as an outwork of the mother country. It has always been the policy of able conquerors, as soon as possible, to incorporate their vanquished subjects with their own citizens, by giving them their own language and laws, and not suffering them to retain those of their pristine dominion. These were among the most efficient means by which ancient Rome built up and established her empire over the whole world; and these were the most efficient aids by which modern France spread her dominion so rapidly over the continent of Europe. While Lower Canada continues to be French in language, religion, laws, habits, and manners, it is obvious that her people will not be good British subjects; and Britain may most assuredly look to the speedy loss of her North American colonies, unless she immediately sets about the establishment of an able, statesmanlike government there, and the direction thitherward of that tide of emigration from her own loins, which now swells the strength and resources of the United States. Her North American colonies gone, her West India islands will soon follow.’

The second House of Assembly was opened on the 25th of January 1797, and ended in 1801. The privilege of participating in the legislative power of the country for four years, had awakened the members to a sense of their own importance, and the Canadian French to a knowledge of their supremacy; and they accordingly returned a more democratic house than the preceding, and representatives pledged to an exclusive devotion to the interests of their own party. The prejudices awakened by the Road Act, and the fraternalising doctrines of the French revolution, contributed also to produce this result. It is true the minority were only reduced to fourteen; but the attorney-general was defeated as a candidate for the county of Quebec, and several influential members of the late house shared

* Bristow.

a similar fate; so that although the numerical proportions were nearly similar, the British interest was evidently already on the decline.

A manifest change had taken place in the feelings of the different branches of the legislature. The governor, acting on the defensive, no longer proposed measures of internal improvement, which he knew would provoke angry discussions, or be met with a refusal; but relied more upon the Legislative Council, which alone represented or protected British interests, while the house, finding that temporary acts had a direct tendency to lessen the influence and independence of the executive, discontinued the practice of passing permanent laws. To remedy the evil of having so many prejudiced and illiterate members in the assembly, it was proposed by the minority to establish a qualification, which, although it could not possibly increase their own numbers, it was hoped might at least have the advantage of affording them more liberal and enlightened colleagues; but this measure, like all others introduced by them, was considered of foreign origin, and excluded accordingly. The majority, however, though pertinacious, still preserved appearances, and as the minority felt themselves unequal to procure the passage of any bill, either of internal improvement or for the facilitating the foreign trade, they forbore to provoke the discussion, and preferred using their influence to the mere preservation of what few privileges were left to them. The third provincial parliament began on the 1st of January 1801, and terminated, after five sessions, on the 2d of May 1804. The temper of this house, and the proportion of its parties, were similar to that of the last.

Among the topics insisted upon in the governor's speech, was a recommendation for a grant of money for free schools for the instruction of the rising generation in the first rudiments of useful learning, and in the *English tongue*; and it was noticed with feelings of grief, though not with surprise, that the house, in their reply, omitted the words 'English tongue,' and shortly afterwards applied the commentary by a vote for the purchase of 'French books,' for the use of the members. Although there were not a few of their number who were unfortunately incapable, from a deficiency of education, of using them, yet it was evident that there existed as little inclination to adopt the language, as there was to introduce the laws of Great Britain.

In accordance with this spirit of preference for French laws, an act was passed to revive the serment décisoire, or oath, by which, under certain circumstances, a debtor may be permitted to clear himself of a commercial debt, by simply swearing to its having been paid and satisfied, without even stating the time or place of payment; an act which has been described as a most prolific source of fraud and per-

jury, and deeply injurious to the mercantile interests of the country, as well as to the character of the people. Such, indeed, was the jealousy of the majority of the English, that they were not inclined to pass even those laws, which had an exclusive application to them and their tenures. Thus a bill was introduced for registering deeds of lands in free and common soccage, which only affected the English, but it met with the customary fate of all such attempts.

The leaders began now to affect to perceive a latent danger in every act of the government, and a bill requiring rectors, curates, and priests to read certain laws after divine service, was denounced as opening a door for exercising an influence over the clergy; and an effort was made to introduce in their stead the captains of militia, which was only relinquished to avoid the awkward admission that too many of those officers were deficient in the necessary qualification to perform the duty. The great increase of the trade of the province at this time, in consequence of the war, so far from exciting the emulation of the French, and stimulating them to participate in its advantages, awakened their jealousy, and they stigmatised it as the parent of crime, the source of undue distinctions, and the means of filling the country with persons of foreign origin. They not only declined in any way to aid its extension, but imposed taxes upon it for all those objects that elsewhere in America are provided for by local assessment. Such conduct could not fail to retard the improvement of the country, by preventing the investment of capital, and discouraging enterprise; and that it had this effect is evident from the slow growth of Lower Canada, when compared with that of the adjoining colony, where a different system prevailed. The fourth house of Assembly met on the 11th January 1805, and terminated, after four sessions, on the 14th April 1808.

The pressure of the feudal tenure becoming daily more and more severely felt by the inhabitants of the cities, two unsuccessful attempts were now made to obtain some mitigation of it. The first was a bill to abolish the retraits lignagers, or right of redemption by the relations of seigniorial lands. Any relation, it was stated, of the seller, if of the same line, from whence the property descended, may, within a year and a day, by this law, take it from the purchaser of the property, on condition of returning the price. A person, therefore, buying a lot of land for one hundred pounds, and expending upon it one thousand in buildings, may be deprived of the whole, by a relation of the seller* refunding the original purchase-money, buildings not being considered necessary expenses.

The second was 'a bill to enable the seigneurs to compound for their feudal rights and dues with their vassals and censitaires.' This

* See 'Political Annals;' also Canadian Magazine.

was particularly intended as a relief against the discouraging effects of lods and vents, by which the twelfth part of the labours and expense of erecting buildings (however expensive) on ground, subject to the imposition, is for the benefit of the seigneur. These bills, however, like all that had preceded them, for similar purposes, did not receive a second reading, nor was any remedy applied until the Imperial Parliament interfered nearly twenty years afterwards. To show, however, the nature of the change which these leaders were disposed to patronise, they voted 750*l.* for translating Hatsell's Parliamentary Proceedings into French, and to rebut the charge of their aversion to internal improvement, and to shew they were not inattentive to the agricultural prosperity of the province, they passed a bill enjoining the application of tar to apple trees for the destruction of caterpillars. From a body thus constituted little good could be expected. The merchants and other British subjects resident in Canada, finding all attempts in the legislature useless, appealed, through the medium of the press, to the sympathies of the English public. They contended that if the support of the civil government were not to rest on direct taxes, it should at least be secured by permanent acts of indirect taxation—that local establishments, such as court-houses, gaols, and houses of correction, should be defrayed by assessments on the districts for whose benefit they were required, and that recourse should be had to indirect taxes of temporary duration, only for the general improvement of the country in its internal communications with the adjoining states and colonies, or its agriculture and commerce.

This was denounced by the demagogues of the day as an attack upon the liberties of the subject; and certain toasts at a public dinner, approving of those commercial and financial views of the minority, were voted to be an insult to the majesty of the house, and warrants were issued against the printers, who were taken into custody, and compelled to apologise for their conduct.* It is worthy of remark, that at this the first attempt was made to procure a draw-

* That '*our oppressed and enslaved brethren in Canada*' knew how to vindicate themselves, and entertained just notions on the subject of the liberty of the press, will appear from a perusal of the toasts that called down the indignation of the house, and occasioned the issuing of warrants to apprehend the president of the social meetings that sanctioned, and the printers that dared to disseminate such wicked doctrines.

1. The honourable members of the legislative council, who were friendly to constitutional taxation as proposed by our worthy members in the house of Assembly.

2. Our representatives in provincial parliament, who proposed a constitutional and proper mode of taxation, for building gaols, and who opposed a tax on commerce for that purpose, as contrary to the sound practice of the parent state.

3. May our representatives be actuated by a patriotic spirit for the good of the province, as dependant on the British empire, and divested of local prejudices.

4. Prosperity to the agriculture and commerce of Canada, and may they aid each other us their true interests dictate, by sharing a due proportion of advantages and burthens.

5. The city and county of Montreal, and the grand juries of the district, who recommended local assessment for local purposes.

6. May the city of Montreal be enabled to support a newspaper, though deprived of its natural and useful advantages, apparently for the benefit of an individual.

7. May the commercial interests of this province, have its due influence on the administration of its government.

back of duties on articles that were exported after having first paid a duty; but, as usual, it failed in a body whose whole spirit was anti-commercial. These instances are adduced, not for their intrinsic importance, but as illustrative of the question proposed by me for your consideration in my first letter, whether disaffection has not given rise to grievances rather than grievances to disaffection. Having now tasted the sweets of power in the punishment of the printers, the house commenced a system of high-handed measures with any person who obstructed their views; and followed it up by removing from the house all persons attached to the executive, and impeaching others holding high official stations, in the hope that, by representing the adherents of government as enemies to the country, the affections of the people would be gradually alienated from their rulers, and ultimately prepare them to join in those measures of forcible resistance, which now, for the first time, appear to have been contemplated. The first experiment was made by the expulsion from the house, contrary to the constitutional act, of Ezekiel Hart, on account of his professing the Jewish religion. This measure naturally alarmed the British inhabitants, and gave them a melancholy foreboding of the events that were in reserve for them. The violent language of debate, the constant appeal to popular prejudice, the undisguised anti-English feeling of the legislative demagogues, and the seditious and revolutionary language of the 'Canadian' newspaper, devoted to their interests, left no room to hope that the constitution could long work, in such unskilful and unprincipled hands. The fifth provincial parliament was opened by Sir James Craig on the 10th of April, 1809, when their attention was called to the unsettled state of affairs with the Americans, and they were required to consider of such means as might be necessary to place the province in a posture of defence. Instead of proceeding, according to the urgency of the case, to deliberate on this pressing emergency, they commenced by an attack on the judges, and devising the means of removing them from the legislature; and manifested so much heat in their proceedings, and such a disrespectful inattention to the subject submitted to them, that, after five weeks wasted in angry discussions, the governor was under the necessity of expressing his displeasure by a dissolution. On meeting the sixth parliament, which assembled on the 29th of January, 1810, he informed them that he was instructed to assent to any bill for rendering the judges, in future, ineligible to seats in the house of assembly, in which the two houses should concur. This house, though a little moderated in tone by the firmness exhibited in dissolving them, were not to be diverted from its schemes of ambition; and now, for the first time, was developed that deep-laid plan, which has since so signally succeeded, of placing every officer of the government at the mercy of the popular branch, and rendering the arm of the executive perfectly powerless.

On the 10th of February they resolved, most unexpectedly, 'that this house will vote in this session the necessary sums for defraying the civil expenses of the government of this province.' Animated by the prosperous state of the revenue, in consequence of the American embargo, the opportunity was considered a favourable one, by assuming the civil list, to get a controul over the officers of government, *who, being servants of the imperial state as well as the colony*, would, by this measure, be at the mercy of the house, which would thus become alike independent of foreign or domestic controul. As long as the expenditure of the civil establishment exceeded the revenue, derived from taxes on commerce, their liberality was content to permit the deficiency to be supplied by parliament; but now that the treasury was more than adequate to the task, they thought that a voluntary offer of this kind would throw the government off of its guard, and be probably accepted. The governor at once penetrated their designs, and very prudently and properly answered, that it would be necessary to have the concurrence of the legislative council, 'in a matter in which, not merely as a co-ordinate branch of the legislature, but as composed of individuals having a large stake in the country it was interested;' but that he would transmit to his Majesty their address as a proof of their willingness to provide for the civil expenditure when called upon so to do.

In this year (1810) the treasury receipts were,	L70,398	13	7
And the expenditure.	58,564	14	3

Leaving a clear surplus revenue of	11,833	19	4
--	--------	----	---

A bill disqualifying the judges was passed, and sent to the legislative council, who agreed to it, with a clause suspending its operation to the end of the present house of assembly. Anxious to shew their contempt of the legislative council, and forgetful, as well of the respect due to the representative of the King, as of constitutional rights, they immediately expelled the judges by resolution, as they had previously done Mr. Hart, leaving the governor in the dilemma of sanctioning the act by issuing new writs for elections, or of dissolving the house. It is needless to say that he adopted the latter course, and appealed again to the sense of the public. But here, unhappily, there was no public opinion to appeal to, which, in the words of a very able provincial writer, * is explained:—' by the peculiar habits of thought and character, which distinguish the French Canadians. These habits and character, originally formed by the despotic government, civil, military, and ecclesiastical, of Louis the Fourteenth of France, induced the French Canadian population chiefly to regard the immediate agents of authority, who came in daily or frequent

* Mr. Flemming.

contact with them, by oral command or communication. Thus, long after the conquest, the lowest agent of authority had only to present himself, in the name of the King, to be instantly obeyed. It was not a king, a governor, a general, a judge, or a bishop, with whom they had personal communication; these awful authorities they surveyed at a distance, with due reverence; but their immediate obedience was considered as due to a seigneur, a justice of peace, an officer of militia, a bailiff, and a curé, or priest. When the British Parliament, therefore, established a house of assembly, the members of that newly constituted authority, though chosen by themselves, were admitted to a great share of the habitual submission which their constituents were accustomed to pay to every agent of authority, who came into immediate contact with them. By the new constitution, the inhabitants, in fact, supposed that they were commanded by the governor, at every election, to choose rulers over themselves; and, having once chosen them, they readily admitted them to great authority and influence over their opinions and conduct. Believing this to be the disposition of the ignorant peasantry of Lower Canada, we can have no difficulty in supposing that what, in a free and intelligent community, is properly called Public Opinion, is in this province merely the effect of the opinions of the immediate agents of authority, including the members of the assembly, operating upon the natural desires of a people attached to the laws, language, habits, manners, and prejudices of their French ancestors. The immediate agents of authority, therefore, who interfere the least with those characteristics, will be the most favoured by them. We flatter ourselves that these explanations have enabled our readers to recognise the influence which predominated at the new election in April 1810. The sovereign was a Protestant king of a Protestant nation; the governor was a Protestant, as was the majority of his executive council; the majority of the legislative council was also Protestant, and partly composed of persons in office, who received salaries. On the other hand, the members of the dissolved assembly were persons who professed the Romish religion, who held no lucrative office under the government, and who had been chosen as friendly to their civil and religious rights, and opposed to every measure which could disturb the routine of their hereditary labours and enjoyments. Indolent, particularly in mind, they could not analyze the conduct of their representatives, and discriminate the parts which belonged to inordinate and selfish ambition, from those which might be ascribed to zeal for their service. The old members were so confident of the effects of those characteristics of their constituents, that they derided every doubt of re-election.'

These expectations were justified by the event. The new and seventh house, assembled on the 12th of December 1810, and the Eng-

lish minority were now reduced to *nine* members. In the interim, Sir James Craig, and the supporters of his government, were continual objects of obloquy and ridicule, and reports of the disapprobation of his conduct and of his speedy recall and disgrace by his Majesty, were fabricated, as a means of enlisting the peasantry on the side of those who were destined systematically to oppose the King's representative, whenever he would not consent to become the tool of their ambition.

The seditious and revolutionary doctrines disseminated through 'the Canadian,' a paper devoted to this purpose, induced the governor to seize the press and imprison the conductors, and we are probably indebted to this firm and decided measure, and to the determination* manifested in these two successive dissolutions of the assembly to the subdued and altered tone of their debates. It is observable that in their reply to his speech, they admit the fact here contended for, and which they have since so strenuously denied. 'That harmony and a good understanding so conducive to the prosperity and happiness of the colony, are more difficult to be maintained in this province than in any other of his Majesty's colonies, from the difference in opinions, customs, and prejudices of his Majesty's subjects residing therein.' The prompt check interposed by the executive to the violation of constitutional rights, in the expulsion of the judges † had

* The nature of the arts used by the demagogues to inflame the minds, and alienate the affections of the peasantry, will appear from the following extracts from the governor's proclamation:

'It is true, the most base and diabolical falsehoods are industriously promulgated and disseminated. In one part it is announced as my intention to embody and make soldiers of you, and that having applied to the late house of representatives to enable me to assemble twelve thousand of you for that purpose, and they having declined to do so, I had therefore dissolved them. This is not only directly false, such an idea never having entered into my mind, nor the slightest mention having ever been made of it; but it is doubly wicked and atrocious, because it has been advanced by persons who must have been supposed to speak with certainty on the subject, and was therefore the more calculated to impose upon you. In another part you are told that I wanted to tax your lands, and that the late house of assembly would consent only to tax wine, and upon that account, I had dissolved the house. Inhabitants of St. Denis! this is also directly false; I never had the most distant idea of taxing you at all; such had never been for a moment the subject of my deliberations, and when the late house offered to pay the civil list, I could not have taken any step in a matter of such importance without the King's instructions, and therefore it was still long before we came to the consideration of how it was to be paid. In truth, not one word was ever, to my knowledge, mentioned on the subject.

'In other parts, despairing of producing instances from what I have done, recourse is had to what I intend to do, and it is holdly told you that I mean to oppress you.

'For what purpose, should I oppress you? Is it to serve the King? Will that monarch, who during fifty years has never issued one order, that had you for its object, that was not for your benefit and happiness — will he now, beloved, honoured, adored by his subjects, covered with glory, descending into the vale of years, accompanied with the prayers and blessings of a grateful people, — will he contrary to the tenor of a whole life of honour and virtue, now give orders to his servants to oppress his Canadian subjects? It is impossible that you can for a moment believe it. You will spare from you with just indignation the miscreant who will suggest such a thought to you.

'These personal allusions to myself, these details, in any other case, might be unbecoming, or beneath me; but nothing can be unbecoming or beneath me that can tend to save you from the gulf of crime and calamity into which guilty men would plunge you'.—See *Christie's 'Canada.'*

† Nothing can be more painful and humiliating than the situation of the judges of Lower Canada since this period. They have been kept in a state of great pecuniary distress by the house withholding their salaries, and their peace of mind destroyed by the most unfounded attacks on their character. If an attorney be detected in fraudulent proceedings,

the desired effect, and they now passed a bill to disqualify them, to which the governor assented, as he said, 'with peculiar satisfaction, not only because I think the matter right in itself, but because I consider passing an act for the purpose as a complete renunciation of an erroneous principle, which put me under the necessity of dissolving the last parliament'. Feeling that nothing was to be gained from such a man by intimidation, they proceeded to the usual business with more decency of conduct and more dispatch, than had characterised any session since the constitutional act had gone into operation. In the mean time, Sir George Provost arrived to take the command of the government, and we are indebted to the determined attitude assumed by his predecessor, to the hereditary hatred borne by the Canadians to the Americans, to the fear they entertained of passing into the hands of an uncompromising people, and to the large sum expended upon the embodied militia, that they did not then avail themselves of the opportunity of throwing off the dependence, which it has since been their unceasing object to effect. But though their attention was in some measure directed to the protection of their property from the common enemy, they did not fail to convince impartial men, by their conduct, that they were preserving the country for themselves, and not for the empire, of which they then formed a part, by the fortune of war and not from choice. To bring the government of the country into contempt, it was necessary to impugn the integrity of the bench and the impartial administration of the law, and they therefore impeached the judges; and when the governor, whose liberal patronage had hitherto shielded him from attack, declined to suspend these functionaries till the result of their complaint should be known, and refused to make their punishment precede their trial, they resolved 'that his excellency the governor-in-chief, by his answer to the address of the house, had violated the constitutional rights and privileges thereof.'

Sufficient has now been said to show you that the evils of Canada have their origin in the defects of the constitutional act, which by substituting French for English laws, by securing to them an overwhelming majority in the assembly, and in separating them from Upper Canada, have had the effect of making them a French and not an English colony. National antipathies, added to a difference in religion, laws, and language, have contributed to engender and foster a feeling of hostility between the two races, until it has found

and punished, or be dissatisfied with a judgment of the court, the judge is at once impeached amidst the plaudits of the house. After preliminary proceedings, and an opportunity offered of abuse, the proceedings are generally dropt, on the ground that government is partial and corrupt. By a singular fatality, every man that accuses a judge finds it a step to preferment. Judge Vallieres was the accuser of Judge Kerr, on charges sixteen years old. Philip Parret, a party and witness thereto, was made a judge in 1832. Ebenezer Peck, who brought charges against Judge Fletcher, was presented with a silk gown in 1832. And A. Quesnel, the same. See 'Canada Question' for more particulars.

vent in open collision. It would exceed the limits I have assigned to myself to review the proceedings of each separate house: suffice it to say, that the system of persecution, the commencement of which I have exhibited in the foregoing pages, was subsequently pursued with unremitting zeal. Having driven the judges from the house (though they failed in their impeachment*), they succeeded in extorting from government their discharge from the council. They then vacated the seats of executive councillors by the unconstitutional mode of resolution, and finding there was no means of controlling their power, proceeded by repeated expulsions to drive out a member, for advice offered to the governor in a ministerial capacity; and reprimanded another officer for legal opinions given to the executive in the usual course of his profession. Every thing was done that ingenuity could devise, not only to weaken the influence of government, but to represent that influence as unfriendly to the country and prejudicial to its interests. Nothing, however, occurred until the year 1818, to bring them into direct collision with the mother country, until Sir John Sherbrooke demanded that they should provide for the civil expenses of the province.

* The administrator-in-chief has received the commands of his Royal Highness the Prince Regent, to make known to the house of assembly of this province his pleasure, on the subject of certain charges preferred by that house against the chief justice of the province, and the chief justice of the Court of King's Bench for the district of Montreal.

With respect to such of those charges as relate to acts done by a former governor of the province, which the assembly, assuming to be improper or illegal, imputed, by a similar assumption, to advice given by the chief justice to that governor, his Royal Highness has deemed that no inquiry could be necessary, inasmuch as none could be instituted without the admission of the principle, that the governor of a province might, at his own discretion, divest himself of all responsibility, on points of political government.

With a view, therefore, to the general interests of the province, his Royal Highness was pleased to refer for consideration to the lords of the privy council such only of the charges brought by the assembly as related to the rules of practice established by the judges in their respective courts, those being points upon which, if any impropriety had existed, the judges themselves were solely responsible.

By the annexed copy of his Royal Highness's Order in Council, dated the 29th June 1815, the administrator-in-chief conveys to the assembly the result of this investigation, which has been conducted with all that attention and solemnity which the importance of the subject required.

In making this communication to the assembly, it now becomes the duty of the administrator-in-chief, in obedience to the commands of his royal highness the Prince Regent, to express the regret with which his royal highness has viewed their late proceedings against two persons who have so long and so nobly filled the highest judicial offices in the colony, a circumstance the more to be deplored as tending to disparage, in the eyes of the inconsiderate and ignorant, their character and services, and thus to diminish the influence to which, from their situation and their uniform propriety of conduct, they are justly entitled.

The above communication, embracing such only of the charges preferred against the said chief justices as relate to the rules of practice, and as are grounded on advice assumed to have been given by the chief justice of the province to the late Sir James Craig, the administrator-in-chief, has been further commanded to signify to the assembly, that the other charges appeared to his Majesty's government to be, with one exception, too inconsiderable to require investigation, and that *that* (namely the one against the chief justice of the court of King's Bench for the district of Montreal, which states him to have refused a writ of habeas corpus), was, in common with all the charges which do not relate to the rules of practice, totally unsupported by any evidence whatever.

(Signed)

GORDON DRUMMOND,

Administrator-in-Chief.

is at once im-
and an oppor-
that government
judge finds it a
charges sixteen
in 1832. The
with a silk gown
iculars.

LETTER VI.

THE opportunity had now arrived that designing men had so craftily sought for, of fastening a quarrel upon the government, of involving it in a defence of its officers, and of making their promised compliance a condition for obtaining any change that might be thought conducive to the great ends of weakening British influence. After discussions, first on the gross amount to be granted, and then on the specific appropriation, had excited and consolidated the party, they took the higher ground of disputing the right of the crown to those revenues which were secured to it by permanent grants. In order that you may clearly understand the question, it is necessary to state that the public income of Lower Canada arises from three sources:—

1st. *The crown duties*, levied under the British statute of the 14 Geo. III, or the imperial act of 3 Geo. IV.

2d. *Provincial duties*, payable in virtue of local laws, proceeding immediately from the provincial legislature, or rendered permanent without their consent, by the last-mentioned imperial act.

3d. *The Queen's casual and territorial revenue*, which arises from her Majesty's landed property; namely, the Jesuits' estates, the Queen's posts, the forges of St. Maurice, the Queen's wharf, droit de quint, lods and vents, land fund, and timber fund.

With respect to crown duties, levied under 14 Geo. III, until they were unwisely surrendered in 1831, they were, with the territorial revenue, controlled and dispensed by her Majesty's responsible servants, while those levied under the imperial act of 3 Geo. IV, and all provincial acts, have always been under the disposal of the legislature. As the crown duties, levied under the 14 Geo. III, had generally, if not always, been inadequate to the support of the civil government and the administration of justice, Sir John Sherbrooke was instructed, in pursuance of the general system of retrenchment adopted throughout the empire, to call upon the legislature to appropriate, out of the provincial duties, a sum equal to the annual deficiency. To this reasonable request they have manifested a uniform repugnance, sometimes granting it, always objecting, and, finally, refusing altogether. They alleged now, for the first time, that the crown duties were illegal, inasmuch as the statute under which they were levied had been repealed. The reason of their making this objection was, because the proceeds were not under their controul, and their object was to make the executive dependent upon them for its support, by an annual vote. The existence of this statute was an in-

surmountable difficulty, and as they had not the power to repeal it, their only resource was to impugn its legality. The appropriation of the duties was thus provided for in the Act:—

‘ That all the monies that shall arise by the said duties, except the necessary charges of raising, collecting, levying, recovering, answering, paying and accounting for the same, shall be paid by the collector of his Majesty’s customs into the hands of his Majesty’s receiver-general in the said province for the time being, and shall be applied in the first place in making a more certain and adequate provision towards defraying the expenses of the administration of justice, and of the support of civil government in that province; and that the lord high treasurer, or commissioners of his Majesty’s treasury, or any three or more of them for the time being, shall be, and is or are hereby empowered from time to time, by any warrant or warrants under his or their hand or hands, to cause such money to be applied out of the said produce of the said duties towards defraying the said expenses; and that the residue of the said duties shall remain and be reserved in the hands of the said receiver-general for the future disposition of parliament.’

The statute on which they relied was the 18th Geo. III. The history of that act of parliament you will doubtless recollect. Great Britain had set up a claim to impose taxes, for the purpose of general revenue, upon the colonies (now forming the United States), which, as might naturally be supposed, excited universal opposition—causing at first, popular tumult, and afterwards open rebellion. Finding that this claim could neither be justified nor enforced, it was expressly renounced, in the following words:—

‘ Whereas taxation by the parliament of Great Britain for the purpose of raising a revenue in his Majesty’s colonies, provinces, and plantations in North America, has been found by experience to occasion great uneasiness and disorders among his Majesty’s faithful subjects, who may nevertheless be disposed to acknowledge the justice of contributing to the common defence of the empire, provided such contribution should be raised under the authority of the general court or general assembly of each respective colony, province, or plantation; and, whereas, in order as well to remove the said uneasiness and to quiet the minds of his Majesty’s subjects who may be disposed to return to their allegiance, as to restore the peace and welfare of all his Majesty’s dominions, it is expedient to declare that the king and parliament of Great Britain will not impose any duty, tax, or assessment for the purpose of raising a revenue in any of the colonies, provinces, or plantations.

‘ That from and after the passing of that act, the king and parliament of Great Britain would not impose any duty, tax, or assessment whatever, payable in any of his Majesty’s colonies, provinces, and plantations in North America, and the West Indies, except only such duties as it might be expedient to impose for the regulation of commerce; the net produce of such duties to be always paid and applied to and for the use of the colony, province, and plantation in which the same shall be respectively levied, in such manner as other duties collected by the authority of the respective general courts, or general assemblies of such colonies, provinces, or plantations are ordinarily paid and applied.’

That the renunciation of a right to impose taxes hereafter involves a repeal of those in existence, is an assumption which it is not necessary to refute. Indeed, no person did the party the injustice to believe that they sincerely thought so themselves, especially as in

that province there was a local act, 35 Geo. III, c. 9, adopting its phraseology, and recognizing its existence and validity, by raising an additional revenue, *for the further support* of the government, to which purpose this act alone had any reference. It answered, however, the purposes of the party; it disorganized the government, and prevented English emigrants from removing to a colony in which evident preparation was making for a separation from the parent state. It also served to scatter the seeds of complaints, which soon germinated, and ripened into a plentiful harvest. It is the fashion in this country to call every change reform, the exercise of every acknowledged right an abuse, and every salutary restraint a grievance. In the colonies we have long looked to Great Britain as our model, and we have imported this fashion from her, as well as many other modern innovations. If agitation is successful here, why may not it be so there?—if popular clamour requires and obtains concessions at home, there is no good reason why it should not be equally fortunate abroad; if those who are the most clamorous, are first attended to, because they are the most distinctly heard, why may not the colonists learn to exalt their voices also, in hopes of similar success?—as the old cock grows so does the young. The English have long held themselves up as models, and such distinguished people must not be surprised if they who ape their manners, occasionally copy some of their follies also. The force of example is too strong to be restrained by precept. These financial disputes extended over the whole period of the administration of the Duke of Richmond, Lord Dalhousie, and Sir James Kempt, with more or less intensity, according to the supply of fresh fuel furnished by irritating matter of an extraneous nature. Complaints soon multiplied upon complaints; public meetings were held; violent speeches made, valiant resolutions passed; and, finally, delegates chosen to demand a redress of grievances from the Imperial Parliament.

When the delegates arrived in this country, they found public opinion with them. It is the interest, as well as the duty of the English to govern their colonies justly and kindly; and no man but a Frenchman would affirm that their inclination requires the incitement of either. Their complaints were referred to a committee composed of persons by no means indisposed towards the petitioners, who, after a patient and laborious investigation of the subjects in dispute, made a report, which was acknowledged by the assembly to be both an able and an impartial one, and quite satisfactory. It will be unnecessary to recapitulate the subjects referred, or to transcribe the report, because both the one and the other will be best understood by a minute of Lord Aberdeen, to which I shall hereafter allude more particularly, in which he distinctly proves that the recommendations of that committee, so far as depended upon the

government, were most strictly and fully complied with. By adopting this course, I shall be able to spare you a great deal of useless repetition.

The manner in which the report of the committee was received by the dominant party in Canada, the praise bestowed upon its authors, and the exultation they expressed at their success, deceived the government as to the source of these noisy demonstrations of pleasure. They conceived it to be the natural impulse of generous minds towards those who had thus kindly listened to their solicitations, and liberally granted even more than they had required. But they knew not their men. It was the shout of victory that they mistook for the plaudits of loyalty. It was not designed to greet the ears of benefactors with grateful acknowledgments, but to wound the feelings of their neighbours with the cheers of triumph. They devoted but little time to mutual congratulations. Sterner feelings had supplied the place of rejoicing. They set themselves busily to work to improve their advantage; and, having established themselves in the outworks which were thus surrendered to them, they now turned their attention to storming the citadel. While government was engaged in carrying into execution the recommendations of the committee with as much dispatch as the peculiar state of politics in Great Britain at that time permitted, the assembly put themselves in a posture of complaint again. Fourteen resolutions were passed, embodying some of the old and embracing some new grievances, and an agent appointed to advocate their claims.

While representations in the name of the whole population were thus sent to England, expressing only the sentiment of one portion of the people, the settlers of British origin were loud in their complaints that they were unrepresented, and that they had no constitutional means of being heard. Fearing that this remonstrance, which was so well founded, might be redressed in the same quarter to which they had applied so successfully for relief themselves, the assembly affected to listen to their petitions, and made a new electoral division of the province. Territories inhabited principally by persons of French origin, they divided into numerous small counties; while others, where a large body of those of British origin resided, they so divided that, by joining that territory with another more numerous in French inhabitants, the votes of the British were rendered inefficual. The proportion stood thus :

	British.	Foreign.
Say 32 counties, returning two members each, by French majorities.	—	—
2 Ditto. ditto, one each (say Montmorenci and Drummond).	. . .	61
1 English majority, Megantic.	. . .	2
5 Ditto. Sherbrooke, Stanstead, Missisquoi, Ottawa, and Shefford, 2 each.	1	—
	10	—
<hr/>		
Total 40 Counties.		
<hr/>		
Two cities, French majority, Quebec and Montreal, 4 each.	. . .	8
Two towns ditto. Three Rivers, 2; and William Henry, 1.	. . .	3
	11	77

Total, 88 Members.

Of the extreme partiality of this division there never has been but one opinion in the colonies, until they were so fortunate as to be favoured with the distinction drawn by the commissioners, who admitted that its operation was a practical exclusion, but exonerated the bill from a charge of unfairness—an instance of even-handed justice (deciding in favour of both parties) which ought to have won them the praise of all men. In addition to this exclusion, so extraordinarily designated as unjust but not unfair, they established the quorum of the house for the transaction of business at forty, being only four less than a moiety of the whole body. The large number thus required to be present to constitute a house still further depressed the influence of the minority, and enabled the majority to deprive them of their parliamentary privileges at pleasure, by rendering the transaction of business impossible, except when it suited the convenience of the stronger party to allow it.

Having disposed of the complaints of the British settlers in a way to prevent them from being troublesome in the house, they returned to the consideration of their own grievances; and that the motives actuating the party might not be disclosed, and to prevent any member of the opposition from being present at their deliberations, they adopted the extraordinary mode of permitting a person moving for a committee to name all the individuals whom he desired to be appointed as members. They also resolved that, if the legislative council did not concur in a bill for paying their emissary to England, they would, in the plenitude of their power, pay him themselves out of the public revenue without their concurrence. This singular assumption stands recorded thus :—

Monday, 28th March, 1831.—Resolved.—That in the present state of the public affairs of this province, it is indispensably necessary that some person, having the

confidence of this house, should proceed forthwith to England, to represent to his Majesty's government the interests and sentiments of the inhabitants of the province, and support the petitions of this house to his Majesty and both Houses of Parliament.

' Resolved,—That in the event of the bill sent up by this house to the legislative council, on the 5th instant, not receiving the concurrence of that house in the present session, the Honourable Denis B. Viger, Esq., member of the legislative council, named agent of the province in the said bill, be requested to proceed to England without delay, for the purposes mentioned in the foregoing resolution.

' Resolved,—That it is expedient that the necessary and unavoidable disbursements of the said Denis Benjamin Viger, for effecting the purposes aforesaid, not exceeding 1,000*l.* be advanced, and paid to him by the clerk of this house, out of the contingent fund thereof, till such time as the said disbursements can be otherwise provided for. '

And to shew their contempt of that co-ordinate branch of the legislature, and their determination to legislate for the colony without their concurrence, and by their sole authority, as well as to stigmatize the officers of the government as enemies of the country, they further resolved—

' That until such time as the royal assent shall be given to a bill conformable to a resolution of this house of the 17th March 1825, for vacating the seats of members accepting offices, and similar to the bills passed by this house in the years 1826, 1827, 1828, and 1830, the second and fourth of which were reserved for the signification of his Majesty's pleasure, the seat of any member of this house who shall accept of any office or place of profit under the crown in this province, or become accountable for any public money hereafter appropriated within this province, shall, by this acceptance, be deemed by this house to be vacant, and a new writ shall be issued for a new election, as if such person so accepting was naturally dead; nevertheless such person shall be capable of being again re-elected, and of sitting and voting in this house, as if his seat had not been vacated as aforesaid.

' Resolved,—That any member of this house sitting and voting therein after such acceptance, be expelled this house. '

At the same time, while they refused to government the means of paying its officers, they were most prodigal of the public money upon themselves and their dependants. There are certain funds appropriated for the contingent expenses of the house; and, legally, neither the house nor any of its officers have any right to apply them to any other purposes. It is a trust fund, on the expenditure of which doubtless a certain degree of discretion may be exercised, but still a discretion having certain limits. It is quite manifest that if the house could legally apply this fund to other objects than those for which it was specifically appropriated, they would, for all the purposes of such application, exercise sole legislative power, to the exclusion of the other two branches of the legislature. The case of Mr. Viger, above referred to, is a flagrant violation of this principle. The expenses for printing alone during this year (1831) for the assembly, at one only of its favourite establishments, was considerably over 5000*l.*, exclusive of other presses; and this enormous sum

Foreign.

61

2

8

3

77

been but
as to be
who ad-
erated the
ed justice
won them
raordina-
e quorum
only four
thus res-
essed the
ive them
he trans-
venience

in a way
returned
motives
member
adopted
mmittee
nted as
ouncil did
y would,
e public
n stands

f the pub-
aving the

is also exclusive of the cost of printing the laws, or of the expenses of the council. Pretexts were not wanted, where the disposition existed, to provide for their dependants. A subpoena was all that was necessary to obtain a warrant for a gratuity, which, to one individual, covered a charge of 120*l.*, and on one petition amounted to 700*l.* 'Some witnesses,' says a gentleman of the bar at Quebec, 'one sees as regularly about a fortnight after the sessions as swallows in the spring; and although they do not last quite so long, yet they hardly leave Quebec before either the house or the roads break up.'

It will hardly be credited, that this house, which is so clamorous for cheap government, expends on itself *thirteen thousand pounds a year*—one thousand of which is paid to Mr. Papineau, the patriot; and that the gross amount of the legislative expenses is 18,000*l.* Some idea of the purity 'of our enslaved and oppressed brethren' may be formed from the fact that, previous to 1829, the amount of monies voted for education had not exceeded 2,500*l.* At that period it was found it could be turned to a better account than education, they therefore constituted *the members of the house visitors of the schools in the counties they represent*, the money being drawn on their certificates only, to which *by law they are privileged to affix their crosses, instead of the more difficult process of writing their names*. Since then the grants have wonderfully increased.

In 1830	.	.	27,840 <i>l.</i>
1831	.	.	25,261
1832	.	.	29,233
1833	.	.	22,500

When the fourteen resolutions above referred to were passed, the governor, who had recently arrived, could not but feel astonished that the same people who had so lately expressed their delight and satisfaction at the report of the proceedings of parliament, and who knew that the recommendations of the committee were in a train of execution, should be again as clamorous as ever, and very prudently and properly entreated them to put an end to complaint, by bringing forward at once every grievance they had, that it might be met and redressed at the same time. The earnest manner in which this is pressed upon them is worthy of notice. What were the sources of his lordship's satisfaction, which he twice expresses in this answer, I am utterly at a loss to imagine, unless we may conjecture it to have arisen from the consciousness of possessing a philosophy which enabled him to subdue and control his indignation at the insatiable demands and gross ingratitude of those whom it was his duty to address.

'I can assure you,' he said, 'gentlemen, that I have derived satisfaction from listening to the petition which has just been read by Mr. Speaker, because

the subject-matter of it is distinct and tangible, and because I feel assured that of the causes of complaint therein set forth, many will be eventually removed, and others modified; in the meanwhile it is very agreeable to me to have it in my power to state that some of those causes of complaint have already been put by me in a train of amelioration at least, if not of removal altogether; and I beg the house of assembly to believe that my efforts shall be unremitting in pursuing the same course to the utmost extent of my authority as the King's representative. Thus far I can, with a safe conscience, declare, that the present communication is satisfactory to me; but I cannot conceal from the house, that it would have been infinitely more so, could I feel assured that the whole matter of their complaints is comprised in this petition. Gentlemen, I must go a step further than this, and confess to you, that I cannot divest my mind of anxiety on this subject; it is with the view of being relieved from this state of anxiety that I now come forward to entreat you will admit me to your confidence, and acquaint me whether I am to expect any, and what further, communications on the subject of complaints and grievances.

' I think I have even a claim upon you for the confidence I now solicit. The propositions which upon a recent occasion I was commanded by the King to make to you on the subject of finance, were laid before you in the plainest and most straightforward manner—nothing was concealed—nothing was glossed over; and I even believe that I should have been justified had I made those propositions more palatable to you than I have done; but I considered that anything which could bear, even for a moment, the appearance of trick or manoeuvre on so grave an occasion, was unworthy of his Majesty's government, and an injustice to the rank and loyal character of the Canadian people. What I now ask in return for this fair dealing, is a corresponding proceeding on the part of the house of assembly. Am I to understand, that the petition which I have just heard read conveys all that the house of assembly have to complain of up to this day? Or am I to understand that there remains something behind—some unripe grievance or complaint which it may be intended to bring forward hereafter, when those now produced shall have been disposed of? This is the information I ask of you. This, gentlemen, is the information which I will even implore you to afford me, in the name of the King, our sovereign, who is sincerity itself, and in the name of the brave and honest people of Canada, who are so well entitled to expect fair dealing in every quarter: and now, if there be any stray complaint, any grievance, however inconsiderable in itself, which may have been overlooked when this petition was adopted by the house, I beseech you, gentlemen, to take it back again, in order that the deficiency may be supplied, and that thus both king and people may be enabled at one view to see the whole extent of what you complain of, and what you require.

' Whether this appeal to your candour shall draw from you any further declaration, stating that your petition contains the whole matter of your complaints and grievances, or that you shall maintain silence, I shall equally consider that I have acquired a full and distinct knowledge of the whole of your complaints and grievances up to the present period; and your petition will be accompanied by an assurance from me to that effect, and my most fervent wishes that it may be productive of such measures as shall restore perfect harmony to this favoured land, where I firmly believe a larger share of happiness and prosperity is to be found than amongst any people in the universe.

' *Castle of St. Louis, Quebec, 23d March 1831.*'

Having given them this gracious reception, his lordship communicated these resolutions to the secretary for the colonies; to whose answer, as it enumerates the complaints for the purpose of giving to each a distinct and separate answer, I refer you for the particulars as well of the resolutions as of the remedies.

' The King has been graciously pleased to express his approbation of the efforts made by your lordship to ascertain, with precision, the full extent of the grievances

of which the assembly consider themselves entitled to complain; and assuming, in concurrence with your lordship, that the address of the assembly contains a full development of those grievances, the exposition which is to be found there of the views of that body, justifies the satisfactory inference that there remains scarcely any question upon which the wishes of that branch of the legislature are at variance with the policy which his Majesty has been advised to pursue; and I therefore gladly anticipate the speedy and effectual termination of those differences, which have heretofore so much embarrassed the operations of the local government.

‘ No office can be more grateful to the King than that of yielding to the reasonable desires of the representative body of Lower Canada; and whilst his Majesty’s servants have the satisfaction of feeling, that upon some of the most important topics referred to in the address of the assembly, its wishes have been anticipated, they trust that the instructions which I am now about to convey to you, will still further evince their earnest desire to combine with the due and lawful exercise of the constitutional authority of the crown, an anxious solicitude for the well-being of all classes of his faithful subjects in the province.

‘ I proceed to notice the various topics embraced in the address of the assembly to the King. I shall observe the order which they have followed; and, with a view to perspicuity, I shall preface each successive instruction, which I have his Majesty’s commands to convey to your lordship, by the quotation of the statements made upon the same topic by the Assembly themselves.

‘ First, it is represented that the progress which has been made in the education of the people of the province, under the encouragement afforded by the recent acts of the legislature, has been greatly impeded by the diversion of the revenues of the Jesuits’ estates, originally destined for this purpose.

‘ His Majesty’s government do not deny that the Jesuits’ estates were, on the dissolution of that order, appropriated to the education of the people; and I readily admit, that the revenue which may result from that property should be regarded as inviolably and exclusively applicable to that object.

‘ It is to be regretted, undoubtedly, that any part of those funds were ever applied to any other purpose; but although, in former times, your lordship’s predecessors may have had to contend with difficulties which caused and excused that mode of appropriation, I do not feel myself now called upon to enter into any consideration of that part of the subject.

‘ If, however, I may rely on the returns which have been made to this department, the rents of the Jesuits’ estates have, during the few last years, been devoted exclusively to the purposes of education, and my despatch, dated 24th December last, marked ‘separate,’ sufficiently indicates that his Majesty’s ministers had resolved upon a strict adherence to that principle several months before the present address was adopted.

‘ The only practical question which remains for consideration is, whether the application of these funds for the purpose of education should be directed by his Majesty or by the provincial legislature. The King cheerfully and without reserve confides that duty to the legislature, in the full persuasion that they will make such a selection amongst the different plans which may be presented to their notice, as may most effectually advance the interests of religion and sound learning amongst his subjects; and I cannot doubt that the assembly will see the justice of continuing to maintain, under the new distributions of these funds, those scholastic establishments to which they are now applied.

‘ I understand that certain buildings on the Jesuits’ estates which were formerly used for collegiate purposes, have since been uniformly employed as a barrack for the King’s troops. It would obviously be highly inconvenient to attempt any immediate change in this respect, and I am convinced that the assembly would regret any measure which might diminish the comforts or endanger the health of the King’s forces. If, however, the assembly should be disposed to provide adequate barracks so as permanently to secure those important objects, his Majesty will be prepared (upon the completion of such an arrangement in a manner satisfactory to your lordship) to acquiesce in the appropriation of the buildings in

question to the same purposes as those to which the general funds of the Jesuits' estates are now about to be restored.

' I should fear that ill-founded expectations may have been indulged respecting the value and productiveness of these estates; in this, as in most other cases, concealment appears to have been followed by exaggeration, as its natural consequence. Had the application of the assembly for an account of the proceeds of these estates been granted, much mis-apprehension would probably have been dispelled. My regret for the effect of your decision to withhold these accounts, does not, however, render me insensible to the propriety and apparent weight of the motives by which your judgment was guided. Disavowing, however, every wish for concealment, I am to instruct your lordship to lay these accounts before the assembly in the most complete detail, at the commencement of their next session, and to supply the house with any further explanatory statements which they may require respecting them.

' It appearing that the sum of £7,154. 15s. 4½d. has been recovered from the property of the late Mr. Caldwell, in respect to the claims of the crown against him on account of the Jesuits' estates, your lordship will cause that sum to be placed at the disposal of the legislature for general purposes. The sum of £1,200. 3s. 4d., which was also recovered on account of the same property, must also be placed at the disposal of the legislature, but should, with reference to the principles already noticed, be considered as applicable to the purposes of education exclusively.

' Secondly.—The house of assembly represent that the progress of education has been impeded by the withholding grants of land promised for schools in the year 1801.

' On reference to the speech delivered in that year by the then governor to the two houses of provincial legislature, I find that such an engagement as the address refers to was actually made; it of course therefore is binding on the crown, and must now be carried into effect, unless there be any circumstances of which I am not apprised, which may have cancelled the obligation contracted in 1801, or which may have rendered the fulfilment of it at the present time impracticable. If any such circumstances really exist, your lordship will report them to me immediately, in order that the fit course to be taken may be further considered.

' Thirdly.—The rejection by the legislative council of various bills in favour of education is noticed as the last of the impediments to the progress of education.

' Upon this subject it is obvious that his Majesty's government have no power of exercising any control, and that they could not interfere with the free exercise of the discretion of the legislative council, without the violation of the most undoubted maxims of the constitution. How far that body may have actually counteracted the wishes of the assembly on this subject I am not very exactly informed, nor would it become me to express an opinion on the wisdom or propriety of any decision which they may have formed of that nature. The assembly may, however, be assured, that whatever legitimate influence his Majesty's government can exercise, will always be employed to promote in every direction all measures which have for their object the religious, moral, or literary instruction of the people of Lower Canada.

' Fourthly.—The address proceeds to state, that the management of the waste lands of the crown has been vicious and improvident, and still impedes the settlement of those lands.

' This subject has engaged, and still occupies, my most anxious attention, and I propose to address your lordship upon it at length in a separate despatch. The considerations connected with the settlement of waste lands are too numerous and extensive to be conveniently embodied in a despatch embracing so many other subjects of discussion.

' Fifthly.—The exercise by parliament of its power of regulating the trade of the province, is said to have occasioned injurious uncertainty in mercantile speculations, and prejudicial fluctuations in the value of real estate, and of the different branches of industry connected with trade.

' It is gratifying to find that this complaint is connected with a frank acknow-

ledgment that the power in question has been beneficially exercised on several occasions for the prosperity of Lower Canada. It is, I fear, an unavoidable consequence of the connexion which happily subsists between the two countries, that Parliament should occasionally require of the commercial body of Lower Canada, some mutual sacrifices for the general good of the empire at large : I therefore shall not attempt to deny, that the changes in the commercial policy in this kingdom during the few last years may have been productive of occasional inconvenience and loss to that body, since scarcely any particular interest can be mentioned in Great Britain of which some sacrifice has not been required during the same period. The most which can be effected by legislation on such a subject as this, is a steady though gradual advance towards those great objects which an enlightened regulation contemplates. The relaxation of restrictions on the trade of the British Colonies, and the development of their resources, have been kept steadfastly in view amidst all the alterations to which the address refers, and I confidently rely on the candour of the house of assembly, to admit that, upon the whole, no inconsiderable advance towards those great ends has been made. They may rest assured, that the same principles will be steadily borne in mind by his Majesty's government, in every modification of the existing law which they may at any future period have occasion to recommend to parliament.

' Sixthly.—The assembly in their address proceed to state that the inhabitants of the different towns, parishes, townships, extra-parochial places and counties of the province, suffer from the want of sufficient legal powers for regulating and managing their local concerns.

' I am happy in the opportunity which at present presents itself, of demonstrating the desire of his Majesty's government to co-operate with the local legislature in the redress of every grievance of this nature. The three bills which your lordship reserved for the signification of his Majesty's pleasure in the last session of the assembly, establishing the parochial divisions of the province, and for the incorporation of the cities of Quebec and Montreal, will be confirmed and finally enacted by his Majesty in council, with the least possible delay, and I expect to be able very shortly to transmit to your lordship the necessary orders in council for that purpose.

' I very sincerely regret that the bill passed for the legal establishment of parishes in the month of March 1829, should have been defeated by the delay which occurred in transmitting the official confirmation of it to the province. The case appears to have been, that owing to the necessity, whether real or supposed, of laying the act before both houses of parliament for six weeks before its confirmation by the King in Council, many months elapsed after its arrival in this kingdom before that form could be observed, and his late Majesty's protracted illness delayed still longer the bringing it under the consideration of the King in Council.

' If it should be the opinion of the Colonial legislature that additional provisions are wanting to enable the local authorities in counties, cities or parishes, to regulate their own more immediate affairs, your lordship will understand, that you are at liberty, in his Majesty's name, to assent to any well-considered laws which may be presented to you for that purpose.

' Seventhly.—I proceed to the next subject of complaint, which is, that uncertainty and confusion has been introduced into the laws for the security and regulation of property, by the intermixture of different codes of laws and rules of proceeding in the courts of justice.

' The intermixture to which the address refers, so far as I am aware, arises from the English criminal code having been maintained by the British statute of 1774, and from the various acts of parliament which have introduced into the province the soccage tenure, and subjected all lands so holden to the English rules of alienation and descent.

' As a mere matter of fact, there can be no doubt that the infusion of these parts of the law of England into the provincial code, was dictated by the most sincere wish to promote the general welfare of the people of Lower Canada; this was especially the case with regard to the criminal law, as is sufficiently apparent from

the language of the 11th section of the 14 Geo. III, c. 83. With regard to the advantage to be anticipated from the substitution of tenure in soccage for feudal services, I may remark, that Parliament could scarcely be otherwise than sincerely convinced of the benefits of that measure, since the maxims upon which they proceeded are in accordance with the conclusion of almost all theoretical writers and practical statesmen. I am not, indeed, anxious to show that these were just, but I think it not immaterial thus to have pointed out that the errors, if any, which they involve, can be attributed only to a sincere zeal for the good of those whom the enactments in question more immediately affect.

I fully admit, however, that this is a subject of local and internal policy, upon which far greater weight is due to the deliberate judgment of enlightened men in the province than to any external authority whatever. Your lordship will announce to the council and assembly, his Majesty's entire disposition to concur with them in any measures which they may think best adapted for insuring a calm and comprehensive survey of these subjects in all their bearings. It will then remain with the two houses to frame such laws as may be necessary to render the provincial code more uniform, and better adapted to the actual condition of society in Canada. To any laws prepared for that most important purpose, and calculated to advance it, his Majesty's assent will be given with the utmost satisfaction. It is possible that a work of this nature would be best executed by commissioners, to be specially designated for the purpose; should such be your lordship's opinion, you will suggest that mode of proceeding to both houses of the provincial legislature, who, I am convinced, would willingly incur whatever expense may be inseparable from such an undertaking, unless they should themselves be able to originate any plan of inquiry and proceeding, at once equally effective and economical.

'Eighthly.—The administration of justice is said to have become inefficient and unnecessarily expensive.

'As the provincial tribunals derive their present constitution from local statute, and not from any exercise of his Majesty's prerogative, it is not within the power of the King to improve the mode of administering the law, or to diminish the costs of litigation. Your lordship will, however, assure the house of assembly, that his Majesty is not only ready, but most desirous, to co-operate with them in any improvements of the judicial system which the wisdom and experience of the two houses may suggest. Your lordship will immediately assent to any bills which may be passed for that purpose, excepting in the highly improbable event of their being found open to some apparently conclusive objection; even in that case, however, you will reserve any bills for improving the administration of the law for the signification of his Majesty's pleasure.

'Ninthly.—The address then states, that the confusion and uncertainty of which the House complain has been greatly increased by enactments affecting real property in the colony made in the Parliament of the United Kingdom since the establishment of the provincial legislature, without those interested having even had an opportunity of being heard; and particularly by a recent decision on one of the said enactments in the provincial court of appeals.

'His Majesty's Government can have no controversy with the house of assembly upon this subject. The house cannot state in stronger terms, than they are disposed to acknowledge, the fitness of leaving to the legislature of Lower Canada exclusively the enactment of every law which may be required respecting real property within that province. It cannot be denied, that at a former period a different opinion was entertained by the British government; and that the statute-book of this kingdom contains various regulations on the subject of lands in Lower Canada, which might, perhaps, have been more conveniently enacted in the province itself: I apprehend, however, that this interference of Parliament was never invoked, except on the pressure of some supposed necessity; and that there never was a period in which such acts were introduced by the ministers of the crown without reluctance.

'To a certain extent, the statute 1 Will. IV, c. 20, which was passed at the instance of his Majesty's Government in the last session of Parliament, has antici-

pated the complaint to which I am now referring, and has prevented its recurrence, by authorising the local legislature to regulate whatever relates to the incidents of socage tenure in the province, without reference to any real or supposed repugnancy of any such regulations to the law of England. If there is any other part of the British statute law, bearing upon this topic, to which the council and assembly shall object, his Majesty's Government will be prepared to recommend to Parliament that it should be repealed.

Tenthly.—It is stated that several of the judges of the courts in the province have long been engaged in, and have even taken a public part in the political affairs and differences of the province, at the same time holding offices during pleasure, and situations incompatible with the due discharge of the judicial functions.

Under this head again, it is very gratifying to the ministers of the crown to find, that they had, in a great measure, obviated by anticipation the complaint of the house of assembly. In the despatch which I addressed to your lordship, on the 8th February, No. 22, every arrangement was made which could be either suggested or carried into effect by his Majesty's authority, for removing the judges of the province from all connection with its political affairs, and for rendering them independent at once of the authority of the Crown, and the control of the other branches of the legislature; thus placing them exactly in the same position as that of the judges of the supreme courts at Westminster.

The judges themselves have, it appears, with laudable promptitude, concurred in giving effect to these recommendations by discontinuing their attendance at the executive council. Nothing therefore, in fact, remains for terminating all discussions upon this subject, but that the house of assembly should make such a permanent provision for the judges as, without exceeding a just remuneration, may be adequate to their independent maintenance in that rank of life which belongs to the dignity of their station.

I am not aware that any judge in Lower Canada holds any office, excepting that of executive councillor, during the pleasure of the Crown, or which is in any respect incompatible with the due discharge of his official functions; if any such case exists, your lordship will have the goodness immediately to report to me all the circumstances by which it may be attended, in order that the necessary instructions on the subject may be given. In the mean time I may state, without reserve, that no judge can be permitted to retain any office corresponding with the description thus given by the house of assembly, in combination with that independent position on the bench to which I have referred.

Eleventhly.—The address proceeds to state that during a long series of years, executive and judiciary offices have been bestowed almost exclusively upon one class of subjects in the province, and especially upon those least connected by property, or otherwise, with its permanent inhabitants, or who have shown themselves the most averse to the rights, liberties, and interests of the people. It is added, that several of these persons avail themselves of the means afforded by their situations to prevent the constitutional and harmonious co-operation of the government and the house of assembly, and to excite ill-feeling and discord between them, while they are remiss in their different situations to forward the public business.

I quote thus largely the language of the address, because I am desirous to meet every part of it in the most direct manner, as well as in the most conciliatory spirit. It is not from any want of that spirit that I recommend you to suggest for the consideration of the house of assembly, how far it is possible that his Majesty should clearly understand, or effectually redress a grievance which is brought under his notice in terms thus indefinite. If any public officers can be named who are guilty of such an abuse of their powers, and of such remissness in their duties as are implied in the preceding quotation, his Majesty would not be slow to vindicate the public interest by removing any such persons from his service. If it can be shown that the patronage of the Crown has been exercised upon any narrow and exclusive maxims, they cannot be too entirely disavowed and abandoned, especially if it be true that the permanent inhabitants of the colony do not enjoy a full participation in all public employments, the house of assembly may be assured that his Majesty

can have no desire that any such invidious distinctions should be systematically maintained. Beyond this general statement it is not in my power to advance. I am entirely ignorant of the specific cases to which the general expressions of the assembly point. I can only state, that since his Majesty was pleased to intrust to myself the seals of this department, no opportunity has occurred for exercising the patronage of the Crown in Lower Canada, to which it is possible that the assembly can refer, nor have my inquiries brought to light any particular case of a more remote date to which their language would appear to be applicable.

' Twelfthly.—The next subject of complaint is developed in the following words :—' That there exists no sufficient responsibility on the part of the persons holding these situations, nor any adequate accountability amongst those of them intrusted with public money ; the consequence of which has been the misapplication of large sums of public money, and of the money of individuals by defaulters, with whom deposits were made under legal authority, hitherto without reimbursement or redress having been obtained, notwithstanding the humble representations of your petitioners.'

It would be impossible, without a violation of truth, to deny that at a period not very remote heavy losses were sustained both by the public and by individuals, from the want of a proper system of passing and auditing their accounts. I find, however, that in his despatch of the 29th September, Sir George Murray adverted to this subject in terms to which I find it difficult to make any useful addition. His words are as follows :—' The complaints which have reached this office respecting the inadequate security given by the receiver-general and by the sheriffs, for the due application of public money in their hands, have not escaped the very serious attention of the ministers of the Crown ; the most effectual security against abuses of this nature would be to prevent the accumulation of balances in the hands of public accountants, by obliging them to exhibit their accounts to some competent authority at short intervals, and immediately to pay over the ascertained balance. The proof of having punctually performed this duty should be made the indispensable condition of receiving their salaries, and of their continuance in office.

' In the colony of New South Wales a regulation of this nature has been established under his Majesty's instructions to the governor of that settlement, and has been productive of great public convenience. If a similar practice were introduced in Lower Canada for the regulation of the office of receiver-general, and for that of sheriff, the only apparent difficulty would be to find a safe place of deposit for their balances. I am, however, authorised to state, that the lords-commissioners of his Majesty's Treasury will hold themselves responsible to the province for any sums which the receiver-general or sheriff may pay over to the commissary-general. Your excellency will, therefore, propose to the legislative council and assembly the enactment of a law binding these officers to render an account of their receipts at short intervals, and to pay over the balances in their hands to the commissary-general, upon condition that that officer should be bound, on demand, to deliver a bill on his Majesty's Treasury for the amount of his receipts. I trust that, in this proposal, the legislature will find a proof of the earnest desire of his Majesty's government to provide, as far as may be practicable, an effectual remedy for every case of real grievance.

' If the preceding instructions have proved inadequate to the redress of the

inconvenience to which they refer, I can assure your lordship of the cordial concurrence of his Majesty's government in any more effective measures which may be recommended for that purpose, either by yourself or by either of the houses of the provincial legislature.

'The losses which the province sustained by the default of the late Mr. Caldwell is a subject which his Majesty's Government contemplate with the deepest regret—a feeling enhanced by the painful conviction of their inability to afford to the provincial revenues any adequate compensation for so serious an injury; what is in their power they have gladly done by the instruction conveyed to your lordship in the early part of this despatch, to place at the disposal of the legislature, for general purposes, the sum of £7,154. 15s. 4½*d.*, recovered from Mr. Caldwell's property. The assembly will, I trust, accept this as a proof of the earnest desire of his Majesty's Government to consult to the utmost of their ability the pecuniary interest of the province.

'Thirteenthly.—The address proceeds to state that 'the evils of this state of things have been greatly aggravated by enactments made in the Parliament of the United Kingdom, without even the knowledge of the people of this colony, which enactments have rendered temporary duties imposed by the provincial legislature permanent, leaving in the hands of public officers, over whom the assembly has no effectual control, large sums of money arising within this province, which are applied by persons subject to no sufficient accountability.'

'I understand this complaint to refer to the 28th clause of the stat. 3 Geo. IV, c. 119. The duties mentioned in that enactment are continued until some act for repealing or altering them shall be passed by the legislative council and assembly of Lower Canada; and until a copy of any such new act shall have been transmitted to the governor of Upper Canada, and shall have been laid before both houses of Parliament, and assented to by his Majesty. The motive for this enactment is explained in the preamble, to have been the necessity of obviating the evils experienced in the Upper Province from the exercise of an exclusive control by the legislature of Lower Canada over imports and exports at the port of Quebec. I acknowledge without reserve, that nothing but the necessity of mediating between the two provinces would have justified such an interference by Parliament; and if any adequate security can be devised against the recurrence of similar difficulties, the enactment ought to be repealed. The peculiar geographical position of Upper Canada, enjoying no access to the sea, except through a province wholly independent on itself, on the one hand or through a foreign state on the other, was supposed in the year 1822 to have created the necessity for enacting so peculiar a law for its protection. I should be much gratified to learn, that no such necessity exists at present, or can be reasonably anticipated hereafter; for upon sufficient evidence of that fact, his Majesty's Government would at once recommend to Parliament the repeal of that part of the statute to which the address of the house of assembly refers. The ministers of the Crown would even be satisfied to propose to Parliament the repeal of the enactment in question upon proof that the legislature of the Upper Province deem such protection superfluous; perhaps it may be found practicable to arrange this matter by communications between the legislatures of the two provinces. The ministers of the Crown are prepared to co-operate to the fullest extent in any measure which the two legislatures shall concur in recommending for the amendment or repeal of the statute 3 Geo. IV, c. 119, s. 28.

'Fourteenthly.—The selection of the legislative councillors and the constitution of that body, which forms the last subject of complaint in the address, I shall not notice in this place, any further than to say, that it will form the matter of a separate communication, since the topic is too extensive and important to be conveniently embraced in my present despatch.

'The preceding review of the questions brought by the house of assembly, appears to me entirely to justify the expectations which I have expressed at the commencement of this despatch, of a speedy, effectual, and amicable termination of the protracted discussions of several years. It would be injurious to the house of assembly to attribute to them any such captious spirit as would keep alive a contest

upon a few minor and insignificant details, after the statement I have made of the general accordance between the views of his Majesty's government and their own, upon so many important questions of Canadian policy. Little indeed remains for debate, and that little will, I am convinced, be discussed with feelings of mutual kindness and good will, and with an earnest desire to strengthen the bonds of union already subsisting between the two countries. His Majesty will esteem it as amongst the most enviable distinctions of his reign, to have contributed to so great and desirable a result,

'Your lordship will take the earliest opportunity of transmitting to the house of assembly a copy of this despatch.

'I have, &c.

'(signed) GODERICH.'

LETTER VII.

THE time had now arrived (1832) when every grievance, so far as the remedy lay with the government, had been removed, according to the recommendations of the committee. Whatever required the co-operation of the assembly themselves, remained untouched. They had asked what they did not require, and hoped would not be granted, so that the odium of refusal might serve as a pretext for further agitation. Several of the changes solicited would have weakened their influence, and they preferred to suffer things to remain as they were. There now existed no impediment to the public tranquillity; and, if their intentions had been honest, we should have heard no more of Canadian discontent. Several men of character and standing in the colony, who had hitherto acted with the French faction, now separated themselves from them, declaring that they had obtained all, and even more than they had sought, and that they had now nothing further to ask but to enjoy in tranquillity the fruits of their labour. When they found there was no corresponding feeling in the breasts of their colleagues, and that these concessions were merely used as the groundwork of further changes, they became alarmed, and for the first time were made sensible of what the public had always known with unfeigned sorrow, that they had been all along the dupes of their own liberal notions and the artifices of others. They had now full time to reflect upon the mischief they had done and their own inability to make reparation, and have added another illustration to the numbers we already have on record of how much easier it is to open the flood-gates of popular prejudice and passion, than to close them against the force of the current. They are now likely to become the victims of their own folly, and to be overwhelmed in the ruins caused by the inundation to which they have unfortunately contributed, by cutting away the embankments. It is to be hoped that the lesson will not be lost upon England; and it may, perhaps,

afford these unhappy men some consolation if the safety of others is confirmed by the contemplation of the fatal effects of their folly. The request of Lord Aylmer, that they would bring forward all their demands, and, if they had any further ones, to add them to their catalogue, or that he should feel himself entitled to report there were none others, was received with surprise, but in silence, and he very fairly concluded that they had exhausted their budget. This was the natural inference, and it appears that parliament flattered itself also that the whole subject was now fully before them. It is true the tone and temper of the house of assembly were not materially altered, and that the next four years were consumed in local disputes, during which no appropriation was made for the public service; but all this was charitably supposed to be the effect of previous excitement, and it was thought not unnatural that some time should elapse before their angry feelings could wholly subside. But what was their astonishment, after their declining the unprecedented request of the governor to exhibit any further complaints if they had any, to find that, in 1834, they were prepared to come forward with ninety-two resolutions of fresh grievance! This extraordinary step revived the hopes of every loyalist throughout the adjoining colonies. Surely, they said, this last ungrateful, unprovoked attempt will open the eyes of the English nation to the ulterior views of Papineau and his party! It takes much provocation to arouse the British lion; but, surely, this last thrust will be more than he can bear! He will make his voice to be heard across the waters, and sedition will fly terrified to its cover. But, alas! they were mistaken. Noble and spirited as the animal once was, he is now old and infirm—a timid people have filed his teeth, and shortened his claws, and stupified him with drugs, and his natural pride disdains to exhibit an unsuccessful imbecility. It was received with a meekness and mildness that filled every body that had known him in former years with astonishment and pity; they could not recognise, in the timid and crouching creature before them, the same animal whose indomitable courage and muscular strength had formerly conquered these same Canadians, even when supported by all the resources of France, who now, single-handed and alone, defied him to combat. But this is too painful a picture to dwell upon.

This singular document is well worthy of your perusal; its want of intrinsic weight is more than compensated by its prolixity. The astounding number of ninety-two resolutions was well calculated to delude strangers, and to induce them to think that the evils under which they laboured were almost too many for enumeration. As imagination is always more fertile than truth, they very wisely resorted to the former, and were thus enabled to supply themselves with any charge they required. It would doubtless have appeared

singular to the sympathisers of England, if the aggregate had amounted to so remarkable a number as one hundred: it would have struck them as a suspicious coincidence that they should have exactly reached 'a round number,' and filled a well known measure, and therefore, with an acuteness peculiar to people accustomed to fabricate tales of fictitious distress, they wisely stopped at *ninety-two*. But it must not be supposed that even Canadian exaggeration could find a grievance for each number. Some were merely declamatory, and others personal; some complimented persons on this side of the water, whose politics they thought resembled their own, and others expressed or implied a censure against obnoxious persons, while not a few were mere repetitions of what had been previously said. Such a state paper, drawn up on such an occasion by the most eminent men in the house for the perusal of such a body of men as the members of the imperial parliament, is of itself a proof how little fitted the Canadians are for constitutional government.

1. Resolved, That His Majesty's loyal subjects, the people of this Province of Lower Canada, have shown the strongest attachment to the British Empire, of which they are a portion: that they have repeatedly defended it with courage in time of war; that at the time which preceded the independence of the late British Colonies on this continent, they resisted the appeal made to them by those colonies to join their confederation.

2. Resolved, That the people of this province have at all times manifested their confidence in His Majesty's Government, even under circumstances of the greatest difficulty, and when the government of the province has been administered by men who trampled under foot the rights and feelings dearest to British subjects; and that these sentiments of the people of this province remain unchanged.

3. Resolved, That the people of this Province have always shown themselves ready to welcome and receive as brethren those of their fellow subjects who, having quitted the United Kingdom or its dependencies, have chosen this province as their home, and have earnestly endeavoured (as far as on them depended) to afford every facility to their participating in the political advantages, and in the means of rendering their industry available, which the people of this province enjoy; and to remove for them the difficulties arising from the vicious system adopted by those who have administered the government of the province, with regard to those portions of the country in which the newcomers have generally chosen to settle.

4. Resolved, That this House, as representing the people of this province, has shown an earnest zeal to advance the general prosperity of the country, by securing the peace and content of all classes of its inhabitants, without any distinction of origin or creed, and upon the solid and durable basis of unity of interest, and equal confidence in the protection of the mother country.

5. Resolved, That this House has seized every occasion to adopt, and firmly to establish by law in this province, not only the constitutional and parliamentary law of England, which is necessary to carry the Government into operation, but also all such parts of the public law of the United Kingdom as have appeared to this house adapted to promote the welfare and safety of the people, and to be conformable to their wishes and their wants; and that this house has, in like manner, wisely endeavoured so to regulate its proceedings as to render them, as closely as the circumstances of this colony permit, analogous to the practice of the House of Commons of the United Kingdom.

6. Resolved, That in the year 1827 the great majority of the people of this province complained, in petitions signed by 87,000 persons, of serious and numerous

abuses which then prevailed, many of which had then existed for a great number of years, and of which the greater part still exist, without correction or mitigation.

7. Resolved, That the complaints aforesaid, and the grievances which gave rise to them, being submitted to the consideration of the Parliament of the United Kingdom, occasioned the appointment of a committee of the House of Commons, of which the Honourable Edward Geoffrey Stanley, now his Majesty's principal secretary of state for the colonial department, and several others, who are now members of his Majesty's government, formed part; and that, after a careful investigation and due deliberation, the said committee, on the 18th July 1828, came to the following very just conclusions :

1stly. 'That the embarrassments and discontents that had long prevailed in the Canadas, had arisen from serious defects in the system of laws, and the constitutions established in those colonies.

2dly. 'That these embarrassments were in a great measure to be attributed to the manner in which the existing system had been administered.

3dly. 'That they had a complete conviction that neither the suggestions which they had made, nor any other improvements in the laws and constitutions of the Canadas, will be attended with the desired effect, unless an impartial, conciliating, and constitutional system of government were observed in these royal and important colonies.'

8. Resolved, That since the period aforesaid, the constitution of this province, with its serious defects, has continued to be administered in a manner calculated to multiply the embarrassments and discontents which have long prevailed; and that the recommendations of the Committee of the House of Commons have not been followed by effective measures of a nature to produce the desired effect.

9. Resolved, *That the most serious defect in the Constitutional Act—its radical fault—the most active principle of evil and discontent in the province; the most powerful and most frequent cause of abuses of power; of infractions of the laws; of the waste of the public revenue and property, accompanied by impunity to the governing party, and the oppression and consequent resentment of the governed, is that injudicious enactment, the fatal results of which were foretold by the Honourable Charles James Fox at the time of its adoption, which invests the Crown with that exorbitant power (incompatible with any government duly balanced and founded on law and justice, and not on force and coercion) of selecting and composing without any rule or limitation, or any predetermined qualification, an entire branch of the legislature, supposed from the nature of its attributions to be independent, but inevitably the servile tool of the authority which creates, composes and decomposes it, and can on any day modify it to suit the interests or the passions of the moment.*

10. Resolved, That with the permission of a power so unlimited, the abuse of it is inseparably connected; and that it has always been so exercised in the selection of the Members of the Legislative Council of this province, as to favour the spirit of monopoly and despotism in the executive, judicial, and administrative departments of government, and never in favour of the public interests.

11. Resolved, That the effectual remedy for this evil was judiciously foreseen and pointed out by the Committee of the House of Commons, who asked John Neilson, Esquire (one of the agents who had carried to England the petition of the 87,000 inhabitants of Lower Canada), whether he had turned in his mind any plan by which he conceived the Legislative Council might be better composed in Lower Canada; whether he thought it possible that the said body could command the confidence and respect of the people, or go in harmony with the house of assembly, unless the principle of election were introduced into its composition in some manner or other; and also, whether he thought that the colony could have any security that the legislative council would be properly and independently composed, unless the principle of election were introduced into it in some manner or other; and received from the said John Neilson answers, in which (among other reflections) he said in substance, that there were two modes in which the composition of the legislative council might be bettered; the one by appointing men who

were independent of the executive (but that to judge from experience there would be no security that this would be done), and that if this mode were found impracticable, the other would be to render the legislative council elective.

12. Resolved, That, judging from experience, this house likewise believes there would be no security in the first mentioned mode, the course of events having but too amply proved what was then foreseen; and that this house approves all the inferences drawn by the said John Nelson from experience and facts; but that with regard to his suggestion that a class of electors of a higher qualification should be established, or a qualification in property fixed for those persons who might sit in the council, this house have, in their address to his Most Gracious Majesty, dated the 20th March 1833, declared in what manner this principle could, in their opinion, be rendered tolerable in Canada, by restraining it within certain bounds, which should in no case be passed.

13. Resolved, That even in defining bounds of this nature, and requiring the possession of real property as a condition of eligibility to a legislative council, chosen by the people, which most wisely and happily has not been made a condition of eligibility to the house of assembly, this house seems rather to have sought to avoid shocking received opinions in Europe, where custom and the law have given so many artificial privileges and advantages to birth and rank and fortune, than to consult the opinions generally received in America, where the influence of birth is nothing, and where, notwithstanding the importance which fortune must always naturally confer, the artificial introduction of great political privileges in favour of the possessors of large property, could not long resist the preference given at free elections to virtue, talents, and information, which fortune does not exclude but can never purchase, and which may be the portion of honest, contented, and devoted men, whom the people ought to have the power of calling and consecrating to the public service, in preference to richer men, of whom they may think less highly.

14. Resolved, *That this house is no wise disposed to admit the excellence of the present constitution of Canada, although his Majesty's secretary of state for the colonies has unseasonably and erroneously asserted, that it has conferred on the two Canadas the institutions of Great Britain; nor to reject the principle of extending the system of frequent elections much further than it is at present carried; and this system ought especially to be extended to the legislative council, although it may be considered by the colonial secretary incompatible with the British government, which he calls a monarchical government, or too analogous to the institutions which the several states, composing the industrious, moral, and prosperous confederation of the United States of America, have adopted for themselves.*

15. Resolved, That in a dispatch, of which the date is unknown, and of which a part only was communicated to this house by the governor-in-chief on the 14th January 1834, his Majesty's secretary of state for the Colonial Department (this house having no certain knowledge, whether the said dispatch is from the present colonial secretary or from his predecessor) says, that an examination of the composition of the legislative council at that period (namely, at the time when its composition was so justly censured by a Committee of the House of Commons) and at the present, will sufficiently show in what spirit his Majesty's Government has endeavoured to carry the wishes of Parliament into effect.

16. Resolved, That this House receives with gratitude this assurance of the just and benevolent intentions, with which, in the performance of their duty, his Majesty's ministers have endeavoured to give effect to the wishes of parliament.

17. Resolved, That unhappily it was left to the principal agent of his Majesty's Government in this province to carry the wishes of the Imperial Parliament into effect; but that he has destroyed the hope which his Majesty's faithful subjects had conceived of seeing the legislative council reformed and ameliorated, and has confirmed them in the opinion that the only possible mode of giving to that body the weight and respectability which it ought to possess, is to introduce into it the principle of election.

18. Resolved, That the legislative council, strengthened by a majority inimical

to the rights of this house and of the people whom it represents, has received new and more powerful means than it before possessed of perpetuating and of rendering more offensive and more hurtful to the country the system of abuses of which the people of this province have up to this day ineffectually complained, and which up to this day parliament and his Majesty's government in England have ineffectually sought to correct.

19. Resolved, That since its pretended reform the legislative council has, in a manner more calculated to alarm the inhabitants of this province, and more particularly in its Address to his Majesty of the 1st of April 1833, renewed its pretension of being specially appointed to protect one class of his Majesty's subjects in this province, as supposing them to have interests which could not be sufficiently represented in the assembly, seven-eighths of the members of which are by the said council most erroneously stated to be of French origin and speak the French language: that this pretension is a violation of the constitution, and is of a nature to excite and perpetuate among the several classes of the inhabitants of this province mutual distrust and national distinctions and animosities, and to give one portion of the people an unjust and factious superiority over the other, and the hope of domination and undue preference.

20. Resolved, That by such claim the legislative council, after a reform which was held up as one adapted to unite it more closely with the interests of the colony in conformity with the wishes of parliament, calls down as one of its first acts, the prejudices and severity of his Majesty's Government upon the people of this province and upon the representative branch of the legislature thereof, and that by this conduct the legislative council has destroyed amongst the people all hope which was left them of seeing the said council, so long as it shall remain constituted as it now is, act in harmony with the house of assembly.

21. Resolved, That the legislative council of this province has never been any thing else but an impotent screen between the governor and the people, which by *enabling the one to maintain a conflict with the others*, has served to perpetuate a system of discord and contention; that it has unceasingly acted with avowed hostility to the sentiments of the people as constitutionally expressed by the house of assembly; that it is not right under the name of a legislative council to impose an aristocracy on a country which contains no natural materials for the composition of such a body; that *the parliament of the United Kingdom in granting to his Majesty's Canadian subjects the power of revising the constitution* under which they hold their dearest rights, would adopt a liberal policy, free from all consideration of former interests and of existing prejudices; and that by this measure, equally consistent with a wise and sound policy, and with the most liberal and extended views, the parliament of the United Kingdom would enter into noble rivalry with the United States of America, would prevent his Majesty's subjects from seeing any thing to envy *there*; and would preserve a friendly intercourse between Great Britain and this province, as her colony so long as the tie between us shall continue, and *as her ally whenever the course of events may change our relative positions*.

22. Resolved, That this house so much the more confidentially emits the opinions expressed in the preceding resolution, because, if any faith is to be placed in the published reports, they were at no distant period emitted with other remarks in the same spirit, in the commons house of the United Kingdom, by the Right Honourable Edward Geoffrey Stanley, now his Majesty's principal secretary of state for the Colonial department, and by several other enlightened and distinguished members, some of whom are among the number of his Majesty's present ministers; and because the conduct of the legislative council since its pretended reform, demonstrates that the said opinions are in no wise rendered less applicable or less correct by its present composition.

23. Resolved, That the legislative council has at the present time less community of interest with the province than at any former period; that its present composition, instead of being calculated to change the character of the body, to put an end to complaints, and to bring about that co-operation of the two houses of the

legislature which is so necessary to the welfare of the country, is such as to destroy all hope that the said council will adopt the opinions and sentiments of the people of this province, and of *this house* with regard to the inalienable *right of the latter to the full and entire control of the whole revenue raised in the province*, with regard to the necessity under which this house has found itself (for the purpose of effecting the reformation which it has so long and so vainly demanded of existing abuses) to provide for the expenses of the civil government by annual appropriations only, as well with regard to a variety of other questions of public interest, concerning which the executive government, and the legislative council which it has selected and created, differ diametrically from the people of this province and from this house.

24. Resolved; That such of the recently appointed councillors as were taken from the majority of the Assembly, and had entertained the hope that a sufficient number of independent men, holding opinions in unison with those of the majority of the people and of their representatives, would be associated with them, must now feel that they are overwhelmed by a majority hostile to the country, and composed of men who have irretrievably lost the public confidence, by showing themselves the blind and passionate partisans of all abuses of power, by encouraging all the acts of violence committed under the administration of Lord Dalhousie, by having on all occasions outraged the representatives of the people of the country; of men, unknown in the country until within a few years, without landed property or having very little, most of whom have never been returned to the Assembly (some of them having even been refused by the people), and who have never given any proofs of their fitness for performing the functions of legislators, but merely of their hatred to the country; and who, by reason of their community of sentiment with him, have found themselves, by the partiality of the governor-in-chief, suddenly raised to a station in which they have the power of exerting, during life, an influence over the legislation and over the fate of this province, the laws and institutions of which have ever been the objects of their dislike.

25. Resolved, That in manifest violation of the constitution, there are among the persons last mentioned several who were born citizens of the United States, or are natives of other foreign countries, and who at the time of their appointment had not been naturalized by Act of the British Parliament; that the residence of one of these persons (Horatio Gates) in this country during the last war with the United States was only *tolerated*; he refused to take up arms for the defence of the country in which he remained merely for the sake of lucre; and after these previous facts, took his seat in the legislative council on the 16th March 1833; and fifteen days afterwards, to wit, on the 1st April, voted for the address before mentioned, censuring those who during the last war were under arms on the frontiers to repulse the attacks of the American armies and of the fellow-citizens of the said Horatio Gates: that another (James Baxter) was resident during the said late war within the United States, and was bound by the laws of the country of his birth, under certain circumstances, forcibly to invade this province, to pursue, destroy, and capture, *if possible*, his Majesty's armies, and such of his Canadian subjects as were in arms upon the frontiers to repulse the attacks of the American armies, and of the said James Baxter, who (being at the said time but slightly qualified as far as property is concerned) became, by the nomination of the governor-in-chief, a legislator for life in Lower Canada, on the 22d of March 1833; and eight days afterwards, on the 1st of April aforesaid, voted that very address which contained the calumnious and insulting accusation which called for the expression of his Majesty's just regret, 'that any word had been introduced which should have the appearance of ascribing to a class of his subjects of one origin, views at variance with the allegiance which they owe to his Majesty.'

Resolved, That it was in the power of the present governor-in-chief, more than in that of any of his predecessors (by reason of the latitude allowed him as to the number and selection of the persons whom he might nominate to be members of the legislative council) to allay, for a time at least, the intestine divisions which rend this colony, and to advance some steps towards the accomplishment of the

wishes of Parliament, by inducing a community of interest between the said council and the people, and by giving the former a more independent character by judicious nominations.

27. Resolved, That although sixteen persons have been nominated in less than two years by the present governor to be members of the said council (a number greater than that afforded by any period of ten years under any other administration), and notwithstanding the wishes of parliament, and the instructions given by his Majesty's government for the removal of the grievances of which the people had complained, the same malign influence which has been exerted to perpetuate in the country a system of irresponsibility in favour of public functionaries, has prevailed to such an extent as to render the majority of the legislative council more inimical to the country than at any former period; and that this fact confirms with irresistible force the justice of the censure passed by the committee of the House of Commons on the constitution of the legislative council as it had theretofore existed, and the correctness of the opinion of those members of the said committee who thought that the said body could never command the respect of the people, nor be in harmony with the house of assembly, unless the principle of election was introduced into it.

28. Resolved, *That even if the present governor-in-chief had, by making a most judicious selection, succeeded in quieting the alarm and allaying for a time the profound discontent which then prevailed, that form of government would not be less essentially vicious which makes the happiness or misery of a country depend on an executive over which the people of that country have no influence, and which has no permanent interest in the country, or in common with its inhabitants; and that the extension of the elective principle is the only measure which appears to this house to afford any prospect of equal and sufficient protection in future to all the inhabitants of the province without distinction.*

29. Resolved, That the accusations preferred against the house of assembly by the legislative council, as re-composed by the present governor-in-chief, would be criminal and seditious, if their very nature did not render them harmless, since they go to assert, that if in its liberality and justice the parliament of the United Kingdom had granted the earnest prayer of this house in behalf of the province (and which this house at this solemn moment, after weighing the dispatches of the secretary of state for the colonial department, and on the eve of a general election, now repeats and renews), that the constitution of the legislative council may be altered by rendering it elective, the result of this act of justice and benevolence would have been to inundate the country with blood.

30. Resolved, That by the said address to his Majesty, dated the 1st of April last, the legislative council charges this house with having calumniously accused the King's representative of partiality and injustice in the exercise of the powers of his office, and with deliberately calumniating his Majesty's officers, both civil and military, as a faction induced by interest alone to contend for the support of a government inimical to the rights and opposed to the wishes of the people: with reference to which this house declares that the accusations preferred by it have never been calumnious, but are true and well founded, and that a faithful picture of the executive government of this province in all its parts is drawn by the legislative council in this passage of its address.

31. Resolved, That if, as this house is fond of believing, his Majesty's government in England does not wish systematically to nourish civil discord in this colony, the contradictory allegations thus made by the two houses make it imperative on it to become better acquainted with the state of the province than it now appears to be, if we judge from its long tolerance of the abuses which its agents commit with impunity; that it ought not to trust to the self-praise of those who have the management of the affairs of a colony, passing according to them into a state of anarchy; that it ought to be convinced that if its protection of public functionaries, accused by a competent authority (that is to say by this house, in the name of the people), could for a time, by force and intimidation, aggravate, in favour of those functionaries and against the rights and interests of the people, the system of insult

and oppression which they impatiently bear, the result must be to weaken our confidence in, and our attachment to his Majesty's government, and to give deep root to the discontent and insurmountable disgust which have been excited by administrations deplorably vicious, and which are now excited by the majority of the public functionaries of the colony, combined as a faction, and induced by interest alone to contend for the support of a corrupt government, inimical to the rights and opposed to the wishes of the people.

32. Resolved, That in addition to its wicked and calumnious address of the 1st April 1833, the legislative council, as re-composed by the present governor-in-chief, has proved how little community of interest it has with the colony, by the fact that out of sixty-four bills which were sent up to it, twenty-eight were rejected by it, or amended in a manner contrary to their spirit and essence; that the same unanimity which had attended the passing of the greater part of these bills in the assembly, accompanied their rejection by the legislative council, and that an opposition so violent shows clearly that the provincial executive and the council of its choice, in league together against the representative body, do not, or *will not*, consider it as the faithful interpreter and the equitable judge of the wants and wishes of the people, nor as fit to propose laws conformable to the public will; and that under such circumstances it would have been the duty of the head of the executive to appeal to the people, by dissolving the provincial parliament, had there been any analogy between the institutions of Great Britain and those of this province.

33. Resolved, That the legislative council, as recomposed by the present governor-in-chief, must be considered as embodying the sentiments of the colonial executive government, and that from the moment it was so re-composed, the two authorities seem to have bound and leagued themselves for the purpose of proclaiming principles subversive of all harmony in the province, and of governing and domineering in a spirit of blind and invidious national antipathy.

34. Resolved, That the address voted unanimously on the 1st April 1833, by the legislative council, as re-composed by the present governor-in-chief, was concurred in by the honourable the chief justice of the province, Jonathan Sewell, to whom the right honourable Lord Viscount Goderich, in his despatch, communicated to the house on the 25th November 1831, recommended '*a cautious abstinence*' from all proceedings by which he might be involved in any contention of a party nature; by John Hale, the present receiver-general, who, in violation of the laws, and of the trust reposed in him, and upon illegal warrants issued by the governor, has paid away large sums of the public money, without any regard to the obedience which is always due to the law; by Sir John Caldwell, baronet, the late receiver-general, a speculator, who has been condemned to pay nearly 100,000*l.* to reimburse a like sum levied upon the people of this province, and granted by law to his Majesty, his heirs and successors, for the public use of the province, and for the support of his Majesty's government therein, and who has diverted the greater part of the said sum from the purposes to which it was destined, and appropriated it to his private use; by Mathew Bell, a grantee of the crown, who has been unduly and illegally favoured by the executive, in the lease of the forges of St. Maurice, in the grant of large tracts of waste lands, and in the lease of large tracts of land formerly belonging to the order of Jesuits; by John Stewart, an executive councillor, commissioner of the Jesuits' estates, and the incumbent of other lucrative offices: all of whom are placed by their pecuniary and personal interests, under the influence of the executive; and by the honourable George Moffat, Peter McGill, John Molson, Horatio Gates, Robert Jones, and James Baxter, all of whom, as well as those before mentioned, were, with two exceptions, born out of the country, and all of whom, except one, who for a number of years was a member of the assembly, and has extensive landed property, are but slightly qualified in *that* respect, and had not been sufficiently engaged in public life to afford a presumption that they were fit to perform the functions of legislators for life; and by Antoine Gaspard Couillard, the only native of the country, of French origin, who stooped to concur in the address, and who also had never been engaged in public life, and is but very moderately qualified with respect to real property, and who, after his appointment

to the council, and before the said 1st of April, rendered himself dependent on the executive by soliciting a paltry and subordinate place of profit.

35. Resolved, That the said address, voted by seven councillors, under the influence of the present head of the executive, and by five others of his appointment (one only of the six others who voted it, the Hon. George Moffat, having been appointed under his predecessor) is the work of the present administration of this province, the expression of its sentiments, the key to its acts, and the proclamation of its iniquitous and arbitrary principles, which are to form its rule of conduct for the future.

36. Resolved, That the said address is not less injurious to the small number of members of the legislative council who are independent, and attached to the interests and honour of the country, who have been members of the Assembly, and are known as having partaken its opinions and seconded its efforts, to obtain for it the entire control and disposal of the public revenue; as having approved the wholesome, constitutional, and not, as styled by the council, the daring steps taken by this house of praying by address to his Majesty that the legislative council might be rendered elective; as condemning a scheme for the creation of an extensive monopoly of lands in favour of speculators residing out of the country; as believing that they could not have been appointed to the council with a view to increase the constitutional weight and efficacy of that body, in which they find themselves opposed to a majority hostile to their principles and their country; as believing that the interests and wishes of the people are faithfully represented by their representatives, and that the connexion between this country and the parent state will be durable in proportion to the direct influence exercised by the people in the enactment of laws adapted to insure their welfare; and as being of opinion, that his Majesty's subjects recently settled in this country will share in all the advantages of the free institutions and of the improvements which would be rapidly developed, if, by means of the extension of the elective system, the administration were prevented from creating a monopoly of power and profit in favour of the minority who are of one origin, and to the prejudice of the other, who are of another, and from buying, corrupting, and exciting a portion of this minority in such a manner as to give to all discussions of local interest the alarming character of strife and national antipathy; and that the independent members of the legislative council, indubitably convinced of the tendency of that body, and undeceived as to the motives which led to their appointment as members of it, now refrain from attending the sittings of the said council, in which they despair of being able to effect any thing for the good of their country.

37. Resolved, That the political world in Europe is at this moment agitated by two great parties, who in different countries appear under the several names of serviles, royalists, Tories and conservatives on the one side, and of liberals, constitutionalists, republicans, Whigs, reformers, radicals and similar appellations on the other; that the former party is, on this continent, without any weight or influence except what it derives from its European supporters, and from a trifling number of persons who become their dependents for the sake of personal gain, and from others, who from age or habits cling to opinions which are not partaken by any numerous class; while the second party overspreads all America. And that the colonial secretary is mistaken if he believes that the exclusion of a few salaried officers from the legislative council could suffice to make it harmonise with the wants, wishes and opinions of the people, as long as the colonial governors retain the power of preserving in it a majority of members rendered servile by their antipathy to every liberal idea.

38. Resolved, That this vicious system, which has been carefully maintained, has given to the legislative council a greater character of animosity to the country than it had at any former period, and is as contrary to the wishes of parliament, as that which, in order to resist the wishes of the people of England for the parliamentary reform, should have called into the House of Lords a number of men notorious for their factious and violent opposition to that great measure.

39. Resolved, That the legislative council, representing merely the personal

opinions of certain members of a body so strongly accused at a recent period by the people of this province, and so justly censured by the report of the committee of the House of Commons, is not an authority competent to demand alterations in the constitutional Act of the 31st Geo. 3, c. 31, and that the said act ought not to be and cannot be altered, except at such time and in such manner as may be wished by the people of this province, whose sentiments this house is alone competent to represent; that no interference on the part of the British legislature with the laws and constitution of this province, which should not be founded on the wishes of the people, freely expressed either through this house, or in any other constitutional manner, could in any wise tend to settle any of the difficulties which exist in this province, but on the contrary, would only aggravate them and prolong their continuance.

40. Resolved, *That this House expects from the justice of the parliament of the United Kingdom, that no measure of the nature aforesaid, founded on the false representations of the legislative council and of the members and tools of the colonial administration, all interested in perpetuating existing abuses, will be adopted to the prejudice of the rights, liberties and welfare of the people of this province; but that on the contrary, the Imperial Legislature will comply with the wishes of the people and of this house, and will provide the most effectual remedy for all evils present and future, either by rendering the legislative council elective, in the manner mentioned in the Address of this house to his most gracious Majesty, of the 20th March 1833, or by enabling the people to express still more directly their opinions as to the measures to be adopted in that behalf, and with regard to such other modifications of the constitution as the wants of the people and the interest of his Majesty's government in the province may require, and that this house perseveres in the said Address.*

41. Resolved, *That his Majesty's secretary of state for the colonial department has acknowledged in his despatches, that it has frequently been admitted that the people of Canada ought to see nothing in the institutions of the neighbouring states which they could regard with envy, and that he has yet to learn that any such feeling now exists among his Majesty's subjects in Canada: to which this house answers, that the neighbouring States have a form of government very fit to prevent abuses of power, and very effective in repressing them; that the reverse of this order of things has always prevailed in Canada under the present form of government; that there exists in the neighbouring States a stronger and more general attachment to the national institutions than in any other country, and that there exists also in those States a guarantee for the progressive advance of their political institutions towards perfection, in the revision of the same at short and determinate intervals, by conventions of the people, in order that they may, without any shock or violence, be adapted to the actual state of things.*

42. Resolved, *That it was in consequence of a correct idea of the state of the country and of society generally in America, that the committee of the House of Commons asked, whether there was not in the two Canadas a growing inclination to see the institutions become more and more popular, and in that respect more and more like those of the United States; and that John Neilson, Esq., one of the agents sent from this country, answered, that the fondness for popular institutions had made great progress in the two Canadas; and that the same agent was asked, whether he did not think that it would be wise that the object of every change made in the institutions of the province should be to comply more and more with the wishes of the people, and to render the said institutions extremely popular: to which question this house, for and in the name of the people whom it represents, answers, solemnly and deliberately, 'Yes, it would be wise; it would be excellent.'*

43. Resolved, *That the constitution and form of government which would best suit this colony are not to be sought solely in the analogies offered by the institutions of Great Britain, where the state of society is altogether different from our own; and that it would be wise to turn to profit by the information to be gained by observing the effects produced by the different and infinitely varied constitutions which the kings and parliament of England have granted to the several*

plantations and colonies in America, and by studying the way in which virtuous and enlightened men have modified such colonial institutions, when it could be done with the assent of the parties interested.

44. Resolved, That the unanimous consent with which all the American states have adopted and extended the elective system, shows that it is adapted to the wishes, manners, and social state of the inhabitants of this continent; that this system prevails equally among those of British and those of Spanish origin, although the latter, during the continuance of their colonial state had been under the calamitous yoke of ignorance and absolutism; and that we do not hesitate to ask from a prince of the house of Brunswick, and a reformed parliament, all the freedom and political powers which the princes of the House of Stuart and their parliament granted to the most favoured of the plantations formed at a period when such grants must have been less favourably regarded than they would now be.

45. Resolved, That it was not the best and most free systems of colonial government which tended most to hasten the independence of the old English colonies; since the province of New York, in which the institutions were most monarchical in the sense which that word appears to bear in the despatch of the colonial secretary, was the first to refuse obedience to an act of the Parliament of Great Britain: and that the colonies of Connecticut and Rhode Island, which, though closely and affectionately connected with the mother country for a long course of years, enjoyed constitutions purely democratic, were the last to enter into a confederation rendered necessary by the conduct of bad servants of the Crown, who called in the supreme authority of the parliament and the British constitution to aid them to govern arbitrarily, listening rather to the governors and their advisers than to the people and their representatives, and shielding with their protection those who consumed the taxes rather than those who paid them.

46. Resolved, That with a view to the introduction of whatever the institutions of the neighbouring States offered that was good and applicable to the state of the province, this house had among other measures passed during many years, a bill founded on the principle of proportioning arithmetically the number of representatives to the populace of each place represented; and that if, by the pressure of circumstances and the urgent necessity which existed that the number of representatives should be increased, it has been compelled to assent to amendments which violate that principle, by giving to counties containing a population of little more than 4,000 souls, the same number of representatives as to several others of which the population is five times as great, this disproportion is, in the opinion of this house, an act of injustice, for which it ought to seek a remedy: and that in new countries where the population increases rapidly, and tends to create new settlements, it is wise and equitable that by a frequent and periodical census, such increase and the manner in which it is distributed should be ascertained, principally for the purpose of settling the representation of the province on an equitable basis.

47. Resolved, That the fidelity of the people and the protection of the government are co-relative obligations, of which the one cannot long subsist without the other; that by reason of the defects which exist in the laws and constitution of this province, and of the manner in which those laws and that constitution have been administered, the people of this province are not sufficiently protected in their lives, their property, and their honour; and that the long series of acts of injustice and oppression of which they have to complain, have increased with alarming rapidity in violence and in number under the present administration.

48. Resolved, That in the midst of these disorders and sufferings, this house and the people whom it represents, had always cherished the hope and expressed their faith that his Majesty's government in England did not knowingly and wilfully participate in the political immorality of its colonial agents and officers; and that it is with astonishment and grief that they have seen in the extract from the despatches of the colonial secretary, communicated to this house by the governor-in-chief, during the present session, that one at least of the members of his Majesty's government entertains towards them feelings of prejudice and animosity, and in-

clines to favour plans of oppression and revenge, ill adapted to change a system of abuses, the continuance of which would altogether discourage the people, extinguish in them the legitimate hope of happiness which, as British subjects, they entertained, and would leave them only the hard alternative of submitting to an ignominious bondage, or of seeing those ties endangered which unite them to the mother country.

49. Resolved, That this house and the people, whom it represents, do not wish or intend to convey any threat; but that, relying, as they do, upon the principles of law and justice, they are, and ought to be, politically strong enough not to be exposed to receive insult from any man whomsoever, or bound to suffer it in silence, that the style of the said extracts from the despatches of the colonial secretary, as communicated to this house, is insulting and inconsiderate to such a degree that no legally constituted body, although its functions were infinitely subordinate to those of legislation, could or ought to tolerate them; that no similar example can be found, even in the despatches of those of his predecessors in office, least favourable to the rights of the colonies; that the tenor of the said despatches is incompatible with the rights and privileges of this house, which ought not to be called in question or defined by the colonial secretary, but which, as occasion may require, will be successively promulgated and enforced by this house.

50. Resolved, That with regard to the following expressions in one of the said despatches, 'Should events unhappily force upon parliament the exercise of its supreme authority, to compose the internal dissensions of the colonies, it would be my object and my duty, as a servant of the crown, to submit to parliament such modifications of the charter of the Canadas as should tend, not to the introduction of institutions consistent with monarchical government, but to maintaining and strengthening the connexion with the mother country, by a close adherence to the spirit of the British constitution, and by preserving in their proper place and within their due limits the mutual rights and privileges of all classes of his Majesty's subjects;'—if they are to be understood as containing a threat to introduce into the constitution any other modifications than such as are asked for by the majority of the people of this province, whose sentiments cannot be legitimately expressed by any other authority than its representatives, this house would esteem itself wanting in candour to the people of England, if it hesitated to call their attention to the fact, that in less than twenty years the population of the United States of America will be as great or greater than that of Great Britain, and that of British America will be as great or greater than that of the former English colonies was when the latter deemed that the time was come to decide that the inappreciable advantage of governing themselves instead of being governed, ought to engage them to repudiate a system of colonial government which was, generally speaking, much better than that of British America now is.

51. Resolved, That the approbation expressed by the colonial secretary, in his said despatch, of the present composition of the legislative council, whose acts, since its pretended reform, have been marked by party spirit and by invidious national distinctions and preferences, is a subject in general of just alarm to his Majesty's Canadian subjects in general, and more particularly to the great majority of them, who have not yielded at any time to any other class of the inhabitants of this province in their attachment to his Majesty's government, in their love of peace and order, in respect for the laws, and in their wish to effect that union among the whole people which is so much to be desired, to the end that all may enjoy freely and equally the rights and advantages of British subjects, and of the institutions which have been guaranteed to and are dear to the country; that the distinctions and preferences aforesaid have almost constantly been used and taken advantage of by the colonial administration of this province, and the majority of the legislative councillors, executive councillors, judges, and other functionaries dependent upon it; and that nothing but the spirit of the union among the several classes of the people, and their conviction that their interests are the same, could have prevented collisions incompatible with the prosperity and safety of the province.

52. Resolved, That since a circumstance, which did not depend upon the choice of the majority of the people, their French origin and their use of the French language, has been made by the colonial authorities a pretext for abuse, for exclusion, for political inferiority, for a separation of rights and interests; this house now appeals to the justice of his Majesty's government and of parliament, and to the honour of the people of England; that the majority of the inhabitants of this country are in nowise disposed to repudiate any of the advantages they derive from their origin and from their descent from the French nation, which, with regard to the progress, of which it has been the cause, in civilization, in the sciences, in letters, and in the arts, has never been behind the British nation, and is now the worthy rival of the latter in the advancement of the cause of liberty and of the science of government; from which this country derives the greater portion of its civil and ecclesiastical law, and of its scholastic and charitable institutions, and of the religion, language, habits, manners, and customs of the great majority of its inhabitants.

53. Resolved, That our fellow-subjects of British origin, in this province, came to settle themselves in a country, 'the inhabitants whereof, professing the religion of the church of Rome, enjoyed an established form of constitution and system of laws, by which their persons and their property had been protected, governed, and ordered during a long series of years, from the first establishment of the province of Canada;' that prompted by these considerations and guided by the rules of justice and of the law of nations, the British parliament enacted that, 'in all matters of controversy, relative to property and civil rights, resort should be had to the laws of Canada;' that when parliament afterwards departed from the principle thus recognised, firstly, by the introduction of the English criminal law, and afterwards by that of the representative system, with all the constitution and parliamentary law necessary to its perfect action, it did so in conformity to the sufficiently expressed wish of the Canadian people; and that every attempt on the part of public functionaries or of other persons (who on coming to settle in the province, made their condition their own voluntary act) against the existence of any portion of the laws and institutions peculiar to the country, and any preponderance given to such persons in the legislative and executive councils, in the courts of law, or in other departments, are contrary to the engagements of the British parliament, and to the rights guaranteed to his Majesty's Canadian subjects, on the faith of the national honour of England on that of capitulations and treaties.

54. Resolved, That any combination, whether effected by means of acts of the British parliament, obtained in contravention to its form ere engagements, or by means of the partial and corrupt administration of the present constitution and system of law, would be a violation of those rights, and would, as long as it should exist, be obeyed by the people, from motives of fear and constraint, and not from choice and affection; that the conduct of the colonial administrations, and of their agents and instruments in this colony, has, for the most part, been of a nature unjustly to create apprehensions as to the views of the people and government of the mother country, and to endanger the confidence and content of the inhabitants of this province, which can only be secured by equal laws, and by the observance of equal justice, as the rule of conduct in all the departments of the government.

55. Resolved, That whether the number of that class of his Majesty's subjects in this province, who are of British origin, be that mentioned in the said address of the legislative council, or whether (as the truth is) it amounts to less than half that number, the wishes and interests of the great majority of them are common to them and to their fellow-subjects of French origin, and speaking the French language; that the one class love the country of their birth, the other that of their adoption; that the greater portion of the latter have acknowledged the generally beneficial tendency of the laws and institutions of the country, and have laboured in concert with the former to introduce into them gradually, and by the authority of the provincial parliament, the improvements of which they have, from time to time, appeared susceptible, and have resisted the confusion which it has been endeavoured

to introduce into them, in favour of schemes of monopoly and abuse, and that all without distinction wish anxiously for an impartial and protecting government.

56. Resolved, That in addition to administrative and judicial abuses, which have had an injurious effect upon the public welfare and confidence, attempts have been made, from time to time, to induce the parliament of the United Kingdom, by deceiving its justice and abusing its benevolent intentions, to adopt measures calculated to bring about combinations of the nature above-mentioned, and to pass acts of internal legislation for this province, having the same tendency, and with regard to which, the people of the country had not been consulted; that, unhappily, the attempts to obtain the passing of some of these measures were successful, especially that of the act of the 6 Geo. 4, c. 59, commonly called the 'Tenures Act,' the repeal of which was unanimously demanded by all classes of the people, without distinction, through their representatives, a very short time after the number of the latter was increased; and that this house has not yet been able to obtain from his Majesty's representative in this province, or from any other source, any information as to the views of his Majesty's government in England, with regard to the repeal of the said act.

57. Resolved, That the object of the said act was, according to the benevolent intentions of parliament, and as the title of the act sets forth, the extinction of feudal and seigniorial rights and dues on land held *en fief* and *à cens* in this province, with the intention of favouring the great body of the inhabitants of the country, and protecting them against the said dues, which were regarded as burdensome; but that the provisions of the said act, far from having the effect aforesaid, afford facilities for seigniors to become, in opposition to the interest of their *censitaires*, the absolute proprietors of the extensive tracts of unoccupied lands which, by the law of the country, they held only for the benefit of the inhabitants thereof, to whom they were bound to concede them in consideration of certain limited dues; that the said act, if generally acted upon, would shut out the mass of the permanent inhabitants of the country from the vacant lands in the seigniories, whilst, at the same time, they have been constantly prevented from settling on the waste lands of the crown on easy and liberal terms, and under a tenure adapted to the laws of the country, by the partial, secret, and vicious manner in which the crown land department has been managed, and the provisions of the act aforesaid, with regard to the laws applicable to the lands in question; and that the application made by certain seigniors for a change of tenure, under the authority of the said act, appear to prove the correctness of the view this house has taken of its practical effect.

58. Resolved, That it was only in consequence of an erroneous supposition that feudal charges were inherent in the law of this country, as far as the possession and transmission of real property, and the tenures recognized by that law, were concerned, that it was enacted in the said act that the lands, with regard to which a change of tenure should be effected, should thereafter be held under the tenure of free and common socage; that the seigniorial charges have been found burdensome in certain cases, chiefly by reason of the want of adequate means of obtaining the interference of the colonial government and of the courts of law, to enforce the ancient law of the country in that behalf, and that the provincial legislature was, moreover, fully competent to pass laws, providing for the redemption of the said charges in a manner which should be in accordance with the interests of all parties, and for the introduction of the free tenures recognized by the laws of the country; that the House of Assembly has been repeatedly occupied, and now is occupied, about this important subject; but that the said Tenures Act, insufficient of itself to effect equitably the purpose for which it was passed, is of a nature to embarrass and create obstacles to the effectual measures which the legislature of the country, with a full knowledge of the subject, might be disposed to adopt; and that the application thus made (to the exclusion of the provincial legislature) to the parliament of the United Kingdom, which was far less competent to make equitable enactments on a subject so complicated in its nature, could only have been made with a view to unlawful speculations and the subversion of the laws of the country.

59. Resolved, That independently of its many other serious imperfections, the said act does not appear to have been founded on a sufficient knowledge of the laws which govern persons and property in this country, when it declares the laws of Great Britain to be applicable to certain incidents to real property therein enumerated; and that it has only served to augment the confusion and doubt which had prevailed in the courts of law, and in private transactions with regard to the law which applied to lands previously granted in free and common soccage.

60. Resolved, That the provision of the said act which has excited the greatest alarm, and which is most at variance with the rights of the people of the country, and with those of the provincial parliament, is that which enacts that lands previously held *en fief* or *en censive* shall, after a change of tenure shall have been effected with regard to them, be held in free and common soccage, and thereby become subject to the laws of Great Britain, under the several circumstances therein mentioned and enumerated; that besides being insufficient in itself, this provision is of a nature to bring into collision, in the old settlements, at multiplied points of contiguity, two opposite systems of laws, one of which is entirely unknown to this country, in which it is impossible to carry it into effect; that from the feeling manifested by the colonial authorities and their partisans towards the inhabitants of the country, the latter have just reason to fear that the enactment in question is only the prelude to the final subversion, by acts of parliament of Great Britain, fraudulently obtained in violation of its former engagements, of the system of laws by which the persons and property of the people of this province were so long happily governed.

61. Resolved, That the inhabitants of this country have just reason to fear that the claims made to the property of the seminary of St. Sulpice, at Montreal, are attributable to the desire of the colonial administration, and its agents and tools, to hasten this deplorable state of things; and that his Majesty's government in England would, by reassuring his faithful subjects on this point, dissipate the alarm felt by the clergy, and by the whole people without distinction, and merit their sincere gratitude.

62. Resolved, *That it is the duty of this house to persist in asking for the absolute repeal of the said tenures act, and until such repeal shall be effected, to propose to the other branches of the provincial parliament such measures as may be adapted to weaken the pernicious effects of the said act.*

63. That this house has learned with regret, from one of the said despatches of the colonial secretary, that his Majesty has been advised to interfere in a matter which concerns the privileges of this house: that in the case there alluded to, this house exercised a privilege solemnly established by the House of Commons, before the principle on which it rests became the law of the land; that this privilege is essential to the independence of this house, and to the freedom of its votes and proceedings; that the resolutions passed by this house, on the 15th of February 1831, are constitutional and well-founded, and are supported by the example of the commons of Great Britain; that this house has repeatedly passed bills for giving effect to the said principle, but that these bills failed to become law, at first from the obstacles opposed to them in another branch of the provincial legislature, and subsequently by reason of the reservation of the last of the said bills for the signification of his Majesty's pleasure in England, whence it has not yet been sent back; that until some bill to the same effect shall become law, this house persists in the said resolutions; and that the refusal of his excellency, the present governor-in-chief, to sign a writ for the election of a knight representative for the county of Montreal, in the place of Dominique Mondelet, Esq., whose seat had been declared vacant, is a grievance of which this house is entitled to obtain the redress, and one which would alone have sufficed to put an end to all intercourse between it and the colonial executive, if the circumstances of the country had not offered a infinite number of other abuses and grievances against which it is urgently necessary to remonstrate.

64. Resolved, *That the claims which have for many years been set up by the executive government to that control over and power of appropriating a great*

portion of the revenues levied in this province, which belong of right to this house, are contrary to the rights and to the constitution of the country; and that with regard to the said claims, this house persists in the declarations it has heretofore made.

65. Resolved, That the said claims of the executive have been vague and varying; that the documents relative to the said claims, and the accounts and estimates of expenses laid before this house have likewise been varying and irregular, and insufficient to enable this house to proceed with a full understanding of the subject or the matters to which they related; that important heads of the public revenue of the province, collected either under the provisions of the law or under arbitrary regulations made by the executive, have been omitted in the said accounts; that numerous items have been paid out of the public revenue without the authority of this house, or any acknowledgment of its control over them, as salaries for sinecure offices, which are not recognized by this house, and even for other objects for which, after mature deliberation, it had not deemed it expedient to appropriate any portion of the public revenue: and that no accounts of the sums so expended have been laid before this house.

66. Resolved, *That the executive government has endeavoured, by means of the arbitrary regulations aforesaid, and particularly by the sale of the waste lands of the Crown, and of the timber on the same, to create for itself out of the revenue which this house only has the right of appropriating, resources independent of the control of the representatives of the people; and that the result has been a diminution of the wholesome influence which the people have constitutionally the right of exercising over the administrative branch of the government, and over the spirit and tendency of its measures.*

67. Resolved, That this house having, from time to time, with a view to proceed by bill, to restore regularity to the financial system of the province, and to provide for the expenses of the administration of justice and of his Majesty's civil government therein, asked the provincial government by address for divers documents and accounts relating to financial matters, and to abuses connected with them, has met with repeated refusals, more especially during the present session and the preceding one; that divers subordinate public functionaries, summoned to appear before committees of this house to give information on the said subject, have refused to do so in pursuance of the said claim set up by the provincial administrations to withdraw a large portion of the public income and expenditure from the control and even from the knowledge of this house; that during the present session one of the said subordinate functionaries of the executive being called upon to produce the originals of sundry registers of warrants and reports, which it was important to this house to cause to be examined, insisted on being present at the deliberations of the committee appointed by the house for that purpose; and that the head of the administration being informed of the fact, refrained from interfering, although in conformity to parliamentary usage, this house had pledged itself that the said documents should be returned, and although the governor-in-chief had himself promised communication of them.

68. Resolved, That the result of the secret and unlawful distribution of a large portion of the public revenue of the province has been, that the executive government has always, except with regard to appropriations for objects of a local nature, considered itself bound to account for the public money to the lords commissioners of the treasury in England, and not to this house, nor according to its votes, or even in conformity to the laws passed by the provincial legislature; and that the accounts and statements laid before this house from time to time have never assumed the shape of a regular system of balanced accounts, but have been drawn up, one after another, with such alterations and irregularities as it pleased the administration of the day to introduce into them, from the accounts kept with the lords of the treasury, in which the whole public money received was included, as well as all the items of expenditure, whether authorized or unauthorized by the provincial legislature.

69. Resolved, That the pretensions and abuses aforesaid have taken away from

this house even the shadow of control over the public revenue of the province, and have rendered it impossible for it to ascertain at any time the amount of revenue collected, the disposable amount of the same, and the sums required for the public service; and that the house having during many years passed bills, of which the models are to be found in the statute-book of Great Britain, to establish a regular system of accountability and responsibility in the department connected with the receipt and expenditure of the revenue; these bills have failed in the legislative council.

70. Resolved, That since the last session of the provincial parliament, the governor-in-chief of this province, and the members of his executive government, relying on the pretensions above-mentioned, have, without any lawful authority, paid large sums out of the public revenue, subject to the control of this house; and that the said sums were divided according to their pleasure, and even in contradiction to the votes of this house, as incorporated in the supply bill passed by it during the last session, and rejected by the legislative council.

71. Resolved, that this house will hold responsible for all monies which have been, or may hereafter be paid, otherwise than under the authority of an act of the legislature, or upon an address of this house, out of the public revenue of the province, all those who may have authorized such payments, or participated therein, until the said sums shall have been reimbursed, or a bill or bills of indemnity freely passed by this house shall have become law.

72. Resolved, That the course adopted by this house in the supply bill, passed during the last session, of attaching certain conditions to certain votes, for the purpose of preventing the accumulation of incompatible offices in the same persons, and of obtaining the redress of certain abuses and grievances, is wise and constitutional, and has frequently been adopted by the House of Commons, under analogous circumstances: and that if the Commons of England do not now so frequently recur to it, it is because they have happily obtained the entire control of the revenue of the nation, and because respect shewn to their opinions with regard to the redress of grievances and abuses, by the other constituted authorities, has regulated the working of the constitution in a manner equally adapted to give stability to his Majesty's government, and to protect the interests of the people.

73. Resolved, That it was anciently the practice of the House of Commons to withhold supplies until grievances were redressed; and that in following this course in the present conjuncture, we are warranted in our proceeding, as well by the most approved precedents, as by the spirit of the constitution itself.

74. Resolved, That if hereafter, when the redress of all grievances and abuses shall have been effected, this house shall deem it fit and expedient to grant supplies, it ought not to do so otherwise than in the manner mentioned in its fifth and sixth resolutions of the 16th March 1833, and by appropriating by its votes in an especial manner, and in the order in which they are enumerated in the said resolutions, the full amount of those heads of revenue, to the right of appropriating which claims have been set up by the executive government.

75. Resolved, That the number of the inhabitants of the country being about 600,000; those of French origin are about 525,000, and those of British or other origin 75,000; and that the establishment of the civil government of Lower Canada for the year 1832, according to the yearly returns made by the provincial administration, for the information of the British parliament, contained the names of 157 officers and others receiving salaries, who are apparently of British or foreign origin, and the names of 47 who are apparently natives of the country, of French origin: that this statement does not exhibit the whole disproportion which exists in the distribution of the public money and power, the latter class being for the most part appointed to the inferior and less lucrative offices, and most frequently only obtaining even these by becoming the dependants of those who hold the higher and more lucrative offices; that the accumulation of many of the best paid and most influential, and at the same time incompatible offices, in the same person, which is forbidden by the laws and by sound policy, exists especially for the benefit of the

former class; and that two-thirds of the persons included in the last commission of the peace issued in the province are apparently of British or foreign origin, and one-third only of French origin.

76. Resolved, That this partial and abusive practice of bestowing the great majority of official places in the province on those only who are least connected with its permanent interests, and with the mass of its inhabitants, had been most especially remarkable in the judicial department, the judges for the three great districts having, with the exception of one only in each, been systematically chosen from that class of persons, who, being born out of the country, are the least versed in its laws, and in the language and usages of the majority of its inhabitants; that the result of their intermeddling in the politics of the country, of their connexion with the members of the Colonial administration, and of their prejudices in favour of institutions foreign to and at variance with those of the country, is that the majority of the said judges have introduced great irregularity into the general system of our jurisprudence, by neglecting to ground their decisions on its recognised principles; and that the claim laid by the said judges to the power of regulating the forms of legal proceedings in a manner contrary to the laws, and without the interference of the legislature, has frequently been extended to the fundamental rules of the law and of practice; and that in consequence of the same system, the administration of the criminal law is partial and uncertain, and such as to afford but little protection to the subject, and has failed to inspire that confidence which ought to be its inseparable companion.

77. Resolved, That in consequence of their connection with the members of the provincial administrations, and of their antipathy to the country, some of the said judges have, in violation of the laws, attempted to abolish the use in the courts of law of the language spoken by the majority of the inhabitants of the country, which is necessary to the free action of the laws, and forms a portion of the usages guaranteed to them in the most solemn manner by the law of nations and by the statutes of the British Parliament.

78. Resolved, That some of the said judges, through partiality for political purposes, and in violation of the criminal law of England as established in this country, of their duty, and their oath, have connived with divers law officers of the crown, acting in the interest of the provincial administration, to allow the latter to engross and monopolize all criminal prosecutions of what nature soever, without allowing the private prosecutor to intervene or be heard, or any advocate to express his opinion *amicus curiæ*, when the Crown officers opposed it; that in consequence of this, numerous prosecutions of a political nature have been brought into the courts of law by the Crown officers against those whose opinions were unfavourable to the administration for the time being; while it was impossible for the very numerous class of his Majesty's subjects to which the latter belonged to commence with the slightest confidence any prosecution against those who, being protected by the administration, and having countenanced its acts of violence, had been guilty of crimes or misdemeanors; that the tribunal aforesaid have, as far as the persons composing them are concerned, undergone no modification whatever, and inspire the same fears for the future.

79. Resolved, That this house, as representing the people of this province, possesses of right, and has exercised within this province when occasion has required it, all the powers, privileges, and immunities claimed and possessed by the Commons house of Parliament in the kingdom of Great Britain and Ireland.

80. Resolved, That it is one of the undoubted privileges of this house to send for all persons, papers, and records, and to command the attendance of all persons, civil or military, resident within the province, as witnesses in all investigations which this house may deem it expedient to institute; and to require such witnesses to produce all papers and records in their keeping, whenever it shall deem it conducive to the public good to do so.

81. Resolved, That as at the grand inquest of the province, it is the duty of this house to inquire concerning all grievances, and all circumstances which may endanger the general welfare of the inhabitants of the province, or be of a

nature to excite alarm in them with regard to their lives, their liberty, and their property, to the end that such representations may be made to our most gracious Sovereign, or such legislative measures introduced, as may lead to the redress of such grievances, or tend to allay such alarm; and that far from having a right to impede the exercise of these rights and privileges, the governor-in-chief is deputed by his Sovereign, is invested with great powers, and receives a large salary, as much for defending the rights of the subject and facilitating the exercise of the privileges of this house and of all constituted bodies, as for maintaining the prerogatives of the crown.

82. Resolved, That since the commencement of the present session, a great number of petitions relating to the infinite variety of objects connected with the public welfare, have been presented to this house, and many messages and important communications received by it, both from his Majesty's government in England and from his Majesty's provincial government; that many bills have been introduced in this house, and many important inquiries ordered by it, in several of which the governor-in-chief is personally and deeply implicated; that the said petitions from our constituents, the people of all parts of this province; the said communications from his Majesty's government in England and from the provincial government; the said bills already introduced or in preparation; the said inquiries commenced and intended to be diligently prosecuted, may and must necessitate the presence of numerous witnesses, the production of numerous papers, the employment of numerous clerks, messengers, and assistants, and much printing, and lead to inevitable and daily disbursements, forming the contingent expenses of this house.

83. Resolved, That from the year 1792 to the present, advances had constantly been made to meet these expenses, on addresses similar to that presented this year by this house to the governor-in-chief, according to the practice adopted by the House of Commons; that an address of this kind is the most solemn vote of credit which this house can pass, and that almost the whole amount of the sum exceeding 277,000*l.* has been advanced on such votes by the predecessors of his excellency the governor-in-chief, and by himself (as he acknowledges by his message on the 18th January 1834), without any risk having ever been incurred by any other governor on account of any such advance, although several of them have had differences, attended by violence and injustice on *their* part, with the house of assembly, and without their apprehending that the then next parliament would not be disposed to make good the engagements of the house of assembly for the time being; and that this refusal of the governor-in-chief, in the present instance, essentially impedes the dispatch of the business for which the parliament was called together, is derogatory to the rights and honour of this house, and forms another grievance for which the present administration of this province is responsible.

84. Resolved, That besides the grievances and abuses before-mentioned, there exist in this province a great number of others (a part of which existed before the commencement of the present administration, which has maintained them, and is the author of a portion of them), with regard to which this house reserves to itself the right of complaining and demanding reparation, and the number of which is too great to allow of their being enumerated here: that this house points out as among that number.

1stly. The vicious composition and the irresponsibility of the executive council, the members of which are at the same time judges of the court of appeals, and the secrecy with which not only the functions, but even the names of the members of that body have been kept from the knowledge of this house, when inquiries have been instituted by it on the subject.

2dly. The exorbitant fees illegally exacted in certain of the public offices, and in others connected with the judicial department, under regulations made by the executive council, by the judges, and by other functionaries usurping the powers of the legislature.

3dly. The practice of illegally calling upon the judges to give their opinions secretly on questions which may be afterwards publicly and contradictorily argued before them; and the opinions themselves so given by the said judges, as political

partizans, in opposition to the laws, but in favour of the administration for the time being.

4thly. The cumulation of public places and offices in the same persons, and the efforts made by a number of families connected with the administration to perpetuate this state of things for their own advantage, and for the sake of domineering for ever, with interested views and in the spirit of party, over the people and their representatives.

5thly. The intermeddling of members of the legislative councils in the elections of the representatives of the people, for the purpose of influencing and controlling them by force, and the selection frequently made of returning officers for the purpose of securing the same partial and corrupt ends; the interference of the present governor in-chief himself in the said elections; his approval of the intermeddling of the said legislative councillors in the said elections; the partiality with which he intervened in the judicial proceedings connected with the said elections, for the purpose of influencing the said proceeding in a manner favourable to the military power, and contrary to the independence of the judicial power; and the applause which, as commander of the forces, he bestowed upon the sanguinary execution of the citizens by the soldiery.

6thly. The interference of the armed military force at such elections, through which three peaceable citizens, whose exertions were necessary to the support of their families, and who were strangers to the agitation of the election, were shot dead in the streets; the applause bestowed by the governor-in-chief and commander of the forces on the authors of this sanguinary military execution (who had not been acquitted by a petty jury), for the firmness and discipline displayed by them on that occasion.

7thly. The various faulty and partial systems which have been followed ever since the passing of the constitutional act, with regard to the management of the waste lands in this province, and have rendered it impossible for the great majority of the people of the country to settle on the said lands; the fraudulent and illegal manner in which, contrary to his Majesty's instructions, governors, legislative and executive councillors, judges, and subordinate officers have appropriated to themselves large tracts of the said lands; the monopoly of an extensive portion of the said lands in the hands of speculators residing in England, with which the province is now threatened; and the alarm generally felt therein with regard to the alleged participation of his Majesty's government in this scheme, without its having deigned to re-assure his faithful subjects on this head, or to reply to the humble address to his Majesty adopted by this house during the last session.

8thly. The increase of the expenses of the government without the authority of the legislature, and the disproportion of the salaries paid to public functionaries to the services performed by them, to the rent of real property, and to the ordinary income commanded by the exertions of persons possessing talent, industry, and economy, equal to or greater than those of the said functionaries.

9thly. The want of all recourse in the courts of law on the part of those who have just and legal claims on the government.

10thly. The too frequent reservation of bills for the signification of his Majesty's pleasure, and the neglect of the Colonial Office to consider such bills, a great number of which have never been sent back to the province, and some of which have even been returned so late that doubts may be entertained as to the validity of the sanction given to them; a circumstance which has introduced irregularity and uncertainty into the legislation of the province, and is felt by this house as an impediment to the re-introduction of the bills reserved during the then preceding sessions.

11thly. The neglect on the part of the Colonial Office to give any answer to certain addresses transmitted by this house on important subjects; the practice followed by the administration of communicating in an incomplete manner, and by extracts, and frequently without giving their dates, the despatches received from time to time on subjects which have engaged the attention of this house; and the too frequent references to the opinion of his Majesty's ministers in England, on

the part of the provincial administration, upon points which it is in their power and within their province to decide.

12thly. The unjust retention of the college at Quebec, which forms part of the estates of the late Order of Jesuits, and which from a college has been transformed into a barrack for soldiers; the renewal of the lease of a considerable portion of the same estates, by the provincial executive, in favour of a member of the legislative council, since those estates were returned to the legislature, and in opposition to the prayer of this house, and to the known wishes of a great number of his Majesty's subjects, to obtain lands there and to settle on them; and the refusal of the said executive to communicate the said lease, and other information on the subjects, to this house.

13thly. The obstacles unjustly opposed by the executive, friendly to abuses and to ignorance, to the establishment of colleges endowed by virtuous and disinterested men, for the purpose of meeting the growing desire of the people for the careful education of their children.*

14thly. The refusal of justice with regard to the accusations brought by this house, in the name of the people, against judges for flagrant acts of malversation, and for ignorance and violation of the law.

15thly. The refusals on the part of the governors, and more especially of the present governor-in-chief, to communicate to this house the information asked for by it from time to time, and which it had a right to obtain, on a great number of subjects connected with the public business of the province.

16thly. The refusal of his Majesty's Government to reimburse to the province the amount for which the late receiver-general was a defaulter, and its neglect to enforce the recourse which the province was entitled to against the property and person of the late receiver-general.

85. Resolved, That the facts mentioned in the foregoing resolutions, demonstrate that the laws and constitutions of the province have not, at any period, been administered in a manner more contrary to the interests of his Majesty's government, and to the rights of the people of this province, than under the present administration, and render it necessary that his Excellency Matthew Lord Aylmer, of Bathurst, the present governor-in-chief of this province, be formally accused by this house of having, while acting as governor, in contradiction to the wishes of the Imperial Parliament, and to the instructions he may have received, and against the honour and dignity of the crown, and the rights and privileges of this house and the people whom it represents, so reconstituted the legislative council as to augment the dissensions which rend this colony; of having seriously impeded the labours of this house, acting as the grand inquest of the country; of having disposed of the public revenue of the province, against the consent of the representatives of the people and in violation of the law and constitution; of having maintained existing abuses, and created new ones; of having refused to sign a writ for the election of a representative to fill a vacancy which had happened in this house, and to complete the number of representatives established by law for this province; and that this house expects from the honour, patriotism, and justice of the reformed Parliament of the United Kingdom, that the Commons of the said parliament will bring impeachments, and will support such impeachments before the House of Lords against the said Matthew Lord Aylmer, for his illegal, unjust, and unconstitutional administration of the government of this province; and against

* To illustrate the malignant spirit inherent in the party there only needed this accusation. Mr. McGill, a respectable resident, on his demise some years ago, left £10,000, wherewith to endow a college for the purpose of education, to be called after him. The heir-at-law and executor, one of the clique, refused to part with the funds, and disputed the will. After being worsted in the Colonial courts, it was carried by appeal to London, and ultimately the decision of the courts in Canada confirmed, by which the bequest, with interest, now amounting to more than £21,000, is ordered to be applied according to the testator's will. We shall merely state that Viger prosecuted the suit—that Papineau advised the defence—and that Des Rivieres, the executor, since the cause has been decided against him, is bankrupt. The crime of the will we suppose, was, that it did not restrict the uses of the college to the French party.—See *Canada Question*.

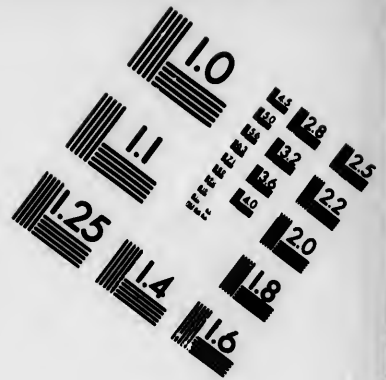
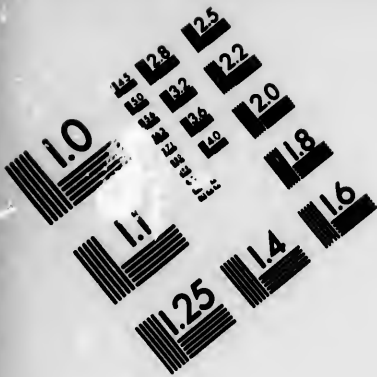
such of the wicked and perverse advisers who have misled him, as this house may hereafter accuse, if there be no means of obtaining justice against them in the province, or at the hands of his Majesty's executive government in England.

86. Resolved, That this house hopes and believes that the Independent members of both houses of the Parliament of the United Kingdom will be disposed, both from inclination and a sense of duty, to support the accusations brought by this house; to watch over the preservation of its rights and privileges, which have been so frequently and violently attacked, more especially by the present administration; and so to act, that the people of this province may not be forced by oppression to regret their dependance on the British empire, and to seek elsewhere a remedy for their affliction.

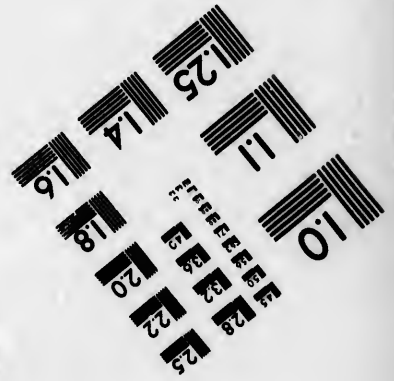
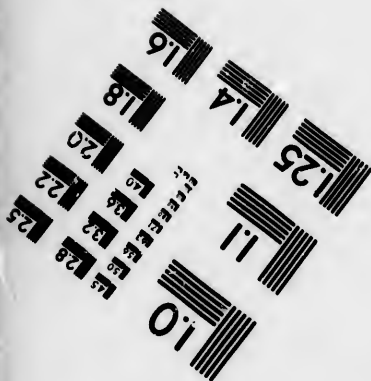
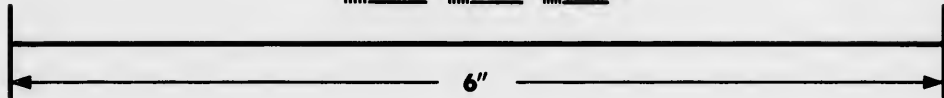
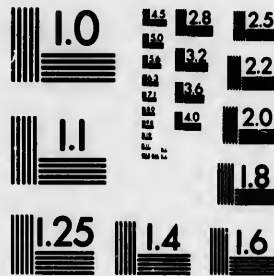
87. Resolved, That this house learned, with gratitude, that Daniel O'Connell, Esq. had given notice in the House of Commons in July last, that during the present session of the Imperial Parliament, he would call its attention to the necessity of reforming the legislative and executive councils in the two Canadas; and that the interest thus shown for our own fate by him whom the gratitude and blessings of his countrymen have, with the applause of the whole civilized world, proclaimed great and liberator, and of whom our fellow-countrymen entertain corresponding sentiments, keeps alive in us the hope that, through the goodness of our cause and the services of such a friend, the British Parliament will not permit a minister, deceived by the interested representations of the provincial administration and its creatures and tools, to exert (as there is reason from his despatches to apprehend that he may attempt to do) the highest degree of oppression in favour of a system which, in better times, he characterized as faulty, and against subjects of his Majesty who are apparently only known to him by the great patience with which they have waited in vain for promised reforms.

88. Resolved, That this house has the same confidence in Joseph Hume, Esq., and feels the same gratitude for the anxiety which he has repeatedly shown for the good government of these colonies, and the amelioration of their laws and constitutions, and calls upon the said Daniel O'Connell and Joseph Hume, Esqrs., whose constant devotedness was, even under a Tory ministry, and before the reform parliament, partially successful in the emancipation of Ireland, from the same bondage and the same political inferiority with which the communications received from the colonial secretary during the present session menace the people of Lower Canada, to use their efforts that the laws and constitution of this province may be amended in the manner demanded by the people thereof; that the abuses and grievances of which the latter have to complain may be fully and entirely redressed; and that the laws and constitution may be hereafter administered in a manner consonant with justice, with the honour of the crown and of the people of England, and with the rights, liberties, and privileges of the people of this province, and of this house by which they are represented.

89. Resolved, That this house invites the members of the minority of the legislative council who partake the opinions of the people, the present members of the House of Assembly, until the next general election, and afterwards all the members then elected, and such other persons as they may associate with them, to form one committee or two committees of correspondence, to sit at Quebec and Montreal in the first instance, and afterwards at such place as they shall think proper; the said committees to communicate with each other and with the several local committees, which may be formed in different parts of the province, and to enter into correspondence with the Hon. Denis Benjamin Viger, the agent of this province in England, with the said Daniel O'Connell and Joseph Hume, Esqrs., and with such other members of the House of Lords or of the House of Commons, and such other persons in the United Kingdom of Great Britain and Ireland as they may deem expedient, for the purpose of supporting the claims of the people of this province and of this house; of furnishing such information, documents, and opinions as they may think adapted to make known the state, wishes, and wants of the province: the said committees also to correspond with such persons as they shall think proper in the other British colonies, which are



**IMAGE EVALUATION
TEST TARGET (MT-3)**



**Photographic
Sciences
Corporation**

23 WEST MAIN STREET
WEBSTER, N.Y. 14580
(716) 872-4503

1.8
2.0
2.2
2.5
2.8
3.2
3.6
4.0
4.5
5.0

5.0
5.6
6.3
7.1
8.0
9.0
10.0

all interested, that the most populous of their sister colonies do not sink under the violent attempt to perpetuate the abuses and evils which result as well from the vices of its constitution as from the combined malversation of the administrative, legislative, and judicial departments, out of which have sprung insult and oppression for the people, and by necessary consequence, hatred and contempt, on their part, for the provincial government.

90. Resolved, That the Honourable Denis Benjamin Viger be requested to remain at the seat of his Majesty's government, at least during the present session of the Imperial Parliament, to continue to watch over the interests of the province with the same zeal and the same devotedness as heretofore, without suffering himself to be discouraged by mere formal objections on the part of those who are unwilling to listen to the complaints of the country.

91. Resolved, That the fair and reasonable expenses of the said two committees of correspondence, incurred by them in the performance of the duties entrusted to them by this house, are a debt which it contracts towards them; and that the representatives of the people are bound in honour to use all constitutional means to reimburse such expenses to the said committee, or to such person as may advance money to them for the purposes above-mentioned.

92. Resolved, That the message from his excellency the governor-in-chief, received on the 13th of January last, and relating to the writ of election for the county of Montreal, with the extract from a despatch which accompanied it, the message from the same, received the same day, and relating to the supply bill, and the message from the same, received on the 14th January last, with the extract from the despatch which accompanied it, be expunged from the journals of this house.

These resolutions, and the memorial accompanying them, were referred to a committee composed, like the last, chiefly of liberal members, and containing several persons whose opinions were well known to be favourable to their cause. The Canadian delegate, Mr. Morin,* was heard at great length, and I must refer you to the testimony given by him as a proof how all the vague assertions contained in their petition and resolutions vanished, when they were subjected to a critical and close examination. There are few instances on record in which a witness was so skilfully examined, or where a clever man, as he undoubtedly is, was brought to refute himself so completely as he has done. After a patient hearing of all he could say, the committee reported (June 1834) as follows:—

“ That the most earnest anxiety had existed, on the part of the home government, to carry into effect the suggestions of the committee of 1828; and that the endeavours of the government to that end had been unremitting, and guided by the desire, in all cases, to promote the interest of the colony; and that in several important particulars their endeavours had been completely successful; that in others, however, they had not been attended with that success which might have been anticipated, heats and animosities and differences having arisen; that it appeared to the committee some mutual misconception had prevailed; and that they believed they should best discharge their duty by withholding any further opinion on the points in dispute; and were persuaded the practical measures for the future administration of Lower Canada might best be left to the mature consideration of the government responsible for their adoption and execution.”

* See the evidence taken before the committee, and published by order of Parliament.

LETTER VIII.

SHORTLY afterwards the whole of the proceedings of government, since the year 1828 to the present period, were detailed in a very able and lucid statement of my Lord Aberdeen, in which he claims for himself and colleagues the credit of a full and faithful compliance with the recommendations of the Canada committee, as far as the powers of the executive permitted them do so. I have, therefore, abstained from entering into the particulars myself, and prefer giving this narrative to compiling one of my own. It is not only infinitely better done than I could hope to do it, but it is desirable, in such cases, to draw one's information from the most authentic sources. I am neither the advocate nor the panegyrist of any of these administrations—what my opinion of their policy may be is of little consequence; but even if it were much more favourable than it happens to be, I should refrain from expressing it, for I have yet to learn how a poor man can eulogise the character of those who are in power, and yet sustain the reputation of his own sincerity. With the wisdom of their measures I have nothing to do at present; my object is to show there has been no oppression, and that, whatever imputation these proceedings deserve, they are at least exempted from that of unkindness. I must therefore request a careful perusal of the following document :—

In the following pages Lord Aberdeen will attempt to shew that there was sufficient reason to anticipate the entire conciliation of Lower Canada from the accomplishment of the resolutions of the Canada committee, and that, to the utmost of the power of the Crown, those resolutions were, in fact, carried into execution.

The appointment of the Canada committee of 1828 was, on every account, an important proceeding. The redress of grievances had been demanded, not by an isolated party, but by both of those great bodies which divide between them the wealth and political authority of the province. With views essentially dissimilar, or rather hostile, they had concurred in an appeal to the metropolitan government.

By each body of petitioners were deputed agents authorized to interpret their wishes, and to enforce their claims. The committee itself was certainly not composed of gentlemen unfavourable to the views of the great numerical majority of the house of assembly. They prosecuted the enquiry with great diligence and zeal. They examined the agents of both parties, and every other person capable of throwing light on the subject referred to them. None of the questions brought under their notice, either by the petitioners or by the witnesses, was unexplored; and, in the result, a report was made, in which, with an explanation of every known or supposed grievance, were combined suggestions for the guidance of the executive government in applying the appropriate remedies.

The house of assembly in Lower Canada, in their answer to the address with which the administrator of the government opened the session of the provincial parliament in their winter of 1828, characterized this report in terms which may be transcribed as expressing, on the highest local authority, the claims of that do-

cument to respect, as affording a guide at once to the Canadian assembly, and to the ministers of the crown, of the rights to be asserted by the one, and conceded by the other. 'The charges and well-founded complaints,' observed the house, 'of the Canadians before that august senate, were referred to a committee of the House of Commons, indicated by the colonial minister, that committee exhibiting a striking combination of talent and patriotism, uniting a general knowledge of public and constitutional law to a particular acquaintance with the state of both the Canadas, formally applauded almost all the reforms which the Canadian people and their representatives demanded and still demand. After a solemn investigation, after deep and prolonged deliberation, the committee made a report, an impeachable monument of their justice and profound wisdom, an authentic testimonial of the reality of our grievances, and of the justice of our complaints, faithfully interpreting our wishes and our wants. Through this report, so honourable to its authors, his Majesty's government has become better than ever acquainted with the true situation of this province, and can better than ever remedy existing grievances and obviate difficulties for the future.' Language more comprehensive or emphatic could not have been found, in which to record the acceptance by the house of assembly, of the report of 1828, as the basis on which they were content to proceed for the adjustment of all differences. The questions in debate became thenceforth, by the common consent of both parties, reducible to the simple enquiry whether the British government had, to the fullest extent of their lawful authority, faithfully carried the recommendations of the committee of 1828 into execution.

On a review of all the subsequent correspondence, Lord Aberdeen finds himself entitled to state that, in conformity with the express injunctions, and the paternal wishes of the King, his Majesty's confidential advisers have carried into complete effect every suggestion offered for their guidance by the committee of the house of commons.

It is necessary to verify this statement by a careful and minute comparison between the advice received, and the measures adopted. To avoid the possibility of error, the successive recommendations of the committee of 1828 shall be transcribed at length, with no other deviation than that of changing the order in which the topics are successively arranged in their report, an order dictated by considerations of an accidental and temporary nature, but otherwise inconvenient, as postponing many of the weightier topics to some of comparatively light importance.

First, then, the report of 1828 contains the following advice of the Canada committee on the subject of finance—'Although, from the opinion given by the law officers of the crown, your committee must conclude that the legal right of appropriating the revenues arising from the act of 1774 is vested in the crown, they are prepared to say that the real interests of the provinces would be best promoted by placing the receipt and expenditure of the whole public revenue under the superintendence and control of the house of assembly.' 'If the officers above enumerated are placed on the footing recommended,' (that is, in a state of pecuniary independence on the assembly) 'your committee are of opinion that all the revenues of the province, except the territorial and hereditary revenues, should be placed under the control and direction of the legislative assembly.'

The strict legal right of the crown to appropriate the proceeds of the statute 14 G. III., c. 88, being thus directly maintained, the renunciation of that right was recommended, on condition that 'the governor, the members of the executive council, and the judges, should be made independent of the annual votes of the house of assembly for their respective salaries.' What then has been the result? His Majesty has renounced these his acknowledged legal rights, but has not stipulated for the performance, on the part of the assembly, of the condition thus imposed upon them, and, to the present moment, that condition remains unfulfilled. By the British statute 1 and 2 W. IV., c. 73, which was introduced into parliament by his Majesty's then confidential advisers, the appropriation of the revenues of the 14 G. III., is transferred to the assembly absolutely, and without either that qualification which the committee proposed, or any other. Here, then, it cannot be denied that their advice has been followed, not only

with implicit deference, but in a spirit of concession which they did not contemplate.

Secondly. On the subject of the representation of the people in Lower Canada, the opinion of the committee was expressed in the following terms — ‘Your committee are now desirous of adverting to the representative system of Lower Canada, with respect to which, all parties seem to agree that some change should take place.’ After detailing the various causes which had led to an inequality in the number of the members of the assembly in favour of the French inhabitants of the seigniories, and therefore to the prejudice of the inhabitants of English origin in the townships, the committee passed from the subject with the following general remark. ‘In providing a representative system for the inhabitants of a country which is gradually comprehending within its limits newly peopled and extensive districts, great imperfections must necessarily arise from proceeding in the first instance on the basis of population only. In Upper Canada, a representative system has been founded on the compound basis of territory and population. This principle, we think, might be advantageously adopted in Lower Canada.’

It was with the entire concurrence of his Majesty’s government, that the legislature of Lower Canada assumed to themselves the duty of giving effect to this part of the advice of the committee. That report had laid down the general principle that, with one exception, ‘all changes, if possible, be carried into effect by the local legislature themselves;’ and to that principle the ministers of the crown adhered, even in a case where the dominant majority of the assembly had an interest directly opposed to that of the great body of English inhabitants, for whose special relief the new representation bill was to be enacted. Such a bill was accordingly passed, and was reserved for the signification of his Majesty’s pleasure. It actually received the royal assent, and is, at this day, the law of the province.

In this case, also, the concessions made to the Canadian inhabitants of French origin were far greater than the authors of the report of 1828 could have had in contemplation. The Upper Canadian principle of combining territory and population, as the basis of elective franchise, was *not* adopted in Lower Canada: the assembly substituted for it a new division of the country, of which the effect has been to increase rather than to diminish the disproportion between the number of members returned by the English and those representing the French Canadian interest. This result of the bill was distinctly foreseen by the official advisers of the crown, and it became the subject of grave deliberation whether his majesty should be advised to acquiesce in a scheme which followed the advice of the Canada committee, so far indeed as to effect a material change in the representative body, and so far as to give to the English settlers a few more voices in the assembly, but not so far as to secure to them any additional weight in the deliberations of that house. It is not within the object of this minute to defend or to explain the motives of the ultimate decision in favour of the bill. For the present purpose it is enough to say, that the acceptance of it gave to the Canadians of French origin far more than the report of 1828 authorised them to expect.

Thirdly. Inferior only in importance to the topics already noticed, is that of the independence of the judges, respecting which the following passage may be extracted from the report of 1828:—‘On the other hand, your committee, while recommending such a concession on the part of the crown,’ (the concession, that is, of the revenue), ‘are strongly impressed with the advantage of rendering the judges independent of the annual votes of the house of assembly for their respective salaries. Your committee are fully aware of the objections in principle, which may be fairly raised against the practice of voting permanent salaries to the judges who are removable at the pleasure of the crown; but being convinced that it would be inexpedient that the crown should be deprived of the power of removal, and having well considered the public inconvenience which might result from their being left in dependence on the annual vote of the assembly, they have decided to make the recommendation, in their instance, of a permanent vote of salary.’

Thus the Canada committee of 1828 were of opinion that the judges ought to be

independent of the assembly for their incomes, but ought to continue liable to removal from office at the pleasure of the Crown. Yet so far have the British government been from meting out relief to the province grudgingly, or in any narrow spirit, that they have left nothing unattempted which could secure to the judges, not merely that pecuniary independence which the committee advised, but that independent tenure of office also, which their report expressly dissuaded. In the adjacent province of Upper Canada, both objects have been happily accomplished. In his despatch of the 8th February 1831, No. XXII., the Earl of Ripon explained to Lord Aylmer the course of proceeding which had been adopted for asserting the independence of the judges in this kingdom, and signified to the governor his Majesty's commands to avail himself of the earliest opportunity for proposing to the legislative council and assembly of Lower Canada, the enactment of a bill declaring that the commissions of all the judges of the supreme courts should be granted to endure their good behaviour, and not during the royal pleasure; and Lord Aylmer was further instructed, in the name and on the behalf of his Majesty, to assent to a bill for carrying that object into effect. Lord Ripon, however, declared it to be, of course, an essential condition of his arrangement, that 'an adequate and permanent provision should be made for the judges.' It remains to state the result. A bill was passed by the house of assembly, by which, indeed, the tenure of the judicial office was made to depend on the good behaviour of the judges, and by which a provision, adequate in amount, was made for them. But that provision was so granted as to be liable to be diminished or taken away by the annual votes of the house of assembly. To this measure, so popular in its general character or pretensions, were also 'tacked' (to adopt the usual parliamentary phrase) clauses by which a right to dispose of the territorial revenue of the Crown was asserted, and by which all the public officers in the colony,—the governor himself not being expressly excepted—were made amenable to a tribunal, to be constituted for the trial of all impeachments preferred by the representatives of the people. Such was the return made to an act of grace, which the Canada Committee themselves had expressly dissuaded. To have acquiesced in it would have involved a sacrifice of whatever is due to the dignity of the King, and to the liberties of his Majesty's subjects. His Majesty's assent was, therefore, withheld, though not without the expression of the deepest regret, and the most distinct offer to assent to any other bill for establishing the independence of the judges, which should be exempt from such objections. The house of assembly, however, have never since tendered an act of that nature for the acceptance of his Majesty, or of his Majesty's representative in the province.

Fourthly.. The next topic is that of the composition of the legislative and executive councils, respecting which the following suggestions occur in the report of 1828 :— 'One' (it is said) 'of the most important subjects to which their inquiries have been directed, has been the state of the legislative councils in both the Canadas, and the manner in which these assemblies have answered the purposes for which they were instituted. Your committee strongly recommend that a more independent character should be given to these bodies; that the majority of their members should not consist of persons holding offices at the pleasure of the Crown; and that any other measures that may tend to connect more intimately this branch of the constitution with the interest of the colonies, would be attended with the greatest advantage. With respect to the judges, with the exception only of the chief justice, whose presence on particular occasions might be necessary, your committee entertain no doubt that they had better not be involved in the political business of the house. Upon similar grounds, it appears to your committee that it is not desirable that judges should hold seats in the executive council.'

With what scrupulous exactness these recommendations have been followed, will now be shewn. With respect to the judges, Lord Ripon, in the despatch of the 8th of February already quoted, conveyed to Lord Aylmer his Majesty's commands to signify to the legislative council and assembly, his Majesty's settled purpose to nominate, on no future occasion, any judge as a member, either of the executive or of the legislative council of the province. It was added, that the single

exception to that general rule would be, that the chief justice of Quebec would be a member of the legislative council, in order that the members of that body might have the benefit of his assistance in framing laws of a general and permanent character. But his Majesty declared his purpose to recommend, even to that high officer, a cautious abstinence from all proceedings, by which he might be involved in any political contentions of a party nature.

It was not in the power of the King's government to remove from the legislative council any of the judges who had already been appointed to be members of that body; because the terms of the constitutional act secure to them the enjoyment of their seats for life. But in a private despatch of the same date, the four gentlemen who had at that time combined the judicial character with seats in the council, were earnestly exhorted to resign their places as councillors, and were assured that nothing should be wanting to rescue them from any possibility of misconstruction, as to the motives by which that advice had been dictated or obeyed. In point of fact, it was not accepted: but the judges unanimously agreed to withdraw from all active interference in the business of the council, and have never since attended its sittings. The chief justice indeed, as was recommended by the Canada committee, forms the single exception; but even that gentleman, as far as the information of this office extends, has confined his interference within the limits prescribed to him by the committee and by the Earl of Ripon.

The principles laid down by the committee of 1828, for regulating the composition of the legislative council, have been not less strictly pursued in every other respect. Since the date of their report, eighteen new members have been appointed. Of that number there is not one who holds any office or place of emolument at the pleasure of the crown, or who is in any other manner dependent upon the favour of his Majesty, or his official advisers. Of the eighteen new members, ten are of French origin. The total number of counsellors is thirty-five, of whom only seven hold public offices. Amongst them is the bishop of Quebec, who is, in the fullest sense of the term, independent of the crown. The chief justice, whose dependence is altogether nominal, is another. Of the whole body of thirty-five members there remain therefore but five over whom the executive government can, with any reason or plausibility, be said to possess any direct influence.

It is therefore not without a reasonable confidence, that the words in which the committee of 1828 suggest the proper composition of the legislative council, may be adopted as precisely descriptive of the manner in which it is actually composed. 'A more independent character' has been given to that body. The 'majority of the members' does *not* consist of 'persons holding office at the pleasure of the crown.' This branch of the constitution has been connected 'more intimately with the interests of the province,' by the addition of a large body of Canadian gentlemen.

But the case may be carried still further, and it may be shewn that, in respect to the councils, the efforts of Lord Aberdeen's predecessors have left behind them the advice of the Canada Committee. The executive council has also been strengthened by the addition of three members of French origin. A seat was offered Mr. Neilson, the most prominent of the delegates from the house of assembly of 1828, and to M. Papineau, the speaker of that house. It need scarcely be said that it was impossible to give a more decisive proof of the wish of the ministers of the crown, that the composition of the Canadian council should be acceptable to the great majority of the people.

Fifthly. The next in order of the recommendations of that committee relates to the clergy reserves, a subject on which they employed the following language:— 'As your committee entertain no doubt that the reservation of these lands in mortmain is a serious obstacle to the improvement of the colony, they think every proper exertion should be made to place them in the hands of persons who will perform upon them the duties of settlement, and bring them gradually into cultivation.'

Although the views of the committee were thus limited to the improvement of the clergy reserves, the government advanced to the redress of the evil indicated in the report, by a measure, not only far more decisive, but eminently remarkable

for the confidence it expressed in the provincial legislature. The constitutional act having authorised his Majesty, with the advice of the legislative council and assembly, to vary or repeal any of the provisions therein made for the allotment and appropriation of lands for the support of the Protestant clergy, Lord Ripon, availing himself of that enactment, proposed that the power of repeal should be exercised by those bodies, and should be accompanied with a declaration that the reserved lands should merge in the general demesne of the crown. The object of this proposal was to bring the reserves within the reach of the general rules, under which all the waste lands of the province are progressively sold to the highest bidder. To prevent any possible misconception of the views of his Majesty's government, the draft of a bill for the accomplishment of this design was transmitted to Lord Aylmer, with instructions to give his assent if such a law should be presented for his acceptance. To obviate the risk of offence being given, by suggesting to the house of assembly the exact language as well as the general scope of a measure to originate with them, Lord Aylmer was directed to proceed with the most cautious observance of the privileges of that body, and of all the constitutional forms. Anticipating the contingency of the measure being adopted in substance, but with variations in the terms, Lord Ripon further stated that, in that event, the bill was not to be rejected by the governor, but was to be specially reserved for the signification of his Majesty's pleasure.

In obedience to these directions, the bill was introduced into the house of assembly, but did not pass into a law. That it would have effectually removed the grievance pointed out by the Canada committee, has not been disputed; nor can the ministers of the crown be held in any sense responsible for the continuance of an evil for which they had matured so complete a remedy. The only explanation which has ever been given of the failure of the proposal is, that the solicitor-general, Mr Ogden, had used some expressions, whence it was inferred that his Majesty's government would reject the bill if altered in a single word. It is scarcely credible, that this should be an accurate surmise of the real cause of the loss of the Clergy Lands Appropriation Bill. It is not to be believed that the assembly of Lower Canada would have rejected an unobjectionable proposal for the redress of a grievance of which complaint had been long and loudly made, for no other reason than that a public officer, not of the highest rank or consideration, had used some casual expression, in which the ultimate views of his Majesty's advisers were inaccurately explained. To the governor application could have immediately been made, for more authentic information; and, in fact, the tenour of the despatch which had been received by Lord Aylmer, was perfectly well known throughout the province to every person who felt any interest in the subject. The measure has never since been revived; and it must be therefore assumed, that the assembly are less anxious than Lord Ripon supposed, for the removal of this obstruction to agriculture and internal improvement. Be that as it may, the British government are completely absolved from the responsibility thrown upon them by this part of the report of the Canada committee.

Sixthly. That body proceeding to other subjects connected with the wild lands of the province, expressed their opinion that—'It might be well for the government to consider whether the crown reserves could not be permanently alienated, subject to some fixed moderate reserved payment, either in money or in grain, as might be demanded, to arise out of the first ten or fifteen years of occupation.' They add that, 'they are not prepared to do more than offer this suggestion, which appears to them to be worthy of more consideration than it is in their power to give to it; but that in this or in some such mode, they are fully persuaded the lands thus reserved, ought, without delay, to be permanently disposed of.'

In pursuance of this advice, Lord Ripon directed the sale of the crown reserves throughout the province, as opportunity might offer, precisely in the same manner as any other part of the royal demesne. The system has undergone an entire change; and the crown reserves considered as distinct allotments, left in their wild state to draw a progressive-increasing value from the improvement of the vicinity, have no longer any existence.

Seventhly. Another abuse connected with the wild lands of Lower Canada was noticed by the committee, in the following language :—' One of the obstacles which is said greatly to impede the improvement of the country, is the practice of making grants of land in large masses to individuals, who had held official situations in the colony, and who had evaded the conditions of the grant by which they were bound to provide for its cultivation, and now wholly neglect it. Although powers have been lately acquired by the government to estreat those lands, and although we think that, under certain modifications, this power may be advantageously used, we are nevertheless of opinion that a system should be adopted similar to that of Upper Canada, by the levy of a small annual duty on lands remaining unimproved and unoccupied contrary to the conditions of the grant.'

The remedial measure of a tax on wild land, which is suggested in the preceding passage, could, of course, originate only with the representatives of the people, and the house of assembly have not indicated any disposition to resort to that mode of taxation. To such a bill, if tendered by them, his Majesty's assent would have been cheerfully given. Yet the King's government did not omit to avail themselves of all those remedial powers with which the Crown is entrusted. It is little to say (though it may be stated with the strictest truth), that since the date of the report, the system reprobated by the committee, of granting land in large masses to individuals, has been entirely discontinued. It is more material to add, that this change in practice is the result of a series of regulations established, on Lord Ripon's advice, in Lower Canada, and indeed throughout all the other British colonies. The system of gratuitous donations of land has been abandoned absolutely and universally; and during the last three years all such property has been disposed of by public auctions to the highest bidder, at such a minimum price as to ensure the public at large against the waste of this resource by nominal or fictitious sales. This is not the occasion for vindicating the soundness of that policy, which, however, if necessary, it would not be hard to vindicate. It is sufficient for the immediate purpose of this minute to have shown, that on this as on other topics, the ministers of the Crown did not confine themselves to a servile adherence to the mere letter of the parliamentary recommendation, but embraced and gave the fullest effect to its genuine spirit.

Eighthly. The committee sought to relieve the province not only from the evils of improvident reservations and grants of wild lands, but from those incident to the tenures on which the cultivated districts are holden. The following passages on this subject appear in their report :—' They do not decline to offer as their opinion, that it would be advantageous, that the declaratory enactment in the Tenures Act, respecting lands held in free and common socage, should be retained.' ' Your committee are further of opinion that means should be found of bringing into effective operation the clause in the Tenures Act, which provides for the mutation of tenure : and they entertain no doubt of the inexpediency of retaining the seigniorial rights of the crown, in the hope of deriving a profit from them. The sacrifice on the part of the crown would be trifling, and would bear no proportion to the benefit that would result to the colony from such a concession.' ' The committee cannot too strongly express their opinion, that the Canadians of French extraction should in no degree be disturbed in the peaceful enjoyment of their religion, laws, and privileges, as secured to them by the British acts of parliament ; and so far from requiring them to hold lands on the British tenure, they think that when the lands in the seigneuries are fully occupied, if the descendants of the original settlers shall still retain their preference to the tenure of *fief et seigneurie*, they see no objection to other portions of inoccupied lands in the province being granted to them on that tenure, provided that such lands are apart from, and not intermixed with, the townships.'

The British government are again entitled to claim the credit of having, to the utmost possible extent, regulated their conduct by the language, and still more by the spirit of this advice.

No application has been made for the creation of a new seigneurie, as indeed the period contemplated by the committee, when the seigniorial lands would be

fully occupied, still seems very remote. It is almost superfluous to add, that no attempt has been made to superinduce upon those lands any of the rules of the law of England.

The crown also has been prompt to bring into the most effective operation the clause of the Canada Tenures Act which provides for the mutation of tenures. But no lord or constable having hitherto invoked the exercise of the powers of the Crown, they have of necessity continued dormant. Respecting the soccage lands, some explanation seems necessary.

The general principle adopted by the committee in the passage already quoted, is that the inhabitants, both of French and of British origin, should respectively be left in the enjoyment of the law regulating the tenures of their lands derived from their different ancestors, and endeared to either party, by habit, if not by national prejudices. It has already been shown that the French Canadians have enjoyed the benefit of this principle to the fullest possible extent. In the anxiety which has been felt to gratify their wishes, it may not be quite clear that equal justice has been rendered to the inhabitants of British descent. The maintenance of so much of the Canada Tenures Act as rendered the soccage lands inheritable and transmissible according to English law, was most unequivocally recommended in the extracts already made from the report. The provincial legislature, however, in their session of 1829, made provision for the conveyance of such lands in a manner repugnant to this British statute. Of course his Majesty could not be advised to assent to a law which directly contravened an act of parliament. Such, however, was the anxiety of the King's ministers to avoid every needless cause of jealousy, that a bill (1 W. IV, c. 20) was introduced into parliament by Lord Ripon, and passed into a law, in order to relieve his Majesty from this difficulty. The Canadian Act was then accepted. Nor was this all. Striving to multiply, to the utmost possible extent, every proof and expression of respect and confidence towards the provincial legislature, the government introduced into the British statute, which has been last mentioned, a further enactment, of which the effect was to dissolve the Canadian legislature in future from every restraint laid upon them, by any act of parliament regulating the various incidents of the soccage tenure in the province. The barriers erected for the defence of the British settlers by the caution of parliament in the years 1791 and 1826 were thus overthrown, in order that there might be the fewest possible exceptions to the principle of confiding to the Canadian legislature, the regulations of the internal interests of Lower Canada. No one will deny that this unsolicited concession was made in the spirit of the most large and liberal acceptance of the advice of the Canada committee, so far at least as the views and interests of the dominant majority of the house of assembly are concerned.

Ninthly. The next is the subject of the Jesuits' estates; in reference to which the views of the committee of 1828 are expressed as follows:—'With respect to the estates which formerly belonged to the Jesuits, your committee lament that they have not more full information. But it appears to them to be desirable that the proceeds should be applied to the purposes of general education.

Far indeed beyond the letter of this advice did the concessions made by his Majesty, on the advice of Lord Ripon, proceed. Not only were the Jesuits' estates 'applied to the purposes of general education,' but the provincial legislature were authorised to determine what specific purposes of that kind should be preferred, and the proceeds of the estates were placed for that purpose unreservedly under their control. No suggestion has been made impeaching the fulness of this concession, except as far as respects certain buildings occupied for half a century past as barracks. Even if a rent should be payable by the Crown for the use of those barracks (the single question admitting of debate), it would be idle, on that ground, to deny either the importance of the concession made, or the almost unbounded confidence in the house of assembly, perceptible in the form and manner in which the crown renounced to them, not merely a proprietary right, but even an administrative function.

Tenthly. To the positive recommendations which have already been considered,

succeeds another, of which the end is rather to dissuade than to advise the adoption of any specific measure. 'The committee (it is said) are desirous of recording the principle which, in their judgment, should be applied to any alterations in the constitutions of the Canadas, which were imparted to them under the formal act of the British legislature of 1791. That principle is to limit the alterations which it may be desirable to make, by any future British Acts, as far as possible, to such points as, from the relation between the mother country and the Canadas, can only be disposed of by the paramount authority of the British legislature, and they are of opinion that all other changes should, if possible, be carried into effect by the local legislature themselves, in amicable communications with the local government.

So rigidly has this principle been observed, that of two acts of parliament which, since 1821, have been passed with reference to the internal concerns of the province, the common object has been so to enlarge the authority of the provincial legislature as to enable his Majesty to make, with their concurrence, laws to the enactment of which they were positively incompetent. The acts in question are those already noticed, by which the revenues of Geo. III. were relinquished, and the regulation of socage tenures was transferred to the governor, council, and assembly.

Eleventhly. 'The committee' (again to borrow their own words) 'recommended, for the future, that steps should be taken by official securities, and by a regular audit of accounts, to prevent the recurrence of losses and inconveniences to the province, similar to those which had occurred in Mr. Caldwell's case,' and 'as connected with this branch of the enquiry, they recommended that precautions of the same nature should be adopted with regard to the sheriffs.'

In reference to these suggestions, Sir George Murray proposed to the house of assembly, and Lord Ripon repeated the proposal, that the public accountants should pay their balances, at very short intervals, into the hands of the commissary-general, tendering the security of the British treasury for the punctual re-payment of all such deposits. The scheme embraced a plan for a regular audit, and for the punctual demand of adequate securities. Sir James Keimpt and Lord Aylmer were successively instructed to propose to the legislative council and assembly the enactment of such a law. The proposal was accordingly made to the assembly in the year 1829, and was repeated in the year 1832. On each occasion it was the pleasure of the house to pass it by in silence. That they had good reasons for their conduct, it would be unjust and indecorous to doubt. Those reasons, however, remain to this moment completely unknown to the executive government, who, having exhausted all their authority and influence in a fruitless attempt to give effect to this part of the Canada committee's recommendations, cannot, with any reason, be held responsible if they still have failed to produce the advantage contemplated to the province at large.*

Twelfthly. A further recommendation of the committee is conveyed in the report, in the following terms: 'Your committee also beg leave to call the particular attention of the government to the mode in which juries are composed in the Canadas, with a view to remedy any defects that may be found to exist in the present system.'

Here, again, the government pressed upon the house of assembly the importance of giving effect to the views of the committee; and, in fact, a law has received the royal assent, having for its object the improvement of the jury system—an object which has been pursued by those methods which the house of assembly themselves devised or adopted.

* The executive government have not, however, abstained from such measures as were within their own power. They have established a fire-proof vault, with three keys, held by three separate officers of high rank, all of whom must be present whenever it is opened; and they have provided that the receiver general shall not hold in his hands any balance exceeding £10,000 without depositing it in this vault; and that once at least in every year the contents of the vault shall be inspected, or reported on, by five persons named by the governor for the purpose. They have also taken security from the receiver-general to the extent of £10,000, with two sufficient sureties, and have required him to render statements of his accounts on the 1st January, 1st July, and 1st October, in every year.

Thirteenthly. The report proceeds to recommend, 'that the prayer of the Lower Canadians for permission to appoint an agent, in the same manner as agents are appointed by other colonies which possess local legislatures, should be granted.'

His Majesty's government have accordingly repeatedly authorised the governor to assent to any bill which might be passed for that purpose. No such bill has, however, been presented for Lord Aylmer's acceptance. The assembly, in opposition to the advice of the committee, that the habits of other colonies should be followed as a precedent, have chosen to nominate, by resolutions of that house alone, gentlemen deputed to represent them in this kingdom, but who have not, as in other colonies possessing legislative assemblies, been appointed by an act of the entire legislature.

Fourteenthly. Upon the most careful perusal of the report of 1828, no other recommendations can be found addressed to the King's government, although the committee, addressing themselves in that instance rather to the local legislature, have advised that mortgages should be special, and that in proceedings for the conveyance of lands, the simplest and least expensive forms of conveyance should be adopted, upon the principles of the law of England; that form which prevails in Upper Canada, being probably, under all circumstances, the best which could be selected; and that the registration of deeds relating to soccage lands, should be established as in Upper Canada. 'In addition,' it is added, 'to these recommendations, it appears to be desirable that some competent jurisdiction should be established, to try and decide causes arising out of this description of property;' (that is the soccage lands) 'and that circuit courts should be instituted within the townships for the same purposes.'

In these passages the design of the committee was to administer to the relief of the settlers of English origin, and their claims were pressed by Sir George Murray, on the attention of the assembly. Some advance has been accordingly made towards the establishment of a registry of deeds, and of local courts in the townships. Respecting the law of mortgages, and the forms of conveyancing, it does not appear that the assembly have hitherto interposed for the relief of that part of the constituent body.

Concluding at this point the comparison between the advice tendered to the government, and the measures adopted in pursuance of it, it may be confidently asserted, that the general statement made at the commencement of this minute has been substantiated. To the utmost limit of their constitutional power and legitimate influence successive administrations have earnestly and successively laboured to carry the report of 1828 into complete effect in all its parts. It has already been shewn with how cordial an acquiescence that report was received by the house of assembly, with what liberal eulogies the talent, the patriotism, the knowledge, and intimate acquaintance with Canadian affairs, of its authors, were commanded; how that document was hailed as the faithful interpretation of the wishes and wants of the Canadian people; and how the British government were called upon by the house of assembly to look to that report as their guide in remedying existing grievances, and obviating difficulties for the future. That this guide should have been studiously followed, that its suggestions should have been invariably construed and enforced, with no servile adherence to the letter, but in the most liberal acceptance of its prevailing spirit; and yet that such efforts should have been unavailing to produce the expected conciliation, may well justify the deepest regret and disappointment.

(Signed) ABERDEEN.

The perusal of this triumphant document naturally suggests two reflections; first, that the faithful execution of the recommendations of the committee is much more entitled to our approbation than the recommendations themselves; and, secondly, that the Canadian assembly were not to be satisfied with any concession whatever, short of independence.

LETTER IX.

As the memorials addressed to government by the English and French parties were at variance in every material point, a commission of enquiry, of which the governor, Lord Gosford, was head, was sent out to Canada in 1835. Whether this commission was necessary or not, is a matter with which I have nothing to do; I merely mention the fact as illustrative of the earnest desire that existed to compose these unfortunate difficulties, and to ascertain on the spot how much of concession could be made, consistently with retaining the sovereignty of the country. The commissioners were told,

'Your investigations will have for their common object the advancement of the welfare and prosperity of Lower Canada by all methods compatible with the integrity of the empire, and with the authority of the King as supreme in all parts of the British dominions.

'You will ever bear in mind that you are sent on a mission of peace and conciliation. You will therefore proceed in a spirit not of distrust, but of confidence; remembering that much of your success will depend, not only on the zeal, ability, and fairness of your enquiries, but also on your perfect separation from all local and party disputes, and on the unquestionable frankness and impartiality of your general conduct.

'You will observe, that the legislature of Lower Canada must ultimately be the instrument through which any benefits resulting from your mission must, to a very great extent, be accomplished. His Majesty disclaims the intention of provoking any unnecessary parliamentary interference in the internal affairs of the province. To mediate between adverse parties, with an entire respect for the constitutional rights common to them all, is the high office appropriate to his royal station, and this function the King, aided by your enquiries and advice, is anxious on the present occasion to perform.'

The governor was told by Lord Glenelg,

'Your lordship therefore proceeds to Canada to advocate no British interest, and to secure no selfish ends. To maintain the peace and integrity of the empire, and to mediate between contending parties, by whom those blessings have been endangered, is the high and honourable trust confided to you.'

Every thing that was tangible in the celebrated ninety-two resolutions, was put into shape, and separately commented upon for his guidance.

1. It is alleged, observes his Lordship, that the patronage of his Majesty's government in Lower Canada has been exercised in such a manner as to exclude the Canadians of French descent, not only from the larger number, but from all the more lucrative and honourable of the public employments in their native country.*

* Had his Lordship thought proper to have entered into particulars, he might have compiled the following table, to show how utterly false this accusation was. He might

The abuse of patronage is said to extend still farther; some persons are represented as having been preferred to offices, in performing the duties of which they are unable to communicate, except through an interpreter, with the great body of those with whom their affairs are to be transacted. Other successful candidates for office are represented as persons who have made themselves justly offensive to the house of assembly; while, on the other hand, employments created at the instance of that house with a view to public improvements, have, it is alleged, been studiously denied to those whom the governor had reason to believe would be most acceptable to the assembly.

It would be scarcely possible to find any terms more emphatic than those employed by the Earl of Ripon, to enjoin the utmost impartiality in the distribution of public offices in Lower Canada, without reference to national or political distinctions, or to any consideration, except that of superior capacity and fitness for the trust. I adopt my predecessor's instructions in their fullest extent; I concur with him in thinking that personal merit and skill, or knowledge, qualifying a candidate for the vacant trust, are the chief circumstances to which the governor of the province must have regard; and that in the distribution of offices, it is impossible to adhere with any minute exactness to the rule which the numerical proportion subsisting between the two races might afford. But your lordship will remember that between persons of equal or not very dissimilar pretensions, it may be fit that the choice should be made in such a manner as in some degree to satisfy the claims which the French inhabitants may reasonably urge to be placed in the enjoyment of an equal share of the royal favour. There are occasions also on which the increased satisfaction of the public at large with an appointment, might amply atone for some inferiority in the qualifications of the persons selected. To

also have stated that the appointments contained in this table were made under every possible disadvantage, in consequence of the avowed hostility of the French to the government and institutions of the English, and also from the extreme difficulty of finding persons among them competent to discharge the duties assigned to them, and might have illustrated the last assertion by reference to the fact, *that out of two grand juries at this time at Montreal, only one person was found that could write his name.* Of the last seven hundred and thirty-eight appointments the proportion stood thus—

Of French origin	557
Of British and Foreign	181
	738
Of French origin appointed :—	
To Legislative Council	18
To Executive Council	5
To other offices of profit	29 [having held in all 35 offices.
	52 persons.
Of British or Foreign appointed :—	
To the Legislative Council	11
To the Executive	8
To other offices	18 [having held in all 22 offices.
	37 persons.

take the most effectual security in his Majesty's power against the recurrence of any abuse in the exercise of this part of his delegate authority in Lower Canada, the King is pleased to command that, in anticipation of any vacancies which may occur in the higher offices in that province, and especially in all judicial offices, your lordship should from time to time transmit to the Secretary of State, for his Majesty's consideration, the names of any gentlemen resident in Lower Canada, whom you may think best qualified to perform such trusts with advantage to the public. His Majesty proposes to authorize the nomination, as opportunity may occur, of the persons so to be submitted for his choice, having regard to such representations as he may receive from your lordship, or from any other adequate authorities respecting the competency of such persons to the public service. His Majesty is further pleased to direct that all offices in the gift of the king, of which the emolument shall amount to or exceed 200*l.* per annum, shall be granted under the public seal of the province, in pursuance of warrants to be issued by his Majesty for that purpose; and that, except when the successful candidate shall have been previously approved by his Majesty in the manner already mentioned, he should be informed that his appointment is strictly provisional, until his Majesty's pleasure could be known. The control which it is thus proposed to establish over the hitherto unlimited powers of the governor, is not designed and will not be used as a means of securing to his Majesty's confidential advisers in this kingdom any beneficial patronage whatever. I have already expressed my entire approbation of the system hitherto observed, of considering public employments in Lower Canada as properly appropriate to the inhabitants of the province. Without giving a pledge against any deviation from that rule in any solitary case (for such pledge might in the event prove embarrassing to all parties, and prejudicial to the welfare of the province), I can yet have no difficulty in acknowledging the rule as a general maxim from which no departure should be admitted, unless on grounds so peculiar as plainly to justify the exception.

It has also been represented that in some cases the same individual is charged with numerous offices of which the duties are incompatible, either by creating a larger demand on the time of the officer than any one man is able to meet, or by placing him in situations of which the appropriate functions clash and interfere with each other. From the generality of the terms in which this complaint has been made, it has not been in my power to ascertain the extent or reality of this grievance; but in whatever degree it may be found to exist, your lordship will understand that his Majesty expects that it should be completely remedied: that all persons occupying any such incompatible employments should be called upon to renounce such as

they cannot efficiently execute ; and that in future the general rule must be, that no person should be entrusted with any office of which he cannot discharge the proper duties with due punctuality and method in his own person.

2. Complaint is made of an unjust partiality in favour of the use of the English language in all official acts. The foundation of this complaint appears to be, that thirteen years ago a bill for the union of the two Canadas was brought into Parliament by the then government, which, had it passed into a law, would have made English the single official language of both. I have no motive for defending a scheme which was rejected by the House of Commons. A case is also said to have occurred at the distance of about eleven years since, in which the judges refused to entertain an action, because some part of the proceedings had been written in the French language. This is admitted to be an isolated case ; and it is acknowledged that neither in the courts of law nor in the legislature is any preference of one language over the other really shewn. I therefore do not find any grievance on this subject susceptible of a remedy ; nor is it in my power to strengthen the injunctions of Lord Ripon, on the impropriety of any such preference of the English over the French tongue. As, however, the complaint has been again urged by the house of assembly, your lordship will take the earliest opportunity of assuring them, that his Majesty disapproves, and is desirous to discourage and prevent to the utmost of his power, the adoption of any practice which would deprive either class of his subjects of the use in their official acts of that tongue with which early habits and education may have rendered them most familiar. Your lordship will signify your willingness to assent to any law which may give, both to the French and the English inhabitants, the most ample security against any such prejudice.

3. Reference has been made to certain rules of court made by the judges, of which the earliest has been in force for thirty-four years, and the latest for nineteen ; and which are said to be illegal ; and even to amount to a violation of the faith of treaties, and of the pledges of the King and parliament. It is admitted, that until the year 1834, those rules had been followed, without any complaint having been preferred to his Majesty's government : I can, indeed, undertake to say, that until the fact was stated in evidence before the Canada committee of last year, the existence of such rules was altogether unknown in this country. Here, as on so many other topics, I am compelled to revert to the instructions of the Earl of Ripon, and to instruct your lordship to renew the proposal which he authorized Lord Aylmer to make to the provincial legislature, that a commission should be appointed to revise any rules of court made by the judges ; and that on the report of such a commission, all such rules

as are either contrary to law or inexpedient should be revoked. I am not less solicitous than my predecessor, that such an inquiry should be made to embrace all the practice and proceedings of the superior tribunals, with a view to rendering them more prompt and methodical, and less expensive. If the house of assembly should think that these objects can be better effected by any other method than that of a commission of inquiry, you will concur with them in carrying it into effect.

4. It is said that exorbitant fees have been exacted in some public offices. I have met with no proof or illustration of this statement. You will, however, acquaint the house of assembly that his Majesty will be happy to concur with them in the revision of the fees of every office in the province without exception, and in the appointment, should they think it expedient, of a commission of inquiry for the purpose. His Majesty has no wish on the subject, but that the remuneration of all public officers, from the highest to the lowest, should be so regulated as to provide for the efficient discharge of the public service; an object which cannot be secured without a fair remuneration to the persons employed by the public.

5. A complaint is made of the practice of calling upon the judges for extra-judicial opinions on public questions. Here again I know not how to reduce the general statement to any specific form; I can therefore advance no further than to lay down, for your lordship's guidance, the general rule, that you do not call upon the judges for their opinion on any question which, by the most remote possibility, may subsequently come before them for decision. I should scarcely hesitate to interdict the practice of consulting them, altogether and without a solitary exception, if I did not remember that there are public contingencies in which the King would, for the common good of his subjects, be bound to take counsel with his judges. Such cases, however, will be exceedingly infrequent, and will arise only upon some of those great emergencies for which it is scarcely possible, or even desirable, that any definite provision should be made beforehand. To protect the independent exercise of the judicial office, not only against just censure, but even against the breath of suspicion, will be amongst your constant studies and most anxious endeavours.

6. Complaint is made of the interference of the government and the legislative council in the election of members of the assembly. With this general charge, I can deal only in terms equally general. If any such practice prevailed, of which however there is no proof before me, your lordship will avoid with the utmost care every approach to it. I acknowledge, without any reserve or limitation, the duty of the executive government of Lower Canada to abstain altogether from interference, direct or indirect, in the choice of the representatives of the people; such an encroachment on the principles

of the constitution would be unattended even with a plausible prospect of temporary advantage. I earnestly hope that the assembly were misinformed as to the existence of any such practices; for I am well convinced, that it is by very different methods that the legitimate authority and influence of the King's government in Canada is to be maintained.

7. I have read, not without deep concern, the language in which the house of assembly have spoken, in their ninety-two resolutions, of the conduct of the troops during the elections at Montreal: it is described as a sanguinary execution of the citizens by the soldiery. Anxious as I am to conciliate, by all just concessions, the favourable regard of the house, I am bound, by the strict obligations of justice to the British army, to protest against the application of such language to any part of a body, not less distinguished by their humanity and discipline, than by their gallantry. The house had appointed a committee to inquire into those proceedings, and had not received the report of the committee when they proceeded to pronounce this censure on the conduct of his Majesty's troops. The officers had been indicted before a grand jury of the country, and the bills had been thrown out for want of evidence. In assuming to themselves the power to inquire, the assembly exercised their legitimate privilege: in passing a sentence of condemnation pending that inquiry, and in direct opposition to the finding of the proper legal tribunal, they exceeded their proper authority, and acted in opposition to the parliamentary usages of this country. Nor can I receive such an unauthorized expression of opinion with that deference which it is my duty and inclination to show for every judgment of the house, falling within the appropriate sphere of their deliberation.

8. The assembly further complain that there is no method by which legal demands against the government can be enforced in the province. In the absence of any distinct proof or illustration of the fact, I can only express his Majesty's desire that effectual means may be taken for remedying this alleged defect in the law.

9. The too frequent reservation of bills for the signification of his Majesty's pleasure, and the delay in communicating the King's decision upon them, is a grievance of which my inquiries lead me to believe the reality. Your lordship will understand that the power of reserving bills, granted by the Constitutional Act of 1791, is an extreme right, to be employed not without much caution, nor except on some evident necessity. You will also have the goodness to remember the indispensable necessity of transmitting, with the least possible delay, the transcript of every law of which the operation is suspended, for the signification of the royal pleasure; and of accompanying every such transcript with such full and minute explanations as may be necessary for rendering the scope and policy of them perfectly

intelligible, and for explaining the motives by which your lordship may have been influenced in declining to give your decision in the first instance. You will pledge his Majesty's government in this country to the most prompt and respectful attention to every question of this nature which may be brought under their notice.

10. My predecessors in office are charged with having, on various occasions, neglected to convey to the house his Majesty's answers to the addresses presented to him by that body. Whether this statement could be verified by a careful examination of any particular cases, I am unable to state with certainty; nor on such a subject is it fit to make a conjectural statement. Your lordship will, however, assure the house, that his Majesty has been pleased to command, in the most unqualified terms, that every communication that either branch of the provincial legislature may see fit to make to him, be laid before his Majesty immediately on its arrival in this kingdom, and that his Majesty's answer be conveyed to the province with the utmost possible dispatch. The King cannot, however, forget that the delay which may occasionally have taken place in making known in the province his Majesty's decision upon reserved bills, or upon addresses from either house of general assembly, may in some instances have been either occasioned or prolonged by circumstances which no promptitude or zeal in his Majesty's service could have obviated; as, for example, the rigour of the Canadian climate obstructing, during a certain period of the year, the direct approach to Quebec and Montreal, and the imperfect nature of the internal communications through his Majesty's dominions in North America.

11. Much complaint is made of the refusal of information, for which the house of assembly have at different times applied to the governor of the province. After a careful examination of the proceedings of the latest session in which any such applications were made, I have not been able to avoid the conclusion that there is just ground for the complaint. I do not perceive that any advantage would arise from entering in this place into a very exact survey of the communications between the house and the governor respecting the production of papers. It is more useful, with a view to the future, to state the general principle by which your lordship will be guided. I think, then, that the correspondence between your lordship and the secretary of state cannot be considered as forming part of those documents of which the assembly are entitled to demand, as a matter of course, the unreserved and universal inspection or perusal. In the official intercourse between his Majesty and his Majesty's representative in the province, conducted as such intercourse necessarily is, through the intervention of the ministers of the crown, much confidential communication must necessarily occur. Many questions require to be debated

copiously, and in all the various lights in which they may present themselves to the governor or to the secretary of state: and in such a correspondence it is necessary to anticipate emergencies which eventually do not occur, to reason upon hypothetical statements, and even to advert to the conduct and qualifications for particular employments of particular individuals. It would be plainly impossible to conduct any public affairs of this nature, except on such terms of free and unrestrained intercourse. It is no less plainly impossible to give general publicity to such communications, without needless injury to the feelings of various persons, and constant impediment to the public service. A rule which should entitle a popular assembly to call for and make public all the despatches passing between the King's government and his Majesty's local representative, would so obstruct the administration of public affairs, as to produce mischiefs far outweighing the utmost possible advantage of the practice.

In the same manner, there will occasionally be communications, in their own nature confidential, between the governor and many of his subordinate officers, which should also be protected from general publicity.

But though I think it right to make this general reservation against the unlimited production of all public documents, I am ready to acknowledge that the restriction itself may admit and even require many exceptions; and that in the exercise of a careful discretion, the governor, as often as he shall judge it conducive to the general good of the province, may communicate to either branch of the legislature any part of his official correspondence, such only excepted as may have been expressly declared or manifestly designed, by the secretary of state, to be confidential.

But I am not aware of any other document connected with the public affairs of the province, the concealment of which from the assembly would be really useful or justifiable: especially whatever relates to the revenue and expenditure in all their branches, or to the statistics of the province, should be at once and cheerfully communicated to them. For example, it will be desirable to make to the two houses such a communication of the blue books, or annual statistical returns, which are compiled for the use of this department; and your lordship will solicit the assistance of the two houses of the local legislature, in rendering those returns as accurate and as comprehensive as possible. In short, the general rule must be that of entire freedom from reserve. The particular exception, as it arises, must be vindicated by the terms of the preceding instructions, or by some explanation sufficient to show that secrecy was demanded, not for the protection of any private interest, but for the well-being of the province at large. In every case in which the production of any paper,

in answer to any address of either house, may be refused, your lordship will immediately transmit to this office a statement of the case, with an explanation of the grounds of your decision.

12. The occupation as a barrack of the buildings which anciently were part of the Jesuits' college, is strongly reprobated by the assembly. I can only remark that this exception from the general transfer of the Jesuits' estates to their disposal, was made and vindicated by Lord Ripon on a ground which has rather acquired a new force, than lost any of its original weight. After an occupation of those buildings for this purpose, for much more than half a century, there has accrued to the Crown a prescriptive title, of which, however, his Majesty has never sought to avail himself. The King is, on the contrary, anxious that the buildings should be restored, as promptly as possible, to their original use; nor will that measure be delayed for a single day, after other and adequate provision shall have been made for the accommodation of the troops; but it is needless to remark that his Majesty has no funds at his disposal for that purpose. The proposed transfer of all the sources of local revenue to the house of assembly has deprived the King of the means of providing for this or any similar service. It must rest, therefore, with the house to erect or purchase other barracks sufficiently commodious for the garrison, upon which the board of ordnance will immediately issue the necessary instructions for evacuating the buildings at present occupied for that purpose.

13. The lease of the forges of St. Maurice to Mr. Bell has been made, and is now irrevocable. I do not conceal my regret, that this property was not disposed of by public auction to the highest bidder. Whatever arrangements may be hereafter settled respecting the territorial revenue, it will be necessary to prevent the granting of any crown property on lease in the same manner by private contract, and more especially when the contractor is a member of the legislative council.

14. Impediments are said to have been needlessly raised to the endowment of colleges by benevolent persons. I fear it is not to be denied, that some unnecessary delay in deciding upon bills reserved for his Majesty's consideration, having such endowments for their object, did occur: a delay chiefly attributable to political events and the consequent changes of the colonial administration in this kingdom. I have no wish to withhold a frank acknowledgment of error, when really due, to the house of assembly, because I am persuaded that in that frankness they will perceive the best assurance of the sincerity with which, on behalf of the ministers of the crown, a pledge is given for the more prompt and exact attention hereafter to every measure which has for its object the institution in the province of any colleges or schools for the advancement of Christian knowledge or sound learning.

15. On the subject of the clergy reserves, of which complaint is still made, the arrangements proposed by Lord Ripon leave his Majesty nothing further to concede. The whole question has been referred to the decision of the provincial legislature. To obviate misconceptions, the draft of a bill for the adjustment of the claims of all parties was framed under his lordship's direction, and brought into the house of assembly. Anticipating the possibility that this bill might undergo amendments in its progress through the two houses, materially affecting its character, Lord Ripon had instructed the governor, in that event, not to refuse his assent, but to reserve the bill for the signification of his Majesty's pleasure. The loss of the bill is, however, ascribed to the solicitor-general having, in his place in the house, stated that no amendment would be permitted. The solicitor-general's expressions may have been misunderstood; but if this was their purport, not only was the statement unauthorised, but directly at variance with the spirit of the instructions of the home government. I much regret the misapprehension, in whatever cause it may have originated. It may perhaps be ascribed to the fact, that Lord Aylmer did not think himself at liberty to produce to the house the Earl of Ripon's despatches on the subject. Your lordship will immediately communicate copies of them, inviting the council and assembly to resume the consideration of the question, upon the terms of Lord Ripon's proposal, to every part of which they may be assured of his Majesty's continued adherence.

16. Lord Aylmer's refusal to issue a writ for the election of a new member of the assembly, upon the declaration of the house that M. Mondelet's seat had become vacant, is condemned by that body as a violation of their rights. The question has lost much, if not all, of its practical importance since the passing of the recent law for vacating the seats of members accepting places of emolument under the crown. Still, in justice to Lord Aylmer, I am bound to affirm the accuracy of the distinction in reference to which he appears to have acted. In cases where the vacancy of a seat may, consistently with existing usages, be notified by the house to the governor without assigning the cause, he is bound to presume that the adjudication of the house is right, and must carry it into effect by issuing a new writ. But in cases where usage requires that in the notification to the governor the cause of vacancies should be stated, then, if the cause alleged be insufficient in point of law, the governor is not at liberty to comply with the request of the house. The concurrence of the governor and the house in any measure, cannot render it legal, if it be prohibited by the law of the land. To that rule obedience is emphatically due by those to whom the constitution has assigned the high functions of legislation and of executive government. If, therefore, Lord Aylmer rightly judged that M. Mondelet's

seat
line
If h
ship
peto
a lay
seen
follo
17
whic
and
Maj
whi
allo
out
have
cove
ship
pany
that
bute
tion
renc
at le
secu
publ
ings
and
prom
for
have
in th
inse
I
to t
gen
cou
I m
deg
nat
bre
mir
Sir
Car
app

seat had not been lawfully vacated, his lordship adhered to the strict line of duty in declining to issue the writ for which the house applied. If he entertained a serious and honest doubt on the subject, his lordship was bound to pause until that doubt could be removed by competent judicial authority. The subsequent introduction by statute of a law for vacating seats in such cases as that of M. Mondelet's, would seem sufficiently to establish that his acceptance of office was not followed by that legal consequence.

17. I now approach the case of Sir John Caldwell. It is a subject which has uniformly excited the deepest regret of my predecessors; and I need hardly add, that I partake largely of that feeling. His Majesty's government have offered to the province every reparation which it has been in their power to make, for the original error of allowing monies to accumulate in the hands of a public officer, without taking full securities for the faithful discharge of his trust: they have placed at the disposal of the assembly whatever could be recovered from Sir John Caldwell, or from his sureties; and your lordship will now, on the terms to which I have referred in my accompanying despatch, be authorized to surrender to the appropriation of that house, the only funds by which his Majesty could have contributed towards making good the defalcation. Every practical suggestion has also been made to the assembly, for preventing the recurrence of similar losses. Nothing, in short, has been left undone, or at least unattempted, to mitigate the evil which the inadequacy of the securities taken from Sir John Caldwell, and the accumulations of public money in his hands, occasioned. Perhaps the legal proceedings against his property might be carried on with greater activity and effect; and if so, your lordship will lend your aid with the utmost promptitude to that object. It is, indeed, much to be lamented, that for so many years together, on such a case as this, the law should have proved inadequate to secure for the public such property as was in the possession of the defaulter, or his securities, at the time of his insolvency.

I feel, however, that incomplete justice has hitherto been rendered to the people of Lower Canada, in Sir John Caldwell's case. That gentleman has been permitted to retain his seat at the legislative council, and still holds that conspicuous station. Whatever sympathy I may be disposed to feel for individual misfortune, and in whatever degree the lapse of years may have abated those feelings of just indignation which were provoked by the first intelligence of so gross a breach of the public trust, I cannot in the calm and deliberate administration of justice, hesitate to conclude that it is not fitting that Sir John Caldwell should retain a seat in the legislature of Lower Canada: his continuance in that position, and his management and apparent possession of the estates which formerly belonged to him

in his own right, must exhibit to the people at large an example but too justly offensive to public feeling. Your lordship will cause it to be intimated to Sir John Caldwell, that the King expects the immediate resignation of his office of legislative councillor; and that in the event of the failure of that reasonable expectation, his Majesty will be compelled, however reluctantly, to resort to other and more painful methods of vindicating the government of the province against the reproach of indifference to a diversion of public money from its legitimate use to the private ends of the accountant.

I am not aware that there remains a single topic of complaint unnoticed, either in the preceding pages or in my accompanying instructions to your lordship and your fellow commissioners. It has been my endeavour to meet each successive topic distinctly and circumstantially, neither evading any of the difficulties of the case, nor shrinking from the acknowledgment of any error which may be discovered in the administration of affairs so various and complicated. I dismiss the subject for the present, with the expression of my earnest hope that his Majesty's efforts to terminate these dissensions may be met by all parties in the spirit of corresponding frankness and goodwill; assured that, in that case, his Majesty will not be disappointed in that which is the single object of his policy on this subject—the prosperity of Canada, as an integral and highly important member of the British empire.

LETTER X.

THE arrival of the Commissioners of Inquiry in Canada put an end to all further prospect of grievances, and at once damped the hopes and awakened the anger of the disaffected. The very act of investigating the complaints which they themselves had preferred was made a subject of invective; the commission was denounced as an insult to the assembly, whose voice alone should be heard, and whose decisions neither admitted of question by the council nor by the government. Knowing that the instructions given to the commissioners were of the most conciliatory description, that every change would be effected that they had desired, and that, by their own showing, they would be compelled to be tranquil, they promptly changed their ground, abandoned the untenable local topics, and boldly attacked the constitution. The mask was now thrown off, and republicanism openly avowed as their object. That this development was prematurely hastened by the unexpected and immediate concession of their requests, and their object disclosed sooner than

they
lately
ceive
desir
legisl
blish
rity.
no m

'The
state o
aristoc
as that
grand
public

As
impor
I sha
and u
lished

'In
convinc
a revol
rious si
the obje

'It r
terests
men ha
a hatre
detest t
quill; it
which s
revolut
be delay
longer t
'The g
no humi
tion, a
this sov
means o
have m
they wi
country
not hast

In a

'It (c
it will c
are at p
thoritie
stacles

they had intended, is evident from their address to the governor, so lately as in 1831, whom it was their interest and intention to deceive. Early in that year they said to him, 'It will be our earnest desire that harmony may prevail among the several branches of the legislature, that full effect may be given to the constitution as established by law, and that it may be *transmitted unimpaired to posterity.*' Now different language was held, and that there might be no mistake, Mr. Papineau said :

'The people of this province were now merely preparing themselves for a future state of political existence, which he trusted would be neither a monarchy nor an aristocracy. He hoped Providence had not in view for his country a future so dark as that it should be the means of planting royalty in America, near a country so grand as the United States. He hoped, for the future, America would give republics to Europe.'

As proofs are always preferable to assertions, and as this is too important a charge to rest on the authority of an anonymous writer, I shall adduce a few more instances where the avowal is distinct and unequivocal. In a French journal devoted to the party, published in Montreal, we find the following sentiments :

'In examining with an attentive eye what is passing around us, it is easy to convince oneself that our country is placed in very critical circumstances, and that a revolution will perhaps be necessary to place it in a more natural and less precarious situation. A constitution to remodel, a nationality to maintain—these are the objects which at present occupy all Canadians.

'It may be seen, according to this, that there exist two parties, of opposite interests and manners—the Canadians and the English. These first-born Frenchmen have the habits and character of such. They have inherited from their fathers a hatred to the English ; who, in their turn, seeing in them the children of France, detest them. These two parties can never unite, and will not always remain tranquil ; it is a bad amalgamation of interests, of manners, of language, and of religion, which sooner or later must produce a collision. It is sufficiently believed that a revolution is possible, but it is believed to be far off ; as for me, I think it will not be delayed. Let them consider these words of a great writer, and they will no longer treat a revolution and a separation from the mother country as a chimera—'The greatest misfortune for man politically,' said he, 'is to obey a foreign power ; no humiliation, no torment of the heart, can compare to this. The subjected nation, at least if she be not protected by some extraordinary law, ought not to obey this sovereign.'—We repeat it, an immediate separation from England is the only means of preserving our nationality. Some time hence, when emigration shall have made our adversaries our equals in number, more daring, and less generous, they will deprive us of our liberties, or we shall have the same fate as our unhappy countrymen the Acadians. Believe me, this is the fate reserved for us, if we do not hasten to make ourselves independent !'

In a pamphlet written by Mr. Papineau, he says of the French :

'It (the French party) has not, it ought not to entertain a shadow of hope that it will obtain any justice whatsoever from any of the authorities constituted as they are at present in this country. If it would entertain the same opinion of the authorities in England that it entertains of the authorities in this country, these obstacles could easily be overcome.'

He then claims the colony as belonging solely to his party :

'In consequence of the facilities afforded by the administration for the settlement of Britons within our colony, they came in shoals to our shores to push their fortunes.'

'They have established a system of paper-money, based solely upon their own credit, and which our *habitans* have had the folly to receive as ready money, although it is not hard cash, current among all nations, but on the contrary, which is of no value, and, without the limits of the proyluce, would not be received by any person.'

To obstruct the arrival of emigrants as much as possible, resort was had to one of those measures so common in Canadian legislation, in which the object of the bill is at variance with its preamble. An Act was passed, 6 Will. IV., c. 13, which, under the speciously humane pretence of creating a fund to defray the expense of medical assistance to sick emigrants, and of enabling indigent persons of that description to proceed to the place of their destination, a capitation tax was imposed, which affected emigration to Upper as well as Lower Canada; and the operation of it was such, that even an inhabitant of the former province, returning to his home by the St. Lawrence, was liable to this odious impost.

When every topic appeared to be exhausted, Mr. Rodier, a member of the assembly, was so fortunate as to have discovered a new one, in the cholera, which he charged the English with having introduced among them. Absurd as this may seem to be, it was not without its effect, and the simple-minded credulous peasantry were induced to believe it of a people of whom they had lately heard from their leaders nothing but expressions of hatred and abuse.

'When I see,' said he, 'my country in mourning, and my native land presenting to my eye nothing but one vast cemetery, I ask, what has been the cause of all these disasters? and the voices of thousands of my fellow citizens respond from their tombs,—it is emigration. It is not enough to send amongst us avaricious egotists, without any other spirit of liberty than could be bestowed by a simple education of the counter, to enrich themselves at the expense of the Canadians, and then endeavour to enslave them—they must also rid themselves of their beggars, and cast them by thousands on our shores—they must send us miserable beings, who after having partaken of the bread of our children, will subject them to the horrors of hunger and misery; they must do still more—they must send us, in their train, pestilence and death. If I present to you so melancholy a picture of the condition of this country, I have to encourage the hope that we may yet preserve our nationality, and avoid those future calamities, by opposing a barrier to this torrent of emigration. It is only in the house of assembly* we can place our hopes, and it is only in the choice the Canadians make in their elections, they can ensure the preservation of their rights and political liberties.'

Things were now rapidly drawing to a crisis. The legislature was assembled by the new governor, and addressed by him in a long and

* In a work published in France, for circulation in Canada, a very intelligible hint is given on this subject. 'As the house of assembly votes rewards for the destruction of wolves, it is no less urgent to devise means to prevent immigration from being a calamity for these colonies.'

conciliatory speech, in which the evils of internal dissensions were pointedly and feelingly alluded to, and concessions sufficiently numerous made to have gratified the vanity and appeased the irritation of any other people than those to whom it was addressed. Among other things, they were informed, that intending to remedy the evils of persons holding a plurality of offices, he had begun with the highest, and discharged some of his executive councillors. This announcement was received in the same spirit as all others of a similar nature; and his excellency having cancelled the commission of one gentleman, in consequence of his holding a legal appointment *under the house*, the assembly thought that so good an example could not be followed too speedily, and immediately dismissed him from the one he retained, because he *was in the council*. A supplicant for money must learn to subdue his feelings, and he who asks for bread must be prepared to encounter insolence as well as destitution; a dignified demeanour is but too apt to render poverty ridiculous, and a wise man generally lays it aside, to be worn on the return of happier days. The local government was in great pecuniary distress; they were humble suitors at the portals of the house, and showed their discretion, in regarding as a mistake what was intended as an insult. Warrants were also tendered to each branch of the legislature for their contingent expenses; as these charges contained, on the part of the house, the salary of Mr. Roebuck and Mr. Vigor, agents in England, not appointed conjointly with the council, but by simple resolutions of the house, such an appropriation without law had always been violently opposed, and the constitutionalists, fearing such a sacrifice of principle would be made, had, previously to the meeting of the legislature, made it the subject of much animadversion, and presented the governor with a resolution, 'That the claim which has recently been insisted upon by the house of assembly, and occasionally acted upon by the legislative council, to obtain, by separate addresses to the governor, advances of unappropriated money, under the plea of defraying contingent expenses, but in reality embracing the payment of salaries or allowances not legally established, and more particularly as regards the pretensions of the assembly for expenses not incurred or to be incurred for the business of the sessions of that house, is altogether unfounded in law, unsupported by parliamentary usage, and subversive of the rights and liberties of the British subject.'

Independent of the constitutional objection to the application of the public funds to the payment of persons whom the legislative council had not only not concurred in appointing, but to whose mission they had pointedly objected, they deeply deplored that so extraordinary a concession should be made, as the payment of every demand of that body that obstinately persisted in refusing to make any vote for the

support of the government. Peace, however, was deemed paramount to every other consideration, and that nothing might be left undone to attain it, even this sacrifice was not considered too great.

They were now called upon, in the usual manner, to provide for the support of the judges and the officers of government, the public chest containing at the time 130,000*l.* sterling.

The house had no sooner retired from hearing this address, than their speaker adopted his usual mode of inflaming his party by the most violent invectives against all the authorities both at home and in the colony, charging the one with deceit and hypocrisy in their words, and the other with oppression and speculation in their deeds. In a short time he brought matters to that condition he had so long desired.

The house voted an address to his Majesty, in which they announced that they had postponed the consideration of the arrears, and determined to refuse any future provision for the wants of the local administration, in order the better to insist upon the changes which they required from the imperial authorities. Their utmost concession (and they desired it might not be taken for a precedent) was to offer a supply for six months, that time being allowed to his Majesty's government and the British parliament to decide on the fundamental alterations of the constitution and other important measures included in the demands of the assembly.

In this bill of supply, which was for six months only, and merely passed for the purpose of throwing the odium of rejection on the other branch of the legislature, they excluded the salaries of the councilors, of their assistant clerk, one of the judges, some usual incidental charges of the civil secretary's office, besides other important salaries; and, as they had hoped, it was not concurred in. This was the first time they had left the executive without the means of conducting the government, for the sole and avowed purpose of procuring changes in the constitution. Of the confusion and distress which this repeated refusal of the assembly to co-operate with the other branches of the legislature produced in the province, it is difficult to convey any adequate idea.

The province was far advanced in the fourth year since there had been any appropriation of provincial funds to the use of government; and although a sum, temporarily contributed from the British Treasury, had relieved the civil officers, so far as to give them one year's salary during that period, the third year was passing away during which they had not had the smallest fraction of their earnings in the service of the public. The distress and embarrassment which this state of circumstances inflicted on the functionaries of the province, whose private resources are generally very limited, were as humiliating as they were unmerited. Many were living on money borrowed at an

exorbitant interest; some could not but be reduced to the verge of ruin; and to show that this suffering of individuals was not unattended with danger to the general welfare, it may be enough to remark, without painfully dwelling on private circumstances, that the judges of the country were amongst those who were left to provide for their subsistence as best they might, after three year's stoppage of their official incomes.

This condition of affairs might naturally have been expected to terminate with the commencement of the present session. In the two previous years the supplies had failed in the assembly, either from differences with the governor for the time being, or from the refusal of funds for the payment of their contingent expenses; but when the provincial parliament last met, these grounds of dissension were removed. You will not perceive (the commissioners observed) amongst the grounds assigned for prolonging the financial difficulties, any complaint against the existing provincial administration, or the assertion of any demerit in the parties who continued to be deprived of their lawful remuneration. No local cause of quarrel was alleged, of which the settlement might be indispensable before the public business could proceed; on the contrary, it was stated openly and without disguise, that changes of a political nature were the end in view, and that until certain acts should be done, competent to no other authority than the imperial parliament, and comprising organic changes in the constitution, by virtue of which the assembly itself existed, that the house would never make another pecuniary grant to the government. Thus the public servants, no parties to the contest, were afflicted merely as instruments, through whose sufferings to extort concessions totally independent of their will to grant or to refuse. It is scarcely necessary to remark, that the objects, for the enforcement of which even such means as these were thought expedient, had never been positively refused, but had only been referred to the commission of inquiry, in order that, before the executive branch of the government undertook to recommend changes of a very important and extensive nature, it might receive advice from persons entrusted with the confidence of his Majesty. This, however, did not prove enough. Apprehensions of delay from the commission, and doubts of the freedom with which it would act, were expressed in the address; and the assembly intimated, with frankness, that it would allow of no deliberation; that either its demands must be acceded to forthwith, or that it would employ its power over the supplies, to render the government of the country impossible.

The sufferings of these officers was a matter of undisguised satisfaction to the disaffected, who made them the subject of much facetious comment on every occasion. The commissioners very naturally observed on this peculiarity:

'If proof were wanting that national distinctions do exercise an influence on the course of affairs in this province, it might be supplied in the absence of all sympathy on the part of the house of assembly in the existing distress of the public officers. Those officers of government are for the most part of English origin, which, we think, explains the treatment of the public functionaries by the members of assembly. If both spoke the same language, used the same habits, and had those ordinary feelings of sympathy which must follow from any familiar intercourse in private life, we do not believe it possible that one of the two could find resolution to plunge indiscriminately the whole of the other class into difficulties, not for any acts of their own, not even for any obnoxious sentiments they might hold, but in order that, by their losses, a third party might be induced, through compassion, to surrender objects desired at its hands.'

Such, however, were the means through which they hoped to effect their object, which they now announced as follows :

1. That the legislative council should be elective.
2. That the executive council should be converted into a ministry responsible to the assembly.
3. That the Tenures' Act and Land Company's Act should be repealed.
4. That the Crown revenues should be surrendered unconditionally.
5. That the management of the waste lands should be given up to them.

And they further declared, that they would pay no arrears, or vote any civil list, until these demands should be complied with.

Here the government also made its stand, and very properly said, We shall concede no further; these demands involve a surrender of the colony to one party within it, and we are not justified in granting them, consistently with the duty we owe to the crown, to the public, or to the colonists of British origin.

In order that you may understand the bearings of these demands, which are now the real points in dispute (all others having been disposed of), it will be necessary for me to consider them separately; but as I have already shewn you that 'nationality,' 'independence,' and republicanism were their avowed ultimate objects, and also the *quo animo* in which they were demanded, you may naturally infer that they themselves considered them as materially contributing to that end, and essential to prepare the country (as Mr. Papineau described it) for a future state of political existence, which he trusted would be neither a monarchy nor an aristocracy. Indeed this has never been denied any where but in England, and here only by a party who are desirous of applying the same elective principle to the house of lords, most probably with the view of producing a similar result.

1st. The first demand was that the legislative council should be elective.

The legislative council is contemporaneous with the house of as-

sembly, owing its existence to the constitutional act of 1791, and was the first instance known in the colonies of such a body having a distinct existence, separate and apart from the executive council. It consisted at first of fourteen members, and, in October 1837, of forty, eighteen of whom were French Canadians; but as there were several unable to attend from infirmities and old age, Lord Gosford reported that not more than thirty-one could be assembled, thirteen English and eighteen French members, of whom three at most were persons holding office under government. This body has, as far as the dependent nature of a colony permits, analogous duties to perform to those of the house of lords, and, when judiciously selected, is essential to deliberate and useful legislation, to sustain the prerogative, to uphold the connexion between the mother country and the colony, and to give security to the hundred and fifteen thousand subjects of British origin in the province. This much was admitted even by the commissioners of inquiry, whose reluctant tribute appears not to have been given until ingenuity had sought in vain for a better substitute.

'In the revision and correction of bills sent up to them by the assembly, we have no doubt, however, that the council has often rendered valuable services to the country, and has no less fulfilled one, perhaps, of its peculiar functions, by its rejection of measures which the constitution would not admit, thereby relieving the representative of the King from the duty of withholding the royal assent to them: such as bills in which the assembly encroached upon the royal prerogative, tacked to their grants of money conditions deemed in England unparliamentary, or took it upon themselves to attempt the repeal of a British statute.'

It has been the unceasing aim of Mr. Papineau and his party to libel this body as a combined faction, actuated by interest alone to struggle for the support of a corrupt government, adverse to the rights and wishes of the people. One of the charges brought against it was that there were too many persons in it holding office, and that complaint was not without its foundation. Indeed it was so apparent, that, from 1829 to 1835, twenty-one new councillors were appointed wholly independent of government. Another charge preferred against it was the rejection in ten years of 169 bills sent to them by the other house, as contained in the following tables:—

YEAR.	Rejected by the Council.	Amended by Council.	TOTAL.
1822.	8	0	8
1823.	14	2	16
1824.	12	5	17
1825.	12	5	17
1826.	19	8	27
1827.	No Session.	No Session.	No Session.
1828 } 1829 }	16	8	24
1830.	16	8	24
1831.	11	3	14
1832.	14	8	22
TOTAL	122	47	169

This charge has been reiterated in the other colonies, where the explanation never followed, and in some instances, from the circumstantial and formal manner in which it is made, has not been without its effect. It will be observed that they are charged with rejecting 169 instead of 122 bills, every exercise of the constitutional right of amendment being considered equivalent to rejection. Every successive year the bills which had been disagreed to were again transmitted to them, to swell by their rejection the amount of their offences. Deducting the number produced by this multiplying process, the amount of bills rejected falls under forty, which is an average of less than four a year. In addition to this formidable list which had not been concurred in, another interminable one was offered of those which had not been considered, the explanation of which I find in the words of the commissioners:—

‘ Much obloquy has also, we must assert, been unjustly attempted to be thrown on the council for the rejection of bills sent up to them late in the session, when there were no longer the means of forming a house in the assembly to take into consideration any amendments that might be made on them.’

Instead of preferring complaints against this body for acts of omission, they might have been more successful had they rested satisfied with charging them with acts of commission; for, although they can be justified for their rejection of pernicious bills, what shall we say to their want of firmness in afterwards passing some of those very bills, under the dictation of that assembly that was arming itself with fresh charges from these instances of its weakness? But the time had now arrived when it was alike independent of the crown and the people, and could neither be influenced by the timid fears of the executive, nor the violence and invective of the assembly. So long as a majority of office-holders and people connected with govern-

ment had seats at the council board, the factious majority of the house could exercise a control over the council, through the state of dependence and subjugation in which they kept the executive. Every governor had lately shewn a desire to win the honour of pacifying Canada,—had receded and conceded, offered conciliation and endured affronts, borne and foreborne, in a manner that it is quite humiliating to contemplate,—and had used his influence in the legislative council to aid in the execution of instructions which, although they are justly entitled to the merit of kind intentions, have not so much claim upon our admiration on the score of their merit or their dignity. We find, indeed, the aid of the secretary for the colonies called in, and Mr. Stanley reproving them for even insinuating a doubt of the loyalty of these omnipotent men, and regretting that any word had been introduced which should have the appearance of ascribing to a class of his Majesty's subjects of one origin views at variance with the allegiance which they owe to his Majesty. The house had, however, by their incessant complaints, purified the board of every person upon whom this influence could be exerted. This independence of executive influence is thus alluded to by Lord Aylmer:—
'It would be difficult, perhaps, to find in any British colony a legislative body more independent of the Crown than the legislative council of Lower Canada; *and so far am I from possessing, as the King's representative, any influence there, that I will not conceal that I have, on more than one occasion, regretted the course adopted by the council.* But whilst I make this confession, I will not deny but I have, on the contrary, much satisfaction in avowing that I repose great confidence in that branch of the colonial legislature. It is a confidence derived from my knowledge of the upright, independent, and honourable character of the great majority of those who compose it, and of their firm and unalterable attachment to his Majesty's person and government, and to the constitution of the colonies as by law established.' The council had actually become, what it ought to be, the representative of the independent people of the country—of the wealth, intelligence, and virtue of the colony. The assembly, therefore, voted that it was more mischievous than ever, and resolved that it should be elective. It is but due to them here to say that this idea is not thought to have originated in Canada, but to have been communicated to them, with other equally judicious advice, from England. It is certain that it has been advocated here, if not strongly, at least warmly, and was supported in the house of lords by Lord Brougham. From a careful perusal of what his lordship said upon the occasion, which was declamatory and not argumentative, I am inclined to believe it received his support, not so much because he thought so, as because the ministry did not think

so, as the whole speech appears to be the effect of strongly excited feelings.

Any organic change in the legislative council must be well considered, before it is granted, in two distinct and separate bearings, first, as it affects the connexion with this country, and, secondly, as it affects the interests of the colonists themselves. The avowed object of the assembly in advocating this change, is to procure an identity of views in the two branches, which would be effected by their being elected by the same persons, or what is the same thing, by the same influences. Were this to take place, it would be a duplicate of the house, registering its Acts, but exercising no beneficial legislation upon them. A difference of opinion then, whenever it occurred, would not be between the two houses, but between them and the governor, and it is easy to conceive how untenable his position would soon become. At present, although possessing a veto, and forming a constituent, he can hardly be said to be a deliberative branch of the legislature, but by this change either such duties must necessarily devolve upon him, and occasion the exercise of incompatible powers, or in every instance where he differed in opinion, he would be compelled to resort to a rejection of the measure. The commissioners, whose reasoning on the subject is not very intelligible, have been more fortunate in the expression of their impartiality, having recorded at the same time their approbation of the principle, and their conviction of the danger of its application. The object of the French party, it is said, is to assimilate their institutions to those of the United States; but the situation of the country is so different from that of any state in the union, that there is no analogy whatever. Instead of two co-existent but independent chambers, it would in fact be only one body occupying two halls.

In Canada there is unfortunately wanting among the French population, the salutary controul of public opinion. The population is wholly unfit for the exercise of the important duties of self-government. Scattered over a large surface, ignorant of constitutional principles, and inattentive to public affairs, they implicitly follow a few leaders, who have the choice and the management of their representatives in their own hands, and who, if this change were conceded, would place in both houses such persons as would follow their instructions. It were needless to ask in such a case what would become of the British population? That Mr. Papineau knows but little of the constitution of the United States which he affects to admire, and claims to imitate, will best appear from the following extracts from American constitutional writers :

'All the powers of government,' says Mr. Jefferson, 'legislative, executive, and judiciary, result to the legislative body. The concentration of these in the

same hands is precisely the definition of a despotic government. It will be no alleviation, that these powers will be exercised by a plurality of hands, and not by a single one. One hundred and seventy-three despots would surely be as oppressive as one. Let those who doubt it turn their eyes on the republic of Venice. An elective despotism is not the government we fought for; but one which should not only be founded on free principles, but in which the powers of government should be so divided and balanced among several bodies of magistracy, as that no one could transcend their legal limits without being effectually checked and restrained by the others.'

Another author says,

'Another and most important advantage arising from this ingredient is, the great difference which it creates in the elements of the two branches of the legislature; which constitutes a great desideratum in every practical division of legislative power. In fact, this division (as has been already intimated) is of little or no intrinsic value, unless it is so organized, that each can operate as a real check upon undue and rash legislation. If each branch is substantially framed upon the same plan, the advantages of the division are shadowy and imaginative; the visions and speculations of the brain, and not the waking thoughts of statesmen or patriots. It may be safely asserted, that for all the purposes of liberty, and security of stable laws, and of solid institutions, of personal rights, and of the protection of property, a single branch is quite as good as two, if their composition is the same, and their spirit and impulses the same. Each will act as the other does; and each will be led by some common influence of ambition, or intrigue, or passion, to the same disregard of public interests, and the same indifference to the prostration of private rights. It will only be a duplication of the evils of oppression and rashness with a duplication of obstruction to effective redress. In this view the organization of the senate becomes of incalculable value.' Again he says, 'The improbability of sinister combination will always be in proportion to the dissimilarity of the genius of the two bodies; and therefore every circumstance consistent with harmony in all proper measures, which points out a distinct organization of the component materials of each, is desirable.'

And again this is very powerfully put by an eminent republican writer :

'The division of the legislature into two separate and independent branches, is founded on such obvious principles of good policy, and is so strongly recommended by the unequivocal language of experience, that it has obtained the general approbation of the people of this country. One great object of this separation of the legislature into two houses acting separately, and with co-ordinate powers, is to destroy the evil effects of sudden and strong excitement, and of precipitate measures, springing from passion, caprice, prejudice, personal influence, and party intrigue, and which have been found by sad experience, to exercise a potent and dangerous sway in single assemblies. A hasty decision is not so likely to arrive to the solemnities of a law when it is to be arrested in its course and made to undergo the deliberation, and probably the jealous and critical revision, of another and a rival body of men, sitting in a different place, and under better advantages, to avoid the prepossessions and correct the errors of the other branch. The legislature of Pennsylvania and Georgia consisted originally of a single house. The instability and passion which marked their proceedings were very visible at the time, and the subject of much public animadversion: and in the subsequent reform of their constitutions, the people were so sensible of this defect, and of the inconvenience they had suffered from it, that in both states a senate was introduced. No portion of the political history of mankind is more full of instructive lessons on this subject, or contains more striking proofs of the faction, instability, and misery of states under the dominion of a single, unchecked assembly, than those of the Italian

republics of the middle ages, and which in great numbers, and with dazzling but transient splendour, in the interval between the fall of the western and eastern empire of the Romans.* They were all alike ill-constituted, with a single unbalanced assembly. They were all alike miserable, and ended in similar disgrace.†

The second demand was that the executive council should be converted into a ministry responsible to the assembly. The existence of a council to advise the governor in the conduct of affairs may be traced back to the first establishment of a civil government in this province under the authority of Great Britain. The royal instructions to General Murray, dated 7th December 1763, commanded him to appoint a council as therein specified. The statute of the 14th of Geo. III., c. 83, established it in a more formal manner, and conferred upon it certain legislative powers; but in 1791 the constitutional act provided for the existence of two councils, a legislative and an executive one; and accordingly, by royal instructions, dated the 16th September of that year, the latter was appointed to consist of nine members, with a salary to each one respectively of one hundred pounds. Additional or honorary members have since been occasionally added to the board. Of the functions of the executive council the most comprehensive description is that they are bound to give their advice to the governor whenever it is requested.‡ There are certain cases in which the governor is required to act by and with their advice, but in far the greater part of the business of government he is at liberty to receive their advice or not as he pleases. It audits public accounts, has some direction of the crown lands, and constitutes a court of appeal. It can assemble only on summons from the governor, is sworn to secrecy, and confers no privilege on its members of either recording their several opinions or entering their protests individually.

This body, it is demanded, should be converted into a ministry and be made responsible to the assembly; the answer to this is strongly and pointedly given in the report of the commissioners:—

‘The house of assembly, in their answer to the governor’s speech at the opening of the late session, and in their subsequent address to his Majesty, dated the 26th of February 1836, expressed their desire for a ‘constitutional responsibility’ of the executive council, based on the practice of the United Kingdom. We have already had occasion to advert to this proposal incidentally in our report of the 12th of March, but a recapitulation of what we then advanced, and some further examination of the project, may not be superfluous here, especially as the subject has excited such keen interest in Upper Canada since the time when we last noticed it. On that occasion we observed, that while in England it was a maxim of the constitution that no wrong could be imputed to the sacred person of his Majesty, the head of the executive here was a servant of his Majesty, responsible to the King

* I would refer the reader, if he feels inclined to pursue this subject, to Sir James M’Intosh’s celebrated Introductory Lecture, written in 1797; in which by anticipation he composed with great skill and ability the condemnation of his own conduct on the Reform Bill.

† See Appendix to Report of Commissioners.

and to parliament for his conduct; that therefore it was necessary that his measures should be under his control, in like manner as their consequences rested upon his character; that to render the executive council responsible to any but the governor himself, would demand the allotment to them of new powers commensurate with their new responsibility, and would require a corresponding diminution of the powers of the governor; that thus the direct tendency of a council, responsible in the sense we were then considering, was to withdraw part of the administration from his Majesty's representative in this province, and to abridge to that extent the efficiency of the functionary on whom, above all others, his Majesty must rely for retaining the allegiance of the colony.

'We would now remark further, that the question is not between responsibility and irresponsibility absolutely, but only as to a peculiar sort of responsibility, which it is wished to attach to the executive council. The weightiest responsibility which can attach to any man in matters of a public nature for which he is not punishable by law, or by loss of office, is the accountability to public opinion, and from this the executive councillors are not even now exempt, though, in consequence of the rule of secrecy (which we shall presently propose materially to relax), they are not so much open to it as might be wished. They are already amenable to the courts of law for any offence, legally punishable, which may be brought home to them; they would also, we apprehend, be made amenable to the jurisdiction of any court which may be established for the trial of impeachments against public functionaries; and they are liable to be dismissed by the same authority which appoints them. These different liabilities constitute a responsibility, than which we know not what other is borne by any public servants.

'But if the councillors were rendered accountable for the acts of government, and accountable not to the executive authority by which they are appointed, but immediately to the house of assembly, we think that a state of things would be produced incompatible with the connexion between a colony and the mother country. The council having to answer for the course of government, must in justice be allowed also to control it; the responsibility, therefore, of the governor to his Majesty must also cease, and the very functions of governor, instead of being discharged by the person expressly nominated for that high trust, would in reality be divided among such gentlemen as from time to time might be carried into the council by the pleasure of the assembly. The course of affairs would depend exclusively on the revolutions of party within the province. All union with the empire, through the head of the executive, would be at an end; the country in short would be virtually independent; and if this be the object aimed at, it ought to be put in its proper light, and argued on its proper grounds, and not disguised under the plausible demand of assimilating the constitution of these provinces to that of the mother country.'

I shall not weaken the effect of this by any remarks of my own, but merely observe, that if a majority in the house, appointing the legislative council, and controlling the executive, is not a state of independence as regards Great Britain, and of despotism as regards the province, it must at least be admitted, that it confers all the advantages of such a condition but the name.

The third was a demand for the repeal of the Tenures Act and the Land Company's Act. On neither of these topics is it necessary to dwell longer than to explain the nature of them. I have already observed that Canada was subject to the old feudal law of France, and I refer you to page 307 of this work for an account of their more prominent features. The inconvenience of this sort of tenure has been very strongly felt, and particularly in towns, as preventing the transfer of

property and its consequent improvement. The English population, especially of Montreal, complain that to allow the exercise of seigniorial rights over a city destined by its situation to become a great commercial emporium,* is not merely to give a fatal wound to the progress of the city itself, but it is weakly, impolitically, and unjustly to sacrifice the interests of trade and of future generations, throughout a large portion of both provinces, to which its extended commerce under happier auspices, might be capable of giving prosperity and comfort. They say that the *lods et ventes*, or mutation fines, amounting by law to one-twelfth of the price upon every sale, constitute one of the greatest grievances, but by no means the only one, arising from the present tenure, and which cannot be removed while the seignury continues to be held in mortmain.

Supposing a manufactory or building worth 12,000*l.*, to be erected upon a lot not worth 100*l.*, if the proprietor has occasion to sell, and could even find a purchaser willing to give him the sum he has expended in the erection of the edifice, he is nevertheless liable to lose 1,000*l.* as a punishment for having had the industry, the means, and the enterprise to build; because the claim of the seigneurs is not the twelfth of the original value of the ground merely, but the twelfth of the amount of the money and labour of others laid out upon the building also.

This, under the feudal system, becomes a privileged debt to the seigneurs, who have not expended a farthing. But this is not all—the next and the next vendor, *ad infinitum*, must each in turn lose to the seigneurs a twelfth of the purchase-money. So that if, in the exigencies of trade, or by inevitable misfortunes, the building should change hands a certain number of times, the seigneurs will benefit by these evils to the amount of 12,000*l.*, the full cost of the edifice, to which they have contributed nothing, being one hundred and twenty times the original value of the lot. Instances are known where the claim for *lods et ventes*, deferred until the occurrence of several sales, has swept away at once the whole price for which the lot, buildings and all, have been sold.

It has been asserted† by men of great local knowledge, that the entire value of all the real estate and buildings in the city of Montreal (the property of, and erected at the cost of many thousands of individuals) must, every forty years or less, be paid into the hands of the seigneurs; and this is exclusive of the rents of the seignury. Thus the value of all the real estate and building existing forty years ago when the buildings were much fewer, and the value of the real estate far less than at present, has certainly, within the last forty years, passed into their hands. In like manner the number of buildings,

* See Letters of Anti-Bureaerat.

† J. Thom. Esq.

and value of real estate, will of necessity be so much augmented during the next forty years, that at the end of that period it is likely that the present value of all the real estate and buildings will also have passed into their hands, should the feudal tenure be allowed by sufferance still to retain its possession. It is to be remarked that this enormous contribution, this appalling and blighting exaction, is principally raised from improvements of which Englishmen and English commerce are the creators and cause.

This old law also allows of a system of mortgage called hypotheque, which may affect the land in a variety of ways without enabling any one creditor of the owner of the land to know what is passing or has passed between his debtor and any other person. The system of general mortgage aggravates in a tenfold degree the evils of secret obligations. For where mortgages spring from such a variety of circumstances, and are created in such a variety of ways, their secrecy, even if they were special, would be sufficiently pernicious, but their generality engenders evils absolutely intolerable and altogether incredible. Through that generality of mortgages, a man cannot hold real property for an hour without vitiating its title to the amount of all his previously granted notarial obligations. In this way, a man may pollute the title of real property, that virtually never belonged to him. He may have bought a farm or a house on credit, may have been obliged by want of funds to restore it to the seller, and may thus have burthened it with a hundred previously contracted debts of indefinite amount.

The *facit hypotheque* is of five kinds:—1. The dower of his wife, unless barred by an ante-nuptial contract; 2. Security to his ward, in the event of his being appointed guardian to any minor, which he may be without his own consent, the office being in many cases compulsory; 3. The same obligation in the event of his being named curator, trustee, or administrator of any intestate person; 4. The obligation of an heir, entering on his inheritance, to the payment of the debts of the person from whom he received it, or *sans bénéfice d'inventaire*; 5th, and lastly. The liability of public servants for the due performance of their trusts. The wife's dower, moreover, is the inheritance of the children of the marriage, and consequently an entail is created by it, as well as a life interest.

The British government thought it was conferring a great benefit upon the Lower Canadians in proposing to change the tenures, so as to get rid of those circumstances which thus depreciated the value of land, and retarded the improvement of Canadian trade and agriculture; and all unbiassed men would, and did, agree with the government on this point.

The first provision on this subject consisted of two clauses of the Canada Trade Act (3 Geo. IV., c. 119, s. 31 and 32), by which

his Majesty was empowered to agree with all seigneurs for the commutation of their dues to the Crown, and also to commute with such censitaires as held immediately of the Crown, and to re-grant both to one class and the other their lands in free and common soccage. In addition to, and amendment of this Act was passed the 6 Geo. IV., c. 59.

The most important clauses are as follow :

Sec. 1—Provides for the commutation (on request) of the tenures of land held of the Crown.

Sec. 2—Provides that rights of the seigneur shall not be affected till such commutation is fully made.

Sec. 3—Declares that persons holding lands in fief, and obtaining a commutation from the Crown, shall be bound to grant a like commutation, if required, to those holding under them, for such indemnity as shall be fixed by *experts*, or (sec. 4), by proceedings in a court of law.

Sec. 5—Declares that on such agreement or adjudication the tenuro shall be converted into free and common soccage, but sec. 6 provides that this shall not discharge a man of dues or services then accrued to the lord.

Sec. 7—Persons applying for commutation are to give public notice to mortgagees and others having claims on the lands.

Sec. 8—Lands holden in free and common soccage in Lower Canada, are to be subject to the laws of England.

Sec. 9—Provided, nevertheless, that nothing herein contained shall extend to prevent his Majesty, with the advice and consent of the legislative council and assembly of the province of Lower Canada, from making and enacting any such laws or statutes as may be necessary for the better adapting the before-mentioned rules of the laws of England, or any of them, to the local circumstances and condition of the said province of Lower Canada, and the inhabitants thereof.

Such are the provisions of the act, the repeal of which is so imperiously demanded. Unreasonable, however, as the request was, thus to make a disgraceful retrograde movement to barbarous usages, it was met in the only way it could be: the act 1 W. IV., c. 20 was passed, leaving the whole subject to be dealt with by the provincial legislature as it should think fit. The repeal of the Canada Land Companies act is next insisted upon. On this subject, it will be quite sufficient to state their demand, to which no honest man could give any other answer than it has already received—an unqualified refusal. They require that an act of parliament, incorporating this company, and conferring upon them certain privileges, and a title to lands, upon which they have expended large sums of money, should be repealed, and the property confiscated. The only charitable way of viewing the demand, is to consider it not so much an evidence of moral turpitude, as a manifestation of contempt and insolence towards the party, to whom it was addressed.*

* But although they considered every institution and usage of their own so sacred as to admit of no change, they viewed those of the English in a very different light. The condescending and respectful conduct of Government formed an amusing contrast with their audacious insolence. To mark their contempt for regal rights, they passed an Act to make notice of action served on the attorney-general, for damages against the Crown, legal and binding. If the suit went against the Crown it was provided, that execution might issue against the governor, and the furniture, or the guns of the fortress.

Fourth.—Then followed a demand for the unconstitutional surrender of the crown revenues. You will recollect that the Canada committee of parliament, as it was called, reported, that although the duties, before alluded to, were vested in the Crown, they were prepared to say the real interests of the colony would be best promoted by placing them under the controul of the house of assembly. Being prepared to say a thing, and being prepared to show or prove a thing, happen, unfortunately, to be widely different; and, as the committee contented themselves with the former, we are not in possession of the grounds upon which they felt prepared to say so. They were doubtless quite sufficient at the time, although they, unfortunately, did not continue to be so long enough for the act (1st and 2d Will. IV.) to reach Canada. For the real interests of the colony, it is very evident, have not been best promoted thereby. It would appear also that that great and single minded man, the Duke of Wellington (who probably knew quite as much of the French as the committee did), was not prepared to say so, but, on the contrary, he entered his protest against the measure: 'These persons,' said he (meaning the judges), 'will thus become dependent upon the continued favour of the legislative assembly, for the reward of their labours and services; the administration, within the province of Lower Canada, can no longer be deemed independent; and his Majesty's subjects will have justice administered to them by judges, and will be governed by officers situated as above described.' The event has justified his grace's expectations, and disappointed those of the committee. This unconditional surrender was made on the full understanding that a civil list would be granted, and the administration of justice permanently provided for:—the former they refused. They had now got the officers of government at their mercy, and were determined to keep them so; and the judges they made independent of the Crown, but dependent upon them for their annual allowance, depriving the government of the power of removing them, except upon impeachment, and reserving the right themselves to remove them at pleasure, by withdrawing their salaries. Having succeeded in this, they now demanded the rents of the real estate, belonging to the King, in Canada, and this too they are promised, when they shall vote the civil list,—one of the resolutions introduced by Lord John Russell, being, 'That it is expedient to place at the disposal of the legislature the net proceeds of the hereditary, territorial, and casual revenues of the Crown, arising within the province, in case the said legislature shall see fit to grant a civil list, for defraying the necessary charges of the administration of justice, and for the maintenance and unavoidable expense of certain of the principal officers of the civil government of the province.' The great error that has been committed in these unconditional surrenders of the revenue of the Crown, is in

attempting to keep up an analogy, that does not exist, to the practise in England. The committee lost sight of the important distinction that Canada is a colony, and that what might be very right and proper here, would be neither right nor expedient there. The officers of government are not merely the officers of Canada, but the officers of Great Britain, and, by giving the legislature a controul over them, they surrender the imperial power over the province. They should be removeable, not when the legislature, like the committee of parliament, is 'prepared to say' so, but when it is 'prepared to prove' that they ought to be; but their salaries should be beyond the controul of the local assembly. This position is too obvious, and has received too much painful corroboration, in recent events, to require any further comment.

Lastly.—They required the management of the waste lands to be given up to them. The object of this extraordinary claim, now for the first time put forward in the history of colonization, was for the avowed purpose of controlling emigration from Great Britain, which they had already impeded by a capitation tax, by refusing to establish an efficient quarantine, or to give aid to the improvement of the harbour of Montreal; by endeavouring to alarm settlers on the score of insecurity of title, and in an attempt to ruin the banks.

In Mr. Papineau's celebrated pamphlet, to which I have previously alluded, he says, 'the protection, or, to speak more plainly, English sovereignty over Canada, brought other evils in its train. A swarm of Britons hastened to the shores of the new colony, to avail themselves of its advantages to improve their own condition.' History affords so many proofs of the license used by a people when flushed with victory, that this gentleman's surprise at the English taking the liberty of settling on the waste lands of a colony, which they had so gallantly conquered, affords a pleasing proof that the natural simplicity of the Canadian character was not yet wholly destroyed by the study of politics. 'That, however,' he continued, 'was not sufficient for their cupidity, they established themselves in *our* cities, and made themselves masters of all the trade, as well foreign as domestic.' 'For many years they took but a small share in our political affairs. The elections remained free from their intrigues, because they could have had no chance of practising any amongst a population nine times more numerous than themselves. But within these five or six years they go about boldly' To prevent this evil, which was growing in magnitude every year, 'of their interesting themselves in the political affairs of the province,' in proportion to their numbers, they demanded the control of the wild lands, and, reverting to abstract principles, started this new doctrine:

'That in any new discovered or newly occupied country, the land belongs to the government of the nation taking possession of it, and that settlers in it, so long as they retain the character only of emigrants from the mother country, can claim no more than what has been granted to them as individuals; but that when a distinct boundary has been assigned to them, and they come to be incorporated into a body politic, with a power of legislation for their internal affairs, the territory within their boundary becomes, as a matter of right, the property of the body politic, or of the inhabitants, and is to be disposed of according to rules framed by their local legislature, and no longer by that of the parent state.'

On this point the commissioners reported as follows:—

'This proposition rests, as we understand it, entirely upon abstract grounds, and we believe that we are authorized in saying that it never has been entertained by Great Britain or any other colonizing power. That the ungranted lands in any colony remain the property of the Crown has, on the contrary, we believe, been the universally received doctrine in Great Britain, and although the constitutional act does not expressly assert a right of which its framers probably never contemplated a doubt, the lands of the province are mentioned in the 36th clause as being thereafter to be granted by his Majesty and his successors. While, therefore, we are quite ready to admit, that in the disposal of the ungranted lands the interests of the first settlers ought never to be lost sight of, and also that the wishes of the local legislature should be consulted, provided they are made known to his Majesty in a constitutional manner, we cannot recognize in any way the abstract principle set up for it in opposition, not merely to the general laws and analogies of the British empire, but to the clear meaning of the Act by which alone the body preferring the claim has its existence. It must, we apprehend, be the main object in every scheme of colonization, that the parent state should have the right to establish her own people on such terms as she may think fit in the country colonized; and at present perhaps her North American colonies are more valuable to England as receptacles for her surplus population than in any other way. We cannot, therefore, believe that England will consent to a doctrine that will go to place at the discretion of any local legislature the terms on which emigrants from her shores are to be received into her colonies.'

Here, however, the government again shewed its anxiety to gratify their wishes as far as it was possible; and in their undeviating spirit of conciliation, although they could not grant the whole demand, endeavoured to meet them half way, by replying that they had no objection to the legislature prescribing the rule of management for the Crown lands, but their application must be confined to the executive. Such are the demands which were then made, and are still put forward by the leaders of the Canadian party; demands, which it is evident amount to a claim by one part of her Majesty's subjects, to an independent controul of the colony.

LETTER XI.

As the assembly had separated with a declaration that they would never vote a civil list, until all their requests were granted, it was

necessary for parliament to interfere, and Lord John Russell proposed and carried certain resolutions, of which the substance is as follows :

‘ 1stly. That in the existing state of Lower Canada, it is unadvisable to make the legislative council elective, but that it is expedient to adopt measures for securing to that branch of the legislature a greater degree of public confidence.

‘ 2dly. That while it is expedient to improve the composition of the executive council, it is unadvisable to subject it to the responsibility demanded by the house of assembly.

‘ 3dly. That the legal title of the British American Land Company to the land they hold under their charter, and an act of the imperial parliament, ought to be maintained inviolate.

‘ 4thly. That as soon as the legislature shall make provisions by law for discharging lands from feudal dues and services, and for removing any doubts as to the incidents of the tenure of land, in free and common soccage, it is expedient to repeal the Canada Tenures Act, and the Canada Trade Act, so far as the latter relates to the tenures of land in this province, saving, nevertheless, to all persons the rights vested in them under or in virtue of those Acts.

‘ 5thly. That, for defraying the arrears due, on account of the established and customary charges of the administration of justice, and of the civil government of the province, it is expedient, that, after applying for that purpose such balance as should, on the 10th day of April last, be in the hands of the receiver-general, arising from the hereditary, territorial, and casual revenues of the Crown, the governor of the province be empowered to issue, out of any other monies in the hands of the receiver-general, such further sums as shall be necessary to effect the payment of such arrears and charges up to the 10th of April last.

‘ 6thly. That it is expedient to place at the disposal of the legislature the net proceeds of the hereditary, territorial, and casual revenues of the Crown, arising within the province in case the said legislature shall see fit to grant a civil list for defraying the necessary charges of the administration of justice, and for the maintenance and unavoidable expenses of certain of the principal officers of the civil government of the province; and, lastly,

‘ That it is expedient that the legislatures of Lower and Upper Canada respectively, be authorized to make provision for the joint regulation and adjustment of questions respecting their trade and commerce, and of other questions wherein they have a common interest.’

Whether the spirit of concession had not been heretofore carried too far, and whether the public affairs of Canada ought to have been suffered (even for the amiable and praiseworthy object of endeavouring, if possible, to satisfy the dominant party in the house), ever to have arrived at this crisis, are questions upon which I have no desire, on this occasion, to enter, being foreign to my object, which is to show you that the French-Canadians have no claim to sympathy ‘ as our oppressed and enslaved brethren.’ But that these resolutions were indispensable, that they were not resorted to till they were necessary, and that parliament was justified in this exercise of its supreme authority, no unprejudiced and right-thinking man can doubt. A colony is a dependent province, and Great Britain is an independent metropolitan state. The controlling power must obviously be greater than the power controlled. The power, therefore, of a colony being limited, if it assumes to pass those limits, it is no longer dependent but independent. It is not only the right but the duty of

Parliament to restrain, within their constitutional limits, provincial legislatures in the same manner as it is the right of the colonists to exercise those powers constitutionally, and their duty not to attempt to exceed those limits. When one branch of a legislature resolves that it will never perform its functions until a co-ordinate branch, deriving its authority from the same source as itself, is destroyed, it exceeds its due bounds, or rather relinquishes the exercise of all constitutional power. In the pamphlet already alluded to, Mr. Papineau says, 'The constitution has ceased to exist of right, and in fact can no longer be maintained but by force.' Here, then, was a case for the legitimate interference of Parliament, an interference which no reflecting colonist will ever object to, else there would be no appeal but to the sword whenever a designing demagogue should unfortunately obtain a majority of obstructive members in the assembly; but these revolutions were said to be a violation of the declaratory act of 1778, and an unconstitutional mode of levying taxes on the Canadians, and appropriating their money without their consent!

It is not material to the argument to mention, but it is a singular fact, that the revenue happens not to have been raised by people of French origin, and that therefore as far as they are concerned, their money has not been appropriated without their consent. The question is often asked by the Upper Canadians, on what does a French inhabitant pay duty? Is it, they say, on woollen stuffs of his own manufacture? Is it on wooden shoes, the produce of his forest? Is it on tobacco, the produce of his own fields? Is it on sugar, the juice of his own maple groves? Is it on wine which he never tastes? Is it on books which he cannot read; or on postage of letters he cannot write? Or is it on spirits distilled from his own grain? But this is not to the purpose, it was money that they had a right to dispose of themselves, if they had thought proper to do so, and must so far be considered the revenue of the whole public.

These resolutions imposed no taxes, they merely applied towards the discharge of salaries of the civil officers of the government, certain monies already accumulated under existing laws, in the hands of the treasury, to enable the executive to carry on the government. That it was applied without their consent to this purpose, is true, *not because they did not consent to vote supplies* (and it is most material to observe this distinction), *but because they had refused to discharge any of their duties as an assembly, or in any manner to co-operate with the other branches; and had themselves, by this suicidal act, suspended the constitution and thrown the whole country into anarchy and confusion.* It was a case fully within the limitation prescribed by Burke :

* See letters of Camillus.

‘For my part,’ says that great man, ‘I look upon the rights stated in that act exactly in the manner in which I viewed them on its very first proposition, and which I have often taken the liberty, with great humility, to lay before you. I look, I say, on the imperial rights of Great Britain, and the privileges which the colonists ought to enjoy under these rights, to be just the most reconcilable things in the world. The parliament of Great Britain sits at the head of her extensive empire in two capacities; one as the local legislature of this island, providing for all things at home, immediately, and by no other instrument than the executive power. The other, and I think her nobler capacity, is what I call her *imperial character*; in which, as from the throne of heaven, she superintends all the several inferior legislatures, and guides and controls them all without annihilating any. As all these provincial legislatures are only co-ordinate to each other, they ought all to be subordinate to her; else they can neither preserve mutual peace, nor hope for mutual justice, nor effectually afford mutual assistance. It is necessary to coerce the negligent, to restrain the violent, and to aid the weak and deficient, by the over-riding plenitude of her power. But in order to enable Parliament to answer all these ends of provident and beneficent superintendence, her powers must be boundless. The gentlemen who think the powers of Parliament limited, may please themselves to talk of requisitions. But suppose the requisitions are not obeyed? What! shall there be no reserved power in the empire to supply a deficiency which may weaken, divide, and dissipate the whole?’

‘This is what I meant when I have said, at various times, that I consider the power of taxing in Parliament as an instrument of empire, and not as a means of supply.’

‘Such, sir, is my idea of the condition of the British empire, as distinguished from the constitution of Britain; and on these grounds I think subordination and liberty may be sufficiently reconciled through the whole; whether to serve a refining speculist or a factious demagogue, I know not; but enough surely for the ease and happiness of man.’

But, although the right of Parliament to interfere, and its intention to do so, were thus asserted, there was still so strong a repugnance felt by Government to exercise the power, that they desired Lord Gosford to call the assembly together again, and give those misguided men another opportunity of reconsidering their conduct. They met as summoned, but again refused all supplies which had now been withheld for five years, and again declined to exercise any legislative functions. There was now no power to make new laws, no means of paying those who administered the existing ones, no appropriation for the public service in any department; schools were neglected, roads unrepaired, bridges dilapidated, jails unprovided for, temporary laws expired or expiring, and confusion and disorganisation every where; and yet we are gravely told Parliament ought not to have interfered! that it was one of the dearest and most sacred rights of the colonists to produce this extraordinary state of things, and that they ought not to be interrupted in the enjoyment of what had cost them so much time and trouble to bring about.

If this opinion were founded on conscientious scruples, it would deserve our respect; but it is the liberality of accomplices; and they may well be generous who replenish their coffers by plunder. We must not be surprised therefore to find among those who invest the Canadians with this novel power, men who offer to mercenaries the

pillage of the church, and who, loaded with the spoils of vested rights, which they have violently torn from their lawful owners, kindly bestow this stolen one upon comrades engaged in the same unholy cause as themselves. They are accomplished and dexterous men, and, knowing the numerous covers of law, resort to its shelter, and boldly call upon the real owners to make out their case, and prove their property. It is difficult to decide whether the amiable advocates of this intelligible doctrine are best entitled to our pity or our contempt.

Those persons who had always espoused their cause in England, seem to have fully penetrated their object. 'I do not marvel at it,' said my Lord Brougham; 'to me it is no surpris — *I expected it.*' Men of sanguine temperament are apt to expect confidently what they desire ardently. That he wished them to be independent, he made no secret. Whatever we may think of his lordship, as a statesman, for entertaining such a patriotic wish, we cannot but admire the unflinching friendship that induced him, through good report and evil report, to adhere to the cause he had determined to advocate. That they might not feel discouraged by partial reverses, he held out the language of promise to them that the day was not far distant when they could hope to realise the object of their wishes. He deprecated our thinking too harshly of them for their vain attempt. 'Where,' he continued, 'in what country—from what people did they learn the lesson? of whom but ourselves, the English people? We it is that have set the example to our American brethren; let us beware how we blame them too harshly for following it.' Not content with interceding for their pardon, he solicited, as a boon for them, what they had failed in an attempt to seize as plunder. 'I hold these colonies,' he said, 'as worth nothing; the only interest we have in the matter concerns the manner in which a separation, sooner or later inevitable, shall take place. Is it not, then, full time we should make up our minds to a separation so beneficial to all parties? These, my lords, are not opinions to which I have lately come; they are the growth of many a long year, and the fruit of much attention given to the subject.' The effect of this language upon the loyal population of the provinces it is not easy to conceive. At no time could such a doctrine be heard with indifference, but during a period of unusual excitement it was too mischievous not to awaken a general indignation. On the minds of the Americans it has had a powerful effect, in specuiating upon the result of an active sympathy on their part.

Disaffection having now succeeded in producing anarchy and bloodshed, assumed the shape of insurrection, the natural result of so many years of agitation. The tragical events of this sad revolt are

too recent and too impressive to be forgotten, and the recital would be as painful as it is unnecessary. Anxious, however, as I am not to dwell on the mournful picture which it presents, justice requires that I should pause and pay the tribute of my respect to the pious, amiable, and loyal Catholic clergy of Canada. They have preserved a large portion of their flock from contamination, and we are mainly indebted to their strenuous exertions that the rebellion has not been more general and more successful. They have learned from painful experience, what ecclesiastics have ever found under similar circumstances, that treason always calls in infidelity to its aid; that there is a natural alliance between the assailants of the throne and the altar, and that they who refuse to render tribute to Cæsar are seldom known to preserve, for any length of time, 'the fear of God before their eyes.' The history of this Canadian revolt is filled with instruction to the people of England. It teaches them the just value of the patriotism of those who are the intemperate advocates of extreme opinions; it shows that courage in debate may sometimes evaporate in the field, and that those who lead others rashly into danger are not unfrequently the first to desert them basely in the hour of need. It exhibits in bold relief the disastrous effects of incessant agitation, and demonstrates that the natural result of continued concession to popular clamour is to gradually weaken the powers of government, until society resolves itself into its original elements. These truths are too distinctly marked to require to be retouched. He who runs may read, but he that would carry away the moral must pause and consider. It is written in the blood and suffering of the colonists, and prudence suggests the propriety of their availing themselves of the painful experience of others, instead of purchasing it by the severe and painful process of personal experience. The successful advocacy here of similar opinions must necessarily produce the like results, aggravated by the increased power of numbers, and the greater value of the plunder. I have seen enough of England to admire it, of its institutions to respect it, of the character of its people to love it, and of the blessings conferred by its limited monarchy, to know how to estimate the enviable lot of those who have the good fortune to inhabit it.

O fortunatos nimium, sua si bona noriat.

I should feel indeed that kindness could awaken no emotion, and hospitality no gratitude, if, after having received, as an obscure provincial author, the most flattering indulgence, as a colonist, the most hearty welcome, and a stranger the most considerate attentions, I did not express warmly what I feel deeply. My knowledge of its constitution preceded that of its people; and if my studies have led me to

admire its theory, personal observation of its practical effect has confirmed and increased that favourable impression. It is a noble and admirable structure! *Esto perpetua.*

Before I quit the subject of this rebellion, I must allude to the mitigating circumstances that attended it. Excited by every stimulant that parliamentary declamation could apply, or British sympathy suggest, or American republicanism offer—encouraged at home, aided from abroad, and nowhere opposed or threatened, is it to be wondered at that the prospect of plunder and impunity seduced these misguided people from their allegiance, or that the contagion should spread from Lower to Upper Canada. When such a man as Humo was known to be a supporter of the government, can we wonder if ignorant men, three thousand miles off, supposed he was expressing the sentiments of that government, when he said, 'my wish would be to set the Canadas and the whole of British North America, free to govern themselves, as the United States do, by their own representatives, and to cultivate a good connection with the mother country for their mutual interest. Until that takes place, neither the Canadas nor Great Britain will derive those advantages which they ought to have from a different and more economical management of their resources.' Or when confidentially communicating to his friend, M'Kenzie, a man devoted to revolutionary doctrines, he boldly asserted, 'Your triumphant election on the 16th, and ejection from the assembly on the 17th, must hasten that crisis which is fast approaching in the affairs of the Canadas, and which will terminate in freedom and independence from *the baneful domination* of the mother country, and the tyrannical conduct of a small and despicable faction in the colony.' 'The proceedings between 1772 and 1782, in America, ought not to be forgotten, and to the honour of the Americans, and for the interests of the civilized world, let their conduct and their result be ever in view,' could they mistake the import of the term *baneful domination*, or despise the advice so judiciously given by the representative of a metropolitan country. Knowing little of Bath, but its reputation of being the resort of wealth and fashion, was it unnatural for them to infer that the member for that town spoke the sentiments of a powerful and influential class, when he said, 'One resource, and one resource alone, remains: to be a free people you must resist the British parliament.' When the working men's societies, patronised by practical and powerful men, held similar language, was it a great stretch for the credulity of those poor people to believe, that accession of Canada would immediately follow a demonstration of revolt. Their case is, indeed, one that commands our pity rather than our resentment; but what shall we say of those who went still further than their councillors, and pursued the wicked course of advising an armed resistance to the government, of exciting

them to sedition, and evoking the evil passions of the human heart, to insurrection and slaughter. The receiver is more criminal than the thief, and the seducer more vile than his victim. The exile and the prisoner, the houseless settler, and his starving suffering family, the smouldering villages, the spirits of the dead, and the voice of the dying, call aloud for vengeance on the authors of all these accumulated aggravated evils. He who knew the facility of man to fall into error, and the miseries entailed upon us by guilt, has mercifully taught us to offer our daily prayer that we may not be led into temptation; and for the credit of our common nature, be it spoken, so few have been the instances where men have incited to crime, when they were not to profit by the offence, that no provision is made against the sin of holding out temptation to others. It was not to be supposed that wickedness could exist without reward, or crime without an object. Unfortunate victims of false friends, deluded objects of cold unfeeling advice, you deserved the lenity that has been extended to you; it would have been unfair, indeed, to have visited upon you, the mere instruments of others, the punishment due to the authors of your folly and your guilt.

Such were the feelings entertained throughout the adjoining colonies, but here a different language was held. They were pitied, not because they were misguided, but because they were unsuccessful. Indignation was expressed, in no measured terms, not against the tempter or the tempted, but the gallant and loyal militia who suppressed them, and their vigilant, able, and intelligent governor. My Lord Brougham was loud and vehement in his invectives, denouncing these brave and devoted men 'as an undisciplined and insubordinate rabble,' and the presiding genius, whose penetration discovered, and whose foresight provided the means of crushing this rebellion, as a person planting snares, with the base purpose of catching the unwary. That his lordship, the advocate and eulogist of a republic, should grieve over the vain attempt of others to establish it in Canada, is not to be wondered at; but that he whose physical courage no man doubts, and whose moral courage is so great as to enable him to stand forth boldly, unaided and alone, among his peers, the opponent and assailant of all parties, could feel no sympathy for those brave men who, in the deadly conflict of war, rushed forth amid the storms of their inclement winter, in support of their laws, their religion, and their homes; prepared to conquer or to die in their defence, that he could find no terms of approbation, no figures of speech, no, not one word of praise, for those heroic men; that he could see nothing peculiar in their case, who had to contend with violators of law within, and violators of treaties without the province, and scorn and contumely here, and who, braving privation, the climate, and the enemy, rallied round the standard of their country

with an enthusiasm, of which history can scarcely find a parallel—that he could discern no worth in loyalty, and no merit in those ‘who fear God and honour the king,’ is, indeed, a fruitful source of astonishment. How is it? Is this a characteristic of democracy? Does it indeed harden the heart and deaden all the glowing impulses of our nature? or is it that philosophy is cold and speculative, regulating the passions, and subduing and chastening the imagination. Or may it be that unused to panegyric, his lordship feels and knows his power of sarcasm, and prefers the path in which he excels all contemporaries, to one in which unequal powers forbid the hope of pre-eminence? Whatever it may be, for his own sake, for the sake of the noble house of which he is a member, and of the country of which his eloquence is at once the pride and the boast, it is deeply to be deplored that he should have adopted a course that, unfortunately, confers but little honour on the qualities of his head; and, it is to be feared, still less on the feelings of his heart.

This rebellion had scarcely been put down, when my Lord Durham was appointed, with extraordinary powers, to complete the pacification. On this part of the history of Canada it is needless to dwell. It has proved a failure: not from a deficiency of power, but from a deficiency of conduct in the dictator. Instead of assembling around him a council of the most influential and best-informed men in the colony, according to the evident spirit of the act and his instructions, he thought proper to appoint to that responsible situation, officers attached to his household, or perfect strangers, with the unanimous view, as he informs us, of assuming the *whole responsibility* of his own measures. As might naturally be expected, owing to his having neglected to obtain the best professional advice at his command in the colony, and acting on his own view of the case, his first step was illegal. Now, by assuming the whole responsibility, we were given to understand that, having full confidence in his own judgment as well as his own integrity, he was disposed to monopolize the whole honour of success, at the hazard of incurring the whole censure of failure. The praise or the blame was to be exclusively his own. It was the decision of a confident and vain man. His next act was indicative of a weak and petulant mind. Instead of being willing to bear the whole responsibility, as he announced, he shewed that he was unwilling or unable to bear any. As soon as Parliament felt itself called upon to pronounce the illegality of his measures, and stepped in to rescue him from the consequences of his precipitate conduct, he relinquished his government, not in the usual and proper form, by tendering his resignation, and waiting until his successor should be appointed, but by instantly leaving the colony.

It is difficult to conceive of a public servant committing an offence more serious in its nature, and more pernicious in its example, than

thus abandoning his post without leave ; and it was incumbent on the government to have vindicated the honour of the Crown, by ordering the captain of the *Inconstant* to return immediately to Québec with his lordship, and to deliver to him, within his government, the acceptance of his resignation. It would have taught the misguided people of Canada to respect, if they could not love, the even-handed justice that could visit with punishment the disobedience of a governor-general as well as that of a peasant ; and they would have seen in the return of the one, and the exile of the other, a practical illustration of the only equality that honest and sensible men ever desire to behold—'the equality of all in the eye of the law.' The moral effect of such a measure, combining vigour with impartiality, would have gone far towards tranquillizing Canada, and would have enabled his lordship, when he next addressed the people of England, to have pointed to it as a proof that his mission, however it might have affected himself, had terminated in a manner that was useful to the colony and honourable to the government.

Of the ill-advised and ill-timed manifesto it is unnecessary for me to speak ; its effects are but too visible in a new revolt, to which its unguarded language gave too much encouragement. Nor shall I enter upon the serious charges he has brought against that august body, of which he has the honour to be a member, of legislating, where Canada is concerned, 'in ignorance and indifference.' To shake the confidence of the colonists in the justice and integrity of that high tribunal, to which they have to look as a last resource, was indeed unkind to them, unworthy of himself, and injurious to the honour of the house he has assailed. He who advocates democratic institutions will soon find the effect of his theory influencing his own conduct, and though he may commence in the assertion of principles, he is apt to end in the expression of feeling. The natural tendency of such opinions is to level all distinctions. Although we have great cause therefore for regret, we have none for surprise in this attempt to measure his noble colleagues by so humble a standard. I am willing, however, to do his lordship the justice to believe, that when the irritation that caused this ebullition of feeling shall subside, he will himself regret, as deeply as every right-thinking man now does, that he should have judged that assembly in temper and pique ; and that he will feel he has afforded some room for ill-nature to suggest, that although he had a right, if he thought proper, in the exercise of a laudable diffidence, to have appropriated those attributes to himself, he was not justified in extending an indiscriminate application of them to others. That many of the measures he proposed for the benefit of Canada were good, it would be uncharitable to doubt ; but as none of them have been matured, it would be presumptuous to say so. That others, however, were of a dangerous nature, we have

reason to know. The evils to be reaped from this mission have not yet ripened for us to gather; but the seed is sown, and it is to be feared taken root too extensively. What could be more injudicious than to send to the contented and happy colonies of Nova Scotia and New Brunswick, and ask for deputies, to listen to crude and undigested schemes for their future government, or to give their own visionary plans in exchange for his? What more cruel than to unsettle men's minds as to the form of their government, and make the stability of their institutions a matter of doubt? What more pernicious than to open a political bazaar at Quebec for the collection and exhibition of imaginary grievances? In the Lower Provinces we are contented and happy. We need no reforms but what we can effect ourselves; but we are alarmed at changes which we never asked, and do not require. The federative union proposed by his lordship has opened a wide field for speculation, directed men's minds to theoretical change, afforded a theme for restless young demagogues to agitate upon, and led us to believe that our constitution is in danger of being subverted. Most people think, and all reflecting men know, that it would ripen the colonies into premature independence in less than ten years; and who, I would ask, that is attached to the mother country, and desirous to live under a monarchical form of government, can contemplate a scheme pregnant with so much danger, without feelings of dismay? Who could continue to live in New Brunswick, if at every disturbance in Canada, the governor-general is to propose to new-model their form of government? Who would consent that that united and loyal colony should have its peace and happiness jeopardized by any union with the disaffected and troublesome French Canadians, or will approve of the political quackery that would compel Nova Scotia to swallow a nauseous medicine, for the purpose of effecting a cure in Canada? The danger arising from such visionary schemes as have lately been unfolded to the colonies, is passed for the present, and I heartily rejoice that it is, but it is to be hoped that powers co-extensive with the Lower Provinces, may never again be entrusted to any man. In this country there is a general and very natural repugnance manifested to give up the bodies of deceased friends for experiments for the benefit of science. It is difficult to imagine how so sensitive a nation could consent that their colonists should be considered of less value, and be delivered into the hands of the operator, for the advancement of politics.

In Paris, I heard with horror that a lecturer had illustrated his theory by applying his dissecting knife to the limbs of a living animal. I shuddered at the recital of such atrocious cruelty; but little did I dream that, at that very time, a kind and merciful Providence was graciously averting a similar fate from our own species on the other side of the water.

All British America has been agitated during the past summer, by substantial fears, or mocked by unreal hopes, and ambition has now reached where sedition failed to penetrate. The absurd and impracticable scheme of colonial representation in Parliament, although disgusting, from its rank properties, to delicate palates, was well suited to the rapacious appetites of provincial sycophants. The bait was well selected, and soon attracted the longing regard of a shoal of political sharks. The self-denying tenets of the sour sectarian have not been proof against the temptation. His nostrils have been too powerful for his conscience, and scenting the strong odour of this savoury appendage from afar, he has hurried to the surface to regale himself with its flavour. The canting hypocrite has offered his asperations for the conversion of Parliament to such liberal views; and the profligate demagogue of the village has expressed a hope, that a deficiency of morals may be compensated by an abundance of zeal. They have been lulled to sleep by its soporific effect, and have dreamed of this ladder, as did Jacob of old, and of the ascent it offered to high places. The woolsack and the ermine—the treasury and the peerage—appear within their grasp, and they invoke blessings on the man who promises so much, and who hints at his power to do even more. If I did not feel too indignant at all this, I too might weep over the scene of folly and of weakness, and would mingle my tears of sorrow with those that pride has shed, and blot out all trace of it for ever.

The advocate of the ballot box and extended suffrage is not the man to govern a colony. While you have been speculating upon the theory, we have been watching the experiment. When the lower orders talk of these things, we know what they mean; their language is intelligible, and their object not to be mistaken; but when a nobleman advocates democratic institutions, we give him full credit for the benevolence of his intentions, but we doubt the sanity of his mind. Keep such men at home, where there is so much of rank, intelligence, and wealth to counterbalance them. Here they serve to amuse and gratify agitators, and make useful chairmen of popular assemblies, by preserving a propriety of conduct and a decency of language, where violence and outrage might otherwise prevail. But send them not among us, where their rank dazzles, their patronage allures, and their principles seduce the ignorant and unwary. If we trespass upon your rights of sovereignty, repress us; but while you maintain your own privileges, respect the inviolability of ours. When we ask in the Lower Provinces for a federative union, it will be time enough to discuss its propriety; but in the mean time spare us the infliction of what to us is so incomprehensible and so repugnant—a radical dictator and a democratic despot.

I have already far exceeded the limits I had designed to confine

myself to, and must, therefore, draw to a close. I have now shown you, that after the conquest of Canada, that country was governed by English laws; that the royal proclamation invited British subjects to remove there; and promised them the protection and enjoyment of those laws; and that in violation of that promise, in order to conciliate the French, their legal code was substituted for our own: that an injudicious division of the province was made, whereby the French were separated from the great body of English subjects, in consequence of which Canada became a Gallic and not a British colony. That they have been kept a distinctive people by those means, and by permitting the language of the country and the recording language of their parliament to be French; that they have always had an overwhelming majority of members of their own origin in the legislature, who have been distinguished by an anti-commercial and anti-British feeling; that this feeling has been gradually growing with the growth of the country, until they were in a condition to dictate terms to government; that this feeling was manifested by the manner in which they have constantly resisted local assessments, and made commerce to bear every provincial expenditure,—in the way they neutralized the electoral privileges of the voters of British origin,—in the continuance of the oppressive tenure of the feudal law,—in taxing emigrants from the mother country, and them only,—in their attempts to wrest the crown land from government,—in their attack on the Land Company, and the introduction of settlers by them,—in their opposition to a system of registry,—in their mode of temporary legislation,—in their refusal to vote supplies, and in the whole tenour of their debates and votes. I have shown you that the policy of every government, whether Tory or Whig, has been conciliatory (a fatal policy, I admit, and one that naturally admits and invites demands), and that every reasonable change required (with many very unreasonable ones) has been conceded to them; that they are a people exempt from taxes, in possession of their own laws, language, and religion, and of every blessing, civil, political, and religious; in short, that Canada is the most favoured colony of Great Britain, and that the demands they now make are inconsistent with colonial dependence.

This statement I offer in refutation of my Lord Durham's assertion of misgovernment, used in its invidious sense, or as explained at the meeting at Carlton Hill, that they are 'our oppressed and enslaved brethren;' and in proof of my own position that the evils now existing are the natural consequences of the Quebec and constitutional acts, and not the result of tyranny and oppression. The review which I have just concluded, indicates the remedy too plainly to render it at all necessary for me to offer a prescription. If, however, you can entertain any doubt upon the subject, you will at least be

satisfied that the cure is not to be effected by concession. Of this all men, I think, must now be convinced. Since the termination of the late abortive attempt at colonial government, one of my Lord Durham's official coadjutors has publicly proclaimed that all his preconceived opinions on the subject of Canada were erroneous. This was a work of supererogation. He might have spared himself the trouble of the announcement, and the pain of a recantation. All those who were at the trouble of inquiring into the nature of his views were already convinced of his error. His lordship also has informed the good people of Devonport that he has made important discoveries on the other side of the water. Had his mission been merely designed for his own instruction, the public, while they admitted the necessity that existed for it, would have applauded his zeal in such a useful and necessary pursuit; but as it was undertaken at no inconsiderable expense to the nation, they have reason to regret that this remarkable illumination was deferred until the moment of his return. What the extent of these recent revelations may be, we are not informed, but we may be permitted to hope that he has learned this important truth, that he who undertakes the benevolent office of calming the excited passions of others, should first learn to govern his own. That there are serious difficulties in the way of the pacification of Canada there can be no doubt, but greater difficulties have been overcome by Van Amburgh, who exhibits every night, for the edification of government and the amusement of Cockneys, animals, whose natures are more ferocious, and antipathies more powerful than those of the English and French, living in the same cage in the utmost harmony; and what is still more important, enjoying the most unrestrained freedom of action within their assigned limits, and yet making no resistance to the salutary controul of an external power.

*Iustum et tenacem propositi virum
 Non civium ardor prava jubentium,
 Non vultus instantis tyranni
 Mente quatit solidâ.*

But let me not be misunderstood by the nature of this allusion. It must not be supposed that the assembly, because they have done so much that is objectionable, were always wrong in what they required, or the legislative council, because it is such a loyal and respectable body, were always right in what they refused. This was far from being the case. Many of the demands of the Canadians were reasonable and just, and many of the changes they desired, were for the benefit of the country; but, unfortunately, the violence of their language, and the unconstitutional and arbitrary acts to which they resorted, in the attainment of those objects, left no room to doubt that they were more bent upon having a grievance than seeking redress; and that they would rather have provoked a refusal than obtained a

concession. On the other hand, the council, like most similar bodies, has always contained some men who were selfish in disposition and ultra in opinions, and whose conduct was calculated to irritate the opposite party, and to do more mischief than if they had openly espoused their cause and adopted their principles. But whether the assembly was right or wrong in what it required, or the council justified or not in its opposition, the former has succeeded in all its demands.

The subject has now assumed a new aspect. Pretensions have been put forth that involve the question of independence, and Great Britain must now decide whether she is to retain the province or not. It is a crisis in the history of this country which other nations regard with intense interest. The fate of Canada will determine that of all the other colonies. The retreat of the soldiers will invite the incursions of the barbarians, and the withdrawal of the legions, like those of Rome, from the distant parts of the empire, will show that England,* conscious of her present weakness and past glories, is contracting her limits and concentrating her energies, to meet, as becomes her character, the destiny that awaits all human greatness.

* As a colonist it would be unpardonable in me not to acknowledge in adequate terms the obligation we are under to the chairman of the finance committee for the important discoveries he has recently made in colonial matters. Other men may rival him in industry, but for mastery and statesman-like views he is without a competitor. It is singular that the egregious error Great Britain has heretofore committed in considering her foreign possessions of great value should never have been detected before, and that our forefathers should have had so little knowledge of political economy as to return as sources of wealth, and power, what it now appears have always been productive of a fearful annual loss. It would seem that the surface of Great Britain, instead of being too small for her population, is too extensive, and that, instead of carrying on her immense colonial trade herself, she might be spared the trouble by transforming the colonists into foreigners, and permitting others to do that drudgery for her. It is said that the same error has been committed by the owners of timber-trees, in permitting the absurd arrangement of nature, with respect to the limbs to continue unperformed, that they would be much more vigorous if the branches, with their prodigious expenditure on the leaves, were all lopped off (for it is a well-known fact that the trunk supplies the branches with sap, and not the branches the trunk), and that the stem would be larger, stronger, and better without such useless and expensive appendages. Truly this is the age of wonders, but this discovery of the worthy chairman is the most wonderful one of modern times, although, strange to say, it is by no means appreciated as it deserves to be. It would be unfair, as well as ungenerous, to detract from his merit, by saying that he borrowed the idea from agriculture, but it must be admitted that there is a wonderful coincidence between his principle and that of the ditcher. A drain, it is well known, is lengthened by being cut at both ends. Now he appears to have applied this principle to England, and infers most justly that the more she is reduced in size, the greater will be her circumference. Having proved this most satisfactorily, he advances some most important, but startling propositions, namely, that the smaller your property, the less you have to defend; the fewer markets you can command, the more will be open to you; the more dependant you are upon foreigners for sale or supply, the more certain you are of never wanting either; and others of a similar nature. His accuracy in figures is truly astonishing, and is only to be equalled by the truth of the principles they evolve. Then comes the important question, 'If England has grown so great, so rich, and so powerful, in spite of all these expensive possessions, how much greater, richer, and more powerful would she be without them.' Every true lover of his country must rejoice to see that its real interests are so well understood, and so ably supported.— Nil desperandum, auspice Tencra.